No. M506. AC1pv4pt1

The Grand Rapids Public Library

Not for Circulation

—

Presented by

Michigan Academy of Science,
Arts and Letters.

F 40-10m-7-15

3 0000 005 630 557
LIBRARY OF MICHIGAN

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/papersofmichigan0000paul

THE annual volume of Papers of the Michigan Academy of Science, Arts and Letters is issued under the joint direction of the Council of the Academy and of the Executive Board of the Graduate School of the University of Michigan. The editor for the Academy is Paul S. Welch; for the University, Eugene S. McCartney.

Previous publications of The Michigan Academy of Science, now known as The Michigan Academy of Science, Arts and Letters, were issued under the title, Annual Report of the Michigan Academy of Science. Twenty-two volumes were published, of which those numbered 1, 21 and 22 are out of print. Copies of the other volumes are still available for distribution and will be sent on exchange so long as the editions last. Applications for copies should be addressed to the Librarian of the University of Michigan.

Annual Reports embracing the proceedings of the Academy will, however, continue to be published. Applications for copies should be addressed to the Librarian of the University of Michigan.

MICHIGAN ACADEMY OF SCIENCE, ARTS AND LETTERS

VOLUME IV

PART I

CONTAINING PAPERS SUBMITTED AT THE ANNUAL MEETING IN 1924

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY
NEW YORK BOSTON CHICAGO
ATLANTA SAN FRANCISCO

MACMILLAN & CO., LIMITED
LONDON BOMBAY CALCUTTA
MELBOURNE

THE MACMILLAN CO. OF CANADA, LTD.
TORONTO

De 21 '26 V

PAPERS

OF THE

MICHIGAN ACADEMY OF SCIENCE ARTS AND LETTERS

EDITORS

PAUL S. WELCH
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

EUGENE S. McCARTNEY
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

GRAND RAPIDS
PUBLIC LIBRARY
337019

New York
THE MACMILLAN COMPANY
London: Macmillan & Company, Limited
1925
All rights reserved

Copyright, 1925,
By EUGENE S. McCARTNEY, Editor
Set up and printed,
February, 1925

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

OFFICERS FOR 1924

President

Campbell Bonner, Ann Arbor

Vice-Presidents

Anthropology, H. H. Bartlett, Ann Arbor
Botany, R. P. Hibbard, East Lansing
Economics, C. E. Griffin, Ann Arbor
Language and Literature, J. W. Scholl, Ann Arbor
Geology and Mineralogy, Helen Martin, Tulsa, Okla.
History and Political Science, E. S. Brown, Ann Arbor
Mathematics, T. H. Hildebrandt, Ann Arbor
Psychology, H. F. Adams, Ann Arbor
Sanitary and Medical Science, Philip Hadley, Ann Arbor
Zoölogy, L. R. Dice, Ann Arbor

Secretary-Treasurer

L. R. Dice, Ann Arbor

Librarian

W. W. Bishop, Ann Arbor

Editor

P. S. Welch, Ann Arbor

DATES OF PUBLICATION OF PREVIOUS VOLUMES

VOL. I: April 26, 1923
VOL. II: Jan. 18, 1924
VOL. III: March 15, 1924

CONTENTS

ANTHROPOLOGY

PAGE

The Missaukee Preserve and Rifle River Forts. W. B. Hinsdale 1

An Unusual Trephined Skull from Michigan. W. B. Hinsdale 13

Greek and Roman Lore of Animal-Nursed Infants. Eugene S. McCartney 15

Early Musical Scales in the Light of the Twentieth Century. Charles K. Wead 43

BOTANY

Genetic Factors for Yellow Endosperm Color in Maize. E. G. Anderson 51

Fomes fraxineus Fr. in Culture. Dow V. Baxter 55

The Relationships of the Ascomyceteae, Basidiomyceteae and Teliosporeae. Ernst A. Bessey 67

The Flowering Plants and Ferns of Warren Woods, Berrien County, Michigan. Cecil Billington 81

The Absence of Chromosome Pairing during Meiosis in Oenothera biennis. Sterling H. Emerson 111

The Flora of the Peninsula of Virginia. Eileen Whitehead Erlanson 115

An Annotated List of the Higher Plants of the Region of Douglas Lake, Michigan. F. C. Gates and J. H. Ehlers. 183

The Structure of the Maple-Beech Association in Northern Michigan. Henry Allan Gleason 285

An Ecological Study of Mud Lake Bog, Cheboygan County, Michigan. Louise Goe, Elsie Erickson and Edith Woollett 297

The Genus Lepiota in the United States. C. H. Kauffman 311

An Injurious Factor Affecting the Seeds of Phaseolus vulgaris Soaked in Water. Paul Tilford, C. F. Abel and R. P. Hibbard 345

Genetic Studies in Lycopersicum. Paul Alanson Warren 357

The Perfect Stage of the Valsaceae in Culture and the Hypothesis of Sexual Strains in This Group. Lewis E. Wehmeyer 395

Observations on the Morphology of the Seed in Phytolacca. E. F. Woodcock 413

GEOLOGY

PAGE

Some New Specimens of Triassic Vertebrates in the Museum of Geology of the University of Michigan. E. C. Case 419

An Ordovician Reef on Sulphur Island, Lake Huron. G. M. Ehlers 425

LANGUAGE AND LITERATURE

Deism before Lord Herbert. Louis I. Bredvold 431

Browning's Conception of Love as Represented in *Paracelsus*. William O. Raymond 443

Assyrian Medicine in the Seventh Century B.C. Leroy Waterman 465

METEOROLOGY

Meteorological Data, Douglas Lake, Michigan. Frank C. Gates 475

HISTORY AND POLITICAL SCIENCE

The Historical Background of Europe. Preston Slosson 491

PSYCHOLOGY

Extra-curricular Factors and After-Success. Adelbert Ford 499

SANITARY AND MEDICAL SCIENCE

Some Factors Governing the Serology of Syphilis by Precipitation. R. L. Kahn 503

Variations in the Intestinal Flora of Rats. Helen S. Mitchell 505

The Inhibition of the Stomach in Necturus. T. L. Patterson 511

Observations on the Kahn Precipitation Test. Elsa T. Schueren 517

ZOÖLOGY

X-Rays and the Frequency of Non-Disjunction in Drosophila. E. G. Anderson 523

The Forms of Carphophis. Frank N. Blanchard 527

A Name for the Black Pituophis from Alabama. Frank N. Blanchard 531

A Collection of Amphibians and Reptiles from Southeastern Missouri and Southern Illinois. Frank N. Blanchard 533

A List of Coleoptera from Charlevoix County, Michigan. Melville H. Hatch 543

The Life-Cycle and Growth of Lampreys. Carl L. Hubbs 587

Notes on Some Michigan Snakes. T. H. Langlois 605

Notes on the Birds of Charlevoix County and Vicinity. Josselyn Van Tyne 611

ILLUSTRATIONS

PLATES

PLATE		FACING PAGE
I.	A Trephined Skull in the Museum of Zoölogy, University of Michigan	14
II.	Antiquities showing Children Nursed by Animals	42
III.	Fruiting Body of *Fomes fraxineus* Fr.	66
IV.	Cultures of *Fomes fraxineus* Fr.	66
V.	Flask Cultures showing Mycelium of *Fomes fraxineus*	66
VI.	Fig. 1. Flask Culture of *Fomes "Ellisianus"* Anderson	66
	Fig. 2. Tube Cultures of *Fomes fraxinophilus*	
VII.	Fig. 1. Fruiting Body of *Fomes "Ellisianus"* Anderson	66
	Fig. 2. *Fomes "Ellisianus"* growing on blocks of *Shepherdia argentea*	
VIII.	Fig. 1. *Fomes Everhartii* Ellis & Gallister growing on Poplar Blocks	66
	Fig. 2. *Polyporus hispidus* growing on Apple Wood	
IX–XI.	Warren Woods Preserve	110
XII–XIV.	*Oenothera biennis*	114
XV.	*Lepiota oliracea*, sp. nov.	344
XVI.	*Lepiota fusispora*, sp. nov.	344
XVII.	*Lepiota pulcherrima*	344
XVIII.	*Lepiota acerina*	344
XIX.	Figs. 1–6. *Valsa Kunzei* Fr.	412
	Fig. 7. *Diaporthe albo-velata* (Schw.) Sacc.	
	Figs. 8–13. *Diaporthe binoculata* (Ellis) Sacc.	
XX–XXI.	Morphology of the Seed in Phytolacca	418
XXII.	Fig. 1. Left Side of Lower Jaw of *Leptosuchus crosbiensis*	424
	Fig. 2. Left Side of Skull of *Leptosuchus imperfecta*	
XXIII.	Fig. 1. Narial Region of the Skull of *L. imperfecta*	424
	Fig. 2. Outline of the Skull of *Buettneria perfecta*	
XXIV.	Photograph of the Skull of *Buettneria perfecta*	424
XXV–XXVII.	Photographs taken on Sulphur Island	430

TEXT FIGURES

FIGURE		PAGE
I.	The Capitoline Wolf	15
II.	An Etruscan grave-stone showing a child suckled by an animal	20
III.	Phylogenetic arrangement of orders of higher fungi	79
IV–VII.	Views of Mud Lake	297, 299–301
VIII.	Apparatus for soaking and aërating beans	350
IX.	Anterior end of the mandible of *Leptosuchus crosbiensis*	419
X.	Cross-sections of teeth of *Leptosuchus crosbiensis*	420
XI.	Cutting edge of a large tusk of *Leptosuchus crosbiensis*	421
XII.	Seventh and eighth teeth of the right side of *Leptosuchus crosbiensis*	421
XIII.	Illustration of arrangement of apparatus for determining the influence of the vago-sympathetics on gastric activity in Necturus	512
XIV.	Movements of the empty stomach of Necturus before and after double vagotomy	513
XV.	Inhibition of the gastric movements in Necturus	514
XVI.	Genetic relationships of the Holarctic lampreys	588
XVII.	Size frequency curves for ammocoetes of *Lampetra fluviatilis* (?)	591
XVIII.	Size frequency curves for *Entosphenus tridentatus*	593
XIX.	Size frequency curves for *Lampetra planeri*	596
XX.	Size frequency curves for *Entosphenus appendix*	598
XXI.	Size frequency curves for *Ichthyomyzon unicolor*	600
XXII.	Growth curves for two species of lampreys	602

MAPS

MAP		
I.	Sketch Map of Warren Woods Preserve	82
II.	Map showing the Distribution of Vegetation at the Mud Lake Bog	(*after*) 298
III.	Sketch Map of Sulphur Island	425

THE MISSAUKEE PRESERVE AND RIFLE RIVER FORTS

W. B. HINSDALE

Widely distributed throughout the country are evidences that man has busied himself, at times, by enclosing open spaces with banks of earth. Some of the inclosures bear evidence of considerable age. They may be as old as the oldest mounds. Mounds are situated inside some of them. Others were built since the Discovery and are matters of historic record. Many of these earthworks are imposing in proportions, having banks from twenty to thirty feet high. The largest inclosure in the United States is that called Fort Ancient, in Warren County, Ohio. The distance around the crest of the irregular walls of Fort Ancient is nearly three miles. The space enclosed aggregates about one hundred acres. The height from bottom of the moat to crest is over twenty-five feet in many places.

The Indians of Michigan never undertook any such stupendous enterprise as Fort Ancient. There were, however, many inclosures of striking appearance and outline in this state. Inclosures are usually referred to as "forts," on the supposition that they could have been built for no other purpose than that of defense. There were at least two distinct patterns of forts. One type had curved walls, forming elliptical or curved spaces. The other type had nearly straight lines and sharp angles outlining irregular polygons. One might say that the two types are so different as to belong to quite different cultural conceptions.

A large number of our forts, like the garden beds, have been plowed down or mutilated beyond recognition. In an archeological survey of the state the remaining works of this character should receive first attention. They should be accurately

located, measured, pictured, plotted and charted. We can give an approximately accurate description of one or two groups of the forts as they are today.

MISSAUKEE PRESERVE

In the summer of 1923 an interested and enterprising gentleman gave the University of Michigan a tract of one hundred and twenty acres, situated in Aetna Township, Missaukee County, Section 14, in which two well-preserved inclosures are to be found. A few rough measurements have been made of them. Number 1 is nearly circular, 161 feet in diameter. In some places the wall is 7 feet high from the bottom of the circumscribing ditch or moat upon the outside. The banks are well preserved and are nowhere lower than two or three feet above the inside level; though, of course, badly weathered and washed. The age of Number 1 can be inferred from the description of Number 2, for they all appear to have been made about the same time. Fort Number 2 upon this tract is situated about thirty rods from Number 1. It is larger and is elliptical in shape. The long diameter is 180 feet, the short diameter is 136 feet. The earthwork is of the same character in the two inclosures. The moat around this second fort is, in places, four feet deep. The height of the walls of the two forts is about the same. There is a gateway upon the north side of each. Number 1 has also a gateway opening towards the northeast. The second gateway of Number 2 opens towards the southwest. The two openings or gateways of each are four or five feet wide. There is a pine stump standing upon the crest of the wall upon the east side which is 47 inches in diameter inside the bark. The number of annular rings per inch is ten or twelve. There are stumps nearly as large as this standing inside the inclosure. It has been fifty years, probably, since the trees were cut. From this it is fairly safe to estimate that at least two hundred and fifty years have elapsed since the forts were abandoned. How long it had been abandoned before this particular tree began to grow is, of course, purely conjectural.

The same is true of the duration of the fort's occupation and the time of its construction.

The fact that the surface within the inclosures was strewn with hundreds of pottery fragments leads to the conjecture that it was occupied for a considerable time. Many small sherds may be picked up there now, though it would appear that all relics which might give important clues have been taken away. Pipes, whole pottery vessels, and other interesting artifacts are reported to have been found in or near the forts. A small mound near by also yielded a skeleton and artifacts.

These interesting inclosures are now, almost too late, rescued by purchase from further spoliation, to be available for scientific scrutiny when opportunity occurs. It remains to make careful surveys of them and to determine, if possible, whether the banks were ever palisaded, as were some similar structures elsewhere located. The molds of decayed posts may be found as evidence that they were defenses against enemies with their walls heightened by a sort of post-fence upon top. If the evidence in favor of fortification does not become reasonably convincing after careful investigation, other guesses as to the purpose to which they may have been put will be mentioned in speaking of the forts upon Rifle River in Ogemaw County. There is much similarity between the two groups of inclosures.

There is no stream or body of water within several miles of this inclosure except a small rivulet a hundred rods away. Near Fort Number 2 there is a spring which, when the forest was standing, must have been perennial. It was trickling into a pool about thirty feet across in early summer; by late summer the pool was dried up. There are other small springs upon the tract.

The two forts are not upon an eminence, but from a quarter to a half mile away there is a range of low, gravelly hills skirting the area upon all sides. It will be recalled that the entire country, parts of which we are describing, is of glacial drift.

THE RIFLE RIVER FORTS

Directly east from the Missaukee Preserve, across Roscommon County, lies Ogemaw County. Through the center of Ogemaw County flows Rifle River, a tributary of Saginaw Bay. As one crosses Roscommon County he hears of mounds, forts, graves, relics, etc.; all of which come within the scope of the state archeological survey, when made. At the crossing of one of the main roads, ten miles east of West Branch and the Rifle River, is the hamlet of Selkirk in the township of Churchill. Churchill is in the same tier of townships as Aetna, in Missaukee County, forty miles away.

Within a mile and a half of Selkirk are four inclosures, two north, or up the river, the other two down the river. This location is northwest from the north shore of Saginaw Bay. It is about fifteen miles from the southeast corner of Ogemaw County to the northwest shore of the bay. Iosco County lies between Ogemaw and the shore of Lake Huron. Churchill is the sixth township west of the Huron shore.

In the Twelth Report of the Bureau of Ethnology, 1890–1891, an account is given by Cyrus Thomas of the *Rifle River Forts, Michigan.* In Smithsonian Report, 1884, is an article by Mr. M. L. Leach entitled, *Ancient Forts in Ogemaw County, Michigan.* In a leaflet by Mr. Harlan I. Smith reference is made to the "works." Since the publications referred to, no references to the Ogemaw "forts," excepting those borrowed from the older records, have come to the attention of the writer, although for twenty-five years lookout has been kept for more recent information.

The staff of the University Museum has for some time contemplated a visit to the Ogemaw district, being in doubt whether the inclosures had not met the usual fate of the greater number of the state's immovable antiquities. On July 28, 1923, a party visited the Rifle River Valley for the purpose of obtaining first-hand information, with the ultimate object in view of having thorough investigations made, hoping thereby that some of the secrets of the situation may be cleared up and, proportionately, conjectures reduced to lower terms.

The range of counties of which Ogemaw is one is a typical "chopped over" and "burnt over" district of north central Michigan. The Rifle River is a beautiful clear-water stream of rapid descent over a cobble-stone bottom. Originally it abounded in trout and such other fish as thrive in cool, clear eddies and occasional deep places. The dense forest was mostly pine, of excellent quality. The land surface is undulating with gravelly or sandy soil and glacial boulders are plentiful. There are many fine lakes found within the county, but none are nearer than six or seven miles.

Swamps are not large or common in the vicinity. For the most part the river bank is firm, with an occasional marshy strip. Many springs may be seen trickling from the margins of the low banks. Considerable of the land has lapsed to the state on account of delinquent taxes as it is of very poor quality; a great part of it is unenclosed and not worth the fencing. Occasionally, a productive farm is to be observed and a great many unproductive ones are occupied by rugged farmers, many of whom were at one time "lumber-jacks."

Reference is made in the report of Mr. Thomas to "five enclosures commonly known as 'Indian Forts,' three on the east side and two on the west side of the river." We were unable to locate more than four and believe the report to be in error in this regard, although at a distance of fifteen miles west of southwest is an authenticated crescent whose exact location is in the center of the boundary between Sections 33 and 34, West Branch Township. It is presumably the Hauptmann work described in the old record. It is not upon a stream of any size. Its distance from a small branch of Mansfield Creek is, perhaps, fifty rods.

Inclosure Number 1 is well described in the diagram in Mr. Thomas' report. He states that at the time of his examination the area was heavily timbered with hemlock. At present the ground is nearly bare excepting numerous pine stumps upon the walls and within the enclosed space. The work itself appears to be in about the same condition as it was when his survey was made. Intelligent residents of the neighborhood say

it is somewhat reduced by weathering and by cow-paths. Fortunately, the slashing in which this and the three other inclosures are located has never been damaged by cultivation. There is the appearance upon the southwest segment of the work of the wall being double, since the steep bluff upon that side drops from the top of the trench quite abruptly for a few feet.

The pathways leading from the openings of nearly all the inclosures are quite narrow and consist of the original earth that was not disturbed in digging the trenches. Originally, they would, perhaps, permit two persons, walking side by side, to pass along them. In one or two places the gateways are as much as twelve feet in width, as Thomas has indicated in regard to Number 1. We were not able to verify the reports as to the number of openings in the inclosures. Inclosure Number 2 might have had five, but we were led to think there were only four places for entrance. Time and cows' feet have wrought changes. Number 2 is the largest of the group, being approximately 300 feet east and west by 280 feet north and south. The walls and moat are, for the most part, distinctly traceable. For long reaches the wall is seven or eight feet slant height from the top to the bottom of the moat. The trenches end abruptly at the gateways. Leach, in describing Number 3, indicates eight openings, one for each cardinal and one for each intermediate point of the compass. This we were unable to verify, either as to point of numbers or orientation. At present but four openings are clearly apparent, one or two of them quite wide. Probably, upon the river side of the inclosure, lumbermen, seeking an approach to the river, have graded down for a space of thirty feet. The surface inside is rough and uneven with hummocks three to six feet in height. Some filling in and tearing down may have been done elsewhere, but such alterations can be detected and restorations can be made with a little skillful attention. Upon the whole, the wonder is that all the works are so well preserved.

Inclosure Number 4 is horseshoe-shaped, not a completed inclosure. It is situated upon the west side of the river and is more like three sides of a rectangle, with an open side of 206

feet facing a narrow swamp lying between it and the stream. It has a narrow opening in the southwest corner and also one very near to the northeast corner. From the east end of the south wall to the middle of the first opening is 128 feet; from there to the second opening, 110 feet. From the second opening to the end of the north wall is 162 feet, making 400 feet of earth construction in all.

Inquiry along the Rifle River brought nothing but negative answers as to whether arrows, hammer-stones, celts, axes, copper or pottery had ever been unearthed. In almost every locality of the state many residents have a few specimens they have gathered in the fields. We were unable to find any specimens about Selkirk or to secure information about those who had them. The inclosures of Missaukee County were strewn with pottery fragments. The surface within and without the Ogemaw "works" did not disclose a single specimen, although more searching and continued observation may bring some to light. No graves or mounds have been reported and much of the land has sometime been worked over to some extent. After several hours' search we found in two of the inclosures, an inch or two below the surface, a few pieces of pottery and could, no doubt, have found more; but they are far from common.

The works we have been describing are very much like those of western New York and southern Canada, which are attributed to the Iroquois, and it is well known that those Indians made frequent forays into this section; but the specimens of pottery we have obtained are pronounced by competent ceramists to be Algonquian. Evidences of pit holes, fire-rings, wigwam sites, were not found; excepting one small pit upon the inner side of bank Number 2. This pit, after considerable search, revealed nothing in the way of evidence as to the purpose for which it was made. It will be recalled that near the Missaukee works pits are abundant. A number of skeletons have also been exhumed in that neighborhood. No finds of this description have been reported from the Rifle River district. This lack of finds may be accepted as evidence, though not very convincing, that

the places were not occupied for any great length of time. There must have been burials, and artifacts will probably yet be discovered. Because of the appearance of the stumpage the Missaukee group and the Rifle River group must have been vacated at about the same time.

INCLOSURES IN OTHER PARTS OF THE STATE

The forts of the north-central part of the state are not, by any means, the only ones, but they happen to be the best preserved. In Climax Township, Kalamazoo County, was a perfect, elliptical inclosure, with major and minor axes of 330 and 210 feet respectively. The walls were three feet high and the surrounding ditch ten or twelve feet wide.

Mr. Charles Lanman, in *The Red Book of Michigan*, 1871, says: "The so-called 'forts' are but seldom met with and are fairly uniformly of small dimensions, the principle ones being in the southeast, along the shores of the Detroit, Huron, and Raisin rivers; and occasionally upon Lake Erie, between the Detroit and Maumee rivers." Upon what evidence he makes this statement is not known, but there is no apparent reason for doubting what he says about the southeastern part of the state, although the visible proof is lacking. If the reports, many of them vague, are to be given much credence, the entire state was pretty well "fortified."

Evidently taking Mr. Bela Hubbard as his authority, although he does not say so, Lanman reports further: "In the county of Wayne, on the north bank of the Detroit River, is a fort of the circular or elliptical kind, with an embankment two or three feet in height and compassing, perhaps, one acre. . . . On the east side, as one approaches the fort, there are two parallel embankments of earth, within a few feet of each other, rising four or five feet, and crossing the swamp in a direct line toward the fort."

EARTHWORKS OF IRREGULAR OUTLINE

Works of irregular outline once existed in different parts of the state. John T. Blois, *Gazetteer of The State of Michigan*,

whom everybody seems to quote as an authority, and from whom Lanman seems to have taken, word for word, his account of the Springwells works, says: "In Bruce Township, in Macomb County, on the north fork of the Clinton, are several . . . with ditch on the outside and including from two to ten acres, with entrances which evidently were gateways and a mound on the inside opposite each entrance." He says, further, that near the mouth of the Clinton River there were ancient works, representing a fortress, similar to those in Ohio and Indiana. Blois speaks of similar banks of earth near the village of Marshall, Calhoun County, and of others in Kalamazoo County. In the third volume, *Michigan Historical Collections*, Mr. R. B. Post describes groups of mounds and inclosures upon Rabbit River, Allegan County. The inclosures were, some of them, very close together and none as much as 200 feet across. Many of them were quite remote from water and did not show many evidences of having been occupied. In the same vicinity were mounds surrounded by circles. Many of the numerous mounds of that county had been explored with road-scrapers and horses. Such is the method of the relic hunter.

One should refer to the report of Mr. George H. Cannon upon pre-historic forts in Macomb County, *Michigan Pioneer and Historical Collections*, Vol. XXXVIII, for a detailed survey of forts in Bruce and Armada townships. One encloses an acre, another between one and two acres, and the largest one three acres and a half. These works were built in straight lines, making at some corners obtuse angles, at others acute. The smallest inclosure had three openings, the others four.

There is a record of a peculiar construction upon the north bank of the Raisin River, in the northeast part of the village of Tecumseh, described by Mr. John J. Adam, *Michigan Pioneer Collections*, Vol. II (page 363): "It was laid out in the form of a square and a circle, with an opening from the one to the other where they joined — the trails all leading to and from the circle, and both parts having an embankment of about four feet in height, and having in the center of the circular part a pit five or six feet deep. . . . When the white settlers first came here

there were some cedar posts in the outer embankment, and there were evidences of the place being quite often used for meetings or gatherings of some kind. . . ." This description would apply very well to some of the works in Ross County, Ohio, and to others found elsewhere in that state.

Embankments, circles, squares, breastworks, and other forms of earth construction, not described as mounds, are reported also from Antrim, Branch, Huron, Kalkaska, Keweenaw, Osceola, Saginaw, St. Joseph, Sanilac, Tuscola and Wexford counties; but probably not half of them are recorded.

CONJECTURES

Many of the "forts" are so small they could not have served as permanent places of abode for many people. Villages may have been located within the larger ones, but more likely they were refuges for the people of the outlying districts in time of danger, as suggested by Bushnell, in *Native Villages and Village Sites East of the Mississippi*. If the inclosures were forts, which signifies warfare, there must have been two hostile groups in the territory at the same time. Whether they were the work of the invaders or the invaded, or both, gives opportunity for more theorizing.

There are those who think the inclosures have some ceremonial significance. If the inclosures were fortifications, why would they have so many openings? Primitive people were intensely religious and influenced by shamanistic magic, and to perform rites and ceremonies paraphernalia, including such as would shield performances from public gaze, was necessary. Temporary and fragile lodges were used for performances. To make seclusion more secure and permanent screens of earth might have been constructed, forming a kind of cabinet.

The places mentioned should all be measured accurately and sketched with instruments of precision in the hands of competent surveyors. It often happens that a closed space appears to the casual observer as being of a pretty definite shape when, in reality, the conception is quite wrong in details. The "step-

ping-off," ten-foot pole, and tape-line methods supplemented by guesswork are not very accurate when irregular lines and angles are involved.

University of Michigan

AN UNUSUAL TREPHINED SKULL FROM MICHIGAN

W. B. HINSDALE

Years ago a very important mound discovery was made in what was called the Great Mound of the Rouge River, near Detroit. The incident is narrated by Mr. Henry Gillman in a Smithsonian report for 1875. A number of human skulls taken from the mound had been artificially perforated. The apertures varied from less than half an inch to nearly an inch across. The holes were round with somewhat flaring edges, some giving evidence of having been bored with a stone point or a flint "drill." Similar specimens were found elsewhere in the eastern part of the state, in the Lake Huron drainage area. This culture trait (skull-trephining) centered in places far remote from Michigan, in Mexico and Peru. It had its most remote occurrence in Michigan, very few such finds being noted in the Great Lakes districts.

Mr. Gillman states that the perforations in the skulls he mentions were made after death. There is a specimen in the University of Michigan Museum, however, of real trephining (Plate I). The skull is from the Devil River Mound and has a very symmetrical hole in the top of the skull-cap, bored while the person was still living. The edges of the opening show unmistakable evidence of a well-advanced healing process, which could have gone on only during life.

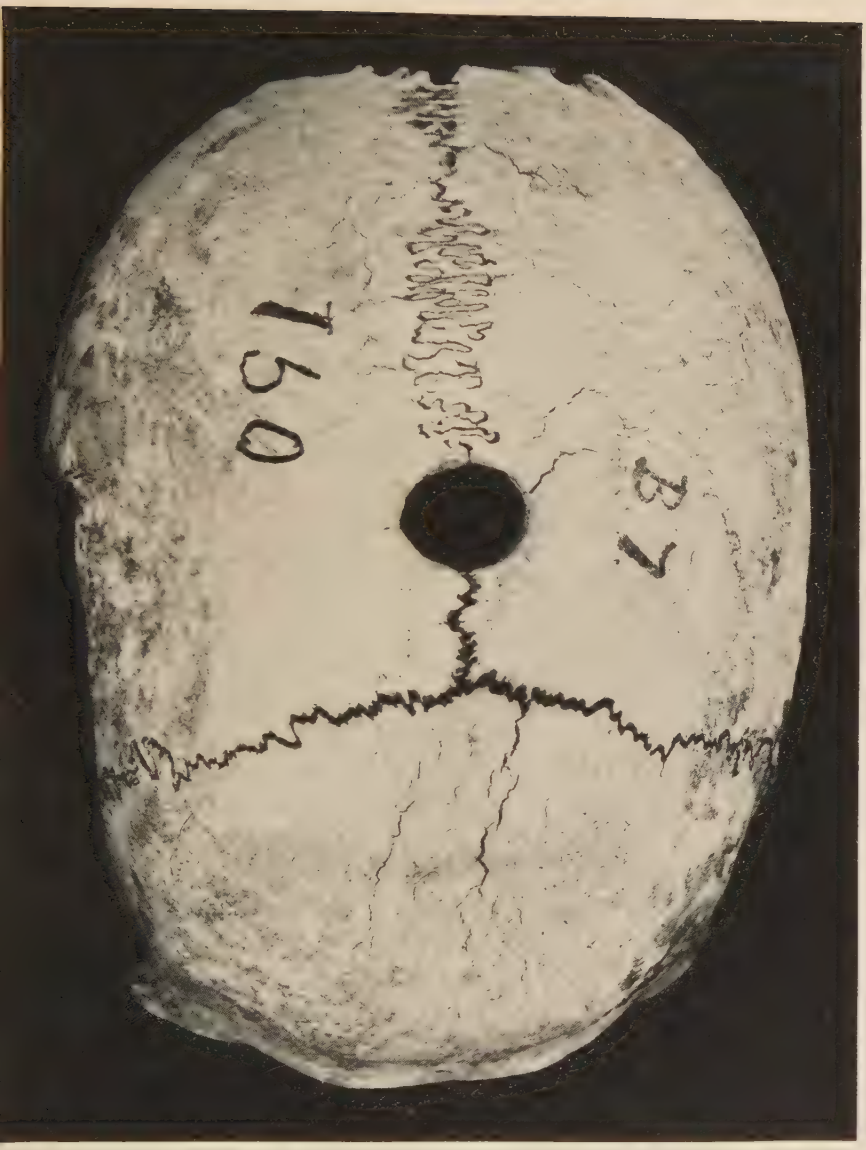
One might ask: Why were the skulls perforated? In the majority of specimens the operation was probably performed after, or immediately preceding, death. Mr. Hrdlicka suggests that the skulls bored after death were so treated for the purpose of securing the "button" as a fetish. Some of the heads might have been "operated upon" with a view to removing pieces of

weapons, or for restoring the shape of the head after a severe thump. The skull in the Museum, to which reference has been made, shows no evidence of either injury or disease. The perforations are usually, in the Michigan specimens, directly in the center of the vertex.

The operation may have been performed for some medico-religious reason; to let a bad spirit out or a good spirit in, which, of course, is a wild conjecture. The fact remains, however, that perfectly normal skulls were trephined while the subject was still living. It is surprising to note in the *Handbook of American Indians*, under "Medicine and Medicine-Men," the statement that "trephining has never been found north of Mexico."

University of Michigan

PLATE I



A Trephined Skull in the Museum of Zoölogy, University of Michigan

Fig. 1. The Capitoline Wolf

GREEK AND ROMAN LORE OF ANIMAL-NURSED INFANTS

EUGENE S. McCARTNEY

"Come on, poor babe:
Some powerful spirit instruct the kites and ravens
To be thy nurses! Wolves and bears, they say,
Casting their savageness aside, have done
Like offices of pity."

— *The Winter's Tale*, Act II, Scene 3

The best known classical wonder-tale of animal-nurtured children is that of Romulus and Remus. The story of Cyrus is less prominent chiefly because it is not associated with an event so important as the founding of Rome. In biblical lore the feeding of Elijah[1] is equally miraculous, although it is not an exact parallel. Such tales are, however, not restricted to any time or country.

"Slavonic folk-lore tells of the she-wolf and she-bear that suckled those superhuman twins, Waligora the mountain-roller and Wyrwidab the oak-uprooter; Germany has its legend of Dieterich, called Wolfdieterich from his foster-mother the she-wolf; in India, the episode recurs in the tales of Satavahana and the lioness, and Sing-Baba and the tigress; legend tells of Burta-Chino, the boy who was cast into a lake, and preserved

[1] *I Kings*, xvii, 6.

by a she-wolf to become founder of the Turkish kingdom; and even the savage Yuracarés of Brazil tell of their divine hero Tiri, who was suckled by a jaguar."[2]

Since, however, Greek and Latin are remarkably rich in such legends and are also the oldest literatures which contain a vast body of them, it seems worth while to render them accessible to comparative anthropologists in convenient form. There is a monotonous similarity about many of them. In order to bring out into relief their general uniformity, I am giving nearly all of them in their barest outlines, in fact almost in the form of a catalogue. Readers without special interest in folk-lore and anthropology may feel inclined to skip to the next caption after reading a few illustrations of stories told of mortals.

STORIES TOLD OF DEITIES

A number of such stories gathered about the name of Zeus. Since his father, Cronus, had been warned by Earth and Sky that his own son would dethrone him, he swallowed his offspring at birth. After five children had suffered this fate, Rhea repaired to a cave in Crete, where she gave birth to her sixth child, Zeus. She entrusted him to the Curetes and to the nymphs Adrasteia and Ida, and then deceived Cronus by substituting a stone wrapped in swaddling clothes. Such is one account of the birth of Zeus.[3] In the absence of his mother Zeus was fed and nursed by bees,[4] provided with ambrosia by doves,[5] with nectar by an eagle,[6] and suckled by a goat,[7]

[2] Tylor, *Primitive Culture* (1920), I. 282. Tylor gives references to these and other similar stories. See also Tylor, *Wild Men and Beast-Children, Anthropological Review*, I (1863). 21–32; A. H. Sayce, *Herodotus, Books I–III*, 68; Gibbon, *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, chap. 42; Gubernatis, *Zoölogical, Mythology* (1872), II. p. 177; Usener, *Die Sintfluthsagen*, pp. 110–111; C. Plummer, *Vitae Sanctorum Hiberniae*, I (1910), p. cxlii; G. A. Dorsey, *Traditions of the Skidi Pawnee* (*Memoirs of the American Folk-Lore Society*, 1904), p. 178 ff.

[3] Apollod., *Bibl.*, 1. 1. 5–7. Cf. Diod., 5. 70. 1–3.

[4] Ant. Lib., 19; Serv. *ad Verg., Georg.*, 4. 150. Cf. Colum., *De Re Rust.*, 9. 2. 2.

[5] Homer, *Odyss.*, 12. 63; schol. *ad loc.;* Eustath. on 12. 59 sqq. (p. 1711); Athenaeus, 11. 79–80. Cook, *Zeus*, I. 151, figures two coins showing birds

a sow, [8] a cow [9] and perhaps by a sheep.[10] (For the sheep, see Plate II, Fig. 1.)

Another deity, Cybele, the daughter of Dindyme and Macon, a king who reigned in Phrygia and Lydia, was exposed by her father on Mount Cybelus. Panthers and other fierce animals nourished the child with their milk until it was rescued by shepherdesses.[11] The Phrygians placed statues of panthers and lions beside those of Cybele because it was generally believed that she was suckled by these animals.[12] The name of the goddess is said to have been derived from Cybelus.[13]

STORIES TOLD OF MORTALS

The story of Habis, grandson of Gargoris, king of the Tartesii, is the most elaborate and diversified of all such accounts that have to do with mortals. When the king learned that his daughter had given birth to a natural child, he took measures to have it killed. He ordered that it be exposed, but when a number of days later he sent to get the corpse, it was found that the child had been nourished by the milk of wild animals.

---

hovering over the infant Zeus. One seems to be a dove and the other an eagle.

[6] Moero in Athenaeus, 491 B. See also the quotation from Cook in the next note.

[7] Aratus, *Phaen.*, 163–164; Diod., 5. 70. 3; Callim., *Hymn in Iov.*, 49, and schol. *ad loc.*, Ptolem. Hephaest., ap. Phot., p. 473 R; Ovid, *Fast.*, 3. 431–432; 5. 120–121; Strabo, 8. 7. 5 (p. 387); Eustath. on Iliad, 9. 535 (p. 773, 14 ff.); Serv. on Vergil, *Georg.*, 1. 205 (cf. Serv. on *Aen.*, 9. 665); *Second Vatican Mythographer*, 16 (in G. H. Bode, *Scriptores Rerum Mythicarum Latini*); Hyg., *Astron.*, 2. 13; Tert., *Apol.*, 25; Porph., *De Abstinentia*, 3. 16; Minucius Felix, 21. 10.

"An autonomous copper struck at Aigion . . . shows Zeus as an infant suckled by the she-goat Amaltheia between two trees with an eagle above him." — Cook, *Zeus*, I. Fig. 401, p. 529. For records of other representations of the goat see *C. I. L.*, VI. 26464, 26976.,

[8] Athenaeus, 375 F — 376 A. See also Cook, *Zeus*, I. 653.

[9] "At Praisos, an Eteo-Cretan town with a temple of Zeus *Diktaios*, silver coins were struck *c.* 450–400 B.C. with the obverse type of a cow suckling an infant who has been commonly and rightly identified as Zeus." — Cook, *Zeus*, I. 660. See Figures 507–508.

[10] See A. J. Evans, *Journal of Hellenic Studies*, 21 (1901), 129, Fig. 17; Cook, *Zeus*, I. 401.

[11] Diod., 3. 58. 1–2. [12] *Op. cit.*, 3. 59. 8. [13] *Op. cit.*, 3. 58. 2.

Next he had it put in a narrow path to be trampled to death by herds, but it escaped unharmed and was again nourished by animals. Then it was exposed to dogs from which food had been withheld for many days, and finally to pigs, but once more it was suckled. To make sure of its destruction the king had it thrown into the ocean, but the waves washed it back to safety [14] and it was suckled by a doe. It continued to live among the deer and coursed over mountain and glade with a deer's speed. At length it was caught in a net and brought to the king. Through his features and the marks branded upon him as a child, he was recognized as the king's grandson. His salvation was attributed to the gods and he was restored to the position of prince. Later he conferred boons upon his rough subjects by teaching them how to yoke oxen to the plow and to cultivate finer food. After a life of usefulness he died, but the kingship remained in his family for many generations.[15]

The most famous of all these stories is that of the founders of Rome. Romulus and Remus, twin offspring of Rhea Silvia and Mars, were cast adrift in the Tiber by order of their mother's uncle, who wished to destroy all legal heirs to the kingdom he had usurped. The little trough in which they were exposed in the overflow of the river was left in a place of safety by the receding waters. A wolf that had descended from the hills to drink came upon them and suckled them. They were found by a shepherd and reared by him and his wife.[16] Prior to their

[14] Cf. Frazer, *Folk-Lore in the Old Testament*, II. 454: "It has been conjectured that in stories like that of the exposure of the infant Moses on the water we have a reminiscence of an old custom of testing the legitimacy of children by throwing them into the water and leaving them to swim or sink, the infants which swam being accepted as legitimate and those which sank being rejected as bastards." See also p. 455. The Psylli, an African tribe, tested legitimacy in a different fashion. They exposed children to serpents. If they were not injured, they were regarded as legitimate; if they died, they were thought to be bastards. — Varro, ap. Prisc., 10. 32.

[15] Justinus, 44. 4.

[16] Livy, 1. 4; Dionys., 1. 79; Plut., *Rom.*, 4 and 7; Plut., *Mor.*, 314 F — 315 A; 320 D — 321 A (*Parallels*, 36). See also Cic., *In Cat.*, 3. 19; Cic., *Rep.*, 2. 4; Verg., *Aen.*, 1. 275; 8. 630; Serv. *ad Verg., Aen.*, 1. 273; Ovid., *Fasti*, 2. 413; 3. 53; Prop., 2. 6. 20; 3. 9. 51; 4. 1. 55; 4. 4. 54; Hyg., *Fab.*, 252; Aur. Vict., *Orig. Gent. Rom.*, 20 and 21; Zonaras, *Ann.*, 7. 1.

rescue, however, the bird sacred to Mars, the woodpecker, had brought them morsels of food.[17] Such, in its lowest terms, is the story the Romans loved to tell.[18] (See Text Fig. 1 and Plate II, Fig. 2.)

Among the many traditions regarding the parentage of the children is one which Plutarch regarded as altogether fabulous. According to this version they were the sons of a handmaiden and a phantom. Fearful of an oracle which said that the son of a vision and a virgin was destined to become very valorous and successful, Tarchetius, king of the Albans, gave orders to have the twins killed. Instead they were left beside the river. A wolf came upon them there and gave them suck, while all sorts of birds provided them with food until a cow-herd rescued them.[19]

A remarkable parallel to the first version is noted by Plutarch[20] in the case of Lycastus and Parrhasius, twin offspring of Phylonome and Mars. Because of her fear of her father the mother threw the children into the river Erymanthus. They were driven by the waves to a hollow tree which happened to be the lair of a wolf. The animal thrust her whelps into the stream and suckled the children. The twins were found and reared by a shepherd.

Christian writers frequently mention Romulus and Remus, e.g., Tertull., *Apol.*, 25; *Ad Nat.*, 2. 10; Lact., *Div. Inst.*, 1. 20; Min. Felix, 25; Hieronym., *Chron.*, p. 77 (Schoene); Aug., *De Civ. Dei*, 18. 21.

A group-statue of the wolf and twins was erected by the curule aediles in 296 B.C. (Livy, 10. 23). Cicero, *loc. cit.*, says that there was on the Capitoline in 65 B.C. a statue of the wolf with the infants gaping at its dugs. A bronze statue still exists in the Palazzo dei Conservatori, but the children and parts of the wolf are restorations. For the history of the group, see Petersen, *Lupa Capitolina*, *Klio*, 8. 440–456; 9. 29–47.

The suckling of the children by the wolf was represented frequently on mirrors, coins, gems, reliefs and by statues in the round, and even beside a sepulchral inscription (*C. I. L*, VI. 22811). A wolf giving suck to a single infant was carved beside a similar inscription (*C. I. L.*, VI. 24008).

[17] Ovid, *Fasti*, 3. 46; Plut., *Rom.*, 4 and 7; Plut., *Mor.*, 320 D; Aur. Vict., *Orig. Gent. Rom.*, 20.

[18] The strange experience of Romulus and Remus caused the people near by to refrain from exposing any of their offspring; they carefully fostered all their new births. — Plut., *Mor.*, 320 E.

[19] Plut., *Rom.*, 2.

[20] *Mor.*, 320 E (*Parallels*, 36).

Another wolf-nursed child was Miletus, the son of Acacallis and Apollo, who was exposed by his mother through fear of her father Minos. By the wish of Apollo wolves guarded the child and gave it suck.[21]

Fig. 2. An Etruscan Grave-stone showing a Child Suckled by an Animal, obviously a Lion.

On an Etruscan grave-stone in the Museo Civico at Bologna a child is represented as suckled by an animal.[22] (See Text Fig. 2.)

[21] Ant. Lib., 30.

[22] *Monumenti Antichi*, 20. 531. Other Etruscan parallels have been collected by P. Ducati, *Una Stele Etrusca del Museo Civico Bolognese*, in *Atti e Memorie d. R. Deputazione di Storia Patria per la Romagna*, 25 (1907). I have not, however, managed to get access to this book.

In spite of the fact that there is but one child, some Italian archaeologists, evidently laboring under the influence of the legend of Romulus and Remus, identify the animal as a wolf, but it is clearly a lion.[23]

Cyrus, the son of Mandane and Cambyses, was exposed by order of his grandfather, King Astyages, who had been alarmed by a dream. He was given to a shepherd and exposed, but the shepherd, at the entreaties of his wife, returned to the child and found it being suckled by a dog and defended from wild beasts and birds. This is the story as told by Justinus,[24] but we shall find that a different version was given by Herodotus.

Paris was exposed on Mount Ida because the night before his birth Hecuba had dreamed that she had brought forth a fire-brand. After being nursed for five days by a bear, he was found by shepherds who reared him.[25]

Atalanta, exposed by a father who wanted a male child, was suckled often by a bear. She was found and reared by hunters.[26]

Aesculapius, the son of Coronis and Apollo, was exposed by his mother among the mountains in the land of the Epidaurians. He was suckled by a goat and guarded by a dog until rescued by shepherds.[27]

Phylacides and Philander, children of a nymph Acacallis and Apollo, were suckled by a goat. A bronze statue of the goat suckling the infants was sent to Delphi by the city of Elyrus in Crete.[28]

Aegisthus, the son of Pelopia by her own father, was exposed by his mother. After being rescued by shepherds, he was given to a goat to be suckled.[29]

[23] Paws, breadth of face, mane and heavy-set body all show that it is a lion.

[24] 1. 4 (cf. 44. 4. 12); Ael., *Var. Hist.*, 12. 42.

[25] Schol. on Homer, *Il.*, 3. 325; Apollod., *Bibl.*, 3. 12. 5; Hyg., *Fab.*, 91; *Scriptores Rerum Mythicarum Latini*, ed. G. H. Bode, vol. 1, p. 139 (*Second Vatican Mythographer*, 197); Tzetzes, *Schol. on Lycophron*, 138; Ael., *Var. Hist.*, 12. 42. See also Pease on Cicero, *De Div.*, 1. 42.

[26] Apollod., *Bibl.*, 3. 9. 2. The story is told with elaborate detail by Aelian, *Var. Hist.*, 13. 1.

[27] Paus., 2. 26. 3–5.

[28] Paus., 10. 16. 5.

[29] Hyg., *Fab.*, 87, 88, 252; Ael., *Var. Hist.*, 12. 42.

Attis, the son of Nana, who conceived by putting into her bosom the fruit of the pomegranate, was exposed by order of his grandfather, the king or the river Sangarius. According to one account, he was tended by a he-goat; [30] according to another, he was found by Phorbas, presumably a goat-herd, and brought up on he-goat's milk.[31]

Daphnis and Chloe, whose love affairs are described by Longus, [32] were exposed in their infancy and nursed by animals, the former by a goat, [33] the latter by a ewe.[34]

Hippothous, the son of Alope and Neptune, after being exposed at his mother's orders, was suckled by a mare until found by a shepherd. He was given to a fellow-shepherd without, however, the tokens of his birth. In a dispute the shepherds appealed to King Cercyon, who found out that the child was his daughter's. He gave orders for the child to be killed, but it was exposed a second time, again suckled by the mare and found by the shepherds, who then reared it.[35]

Camilla was the daughter of Metabus, a king of the Volscian town of Privernum. When he was expelled, he took his child with him and had her suckled by a mare.[36]

Pelias and Neleus, children of Poseidon and Tyro, were exposed by their mother, but were suckled by animals, the former by a mare, the latter by a bitch. Both were found and reared by shepherds.[37]

Harpalyce, daughter of Harpalycus, king of the Amymnori, lost her mother in infancy. Her father had mares and cows suckle her.[38]

Aeolus and Boeotus, sons of Melanippe and Poseidon, were

[30] Paus., 7. 17. 11.
[31] Arnob., *Adv. Nat.*, 5. 6; 5. 13.
[32] *Daphnis and Chloe.*
[33] *Op. cit.*, 1. 2; 4. 36 *et passim.*
[34] *Op. cit.*, 1. 5; 4. 36 *et passim.*
[35] Hyg., *Fab.*, 187, 252; Ael., *Var. Hist.*, 12. 42.
[36] Hyg., *Fab.*, 252; Serv. *ad Verg., Aen.*, 1. 317.
[37] Eustath. on *Odyss.*, 11. 253, p. 1681; Ael., *Var. Hist.*, 12. 42. See also Eustath., p. 1681, who says that Pelias was struck by a mare that passed by, so that his face became black, and hence the shepherd who found him called him Pelias (from πελιός).
[38] Hyg., *Fab.*, 193; 252.

exposed by their grandfather's orders, but were suckled by a cow. They were found by herdsmen and reared by them.[39]

Antilochus, the son of Nestor, was suckled by a dog when exposed on Mount Ida.[40]

Cydon, the eponymous hero of Cydonia in Crete, was the son of Tegeates and Maera, [41] or else of Acacallis by Hermes [42] or Apollo.[43] There is no literary record of his exposure, but coins of the city show him being suckled by an animal that is obviously a dog.[44] (See Plate II, Fig. 3.)

Damascus, son of the Arcadian nymph Halimedes and Hermes, went to Syria, according to Stephanus of Byzantium, [45] and founded the city of the same name.[46] We have no literary evidence that he was exposed as a child, but two coins of Damascus minted while the city was under Roman rule show on the reverse a child sitting under a doe and grasping its teats in order to facilitate suckling.[47] (See Plate II, Fig. 4.) The child is evidently the (Greek) eponymous founder of the town. The suggestion has been made that there may be a pun on the name of the city and *dam(m)a*, [48] 'doe.' [49]

Telephus, son of Auge and Hercules, who had been exposed on Mount Parthenius by order of his maternal grandfather,

[39] Hyg., *Fab.*, 186, 252. See also Nauck, *Tragicorum Graecorum Fragmenta* (1889), pp. 509–510.

[40] Hyg., *Fab.*, 252.

[41] Paus., 8. 53. 3–4.

[42] Paus., 8. 53. 4.

[43] Stephanus of Byzantium, s. v. Κυδωνία

[44] *A Catalogue of the Greek Coins in the British Museum, Crete*, Pl. VII, Nos. 4–7. Roscher, s. v. *Apollon*, p. 439, says the animal is a wolf. It has a long, slender, sinewy body, an ideal build for a hound. I am glad to find my own view confirmed by Keller, *Die antike Tierwelt*, I. 118.

[45] S. v. Δαμασκός Stephanus gives other theories of the origin of the name.

[46] It is rather amusing to find a nation creating an eponymous hero for foreign lands. There are other instances of this process.

[47] *A Catalogue of Greek Coins in the British Museum, Galatia*, p. 286, No. 24; p. 288, No. 29 (Plate XXXV, Fig. 5).

[48] The difference in the quantity of the *a* in the initial syllables would not necessarily militate against this idea.

[49] *Neue Jahrbücher f. d. kl. Alt.*, 7 (1901), 395.

was suckled by a doe. He was found and reared by shepherds.[50] (See Plate II, Fig. 5.)

Meliteus, the child of the nymph Othreis and Zeus, was exposed in a woods by his mother because of her fear of Hera. At the wish of Zeus he was nurtured and reared by bees until found by a shepherd.[51]

Hieron II, king of Syracuse, was the son of Hierocles, a Syracusan of illustrious birth, by a servant. In consequence of his ignoble birth he was exposed, but was fed by bees for many days.[52]

There are conflicting traditions about Pindar, but according to one of them bees fed him with honey when he happened to be left alone.[53]

Cycnus, son of Scamandrodice [54] and Poseidon, was exposed on a seashore by his mother. He was rescued by fishermen whose attention was attracted to him by seeing a swan hovering above him.[55]

The popular Babylonian hero Gilgamesh (called Gilgamus by the Greeks) was the natural son of a king's daughter. The king was told by Chaldaeans that the issue of his daughter would take his kingdom from him. In fear he had the girl

[50] Apollod., *Bibl.*, 2. 7. 4; 3. 9. 1; Diod., 4. 33. 7–12; Hyg., *Fab.*, 99; Strabo, 13. 1. 69, p. 615; Dio Chrysostom, *Orat.*, 64 (p. 213, ed. Dindorf); Ael., *Var. Hist.*, 12. 42; Paus., 8. 4. 9; 8. 47. 4; 8. 54. 6; 9. 31. 2; 10. 28. 8; Tzetzes on Lycophron, 206.

Garrucci, *Le Monete dell' Italia Antica*, Pl. LXXXVI, Nos. 29–30, figures Oscan coins showing Heracles on the obverse and Telephus suckled by the doe on the reverse. See also the text on page 88. The reverse has been described as representing an Oscan hero suckled by a dog. Since the animal in question has a short tail and hoofs instead of paws, I have no doubt that it is meant to be a doe.

[51] Ant. Lib., 13.

[52] Justinus, 23. 4. 6–9.

[53] Ael., *Var. Hist.*, 12. 45; Dio Chrysostom, *Orat.*, 64 (p. 213, ed. Dindorf).

[54] According to some authorities his mother was Calyce or Harpale.

[55] Lycophron, *Alexandra*, 237, says that he was 'gull-nursed,' but Tzetzes in his note on Lycophron, 236–239, says that he was 'swan-nursed.' Tzetzes gives the most detailed form of the tradition in his note on line 232. From Porphyrius, *De Abstinentia*, 3. 17, we get confirmation of the version which says the bird was a swan.

guarded, but she gave birth to the child secretly. The guards threw it from the acropolis, but before it could be crushed upon the ground an eagle, seeing its hasty descent, swooped down under it, caught it on its back and carried it to a garden, where it was rescued and reared by the caretaker.[56]

The Persian Achaemenes was said to have been a nursling of an eagle.[57]

Ptolemy (later called Soter), the son of Lagos and Arsinoe, was exposed on a bronze shield by his father. An eagle came to it and with its wings protected it from the direct rays of the sun and sheltered it from rain. It also kept other birds away. In lieu of milk it furnished its own blood as sustenance.[58]

Into the Euphrates River there fell an egg of great size, which fish rolled to the bank. Doves sat on it and hatched out a goddess, who was afterwards called 'Syrian Venus.' From that time Syrians refrained from eating fish and regarded doves as sacred.[59]

Semiramis, the daughter of a Syrian goddess, Derceto, by a worshipper, was exposed in barren rocky regions. Doves which were nesting near by providentially reared the child. Some kept her warm by spreading their wings over her; others brought milk from neighboring camping-grounds of royal herdsmen. A year later, when the child needed more substantial food, they began to provide cheese from the same source. Moved to investigate the cause of their losses, the herdsmen found the infant. One of them, who was childless, reared the baby, calling it Semiramis from the Syrian word for 'dove.' In the meantime Derceto had thrown herself into a marsh and had been transformed into a fish. Because of this a taboo was placed on fish by the Syrians and they were honored as gods.[60]

Iamus, the son of Evadne and Apollo, was fed with honey

[56] Ael., *De Nat. Anim.*, 12. 21.

[57] *Loc. cit.*

[58] Suidas, s. v. Λάγος.

[59] Hyg., *Fab.*, 197. For references to interesting passages on the sanctity of doves in Syria, see D. W. Thompson, *A Glossary of Greek Birds*, p. 144.

[60] Diod., 2. 4. Hesychius, too, s. v. Σεμίραμις, says that the word means 'dove.'

by two serpents when his mother deserted him.[61] He became the founder of a family of seers, the Iamidae.

Closely allied to these wonder-tales are stories in which older persons are said to have been saved by animals. Thoas, an Arcadian boy, had a snake of which he was very fond, but the father, fearing its huge size and the fierceness of serpents, took it and the boy away to the woods on the same couch while they were sleeping. The boy stayed in the woods with the snake. In young manhood when he was beset by robbers, the snake heard his voice and came to his assistance.[62]

A maiden, presumably Myrmex, who was changed into an ant by Minerva, is represented on gems as being guarded by ants in her sleep, or as having an eagle hovering over her. Sometimes a snake is coiled about a tree beside her.[63] (See Plate II, Figs. 6, 7, 8.)

A remarkable case of a friendship between man and beast is quoted by Aulus Gellius.[64] During an exhibition in the Colosseum a slave was introduced to fight a fierce and powerful lion. As soon as the beast saw the man, it approached in a friendly manner and began to fawn upon him and caress him. When asked for an explanation Androclus said that while his master was holding a proconsulship in Africa he had run away and sought refuge in a cave. Not much later a lion entered and came to him gently holding up one foot. Androclus found in it a thorn which he extracted and then pressed out the clotted blood. This was the beginning of a companionship that lasted three years. Finally, becoming tired of the meat of wild animals, Androclus left the cave and was captured by soldiers. His master took him to Rome to be given to the beasts in the arena.

[61] Pind., *Olymp.*, 6. 45–47.

[62] Pliny, *Nat. Hist.*, 8. 61; Ael., *De Nat. Anim.*, 6. 63. Compare the fable in which it is said that a wolf spared Gelon, thereby indicating that he would rise to royal power. — Ael., *De Nat. Anim.*, 13. 1; Justinus, 23. 4. 6–9. Compare the rescue of Arion by a dolphin. — Gellius, *Noct. Att.*, 16. 9.

[63] See Fürtwangler, *Die antiken Gemmen*, Pl. XXV, Nos. 44–45; Pl. XXXX, Nos. 1, 49–52, 54–58. See Rossbach, *Neue Jahrbücher f. d. kl. Alt.*, 7 (1901). 398–399, for the identification of the sleeping maiden.

[64] 5. 14.

By great good fortune the lion turned loose upon him was the one he had treated in the cave.[65] Perhaps no friendship was ever renewed in more spectacular or dramatic fashion.[66]

Such stories as I have been relating must have been extremely common in antiquity. It is safe to say that many of them were lost in the destruction that overtook classical manuscripts. There are no longer extant literary traditions about a number of heroes represented on grave-stones, coins and gems as suckled by animals.

In my collection from Greek and Latin sources there are almost forty instances of children nurtured or protected by animals and two of gods. In five of these cases twins are exposed. All the children are male except Cybele, Camilla, Semiramis, Atalanta, Harpalyce and Chloe.[67] In nine accounts the gods Zeus, Poseidon, Apollo, Mars and Hermes are the reputed fathers.[68] Among wild animals serving as attendants

[65] Aelian, *De Nat. Anim.*, 8. 22, tells a fabulous tale of a stork's bringing a magic pebble to a woman who had treated its broken leg the year before.

[66] There are several points of similarity between the experience of Androclus and that of the lion-trainer of the following clipping, which I culled from a Philadelphia newspaper some twelve years ago without, unfortunately, making note of the date:

"Of all the young women in the country, Miss Ruby Roberts, of Chicago, probably has chosen the most unique method of spending her two-week vacation, for she is traveling as the guest of Leo, the big Abyssinian lion, with Ringling Brothers' circus.

"One evening recently in Indianapolis crowds in the menagerie of the show were startled by the roaring of one of the lions, and a few moments later were amazed to see a woman in street dress enter the cage. Instantly the great beast was at her feet, purring like a kitten, while she patted him on the head and fondled him as though he were a St. Bernard.

"The lion and the woman were old friends. Ten years ago, under the name of Mlle. Dorainne, Miss Roberts was a trainer for Ringling Brothers. The meeting with her old pet had been entirely by chance, and the recognition came from the lion. The woman was passing the cage when Leo opened his sleepy eyes and recognized his old mistress. He leaped to his feet, and, thrusting his paws through the bars, roared the greeting that attracted her attention."

[67] In parallels from other literatures I have noted no instance of the nursing of a girl.

[68] This is probably only another way of saying that the children were born out of wedlock. We are told by Livy, 1. 4. 2, that Rhea Silvia claimed that Mars was the father of her children, either because she actually thought

are wolves, bears, panthers, lions and deer; among domestic animals, goats, horses, cows, sheep, dogs and pigs; among birds, doves, eagles and woodpeckers, [69] among insects, bees. Fish and serpents are also listed. It will thus be seen that the animal nurses are not restricted to mammals. Although the rescuers are not always mentioned, it is stated in thirteen cases that shepherds found the infants. Of the children exposed several are eponymous heroes, namely, Romulus, [70] Aeolus, Boeotus, [71] Miletus, [72] Iamus, [73] Damascus [74] and Cydon.[75] Parrhasia already had an eponymous hero in a son of Lycaon; it is not impossible, however, that the story of Lycastus and Parrhasius is another attempt to create such a hero.

ANCIENT AND MODERN THEORIES OF THE ORIGIN OF THE STORIES

The ancients themselves were struck by the parallelism of these stories. There is not to my knowledge any other kind of folk-tale which they tried so hard to explain.

In the days when animals were supposed to be endowed with speech and understanding and were in fact put more or less on a parity with man, it was easy for such tales to gain credence and currency. In the mind of primitive man there was about them an atmosphere, not of possibility and probability, but of reality. The tales were not, however, wholly fanciful in every instance. Cases of wolf-reared children in India have been too

---

so, or because it was an extenuation of her shortcoming to have a god responsible. Servius, *ad Verg., Aen.*, 1. 273, is very explicit on this general subject.

[69] There is one reference to birds in general, Plut., *Rom.*, 2.

[70] Verg., *Aen.*, 1. 276–277. The eponymous character of this name appears more clearly in the form Romus, as given, for example, by Serv., *ad Verg., Aen.*, 1. 273.

[71] Diod., 4. 67. 6; Hyg., *Fab.*, 186, end. The same references serve for Aeolus.

[72] Ant. Lib., 30.

[73] Iamus became the founder of the Iamidae.

[74] Stephanus of Byzantium, s. v. Δαμασκός

[75] Stephanus of Byzantium, s. v. Κυδωνία; Paus., 8. 53. 4.

well authenticated to permit of doubt. A European traveller who investigated the subject with great care writes as follows:

My attention was, in the first place, drawn to this subject by the following extract from the Report of the Sekranda Orphanage, which, towards the end of the year 1872, went the round of the Indian papers:

"A boy of about ten *was burned out of a den in the company of wolves.* How long he had been with them it is impossible to say, but it must have been for rather a long period, from the facility he has for going on all fours, and his liking for raw meat. As yet he is very much like a wild animal; his very whine reminds one of a young dog or some such creature. Some years ago we had a similar child; he has picked up wonderfully, and though he has not learned to speak, can fully express his joys and grief. We trust the new 'unfortunate' may soon improve too." [76]

I immediately wrote to the Superintendent of the Sekandra Orphanage for confirmation of the story, and for any further information on the subject. To this application I received the following reply from the Rev. Mr. Erhardt. . . . "We have had two such boys here, but I fancy you refer to the one who was brought here on March 6th, 1872. He was found by Hindus who had gone hunting wolves in the neighbourhood of Mynepúri. Had been burnt out of the den, and was brought here with the scars and wounds still on him. In his habits he was a perfect wild animal in every point of view. He drank like a dog, and liked a bone and raw meat better than anything else. He would never remain with the other boys but hid away in any dark corner. Clothes he never would wear, but tore them up into fine shreds. He was only a few months among us, as he got fever and gave up eating. We kept him for a long time by artificial means, but eventually he died.

"The other boy found among wolves is about thirteen or fourteen years old, and has been here about six. He has learnt to make sounds, speak he cannot; but he freely expresses his anger and joy. Work he will at times, a little; but he likes eating better. His civilisation has progressed so far that he likes raw meat less, though he still will pick up bones and sharpen his teeth on them.

"Neither of the above are new cases, however. At the Lucknow Madhouse there was an elderly fellow only four years ago, and may be alive now, who had been dug out of a wolves' den by a European doctor, when I forget, but it must be a good number of years ago.

"The facility with which they get along on four feet (hands and feet) is surprising. Before they eat or taste any food they smell it, and when they don't like the smell they throw it away."

After giving several other instances [77] the same writer says: [78]

Supposing the above stories to be true, the only suggestions which I can offer to account for the preservation of the children from the ordinary

[76] V. Ball, *Jungle Life in India; or the Journeys and Journals of an Indian Geologist*, pp. 457–459.

[77] See pages 455–466.

[78] Page 465.

fate, are that, firstly, it may be that while one of a pair of wolves has brought back a live child to the den, the other may have contributed a sheep or goat to the day's provision, and that this latter proving sufficient for immediate wants, the child has been permitted to lie in the den, and possibly to be suckled by the female, and has so come to be recognised as a member of the family. Secondly, and, perhaps, more probably, it may be that the wolf's cubs having been stolen, the children have been carried off to fill their places, and have been fondled and suckled.

There is one curious point common to all the stories, to which attention has not been previously drawn; it is that all the children appear to have been of the same sex — namely, boys. There is no record, I believe, of a wolf-reared girl.

There are still other examples [79] of wolf-nurture that are equally trustworthy.[80]

Goats, too, have mothered children. "It is marvellous," says one writer,[81] " how soon goats find out children and tempt them to suckle. I have had the milk of my goats, when encamping for the night in African travels, drained dry by small black children, who had not the strength to do more than crawl about, but nevertheless came to some secret understanding with the goats and fed themselves."

The most reliable ancient account of animal-nursing is told by Procopius [82] in his account of the Gothic invasion of Italy. When the army under Joannes entered Picenum, there was great commotion among the population. Some of the women managed to escape by a hasty flight; others were captured. One woman of Urbs Salvia left lying on the ground in swaddling clothes a child to which she had recently given birth. When the babe began to cry a goat which had just born a kid came to it, giving it suck and protecting it from dogs and other animals. Since the situation in Picenum was disturbed for some time, the child continued under the care of its foster-mother. Finally the women who were of Roman descent returned to the town

[79] *Panjab Notes and Queries*, III (1885), Nos. 552, 602, 603, 604, 659, 660, 661; *Rept. Ind. Eth. Com.*, 1866–1867, p. 52.

[80] For most of my modern illustrations of animal nurses I am indebted to references in the valuable note of Frazer on Pausanias, vol. III, pp. 234–235.

[81] F. Galton, *Transactions of the Ethnological Society of London, N. S.*, 3 (1865), 135–136.

[82] *De Bello Gothico*, 2. 17.

with their husbands and found the child. Its healthy condition was a source of great wonder to them since they saw no apparent means of sustenance. Some of the women endeavored to nurse the child, but it refused human milk. The goat was unwilling to resign its attentions, and stood near by bleating and seeming to take it hard that the women annoyed the child. Thereupon the women stepped aside and the goat guarded and nourished the child with great care. For this reason the people called the infant Aegisthus. Procopius thus concludes his story: "When I happened to be staying there, the people wishing to show a thing that taxed belief, took me to the child and annoyed it on purpose that it might cry, but the goat, which was only a stone's throw away, on hearing it, came running to it bleating loudly, and reaching it stood over it that no one might disturb it further. Such is the story of this Aegisthus."

I see no reason for doubting this account. There is one very reassuring piece of evidence that is lacking in all the others, namely, the addiction of the infant to goat's milk. Animal-nursed children retain their wild dietary habits. Another point in favor of the narrative is that the child was not destined to become a national hero. I see no object in the fabrication of such a story. Procopius is a matter-of-fact historian.

The accounts which tell of parents or shepherds having children suckled by animals are of course not improbable in and of themselves.[83] Doctors have done the same thing in modern times.

More of these tales are related of Zeus than of any person.

[83] The ancients went a step beyond this. One writer says that the *boa*, a water-snake, was so called because it milked cows (Sol., 2. 33). Superstitious people in our own country still believe that black-snakes, garter-snakes and milk-snakes suck milk from cows. See F. D. Bergen, *Animal and Plant Lore*, pp. 86–87. "Hedgehogs fasten on the dugs of cows, and drain off the milk." — Brewer, *The Reader's Handbook*, p. 1057. I have, however, a newspaper picture showing a cow giving suck to a pig. The photographer was afraid that a verbal account of what she had seen would not be credited by her neighbors. Another newspaper picture shows a cat nursing two young squirrels after it had been deprived of its kittens. One of my newspaper clippings tells how a cat nursed a white rat that had been added to her brood of kittens. A recent moving-picture showed a dog giving suck to kittens.

There may be a reason for this. A new cult or religion finds it almost impossible to make an appeal without the aid of the miraculous, or at least of the strange and the unusual. We see this in Christianity itself and, to come nearer home, in Mormonism.

The story that doves carried ambrosia to Zeus overtaxed the credulity of several of the ancients. Athenaeus [84] makes fun of the belief. He says that the bearers were the daughters of Atlas, metamorphosed into the constellation of the Pleiades, a name which he associated etymologically with 'doves.' [85] According to a scholium on the Odyssey [86] Homer spoke mythically or metaphorically in saying that the doves which flew through the Symplegades carried ambrosia to Zeus.

Diodorus regards the story of the rearing of Semiramis as palpably mythological.[87] Strabo [88] is equally incredulous about Romulus and Remus. The account of the feeding of Zeus by bees is not worthy of the serious consideration of Columella.[89] Lactantius called it a 'poet's tale.' Arnobius [90] was disgusted with traditions about the he-goat and Attis.

Though there were in Rome 'fundamentalists' who accepted in its entirety the account of Romulus and Remus as it had been handed down, the 'liberalists' explained that the term *lupa*, 'wolf,' meant prostitute, and that the wolf that reared the foundlings was only a metaphorical one, Acca Larentia, the wife of the shepherd who rescued them.[91]

One of the numerous ancient etymologies for the names 'Romulus' and 'Remus' derives them from *ruma* or *rumis*, old Latin words for 'breast.' [92] Rumina was the goddess of suckling.

[84] *Ll. cc.*, 79–80.

[85] On the mythical astronomy of the Pleiades, see Thompson, *A Glossary of Greek Birds*, p. 132.

[86] 12. 62.

[87] 2. 5. 1.

[88] 5. 3. 2.

[89] 9. 2. 2.

[90] *Adv. Nat.*, 5. 13–14.

[91] Livy, 1. 10. 4; Plut., *Rom.*, 4. 3; Serv. *ad Verg., Aen.*, 1. 273; Aur. Vict., *Orig. Gent. Rom.*, 21.

[92] Plut., *Rom.*, 6. 2. See also Varro, *Res Rust.*, 2. 11. 5; Plin., *Nat. Hist.*, 15. 77; Festus, s. v. *Ruminalis* (pp. 332, 333, Lindsay); *Romulum* (p. 326, Lindsay).

"It appears that the word Romulus suggested to a Roman ear the notion of 'suckling.' We thus discover the association which converted the twin Lares of the Roman state into two suckling children." [93]

The fatherhood of illegitimate children is often attributed to divinities. As soon as the god Mars is brought into the story the selection of animals to tend the babes is almost inevitable. We are told by Plutarch [94] that the chief reason why the mother was believed when she ascribed their paternity to Mars was the fact that the wolf and the woodpecker were held in special veneration and honor by the Latins. The tradition about the woodpecker is not mentioned so frequently, either because it is less dramatic, or, perhaps, because it is a late accretion.

Some scholars see Greek outlines in the Romulus-Remus story and find striking parallels between it and the fragments of Sophocles's *Tyro*, in which Neleus and Pelias figure.[95] They believe that the differences are the modifications necessary to impart local color. The literature about the twin founders of Rome is, however, too involved to permit further discussion here.[96]

As was the case in Rome with Romulus, Greek or Persian rationalists endeavored to eliminate the improbable features of the legend of Cyrus by saying that the dog which raised the prince was the shepherd's wife, who was named Spako, 'Bitch.'[97]

[93] Seeley, *Livy, Book I*, p. 33.

[94] Plut., *Rom.*, 4. 2. Cf. Plut., *Mor.*, 320 D; Serv. *ad Verg., Aen.*, 1. 273.

[95] See C. Trieber, *Die Romulussage, Rhein. Mus.*, 43. 569–582; pp. 105–111 of the reference to Soltau in the next note and p. 173 of the one to Roscher. Petersen, *Klio*, 9. 45–47, does, however, take a different view. The last word on the subject has not been said.

[96] See Roscher, *Ausführliches Lexikon der griechischen und römischen Mythologie*, s. v. *Romulus;* Seeley, *Livy, Book I*, pp. 31–34; De Sanctis, *Storia dei Romani*, I. 206–217; Pais, *Storia Critica dei Romani*, I. Part 1. 289–295; F. Liebrecht, *Zur Volkskunde*, pp. 17–25 (*Romulus und die Welfen*); W. Soltau, *Die Entstehung der Romuluslegende, Archiv für Religionswissenschaft*, 12. 101–126. Twenty-four versions of the founding of Rome have been collected by G. C. Lewis, *An Inquiry into the Credibility of the Early Roman History* (1885), I. 395–401.

[97] On the Cyrus legend see A. Bauer, *Die Kyros-Sage und Verwandtes, Sitzungsberichte der philosophisch-historischen Classe der kaiserlichen Akademie der Wissenschaften*, 100: 495–578.

Herodotus [98] recounts the story only in its rationalized form. Justinus, [99] after telllng how Cyrus was nurtured by a dog, says that the wife of the shepherdess was later called Spaco, the Persian word for bitch. He does not seem to understand why. A distant echo of the ancient controversy between the 'literalists' and their opponents is seen in Dio Chrysostom's hedging statement that Fortune sent to Cyrus either a dog or a woman.[100]

The tradition that the nymphs Adrasteia and Ida, to whom Rhea gave the child, were the daughters of Melisseus (cf. μελισσεύς, 'bee-keeper') is very probably an attempt to rationalize the account.[101] The effort is a little more patent when the daughters' names are given as Melissa and Amalthea.[102] Lactantius does say in so many words that from the name Melissa originated the poet's tale that bees flew to the mouth of the child and fed him with honey.[103] Several sources tell us that Amalthea was the name not of the goat, but of the maiden or nymph who owned the goat and nursed Zeus.[104] The naming of one of the nurses Aega (cf. αἴξ, 'goat') is another evident attempt to explain away the services of the goat as milkman.[105] Only by way of jest, according to Hyginus, [106] is the goat said to have nursed Zeus.

The ancient fondness for aetiology will doubtless account for some of these wonder-tales. Frazer [107] would put the legend of Aesculapius in this category:

"From . . . inscriptions we see that sacred dogs were kept in the sanctuary of Aesculapius, and that they were supposed to heal the sick by licking them. Festus (*s. v. In insula*) says that "dogs are kept in the temple of Aesculapius because he was

[98] 1. 122. [99] 1. 4. 14.

[100] *Orat.*, 64 (p. 213, ed. Dindorf).

[101] See Frazer, Apollodorus, 1. 1. 6, and note *ad loc.*

[102] Lactantius, *Div. Inst.*, 1. 22.

[103] *Loc. cit.* Cf. Colum., *De Re Rust.*, 9. 2.

[104] Aratus ap. Strab., 8. 7. 5, p. 387; Hyg., *Astron.*, 2. 13; *Second Vatican Mythographer*, 16 (in G. H. Bode, *Scriptores Rerum Mythicarum Latini*); Eratosthenes, *Cataster.*, 13; Ovid., *Fasti*, 5. 115–116.

[105] Hyg., *Astron.*, 2. 13.

[106] *Astron.*, 2. 13.

[107] *Pausanias*, vol. III, p. 250.

suckled by a bitch." Lactantius (*Divin. Inst.*, 1. 10) also says that the youthful Aesculapius was nourished on dog's milk. Hence the story told by Pausanias (ii. 26. 4) that the infant Aesculapius was suckled by a goat and guarded by a dog, appears to be an attempt to combine two separate legends, which explained the sacredness of the goat and dog in the worship of Aesculapius by saying that the god had been suckled by a goat or (according to the other version) by a dog."

To reward the goat for its services Zeus placed it among the constellations, so says tradition.[108] May the process have worked the other way? May not the story of the nurture of Zeus by a goat have been created to account for the presence of the goat among the constellations?

There can not be much doubt that the story of the Syrian goddess is told to explain the peculiar esteem of the Syrians for fish and doves. The fable of Semiramis may be regarded as a variant with the same end in view, as far as it concerns fish. Diodorus [109] says that the taboo on fish dates from her mother's transformation into a fish. His failure to make mention of the Syrian regard for doves and his derivation of the name Semiramis from the word for 'dove' incline me to believe that the major portion of the tale explains how the heroine got her beautiful and striking name.

The makeshift nature of the association of fish and doves with Semiramis and Derceto is shown by the fact that there are still other ways of accounting for the taboos on these creatures. One author [110] says it is due to the fish-like form of Derceto and to Semiramis's final transformation into a dove; another, [111] after making Rhea a meteorological deity, says that Hera seems to be the same as the goddess Atargatis whom the Syrians honor by refraining from eating fish and doves, which are symbolic of air and water. The Syrian taboo on fish and doves is probably just as unexplainable as that of the Hebrews on pork.

[108] Serv. *in Verg., Aen.*, 9. 665; *in Georg.*, 1. 205; Ovid, *Fasti*, 5. 117–128.

[109] Diod., 2. 4. 2.

[110] Lucian (?), *De Syria Dea*, 17.

[111] Cornutus, *Theologiae Graecae Compendium*, c. 6.

Stories other than that of Semiramis may be due to the suggestion of a name. Among the ancients proper names (as well as ordinary words) were regarded as significant, and there are many passages dwelling on the suitability or unsuitability of a name to its possessor. One Greek who was not satisfied with the Homeric etymology of the name Odysseus [112] saw in it a more or less superficial resemblance to the noun ὁδός, 'road,' and the infinitive ὗσαι, 'to rain.' [113] Hence the story was created out of the whole cloth to the effect that the mother of Odysseus was overcome with the pangs of childbirth while on a journey and that the child was named with reference to the rain in the road.[114]

The ancients said that Aegisthus, [115] Cycnus, [116] Hippothous,[117] Melitus,[118] Telephus [119] and Attis [120] were named from the animals that reared them. If there was any association at all between these individuals and animals, it is likely that it was due to the names of the persons. Several dozen Greek and Latin proper names are derived from words designating animals and there are many puns that were suggested by them. Lactantius did in fact ascribe to the suggestion that lay in the names Amalthea and Melissa the story that Zeus was fed by a goat and by bees. I take at its face value, however, the story of the naming of the Aegisthus in the account of Procopius.

A satisfactory explanation of the association of the bee with Zeus has been made by A. B. Cook: [121] "Left to itself it chooses as its abode some crevice in cliff or stone. Wilkinson, writing of

[112] *Odyss.*, 19. 407–409.

[113] Silenus ap. Eustath. on *Odyss.*, 19. 407.

[114] Παρὰ τὸ ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ ὗσαι.

[115] Hyg., *Fab.*, 87.

[116] Porphyrius, *De Abs.*, 3. 17; Tzetzes, ad Lycophron, 232.

[117] Hyg., *Fab.*, 187.

[118] Ant. Lib., 13.

[119] In the account of Apollodorus, 2. 7. 4, the name seems to be derived from *thele*, 'dug,' and *elaphos*, 'deer.' See Frazer, *ad loc.*

[120] Arnob., *Adv. Nat.*, 5. 6, says that Attis was so named either from the Phrygian words for goats, *attagi*, or because handsome fellows in general had such a name.

[121] P. 17 of *The Bee in Greek Mythology*, *Journal of Hellenic Studies*, 15. 1–24.

Egypt, says —[122] 'The wild bees live mostly under stones or in clefts of the rock, as in many other countries; and the expression of Moses and of the Psalmist, *honey out of the rock*,[123] shows that in Palestine their habits were the same.' What applied to Egypt and the Levant held good for Greece . . . ." [124]

The legend domiciled bees in the Cretan cave. As Cook explains,[125] nothing could be more natural than that the bees haunting the traditional birthplace of Zeus should be regarded as his attendants.

Another tack must be used to account for the connection of the bee with Pindar. The figure of honeyed words or speech is common in Greek, being well established in Homer and Hesiod, the earliest Greek writers extant. It was doubtless this metaphor that gave rise to the idea that bees alighted upon or fed infants that were destined to become sweet singers or eloquent speakers.[126]

There is at present a tendency to find evidences of totemism in classical folk-lore.[127] I have seen the suggestion made in print three times that the stories under discussion are due to, or survivals of, totemism.[128] In conversation with me an anthropologist of wide experience attributed them to the same source. Totemism would explain the Syrian taboo on fish and doves. Again, the common North American Indian story in which the suckled child takes the name of the animal that nursed him and becomes the progenitor of a tribe named from the animal,[129] is certainly not radically different from the classical type in which an eponymous hero is suckled.

[122] *The Ancient Egyptians*, II. 415.

[123] *Deut.*, xxxii. 13; *Psa.*, lxxxi. 16.

[124] See Homer, *Iliad*, 2. 87 ff.; 12. 167 ff.

[125] *Op. cit.*, p. 5.

[126] See A. S. Pease on Cicero, *De Divinatione*, 1. 78; Margaret W. Morley, *The Honey-Makers*, pp. 286–287; Robert-Tornow, *De Apium Mellisque apud Veteres Significatione*, pp. 89–103, 114–118.

[127] E.g., Jane Harrison, *Themis*, pp. 118–157.

[128] De Sanctis, *Storia dei Romani*, I. 213–214; Pais, *Storia Critica di Roma*, I. Part I, 293; J. A. Macculloch, *The Childhood of Fiction*, p. 277, n. 2. Roscher, *Lexikon der griechischen und römischen Mythologie*, s. v. Romulus, p. 176, takes no stock in this theory.

[129] For an illustration see S. T. Rand, *Legends of the Micmacs*, pp. 259–262.

A close European analogue to the American tales, later in date than the classical versions but representing an earlier type, is that of the ancestor of the Turks: "Like Romulus, the founder of that martial people was suckled by a she-wolf, who afterwards made him the father of a numerous progeny; and the representation of that animal in the banners of the Turks preserved the memory, or rather suggested the idea, of a fable which was invented, without any mutual intercourse, by the shepherds of Latium and those of Scythia." [130]

While totemism offers a tempting solution of the 'type' story, so to speak, it seems best to accept this explanation with reservation, at least until classical scholars with training in anthropology cease to question the evidence for the existence of totemism among the Greeks and Romans.

THE THEORY OF WONDER-CHILDREN

I think there can be little doubt as to the psychological reason for the creation of most of these stories. They illustrate the tendency, which still exists, for incidents and anecdotes to cluster about the names and careers of distinguished men. They are 'human interest' stories which do not fail to manifest the reporter's fondness for exaggeration. The ancients wished to show that evidences of divine favor and omens of future greatness attended the hero or god even in youth.

Suggestions of divine intervention and protection are in fact made by the ancients in narrating the youthful vicissitudes of Romulus and Remus,[131] Lycastus and Parrhasius,[132] Cyrus,[133] Cybele,[134] Semiramis,[135] Telephus,[136] Daphnis and Chloe,[137] Hippothous [138] and Habis.[139] The feeding of Hieron II by bees was interpreted by soothsayers as portending sovereignty for the

[130] Gibbon, *The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, chap. 42.
[131] Livy, 1. 4. 4; Dionys., 1. 79.
[132] Plut., *Mor.*, 314 E (*Parallels*, 36).
[133] Herod., 1. 122.
[134] Diod., 3. 58. 1.
[135] Diod., 2. 4. 4.
[136] Apollod., 2. 7. 4.
[137] Longus, *Daphnis and Chloe*, 3. 32; 4. 36.
[138] Hyg., *Fab.*, 187.
[139] Just., 44. 4.

infant.[140] Pliny[141] thinks it better to attribute the suckling of infants by animals not to the nature of animals, but to the grandeur of the destinies to be fulfilled. The mothering beast and the foster-father, frequently in the guise of a shepherd, appear with the timeliness of a *deus ex machina* in a divine tragedy.

One ancient writer says that a person fortunate enough to have had an animal-nurse boasted not so much of his pedigree as of his having been nursed by an animal.[142] In concluding his recital of the youthful perils of Romulus and Remus Plutarch says:[143] "But we should not be incredulous when we see what a poet fortune sometimes is, and when we reflect that the Roman state would not have attained to its present power, had it not been of a divine origin, and one which was attended by great marvels."

These wonder-tales are told in general of national heroes and distinguished persons.[144] They were regarded as proofs of the destinies that controlled the ends of heroes and heroines. It is obvious, however, that they were created after the attainment of greatness or prominence. Their adventitious character is shown at times by the existence of other conflicting stories which seem to be older or more natural.[145]

There were, however, other ways of indicating wonder-

[140] Just., 23. 4. 6–9.

[141] *Nat. Hist.*, 8. 61. In the Wolfdietrich story the wolf's taking the baby prince to its lair was a manifest sign that God intended to aid the babe in its future life. See Liebrecht, *Zur Volkskunde*, p. 462.

[142] Porphyrius, *De Abstinentia*, 3. 17.

[143] *Rom.*, 8. 7. Perrin's translation. I should suggest 'craftsman' instead of 'poet' in the translation.

[144] The story of Daphnis and Chloe I regard as a literary use of a folk-tale. In his introduction the author tells us that while hunting in the grove of the Nymphs in Lesbos he saw a picture in which there were cattle suckling infants. This and some other things that he saw inspired him to write the romance. The first story in Kipling's *Jungle Book*, *Mowgli's Brothers*, which pictures a child among wolves, is another instance of the same sort of thing.

[145] To disregard the many conflicting accounts of the founding of Rome, contrast the stories of Aeolus and Boeotus as told by Hyginus, *Fabulae*, 186, and Diodorus, 4. 67. For the fable of Attis compare Arnobius, *Adv. Nat.*, 5. 6 and 5. 13 with Pausanias, 7. 17. 11.

children. There was a prevalent notion that when a child smiled or laughed at birth the future held something unusual in store for him.[146] If an insect fed an infant that was not exposed the event was portentous. A grain of wheat put in the mouth of the youthful Midas by an ant was a sign that he would be a rich man.[147] If a bee alighted on the cradle of a sleeping infant and placed honey in its lips, the event was an omen of eternal felicity.[148] "Those who were possessed of supernatural shrewdness, in particular singers and sages, are said to have been fed by bees, commonly during infancy." [149] Throughout the entire day on which Alexander the Great was born eagles remained perched on his father's house, an omen that signified double sway over Europe and Asia.[150] When the Indian Sandrocottus, exhausted by his efforts to escape his pursuers, lay down to sleep, a lion approached him and wiped off his streaming perspiration with his tongue. This omen aroused him to aspire to the kingdom.[151]

Whatever may have been the origin of the 'type' story of animal-nursed children, when these tales became common in historical times, they formed simply one, though an important, entry in the catalogue of things that signified wonder-children.

University of Michigan

[146] See D. R. Stuart, *On Vergil, Eclogue IV. 60–63*, *Classical Philology*, 16. 209–230. See also the chapter on *Le Rire Rituel* in S. Reinach, *Cultes, Mythes et Religions*, Vol. IV, pp. 109–129.

[147] Cic., *De Div.*, 1. 78; Val. Max., 1. 6. *Ext.* 2; Ael., *Var. Hist.*, 12. 45.

[148] Hae (apes) solidae et aeternae felicitatis indices exstiterunt, dormientis in cunis parvuli labellis mel inserendo. — Val. Max., 1. 6. *Ext.* 3.

[149] Cook, *Journal of Hellenic Studies*, 15. 7. For references see p. 9 and also A. S. Pease on Cicero, *De Divinatione*, 1. 78.

[150] Just., 12. 16. 5.

[151] Just., 15. 4. 13–20.

EXPLANATION OF PLATE II

FIG. 1. Clay impression of a seal found with the archives of the palace of Knossos, showing infant and horned sheep (× 3). Reproduced from *The Journal of Hellenic Studies*, XXI: 129.

FIG. 2. The reverse of a Roman denarius, showing the wolf suckling Romulus and Remus (× 2). The object on the tree just above the wolf's back is a bird, evidently a woodpecker. The figure behind the wolf is the shepherd. Reproduced from *A Catalogue of the Roman Coins in the British Museum*, Vol. III, Plate XXVI, Fig. 6.

FIG. 3. A coin of Cydonia, showing the eponymous hero Cydon suckled by a dog. Reproduced from *A Catalogue of the Greek Coins in the British Museum, Crete*, Plate VII, Fig. 4.

FIG. 4. A coin of Damascus, showing a child, an eponymous hero (?), suckled by a doe. Reproduced from *A Catalogue of the Greek Coins in the British Museum, Galatia*, Plate XXXV, Fig. 5.

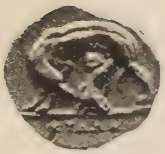
FIG. 5. A small section of a wall painting from Herculaneum, showing Telephus suckled by a hind. Reproduced from *Guide du Musée National de Naples*, Plate 6.

FIGS. 6, 7, 8. Gems showing a maiden attended during her sleep by a serpent, by a bee and an eagle, and by an ant and an eagle. Reproduced from Fürtwangler, *Die antiken Gemmen*, Vol. I, Plate XXX, Figs. 56, 52 and 58, respectively. (The figures are enlarged × $1\frac{3}{5}$, $1\frac{4}{5}$, $2\frac{1}{6}$, respectively.)

PLATE II

1

2



3

4

6

5

7

8

Antiquities showing Children Nursed by Animals (1–5) and a Maiden (Myrmex?) Guarded by Them (6–8)

EARLY MUSICAL SCALES IN THE LIGHT OF THE TWENTIETH CENTURY

CHARLES K. WEAD *

YOUR attention is invited to a brief examination of some general aspects of the study of the beginnings of music and to some conclusions based on recent monographs. The subjects of rhythm and percussion instruments must be excluded and the discussion limited to *early musical scales in the light of the twentieth century.*

The early history of music both among the ancients and among primitive people now living is very imperfectly known; the successful study of it requires various kinds of knowledge rarely if ever possessed by one man — knowledge of foreign tongues, of psychology, of physics, and a little but not too much knowledge of European music.

But what does one mean by "scale"? Disregarding medieval usages we today may mean by it (*a*) the series of sounds (or the notation of them) used in any musical performance arranged in order of pitch; (*b*) the series of sounds produced upon a particular instrument; or (*c*) most definitely, an independently reproducible series of sounds arranged in order of pitch, recognized as a standard, and fitted for musical purposes.

This last definition covers only comparatively modern music and applies especially and predominantly to the equally tempered chromatic scale and to the diatonic scale, just or tempered; but it also covers Debussy's whole-tone scale and the five pentatonic scales used in many Scotch tunes that can be played on the black keys of the piano. This meaning, therefore, involves a host of modern ideas of tonality, relationship, and the like, laboriously taught to the musician, which he can scarcely avoid carry-

* Formerly professor of Physics at the University of Michigan; afterwards for over twenty years an examiner of musical instrument applications in the U. S. Patent Office.

ing over to scales of primitive peoples; the word "pentatonic" suggests a precision not often warranted by our knowledge of primitive music and not involved in the English term "five-tone" or "five step." I wish the word and the word "natural" might be banished from the literature of early music.

It has just been implied that our knowledge of early music is very incomplete and the voluminous literature on the subject is very unconvincing. We may note five reasons for this condition.

(1) Among most if not all civilized peoples the arts were prehistoric and were attributed to Gods or heroes; by the time men were ready to form theories, if they ever reached that stage, the early steps were forgotten; to our generation some of the probable steps are suggested by existing instruments of primitive people.

(2) Because of contradictory or erroneous statements of writers, as the fable of Pythagoras's hammers, the alleged Arab scale of thirds-of-a-tone, or the Hindu scale of quarter tones. Boethius's writings confused European musicians for a thousand years.

(3) The ingrained conviction of the ordinary musical writer that our common diatonic scale, given by the white keys of a well-tuned piano or organ, is a natural scale and that every performer aims to use it. The result is that generally a transcription of exotic music is colored and falsified by extraneous harmonic associations as truly as a landscape is changed when one looks at it through colored glass. Many illustrations might be cited; for example, the pianist who some thirty years ago accompanied the first troupe of Fisk Jubilee Singers to England told me that some of their songs could not properly be accompanied by the piano because they are not in the piano scale. Professor Fillmore (1) after adding harmonies to Miss Fletcher's transcriptions of American Indian songs finds some "curious results" which he catalogues; then he adds: "These points cover pretty much the whole ground of modern harmonic structure"!

(4) Many of our musical terms have or have had two or more meanings, and terms taken from the Greek are often confusingly changed in meaning; the words scale, harmony, enharmonic are illustrations.

(5) The lack of a suitable notation. The present one carries inevitably harmonic associations that disguise a simple melody written in it. The scientific staff in occasional use for more than a century has thirteen lines to the octave. Since these are too numerous to be distinguished readily, alternate lines may be omitted; the result corresponds to Debussy's whole-tone scale and to the Janko key-board; to identify lines, letters (clefs) may be added, or those lines may be drawn heavier that correspond either to the ordinary staff or to the black keys of the piano. This staff corresponds to the piano-scale with its equal steps and is ideal for scientific purposes. Of course no one imagines it will ever displace the present staff with its wealth of printed music.

These are some of the causes of the failure of the histories of music in past centuries against which the modern scientific student must guard himself.

A new era began with the publication in 1863 of Helmholtz's famous work on the *Sensations of Tone as a Physiological Basis for the Theory of Music,* the English translation of which appeared in 1875. This was a great stimulus to the scientific study of music and led to many controversies with musicians; the latter, as artists, rightly resented the dicta of some scientific men saying "Thou shalt" or "Thou shalt not," but their denials of the results of scientific research sometimes revealed pitiable ignorance. We now see that his theory of harmony as based on harmonic over-tones and beats was not adequate and was not so much a universal explanation as a justification of the music and the instruments of his day.

The new materials now in the twentieth century at one's disposal include several great collections of instruments with catalogs of most of them; several treatises on non-European music, especially translations of Oriental writings; great collections of phonographed records of primitive music and transcriptions of them, notably of American Indian songs by Miss Frances Densmore, published by the United States Bureau of Ethnology (2), and of Asiatic and African people by Dr. Hornbostel of Berlin, which are scattered through various journals; also Balfour's monograph (3) on the musical bow and Sach's on Egyptian instru-

ments (4) and Lavignac's *Encyclopédie* (5); Bingham's brief paper (6) in the *Psychological Bulletin*, 1914, gives an admirable summary and bibliography of recent progress.

Before we discuss these and other materials at our disposal, consider the state of mind in which one should approach the problems of exotic music. Some observers and writers seek to show how much it has in common with our music; they treat music as a universal language, in spite of familiar incidents to the contrary, as the aversion of most hearers to music not of their familiar type, or the inability of the singers at the Munich opera house to learn some of Wagner's music, so that preparations for the performance of it had to be abandoned.

But a more liberal and scientific state of mind is possible. In the presence of an unfamiliar instrument or picture or description of one, the serious student should try to answer the questions "What did the maker of this instrument do?" (defining the result by numbers and measures) and "Why did he do it?" The serious attempt to answer these questions will develop the sympathetic attitude which is characteristic of culture as truly as classical studies are supposed to do. Many of the ordinary writings on far-away music are not only unscientific but unsympathetic, dogmatic and illiberal.

Assume now that we have before us a great collection of early or primitive instruments or pictures of them.

Consider first the instruments of the flute type, distinguished from simple whistles by the fact that several sounds of different pitch may be drawn from each of them. For present purposes it is immaterial whether the vibrations are excited by blowing across the open end of the tube, or across a hole in the side of the tube, or by using a mouth-piece, or a single reed like the clarinet or a double reed like the oboe. Such instruments are found all over the world. The tube may be cylindrical or conical; the important feature for present purposes is the series of holes burned or bored along the side; their location depends in part on the relative lengths of the tube and the player's arm; if the tube is very long the lowest hole is often at a considerable distance above the lower end of the tube. Now it seems a very

obvious thing to produce a sound by blowing in the end of a tube as a hollow plant stem (Lucretius says they whistle in the wind) and to get other sounds by making holes in the sides of the tube and likewise obvious to stop these holes by the fingers. No great degree of intelligence is needed to take these steps. But the next step shows intelligence — the application of older ideas of artistic satisfaction due to repetition of similar designs. This led to locating the holes of the flute at equal distances; a definite fixed succession of sounds could then be produced which may clearly be called a scale, but it was unlike any modern European scale, for the successive intervals became greater as the notes became higher. In other words the specific audible results were a secondary result or a by-product of a construction made to appeal to the eye (7). This view has been adopted and developed by Hornbostel (9).

A modified type of the construction has the holes in two groups, the distance between the groups being greater than that between adjacent holes. Both types are widely distributed over the earth, from the pipes taken from Egyptian tombs to the bamboo or pottery tubes of modern primitive people. Varieties of these flutes are illustrated in a paper of mine published by the Smithsonian Institution in 1902 (7). The number of holes would naturally be six, three for each hand, while the double flutes would have three or four holes. After men had acquired ideas of a definite standard scale, this primitive scale was corrected by varying the location of the holes and changing their diameters; so the flute became a complicated thing until a century ago Boehm reconstructed it.

Going back to Egyptian times we may note that the end-blown long-flute is figured on a tablet older than the first dynasty, which is dated by Breasted as beginning about 3400 B.C. (4). The double oboe and clarinet appear about 2700 B.C. Loret (5) has collected data regarding nearly fifty actual instruments in the museums of Europe; many have the holes at substantially equal distances and it is doubtful if any of them give our scale except accidentally.

Another wind instrument of extreme interest comprises an

air chamber with a whistle-mouthpiece and a few openings that may be closed by the fingers. No formula is found for this in text books on acoustics. One form of this has come down from early Chinese times. The most beautiful specimens are from Costa Rican graves and are now in the Washington museum (7). These are of pottery in a crude bird-shape and have four finger holes; in the best specimen these holes are acoustically equivalent, so only five sounds can be produced, viz., F, A, C, D, E, or do, me, sol, la, si. A formula was deduced that involves the square root of the sum of the diameters of the uncovered openings; the computed pitch agrees with the observed pitch to one-eighth of a semi-tone. It will be observed that the successive intervals decrease as the pitch rises; also that if the finger holes have unequal diameters, the pitch will depend on which openings are uncovered; so with only four finger holes sixteen notes are possible but nine is the greatest number found. Here, as with the flutes, the holes are located in a symmetrical way and evidently form a design. But observe that a score of these instruments substantially alike to the eye may furnish a score of sensibly different series of notes; the idea of a standard pitch and of one or a few standard series of notes had not yet developed; there is here no scale under the third definition above.

To turn to the string instruments, probably no one doubts that they have developed from the hunting bow. Balfour has collected figures showing forms of the "musical bow" from all parts of the world. Many of them have gourd resonators or other means of strengthening the sound, and some I think show means for readily varying the tension and so the pitch. The subsequent steps in the development have not yet been systematically traced; two of them were:

Putting two or more strings on one bow;

Fastening two or more bows side by side, each bow having its own string.

The results of development along this line were the harps and lyres. In the harps the strings were of different lengths and so the compass of the instrument might be much greater than that of the lyre; but the harps of classical times have no front pillar

and so the total tension on the strings must have been small. Several forms of harps are shown on the monuments as in use by the Egyptians — the bow-harp, stutz-harp, shoulder-harp, angle-harp (4).

In the lyres (including the Greek *cithara* and *phorminx*) the strings were of nearly equal length, but the diameter and tension of the strings doubtless were varied to produce a scale. The Egyptian lyres generally appear to have been held with the strings extending away from the player, but among the Greeks the strings were nearly upright.

One would like to know about the tuning of these instruments, but there is little told us; there was no standard pitch corresponding to our A of 435 vibrations or the Chinese Lu. What appear to be tuning pegs like ours were generally only pegs to wedge the strings into a hole, so precision of tuning was impossible and it is questionable whether the crude strings under a slight tension would give notes whose scale-relations were clear, even if the player had somehow learned of definite relations.

The one instrument that could furnish a standard series of intervals is the guitar or lute; this is widely found throughout the world and has been developed in the violin to be a most important instrument. It comprises (*a*) a resonance body, box, sounding-board, or belly; (*b*) a rod or neck extending from one end of the body; (*c*) one or more strings attached to the belly and neck lying parallel to the neck and near enough to it so that any of them can be pressed against it by the player's finger and the vibrating length be determined. Many forms of the instrument have points marked by the maker or tuner whereat the strings are to be stopped. These markings are called frets; like the borings on flutes, they are sometimes found equally spaced. This is the case in the lute which appears on a Babylonian monument as early as 2500 B.C. and on an Egyptian one about 1500 B.C. Strangely the lute was practically unknown to the Greeks.

But I have no doubt that it was by the lute or the acoustically similar monochord that the numerical relations were obtained, 8/9, 3/2, etc., which Ptolemy and many followers have given and which are credited to Pythagoras though he probably learned

them in Egypt. One who desires to know how an old-time musician used these instruments to give definite scales may read Land's French translation of Al-Farabi's Arabic treatise of about 1000 A.D.

The remaining points that there is time to speak of may best be connected with a chronological chart. (Chart exhibited.) We take Egypt as furnishing the longest and best time scale among the ancient states, indicating the dynasties and years when certain instruments appear in the records; for comparison a few other events are noted. The Sumerians had the long-flute and the lyre before 4000 B.C.; the Chinese claim a date of about 2700 B.C.; the Homeric period is put at about 1300 B.C., — about half-way from the date of the Sumerian record to our own time; Pythagoras came about 600 B.C. and most of the Greek writers on music between 200 B.C. and 200 A.D. It will surprise most people to see how far Greece was from the beginning musically.

The more one studies the long history of music the more he will hope that the archaeologists may find an inscription or manuscript that will throw light on the way the ancients came to fix on three, four or seven strings for the lyre.

Ann Arbor, Michigan

BIBLIOGRAPHY

1. Peabody Museum, Harvard Archaeol. and Ethnol. Papers, 1893.
2. Bureau of Amer. Ethnol., Bulletins 45, 53, 61, 75, 80. Washington, 1910–1923.
3. Balfour, H. The Natural History of the Musical Bow. Oxford, 1899.
4. Sachs, Curt. Die Musikinstr. des alten Aegyptens. Berlin, 1921.
5. Lavignac, A. Encycl. de la Musique. Paris, 1914–1922.
6. Bingham, W. V. Five Years of Progress in Comparative Musical Science. Psychol. Bull., Vol. XI, No. 11. Nov., 1914.
7. Wead, C. K. Contributions to the History of Musical Scales. U. S. Nat'l Museum, Rept. for 1900. Washington, 1902.
8. Land, J. P. N. Recherches sur l'Histoire de la Gamme Arabe. Congr. Intern. des Orientalistes. Leyden, 1885.
9. Zeitschrift für Ethnologie. Berlin, 1911, p. 603.

GENETIC FACTORS FOR YELLOW ENDOSPERM COLOR IN MAIZE*

E. G. ANDERSON

Yellow endosperm color has long been used in genetic studies in maize. But it early became evident that more than one genetic factor is frequently involved. East (1910) observed 15–to–1 ratios and reported two factors for yellow. These factors were assumed to give yellows of equal or nearly equal intensity, the two combined giving a deeper yellow. Emerson (1911) reported two factors for yellow, one for deep or golden-yellow, the other for pale yellow. White (1917) has reported a factor for white endosperm which is dominant to yellow. The influence of endosperm texture on endosperm color has probably been recognized by all who have worked on yellow endosperm, even where no mention of it is made in their papers. The difference in color in reciprocal crosses due to the diploid nature of the polar nucleus has been recognized in most of the later reports. The terminology used by different writers has not been uniform and has led to some confusion.

In order to use yellow endosperm effectively in linkage studies, it was necessary to know more definitely the factors dealt with. In addition to checking up the yellow endosperm factors present in the writer's own cultures, tests were made with yellow types from other sources. A comparison of the yellows supplied by several workers made it possible to eliminate some of the confusion due to differences in terminology.

TESTS

In addition to types from other sources, a number of yellow strains were selected from the writer's cultures and others from

* Paper from the Department of Botany of the University of Michigan, No. 206, reporting research conducted by the author while holding appointment as National Research Fellow in Biology.

Dr. R. A. Emerson's cultures, in an effort to get types showing different intensities of yellow and differences in clearness of segregation into yellow and white. All were crossed with white endosperm, dilute purple plants (*y b Pl*). The hybrids were then crossed with pollen from white endosperm sun-red plants (*y B pl*) in order to test for linkage with the *Pl* factor for plant color (Emerson, 1921). Recessive *b* factor in the hybrid gave less purplish coloration in the pericarp than the dominant *B*, thus enabling the separations of endosperm colors to be made more easily. The dominant *B* factor was introduced in the outcross in order to facilitate the separation of plant colors in the field.

The results of this series of tests can be stated in a very few words. All the deep yellows showed linkage with *Pl*. These yellows are almost certainly due to the same yellow factor, *Y*, which had been previously shown to be linked with *Pl* (Emerson, 1921). The pale yellows tested have shown no linkage with *Pl*. No further work has been carried on to test for identity among the pale yellows.

Among the yellows tested were the two used by Babcock and Collins (1918) under the names of "amber" and "yellow." These correspond to the yellow and pale yellow of Emerson (1911) and others. The yellow used by White (1917) in tests with the dominant white factor is also a pale yellow. No material was available from East's early work (1910) in which he discovered the presence of two factors for yellow. His data are readily interpreted on the basis of a deep and a pale yellow such as are usually present in yellow dent varieties.

Tests on the dominant white factor have shown it to be dominant to the deep yellow. Dominance is, however, not complete. Tests on the linkage relations of this factor are in progress.

THE KNOWN FACTORS FOR YELLOW ENDOSPERM COLOR

At the present time three genetic factors for endosperm color in maize are sufficiently well known to be used in linkage tests and other genetic studies. The terminology given here is in common use among most workers in maize genetics.

Y — Yellow. — This dominant factor gives the deep yellow to orange-yellow endosperm color found in nearly all yellow varieties of maize. Dominance is incomplete, the heterozygous forms being lighter in color than the homozygous dominant. The hybrid $y \times Y$ is lighter in color than the reciprocal $Y \times y$. This has been explained by the fact that the endosperm is triploid in constitution, the polar or endosperm nucleus of the embryo sac being diploid. The *Y* factor for yellow endosperm has been shown to be linked with the following genetic factors; *Pl* (Emerson, 1921), *sm* (Anderson, 1921), *pm*[1] (Eyster, 1924) W_5 (Demerec, 1923), W_6 (Demerec, 1923) and W_1 (Stroman, in press; also Lindstrom, 1923).

Yp — Pale yellow. — This factor, also dominant, gives a pale or light yellow color. This yellow, in addition to being more dilute than the deep yellow, also differs in being a clear or lemon-yellow, never approaching orange- or amber-yellow. No data showing any linkage with pale yellow have been published. It is, however, known to be linked with a factor for pale-green seedling color (unpublished data of Dr. M. Demerec).

Wh. — Dominant white endosperm color. — It is dominant to both deep and pale yellow, but dominance is not complete. No linkage data are available.

In addition to the three factors listed there are others which may well be classed as modifying factors. Chief among these are the factors affecting endosperm texture. The hard translucent endosperms of the flint and pop corns become a much more intense yellow than do the soft opaque starchy or flour corns. The intensity of color is also very much affected by the waxy and sugary conditions of endosperm texture. There is some evidence of rather pronounced endosperm color modifiers not related to any obvious differences in endosperm texture. Since, however, these factors are hardly adapted for use as aids in further genetic work, it has not been thought worth while to devote further time and energy toward their analysis.

University of Michigan

[1] In the text of Dr. Eyster's paper *pm* was incorrectly stated to be linked with pale yellow. The F_2 data presented are from dihybrids of constitution *Y y Pm pm Yp Yp*.

LITERATURE CITED

ANDERSON, E. G. 1921. The Inheritance of Salmon Silk Color in Maize. Cornell University Agricultural Exp. Sta., Memoir 48: 535–554.

—— 1922. Heritable Characters of Maize. Fine Streaked Leaves. Journ. Heredity, 13: 91–92.

BABCOCK, E. B., AND COLLINS, J. L. 1918. Genetics Laboratory Manual, McGraw-Hill Book Co., New York.

DEMEREC, M. 1923. Inheritance of White Seedlings in Maize. Genetics, 8: 561–593.

EAST, EDWARD M. 1910. A Mendelian Interpretation of Variation that is Apparently Continuous. Amer. Nat., 44: 65–82.

EMERSON, R. A. 1911. Latent Colors in Corn. Ann. Rept. Amer. Breeder's Assn., 6: 233–237.

—— 1921. The Genetic Relations of Plant Colors in Maize. Cornell Univ. Agric. Exp. Sta., Memoir 39: 1–156.

EYSTER, W. H. 1924. A Primitive Sporophyte in Maize. Amer. Journ. Bot., 11: 7–14.

LINDSTROM, E. W. 1923. Genetical Research with Maize. Genetica, 5: 327–356.

WHITE, O. E. 1917. Inheritance of Endosperm Color in Maize. Amer. Journ. Bot., 4: 396–406.

FOMES FRAXINEUS FR. IN CULTURE*

DOW V. BAXTER

It is known that *Fomes fraxineus* (Plate III) is a rare plant in the United States. Atkinson (1) reported the fungus as being entirely confined to ash, occurring on the European ash in Europe and on our native ash species in the United States. Lloyd (8) writes that it occurs on ash, apple and locust in Europe, where the fungus is said to be common. In this country, Kauffman (7) reports the fungus in Michigan on ash. It has since been seen in this state on oak and maple. In all cases the collections were found on stumps, and so the fungus is regarded as a true saprophyte. In addition to Michigan, Overholts (12) records it for Ohio, Illinois and Iowa, as occurring usually on ash. Murrill (11) reports it from New York and Louisiana in addition, and also states that it occurs on trunks and stumps of sweet gum and peach.

THE IDENTITY OF *FOMES FRAXINEUS* FR.

Fomes fraxineus has been frequently confused with other fungi. Von Shrenk (16) discusses this plant on ash along with *Fomes fraxinophilus* in connection with his work on the decay of white ash. Speaking first of *F. fraxinophilus*, he says: "There is some question as to what name ought to be given to this fungus." He adds further: "In view of the fact that the only European specimens of *Polyporus fraxineus* available do not agree with the present fungus, it is deemed best to retain the name given by Professor Peck (i.e. *P. fraxinophilus*) for the present. It may be necessary to make it a synonym of *Polyporus fraxineus* after a further comparison with European material." We now know

* Paper from the Department of Botany of the University of Michigan, No. 213.

that Von Shrenk was correct in retaining the name for the fungus he studied, and in the meanwhile *F. fraxineus* has become well known in the United States.

Lloyd (8) in referring to *Fomes fraxineus* says: "We take it in the sense that it has become established by use, although not correct historically, for *Fomes fraxineus* originally with its colored pores, was no doubt the same as *Fomes ulmarius*. It is closely allied to ulmarius and has been generally confused. Berkeley seems to have been the only one who appreciates the real difference. He called the plant *Fomes cytisinus*, which in justice is the correct name for it."

THE SPOROPHORE

The applanate pileus is incrusted with a hard upper layer. The surface of the fruiting body is whitish in young growing plants, but the color darkens to brown or may even become blackish with age. The flesh-colored context is decidedly of a punky or corky nature, and the way in which it separates is a very conspicuous feature when a fruiting body is broken apart. The tubes when occurring in layers are indistinctly stratified. In the collections studied they are for the most part confined to one layer near the outer portions of the sporophore, but in older parts and near the point of attachment, they show this stratification. The plants are distinctly perennial. The pores are round and number about four to six per millimeter. The spores, as reported in the literature, are subglobose, smooth and subhyaline. They are said to measure 5×5–6 microns. No cystidia are present.

The fruiting body of *Fomes fraxineus* is in itself very distinct and is readily recognized in the field. The dimidiate or imbricate habit of growth and the glabrous and often tuberculate applanate pileus in addition to the pinkish context are distinctive characteristics. The morphological differences, particularly in the length of tubes and the shape of the pileus, distinguish it from the only other species of this genus in Michigan having a rose-colored context, namely, *Fomes roseus*. This latter species, too, is known only on conifers, while *Fomes fraxineus* is confined to frondose wood.

THE ARTIFICIAL CULTURE OF OTHER SPECIES OF THE GENUS FOMES

The genus Fomes has perhaps received less attention in cultural investigations than any other group of fungi as large, and as widely and commonly distributed throughout the temperate regions. Few genera are of more importance to forest pathology than the one under consideration. Since the time of Brefeld's (2) studies of *Fomes applanatus*, *F. fomentarius*, *F. pinicola*, *F. igniarius* and others, few species of this genus have been cultured. In recent years, however, some very excellent papers have been published. White (17) succeeded in culturing *Fomes applanatus* from spore to spore under artificial conditions. Long and Harsch (9) cultured several species of this genus. They found in their work that the vegetative characters of many wood-destroying fungi distinctly aid in determining the identity or casual organism of a given rot.

These authors conclude that differences found in cultures may be used to establish the independence of species. Faull (4), somewhat earlier, compared cultures of *Fomes officinalis* to those of *Polyporus sulphureus*, as these two fungi produce similar decays in many respects. Humphrey (5) has conducted a series of durability tests on Greenheart with seven species of the genus Fomes and other basidiomycetes. Schmitz (13) determined the enzyme action of *Fomes igniarius* with material grown in pure cultures and he also worked with *Fomes roseus* in another connection (14). Schmitz and Daniels (15) made decay tests of coniferous woods with cultures of *Fomes pinicola*.

METHODS USED FOR *FOMES FRAXINEUS*

The fruit bodies of *Fomes fraxineus* were found in November while in an excellent growing condition on *Acer saccharinum*. The material was brought immediately into the laboratory from the field and studied. In all culture work it was found that fresh sporophores proved most useful. In this condition, tissue taken from the fungus is most likely to continue growth on artificial

media, and the dangers from contamination are considerably lessened.

The fruit bodies were washed in sterile distilled water several times and were handled with sterile forceps. A sterile scalpel [1] was used to remove the exterior portions from a section of the sporophore, and the general "tissue method" as described by Duggar (3) was employed. A portion of the context was placed on previously sterilized malt-extract agar in petri dishes. The fungus mycelium produced from this inoculum was used as stock material. As large quantities of agar were required for culturing other wood-destroying forms, the same medium was used in the work with *Fomes fraxineus*. Malt extract agar [2] was found to answer the requirements both from the standpoint of technique and growth of the fungus. After many tests were made in order to determine the best concentration of the malt-extract, it was found that, within limits, concentration was not as important a factor as it might at first seem. The amount used influenced mainly rapidity of growth, depending somewhat on moisture and temperature conditions. For general purposes, however, the following formula was found most adapted for this use:

25 grams agar agar
25 grams malt-extract
1000 c.c. distilled water

In other work where decayed wood was used (when the material was placed in the petri dishes), the substance dried out before the mycelium had time to make growth. In such cases it is very important that the inoculum be transferred to sterile distilled

[1] In later work, razor blades were found more convenient. These were dipped in corrosive sublimate solution and were heated over a flame until dry just before using. The blades were not heated enough to burn the fungus. This process avoided a delay in waiting for scalpels to cool. Speed was an important factor in such work since the sporophores were uncovered during the operation.

[2] Oatmeal agar was also a very suitable medium for *Fomes fraxineus*. The agar was easily prepared and the fungus grew rapidly on this medium. The formula given by Pethybridge and Murphy (*Sci. Proc. Dub. Soc.*, 13: 580. 1913) was used. Sixty grams of Quaker oats were ground, and added to a liter of water containing *agar*. Three per cent agar was usually used in this work.

water contained in small capsules before planting on the agar. This process results in little danger from contamination and the growth of the fungus is frequently hastened.

Fomes fraxineus started growth in about a week after the sporophore tissue was placed on the agar. From such a culture small portions of the mycelium were later transferred to sterilized wide-mouth Erlenmeyer liter flasks containing a thick slant of the agar already described. One liter of agar made four or five slants. The value of a readily prepared medium when a large number of cultures are made is evident. The flasks were placed in a dimly lighted culture-room kept slightly below room temperature. After the mycelium had covered the surface of the agar, wood blocks were placed in these culture flasks.

These blocks were obtained from white ash heart-wood so selected as to be free from defects. The blocks measured $\frac{5}{8} \times \frac{5}{8} \times 2\frac{1}{2}$ inches. The size of the blocks selected was determined by the ease with which they could be transferred under sterile conditions to the flask, and the necessity of making due allowance for swelling of the wood when wet. In some species this varies more than in others. The size of the block also obviously had to do with the possibilities of contamination of the wood; the larger the block, the greater the danger.

After the wood on all faces of the block had been labelled with a soft lead pencil, the wood was dried to a constant weight in a drying oven. In other work it had been found necessary to keep a book record of each block put in the flasks in order to avoid error. The pencil marks, in the case of some species of wood, are difficult to see after the blocks have decayed. Pencil labels on such light-colored woods as white ash, however, usually show plainly even if the block is considerably affected by rot. The drying of the wood to a constant weight and the recording of the weight is unnecessary where the rate of decay is not the object of the experiment. On the other hand, the drying process increased the efficiency of sterilization and so was practiced in all work.

The blocks were then placed in large glass capsules, two to a capsule, and about 250 c.c. of water was added. The amount of

water used in such work may be arbitrarily determined after sterilization trials with the various species of wood to be tested. The capsules were autoclaved for three and one-half hours at fifteen pounds pressure.

The blocks were then removed individually from the capsules by means of a long chrome-nickel needle flattened into a spatula form, and transferred to the flasks. The blocks were easily placed in the flask and on the actively growing mycelium in such a position that the maximum amount of space was conserved. They could also be placed in any desired position in the flask, i.e., the wood could be inoculated on a transverse or the longitudinal surface. This arrangement of the blocks was readily manipulated under sterile conditions by the spatula-like transferring needle. A small amount of sterile distilled water was then added to each flask.

When the cultures were ready to be opened, the wood was removed from its position in the flask by a long wire. The wire was bent in the form of a rake. No difficulty was experienced in removing the mycelium and the blocks as they readily separated from the agar. Likewise, the mycelium surrounding the blocks separated in sheets or mats almost completely, leaving the wood in an excellent condition for study.

DISCUSSION OF THE METHOD

It will be seen from the foregoing description that this culture work is varied from older methods in use. The blocks are not sterilized in the flasks and inoculated later. Instead, the separately sterilized wood blocks are placed uniformily on pure mycelial cultures of the wood-destroying fungus. The advantages of such modifications are:

(1) the disposition of the blocks in the flasks as desired;
(2) the uniform inoculation of the wood blocks;
(3) an actively growing inoculum;
(4) the moisture conditions in the flask.

In the first place, results obtained may depend somewhat on the disposition of the blocks in the flasks. All blocks may be placed in such a position that they will be inoculated from the

same surface. This is important since in previous tests it was found that hyphae may penetrate the blocks more readily on the cross-section end. A more superficial growth may form when the block is inoculated on its other surfaces. Secondly, the even inoculation of the wood blocks is essential in order to compare results obtained from various cultures, especially in durability tests. In cases where the blocks have been placed in flasks, sterilized, and then inoculated, the wood may remain several weeks or even for longer periods (depending somewhat on the fungus) before the mycelium may reach the wood in the culture. In some cases, perhaps exceptions, the blocks may not become inoculated at all. Humphrey (6) working with *Lentinus lepideus* Fr. states: "In computing the actual period of test it should be kept in mind that from three to four weeks are required to get a uniform infection after the inoculations are made." Schmitz and Daniels (15) in their studies of coniferous woods say: "An effort was made to locate the inoculum in the center of the group of blocks. The fact is of course appreciated that by this method of inoculation the blocks in the center of the group may become infected first and may be well along the road to decay before the mycelium comes in contact with the blocks in the periphery of the group." The method described here avoids the difficulty experienced by these workers. If a block is placed on the mycelium, the test period begins almost at once, and this period is the same for all wood in the flask.

A third advantage of the method is that the mycelium is well nourished at the time of inoculation. The best conditions for continued growth of the fungus have been established. A fourth and very distinct advantage of the method has to do with the moisture relations during the period in which the fungus is grown. All investigators working with wood-inhabiting fungi have realized that the control of the moisture is a difficult problem, since the cultures must be kept going for a protracted period. Excellent moisture conditions have prevailed, by the use of this method, in many cultures of other wood-destroying fungi; such have been kept going over a year without the extra addition of water. Additional water may be added, however, at the beginning of the experiment if it is deemed necessary.

The disadvantages of opening up cultures for watering are many. In the first place, the dangers from contamination are ever present, but this factor can be avoided by careful manipulation. Secondly, the operation is time-consuming where many cultures are involved. Of greater importance, however, is the impossibility of distributing equally the moisture throughout the culture when the water is added afterwards. Flooding almost invariably occurs if enough water is added, a condition that cannot be easily overcome. It disturbs the rate of growth of the fungus as well as the moisture relations between the interior of the blocks and the atmospheric conditions in the flask. Again, flooding may cause a more luxuriant growth of the mycelium on the surface of the blocks, instead of favoring a penetration of the hyphae into the wood. Such disturbances, which hinder the comparative value of durability tests, are avoided in this method.

CULTURES

The foregoing method has proved very satisfactory for the culture of wood-inhabiting fungi such as *Fomes "Ellisianus"* (*F. fraxinophilus*), *Fomes fraxinophilus*, *Polyporus hispidus*, and others. Plates VI–VIII show cultures of these fungi obtained by this method.

The growth-behavior of *Fomes fraxineus* (Plates IV–V) strikingly reveals the characteristics of the fruiting body in color and texture. In color, the hyphae are at first snow white, but later change to "cartridge buff" (Ridg.) and then to "pale pinkish buff." In old cultures the color may change to "pale pinkish vinaceous." The mycelium on the agar as well as in the wood cultures soon forms a tough felt-like growth consisting of coarse intricately woven hyphae. In the wood cultures, the mycelium envelops the blocks with a leathery sheet which thickens upon further growth of the fungus.

It is well known that many wood-destroying organisms are not as rapid in their growth on agar as fungi of other groups. Vegetative growth of *Fomes fraxineus*, however, is not slow. It is possible that this fact may be correlated with its distinctive

saprophytic habits in nature. A comparison of the rate of mycelial growth in a radial direction of this fungus with other polyphores is given in the following table:

RATE OF RADIAL GROWTH IN CENTIMETERS OF *FOMES FRAXINEUS* COMPARED WITH OTHER WOOD-DESTROYING FUNGI IN PETRI DISH CULTURES

Name of Fungus	13 Days	20 Days	25 Days
Fomes fraxineus.....	1.5	2.9	4.1
Fomes Ellisianus *....	.4	.9	2.6
Fomes fraxinophilus...	.4	1.2	2.7
Fomes Everhartii.....	.5	1.3	1.6
Polyporus hispidus....	.5	1.3	2.0
Poria obliquiformis....	.7	1.7	2.2

* The name *Fomes Ellisianus* is used here to distinguish the fungus obtained on *Shepherdia argentea* from *Fomes fraxinophilus* on white ash. *Fomes Ellisianus* is considered a form of *Fomes fraxinophilus.*

In large flasks the same general relations hold for the rapidity of growth. Special attention is called to the growth-rate of the first three forms. It is to be seen from the table that *Fomes fraxinophilus* and *Fomes Ellisianus* (*F. fraxinophilus*) show practically the same amount of vegetative growth for twenty-five days. *Fomes fraxineus* is seen to grow faster in culture. Thus physiological as well as morphological differences separate *Fomes fraxineus* from *Fomes fraxinophilus.*

Former investigations with species of the Polyporaceae have brought out the interesting fact that these plants usually fail to produce typical pilei in culture. Some fungi form the so-called abortive sporophores which assume various positions with reference to the substratum; others produce a continued vegetative growth. Other fungi, of which *Fomes fraxineus* is an example, produce in culture a pore surface characteristic of the genus Poria. In this species round pores similar to those found in the sporophores were formed in petri dish cultures. These pores first form as small depressions irregularly distributed

over the surface. Sections of the pore surface revealed subglobose spores in abundance. After some difficulty in determining the manner in which they were borne, it was found that they were secondary spores. These spores measured 5–7 × 5–6 microns. It is interesting to note that these measurements are the same, or practically the same, as those given in the literature for the basidiospores of this species. Microscopic sections from the tube layer of the sporophores showed the presence of bodies similar to those obtained by culture.

Such facts demonstrate the necessity of a more thorough study of the hymenium and its structure, and more careful measurements of attached spores in fresh sporophores. It is not unlikely that many measurements have been in error because of the confusion of secondary spores and basidiospores. While polymorphism has been demonstrated among the basidiomycetes by Brefeld (2), Lyman (10) and others, a great amount of work remains to be done in this field. Weather conditions may influence the kind of spore-formation in the sporophore. It is possible that under certain seasonal conditions secondary spores may entirely replace the hymenial mode of reproduction in some of these basidiomycetes. In all work of this nature the value of checking field identification by laboratory studies is apparent.

Little attention was given to the decay produced by *Fomes fraxineus*. Fungi which are rare or uncommon are not the forms which usually cause serious losses in timber supplies. The mycelium of this fungus in culture rapidly covered the blocks, but its action on the wood, after three months' time, was not striking. The mycelium was somewhat difficult to distinguish in wood during the early stages of decay because of its hyaline nature. The hyphae, although not especially abundant in the elements, ramified the vessels in particular, and were observed in all other cells, the medullary rays, the wood parenchyma, and the wood fibers. Only a very slight delignifying action was noted in the tests made for lignin and cellulose.[3] The black lines which

[3] The tests used for lignin and cellulose were made with the usual reagents, phloroglucin and hydrochloric acid, and chloro-zinc-iodide.

occur in hardwoods decayed by such fungi as *Fomes igniarius* and others were absent in the blocks, and no mottling effects so characteristic of certain forms of decay occurred in the wood.

University of Michigan

LITERATURE

1. Atkinson, George F. 1908. Observations on Polyporus Lucidus Leys, and Some of its Allies from Europe and North America. Botanical Gazette, 46: 322.
2. Brefeld, Oscar. 1889. Untersuchungen aus dem Gesammtgebiete der Mykologie Vill Basidiomyceten, 111: 1–305. Leipzig.
3. Duggar, B. M. 1905. The Principles of Mushroom Growing and Mushroom Spawn Making. U. S. Dept. Agr., Bur. Pl. Ind. Bull., 85: 1–60.
4. Faull, J. H. 1916. Fomes officinalis (Vill), A Timber-Destroying Fungus. Transactions of the Royal Canadian Institute, Toronto, XI. 185–209.
5. Humphrey, C. J. 1915. Tests on the Durability of Greenheart (Nectrandra rodiaei Schomb). Mycologia, 7: 204–209.
6. Humphrey, C. J. 1916. Laboratory Tests on the Durability of American Woods I. Mycologia, 8: 85.
7. Kauffman, C. H. 1908. Unreported Michigan Fungi for 1907, with an Outline of the Gasteromycetes of the State. Report of the Michigan Academy of Science, 10: 63–84.
8. Lloyd, C. G. 1915. Synopsis of the Genus Fomes, p. 230.
9. Long, W. H., and Harsch, R. M. 1918. Pure Cultures of Wood-Rotting Fungi on Artificial Media. Journal of Agricultural Research, XII. No. 2: 33–82.
10. Lyman, G. R. 1907. Culture Studies on Polymorphism of Hymenomycetes. Proceedings of the Boston Society of Natural History, 33. No. 4: 125–209.
11. Murrill, W. A. North American Flora, 9: 96.
12. Overholts, L. O. 1915. The Polyporaceae of the Middle Western United States. Washington University Studies, III, Part I, No. 1: 60.
13. Schmitz, Henry. 1921. Studies in Wood Decay II. Enzyme Action in Polyporus volvatus Peck and Fomes igniarius (L.) Gillet. Journal of General Physiology, III. No. 6: 795–800.

14. Schmitz, Henry. 1921. Concerning the Durability of the Wood of the Maiden Hair Tree, Ginko biloba. Journal of Forestry, 19: 165–166.

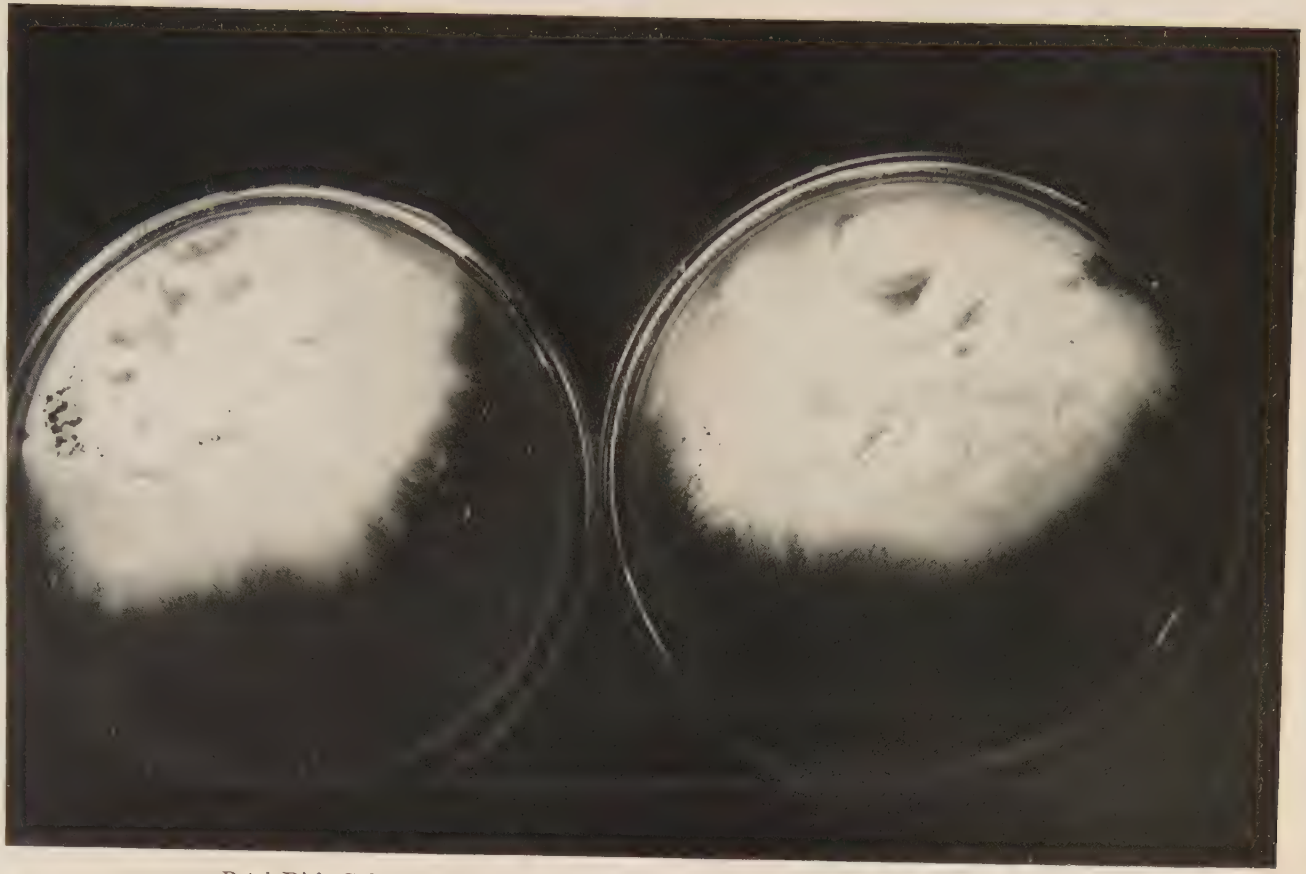
15. Schmitz, Henry, and Daniels, A. S. 1921. Studies in Wood Decay I. School of Forestry of the University of Idaho. Bull., No. 1: 1–11.

16. Von Shrenk, Hermann. 1903. A Disease of the White Ash Caused by Polyporus Fraxinophilus. U. S. Dept. Agr., Bur. Pl. Ind. Bull., 32: 13.

17. White, J. H. 1919. On the Biology of Fomes Applanatus (Pers.) Wallr. Transactions of the Royal Canadian Institute, Toronto, pp. 133–174.

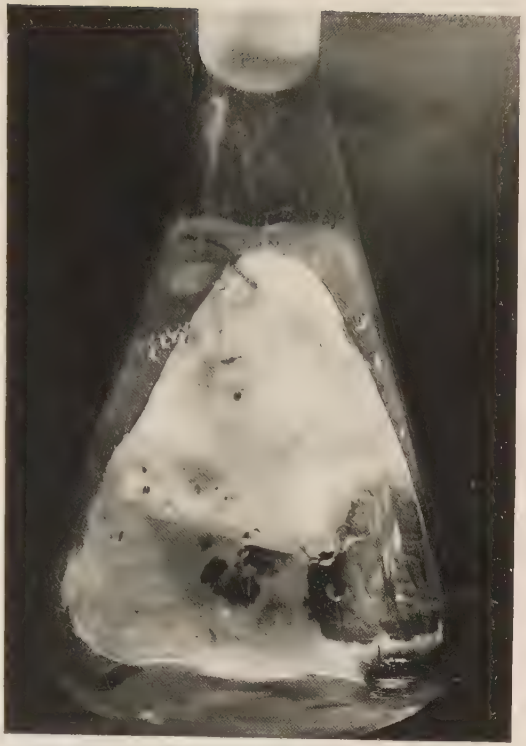
Fruiting Body of FOMES FRAXINEUS Fr.

PLATE IV



Petri Dish Cultures of FOMES FRAXINEUS Fr. showing Stages of Pore Formation

PLATE V



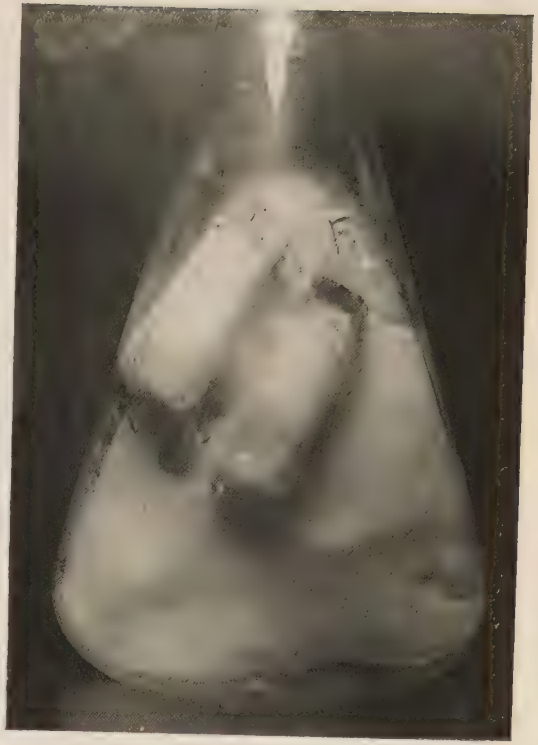


FIG. 1

FIG. 2

Flask Cultures showing Mycelium of FOMES FRAXINEUS growing on White Ash Wood

The Culture of Fig. 1 is three weeks old.

FIG. 1. Flask Culture of FOMES "ELLISIANUS" Anderson, showing Hymenophore Tubes

FIG. 2. Tube Cultures of FOMES FRAXINOPHILUS, showing Pore Formation

The cultures of FIG. 2, which are two months old, are growing in the light on corn meal (left), carrot (center) and malt (right) agars.

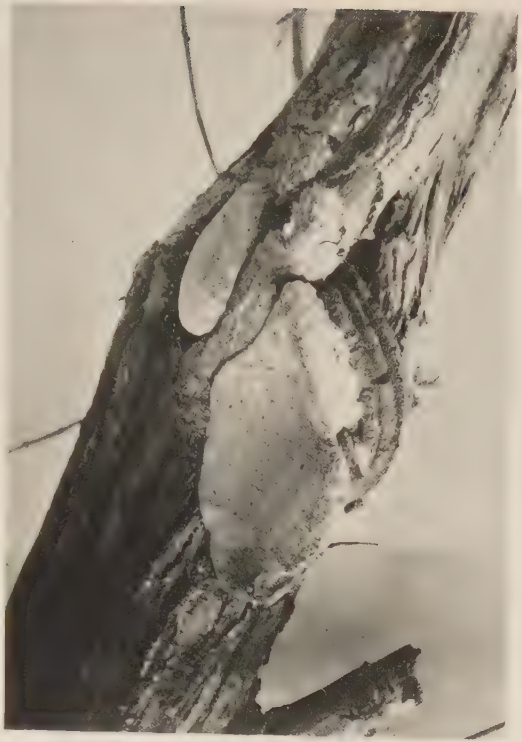


FIG. 1. Fruiting Body of FOMES "ELLISIANUS" Anderson (*Fomes fraxinophilus Pk.*) on *Shepherdia argentea*

FIG. 2. FOMES "ELLISIANUS" (*Fomes fraxinophilus*) growing on Blocks of *Shepherdia argentea*

The mycelium of Fig. 2 was obtained from sporophore shown on the left.

FIG. 1. FOMES EVERHARTII Ellis & Gallister, growing on Poplar Blocks Already Decayed by *Fomes igniarius*

FIG. 2. POLYPORUS HISPIDUS growing on Apple Wood

Note black lines forming on wood.

THE RELATIONSHIPS OF THE ASCOMYCETEAE, BASIDIOMYCETEAE AND TELIOSPOREAE

ERNST A. BESSEY

The investigations of Kniep, Rawitscher, Bensaude and others, in the last ten years, have strengthened the view, long held by most mycologists, of the essential unity of the Higher Fungi. The close parallelism of the nuclear behavior in the ascus, teliospore and basidium has been shown to be accompanied by other points of similarity which make it impossible to avoid the conclusion that these are homologous structures. Whether we follow the majority of mycologists and include the rusts and smuts within the Class Basidiomyceteae, or, recognizing their differences, remove them from that class as a separate class, the Teliosporeae, the relationship remains undoubted.

It may not be improper, then, to venture into the realm of speculation as to the phylogeny of these classes. Whence did they arise? Which class gave rise to which? What phylogenetic arrangement within each class will best indicate the probable lines of descent?

Many years ago Sachs, among other German botanists, pointed out features of similarity between certain Ascomyceteae and the Florideae, viz., possession of trichogynes and the development of numerous sporogenous threads from the oögone intermingled with sterile threads also, the two sets of threads forming the fungus fruit, as they do the red seaweed cystocarp. Upon the discovery by Stahl of the fertilization of Collema by non-motile sperms borne by water to the elongated trichogyne, and by subsequent investigators of the fact that the higher fungi have their cross walls perforated as do those of the Florideae, the idea of the possible origin of the Ascomyceteae

from floridean ancestors became rather generally accepted and is now held by probably the majority of botanists. Atkinson in 1915, a most keen student of fungi, repudiated this idea, while others have mentioned it as a possibility, but have considered it to be a matter of mere idle speculation. The present writer in 1913 and Dodge in 1914 have advocated the theory of the origin of Ascomyceteae and Florideae, while Church in 1921 prefers to consider these two groups to have had a more or less parallel development from some common ancestor lost in the mists of antiquity.

There are enough points of difference between the Ascomyceteae and the Florideae to make it impossible, at present, to say that the former arose from any known order of the latter. No attempt will be made to enter into that problem. The point for consideration now is that of determining what are the more primitive features, phylogenetically, of the Ascomyceteae. Clearly these must be those which they possess in common with their seaweed relatives. These are: production of non-motile sperms, possession of trichogynes, abundant development of sporogenous hyphae from the fertilized oögone, and the development of a spore-fruit made up of two categories of hyphae, the sporogenous (ascogenous) hyphae and sterile hyphae, the former being outgrowths of the oögone, the latter arising apart from but mostly near to the oögone.

These conditions are all met in some of the Ascomyceteae, but not in the Basidiomyceteae nor in the Teliosporeae, although these two classes, as mentioned at the beginning of this paper, are certainly closely related to the Ascomyceteae. The latter must then be placed first in the series of the Higher Fungi.

As pointed out by the author in 1913 and by Church in 1921, the Laboulbeniales exhibit most fully the characters listed above as primitive. They are true Ascomyceteae and show that the ascus-producing habit must have arisen long ago, perhaps, as Church suggests, even before the loss of chlorophyll compelled the ancestral plants to adopt a parasitic habit, which for this order is upon insects. This group appears to have given rise to no other groups, or in other words, it forms a "blind alley."

Church has called attention to the fact that, structurally, they resemble very greatly juvenile forms of Florideae which have developed their sexual organs precociously. They do not form a true mycelium, nor is the fruit comparable to a true perithecium, but resembles much more the protective layer surrounding the procarp in some of the red seaweeds. The trichogyne varies from a simple unbranched rod-like structure separated from the oögone by only a single cell to a many-celled and very copiously branched organ. The sperms, at least in some species, appear to be naked.

Another group of Ascomyceteae possessing primitive characters is that of the apothecial lichens, the Order Lecanorales. Some of these, like Collema, possess functional trichogynes and non-motile sperms and give rise to a large cluster of ascogenous hyphae from the oögonial cell. Each apothecium seems to arise from a single fertilized oögone. The oögone is one cell of a coiled structure characteristic of many of the Ascomyceteae, called the ascogonium, while the trichogyne is a long, slender, many-celled, unbranched thread. The ascogonium is far less like the carpogonial branch of the red seaweeds than is the corresponding structure in the Laboulbeniales. The parasitism of the lichens upon algae would, of itself, serve to indicate a more primitive type of organism than those which are saprophytic or parasitic upon land plants. We should expect an aquatic form, upon becoming parasitic, to use for its hosts either water animals, as the Laboulbeniales did for insects, or algae.

Church believes that lichens have arisen from marine ancestors, once autotrophic, but which, becoming heterotrophic and losing their outer photosynthetic layers of cells, "have picked up intrusive algae to recover vicariously photosynthetic relations with the free atmosphere." The extremely variable morphological structures of the lichens are supposed by him to represent the interior portions of the ancestral autotrophic forms. It is noteworthy that the different types of lichen thallus do, in fact, match up very well with the various types of structure of Florideae if the photosynthetic layers of cells are removed from the latter.

Even within the Lecanorales there is much variation in the sexual reproduction. In Collemodes the trichogyne is intrathallic and grows directly to the sperm which remains attached to the antheridial branch, which is also within the thallus. In other lichens the trichogyne is short and apparently not functional.

The close similarity of the structure of the apothecium of some Pezizales to the apothecium of Lecanorales leads one to believe that the latter have given rise to the former by the reduction of the thallus to a simpler filamentous form, the adoption of a mostly saprophytic habit, and the enlargement and frequent compounding of the apothecium. Ascobolus, some of whose species have a massive coiled ascogonium terminated by a long, multi-septate trichogyne which seeks out the antherid, Lachnea with a shorter pluriseptate trichogyne and Pyronema with a non-septate trichogyne represent steps of development toward the total elimination of the trichogyne. In this order, also, there are cases where the trichogyne and antherid do not come in contact, as shown by W. H. Brown, and cases where no antherid is formed at all. Under both these conditions the many nuclei in the oögone pair off with one another in the same manner as the nuclei of male and female origin usually pair off.

From the Pezizales, evolution seems to have taken place in several directions. Partially subterranean genera have given rise through forms like Genea and Hydnocystis to the typical Tuberales; through forms like Rhizina the typical Helvalles are connected. The Phacidiales are probably offshoots of the Pezizales or of some of the ancestral lichens. The Exoascales are probably much reduced apothecial forms to be derived from some leaf-inhabiting member of the Pezizales with a rather diffuse apothecium. The Hysteriales are possibly developed from Pezizales in which the small apothecium has become laterally compressed. Many points about their structure, however, show a parallelism, if not indicating descent from some of the perithecial forms, while it must not be forgotten that there are some lichens with a Hysterium-like type of fruit. Whether these hysteriaceous lichens are the primitive ancestors of the

Hysteriales, or represent a newly acquired habit of parasitism on algae should be given consideration also.

The perithecial series may have arisen in the perithecial lichens, the Pyrenulales, or possibly the perithecium is a more recent development from the apothecium arising independently in the two orders Lecanorales and Pezizales respectively. The writer inclines toward the first mentioned view, that the perithecial lichens have given rise to the other perithecial forms, in which case the apothecium and the perithecium would both be very early developments in the Class Ascomyceteae, perhaps even antedating the loss of the autotrophic algal habit. Indeed, Dodge has shown the great similarity of the perithecium to some of the cystocarps of certain Florideae. It should be noted that the coiled ascogonium with elongated trichogyne is found in some of the perithecial forms which have not the lichen habit; in many cases there are produced also structures similar to the spermagonia of lichens. Whether these sperms and trichogynes are actually functional is, in some cases, uncertain. In other cases they are known not to be functional. Another type of sexual organ is also abundant among perithecial forms, consisting of a short, intertwined pair of hyphae, the one ascogonial, the other antheridial in function. In some cases the antheridial member of the pair seems to be lacking.

In the lack of fuller knowledge as to the sexual organs of most of these perithecial forms any arrangement must be rather tentative. Furthermore, the recent studies which have led to the establishment of the Order Pseudosphaeriales and to the Order Hemisphaeriales have gone far enough to show that they may lead to a great disruption of the Order Sphaeriales as now recognized when these same methods of study are applied to all of the forms within that order. Whether some of the families of the Pyrenulales ought to be interspersed with the non-lichen forms awaits further study. Furthermore, the distinction between Sphaeriales and Hypocreales breaks down in the families Melanosporaceae and Sordariaceae. Indeed, the two "orders" show such similarity in sexual organs, structure of perithecium, and the like, that it seems probable that these two orders will

eventually be merged. In that case similar groups will be placed side by side differing only in the color and consistency of the perithecium.

Until these different orders mentioned above have received further careful study, the following very tentative arrangement can be followed. From the Pyrenulales will be derived the non-stromatic Sphaeriales and Hypocreales. These give rise to forms with submerged perithecia and finally to those in which the perithecia are enclosed within highly organized stromata. Thus forms like the family Xylariaceae would be placed near the apex of development of the Sphaeriales with Melanosporaceae and Sordariaceae near to the base. By loss of a perithecial wall distinct from the enclosing stoma have arisen the Pseudosphaeriales and from these the Dothideales. By loss of the lower part of the perithecium have developed the Hemisphaeriales.

All of the foregoing orders normally possess ostiolate perithecia. By loss of the ostiole and by increased emphasis on the superficiality of the mycelium the Order Perisporiales arose from the simpler Sphaeriales. Either from the Perisporiales (a view supported by the method of formation of the catenulate conidia in both orders), or possibly from the Pseudosphaeriales, arose the Aspergillales with their closed perithecia containing the asci scattered throughout the body of the perithecium in small chambers, instead of clustered at the sides or base of a large cavity, as in the Sphaeriales and Perisporiales. By the loosening of the perithecial walls can be derived such forms as the Gymnoascaceae. From the last mentioned family by a great reduction in the asci resulting from the sexual act we can derive such forms as Eremascus and Endomyces in the Order Saccharomycetales. From these two filamentous forms the step to the one-celled yeasts is very short.

It will be seen that in the foregoing arrangement such simple forms as Eremascus and the probably related Dipodascus, etc., are considered not as primitive Ascomyceteae, but as the members of the group furthest away from the primitive type. If these are considered as primitive the development of trichogynes and free, non-motile sperms is a hard thing to explain, while the reverse process as suggested in this paper is comparatively simple.

To turn to the Class Teliosporeae and to give consideration to the question as to which are the most primitive, the rusts or the smuts, the following points must be considered. The typical Uredinales possess a life-cycle in which there is a definite stage for the sexual fusion of the cells, followed by a typical binucleate type of mycelium with a definite stage where nuclear fusion occurs. Furthermore, a structure is always present, the pycnium, that is morphologically identical with the spermagonium of the lichen. The Ustilaginales, on the other hand, possess no spermagonium, a sign perhaps, of less primitiveness, and the sexual fusion of cells giving rise to the binucleate type of mycelium is not uniformly at one point of development in different genera, or even in different species of the same genus. The young teliospore is binucleate, the two nuclei fusing at maturity, in most smuts, but even this binucleate condition of the young teliospore is lacking in some species, e.g., in the strain of *Ustilago avenae* studied by Flerov. When we take into consideration the substituted types of cell fusion or methods of acquiring the binucleate mycelial type, and even the possible lack of binucleate teliospores in some smuts as well as the absence of the spermagonium, it seems reasonable to look upon the smuts as fungi that have progressed further from the ancestral condition than the rusts, although it is not necessary to look upon the smuts as directly descended from the rusts. Probably, indeed, that is not the case, but they must have had common ancestry.

If the rusts are the more primitive, in certain respects anyway, which genera or families of rusts are the more primitive and what connection, if any, have they with the Ascomyceteae? It must be noted that some genera, at least, in each of the three or four recognized families of Uredinales, possesses the complete life-cycle pycnium, aecium, uredinium, telium and promycelium with sporidia. Each genus or group of closely related genera with complete life-cycle has associated with it other genera in which one or more stages are omitted. These omitted stages may be the aecium, or the uredinium, or both. In each case of omission of the aecium the sexual union of cells is postponed until the next spore type, so that in some rusts the sexual union

occurs just prior to the formation of the teliospore. The nuclear union, on the other hand, normally occurs in the teliospore. That the pycnium must represent some very ancient and deep-seated inheritance is evidenced by the fact that it almost never fails to develop, even though, so far as we know, it has no present function. Since the aecial and uredinial stages are, in general, the same except for minor details in all the families of rusts and the teliospores, however much they differ in form, undergo the same nuclear phenomena, it is difficult to believe that the short-cycle rusts can be the more primitive and that the nearly related long-cycle rusts have developed the full life-cycle independently a great many different times from the many different genera of short-cycle rusts. The conclusion seems inevitable that the long-cycled Uredinales are the more primitive, at least of the rusts that we now know. Of these the forms with stalked teliospores are agreed by all uredinologists to be more highly specialized, so that we will have to look to some other family than the Pucciniaceae for the more primitive rusts. Such specialized forms as Cronartium with the waxy column of spores seem less primitive than the crust-like forms such as Melampsora. Whether these must be regarded as more primitive or the forms with teliospores scattered throughout the mesophyll of the host leaf can not be decided at present. However, the latter include certain of the fern rusts which in some other respects, also, are considered by Arthur to be primitive in character.

What were the ancestral forms of these rusts like, and what are the homologies of their different structures? The spermagonia or pycnia of the rusts are possibly to be considered as the homologues of the spermagonia of the lichens and some Sphaeriales, but with their function lost, as appears also to be the case in some of the Sphaeriales, at least. Such reduced forms as Endophyllum and Kunkelia perhaps suggest what some of the more primitive rusts were like. In these the chain of aeciospores becomes a chain of teliospores because of the fact that the nuclei fuse instead of remaining distinct. It seems possible that the accium represents a very much modified apothecium or perithe-

cium with the chains of aeciospores corresponding to the ascogenous hyphae. In the primitive rusts probably these aeciospores were teliospores, which in their turn were modified asci. By the insertion of one type of repeating spore, aeciospore and a second type of repeating spore, the urediniospore, the sporogenous hyphae of the aecium no longer bear teliospores but these are borne on the hyphae arising from the repeating spores. The teliospore with its early binucleate condition, the fusion of the nuclei, the reduction division and the formation of four haploid nuclei show such close similarity to ascus that the added fact of its origin from a hypha of binucleate cells arising from a fusion of two cells makes it impossible to avoid homologizing ascus and teliospores. The ascus produces internal spores which are set free by the stretching and rupture of the ascus. The teliospore stretches, and on the elongated surface thus produced there develop external spores. It is possible that the condition in Coleosporium represents a step in the modification of the ascus into teliospore.

In Coleosporium the promycelium is not produced as an outgrowth from the teliospore, but the latter after its nucleus has undergone reduction division is divided by cross walls into four cells. This is spoken of as an internal promycelium. From each of these cells there is budded off through the external wall of the teliospore a sporidium. If this actually does represent a more primitive type of teliospore, then these four cells of the "internal promycelium" could be considered as four ascospores within an ascus, ascospores which are not set free but which germinate *in situ* by the formation of a conidium, the sporidium. It is well known that in many cases ascospores do germinate within the ascus. It must be admitted, however, that the very close similarity even as to aecial hosts, aside from the great similarity of teliospore structure between Melampsora and Coleosporium, suggests that possibly Coleosporium has arisen from Melampsora by the suppression of the external promycelium. Indeed it would be hard to explain the origin of the promycelium in the smuts which certainly are related to the rusts if we assume that the primitive rusts had a promy-

celium like that of Coleosporium, unless we assume that the Coleosporium condition is an atavistic structure, for surely the common ancestors of rusts and smuts must have had external promycelium. It seems likely that Janchen's suggestion is correct that the non-septate promycelium such as is found in the Family Tilletiaceae is more primitive than the septate type as found in the Ustilaginaceae and in most of the Uredinales.

Were it not for the persistence in the Uredinales of the origin of the binucleate stage at a definite point in the life-cycle (aecium) and for the occurrence of the spermagonium (pycnium), it would be fairly easy to derive the Teliosporeae from certain of the order Auriculariales. This is the suggestion of Janchen, being a reversal of the ordinary arrangement in which the smuts and rusts are supposed to represent the types ancestral to the Auriculariales. It is difficult, however, in spite of forms like *Jola* and *Septobasidium Bogoriense*, to see how any of the known Auriculariales could have given rise to Uredinales or Ustilaginales, for the Auriculariales possess clamp connections which are lacking in rusts and smuts, and, still more important, there are no structures from which the rusts could have derived their pycnia and aecia. Possibly we have here a case in which the Auriculariales and Teliosporeae are divergent branches from some ascomycetous ancestor without any close connection to any of the other Basidiomyceteae.

The studies by Kniep and his pupil Lehfeldt, and of Miss Bensaude, have demonstrated the homology of the process of formation of the clamp connection in the true Basidiomyceteae with that of the crozier formation in the young ascus. They have, furthermore, demonstrated the fact that the mycelium arising from a single spore consists of uninucleate cells which form no clamp connections, and that at some stage there arises a type of mycelium possessing binucleate cells and clamp connections. Miss Bensaude has shown that in a species of Coprinus this arises by the fusion of a uninucleate conidium derived from one single spore culture with a uninucleate mycelial cell developed from the germination of a different spore. Thenceforward the cells are binucleate and produce clamp connections. Lehfeldt

has demonstrated hyphal fusions followed by the production of binucleate cells and clamp connections. In rare cases the basidiospore itself is binucleate and gives rise directly to binucleate cells with clamp connections.

We have thus a deviation from the conditions in most of the Ascomyceteae in which at least a definite oögone (or ascogonium) is produced, even where the trichogyne has been lost and where the antherid is lacking. Janchen has pointed out that the nonseptate basidium of the true Basidiomyceteae is of several types: (1) with the four nuclei in a longitudinal row, the basidiospores being produced laterally in a longitudinal row as in Tylostoma; (2) with the four nuclei in a longitudinal row but with the basidiospores developed at the apex of the basidium; (3) with the four nuclei all at one horizontal level and the basidiospores produced at the apex. Types 1 and 2 are found in the Gastromyceteae; Type 3 is found in the Hymenomyceteae and some of the Gastromyceteae. The Order Tremellales also is of Type 3 except that the basidium is divided longitudinally into four parts by septa at right angles to one another. Janchen derives Type 1 from a four-spored ascus in which the spores are formed externally instead of internally. Four-spored asci are not at all uncommon, but we know of no cases where they are now giving rise to external spores because when they do that they are not asci but basidia.

The Gastromyceteae with their closed spore fruits containing usually numerous hymenial chambers lined with basidia show all transitions, through secotium-like forms to the Agaricaceae, where the spaces between the radiating gills are homologous to the hymenial cavities of the Gastromyceteae. In many respects the subterranean or partially subterranean Hymenogastrales show a suggestive parallelism of structure to some of the Tuberales, and it is suggested as a possibility that some of the Tuberales, many of which have but four spores in the ascus, may have developed by mutation from ascus-producing to basidium-producing forms. Whatever their origin the Hymenogastrales form an extremely variable stock from which have doubtless arisen, on the one hand, the Sclerodermatales, another

direction the Phallales, in still another direction the Lycoperdales with the Nidulariales as an offshoot, and finally through the Secotium-like forms the Agaricales. The Agaricaceae would then represent the most primitive of the Hymenomyceteae. From these the line of evolution has passed by various divergent lines to Boletaceae, Polyporaceae, Thelephoraceae, Hydnaceae and Clavariaceae. Probably from some form of Thelephoraceae perhaps related to Corticium, has arisen the Order Exobasidiales. By a somewhat parallel development some of the fleshy forms perhaps of the Clavariaceae or Thelephoraceae have, accompanied by a partial or complete splitting of the basidium, given rise to the Orders Dacryomycetales and Tremellales respectively.

To revert to the Auriculariales, these show a remarkable similarity in form of spore fruit to the two orders last mentioned, but show a type of basidium that is entirely different. It seems best to the writer to consider the external form as more or less an accident of parallel development, and to look to another origin for Auriculariales in some ascomycete that is a common ancestor to this order and to the Uredinales and Ustilaginales.

In the accompanying chart (Fig. 3) the suggestions made in this paper are shown in graphic form. A few orders are omitted and in some cases a choice of two lines of ancestry is shown. This does not indicate that the group is believed to be polyphyletic, but that the ancestry is doubtful, being in the author's opinion most likely one or the other of the alternatives offered.

Michigan Agricultural College
East Lansing, Michigan

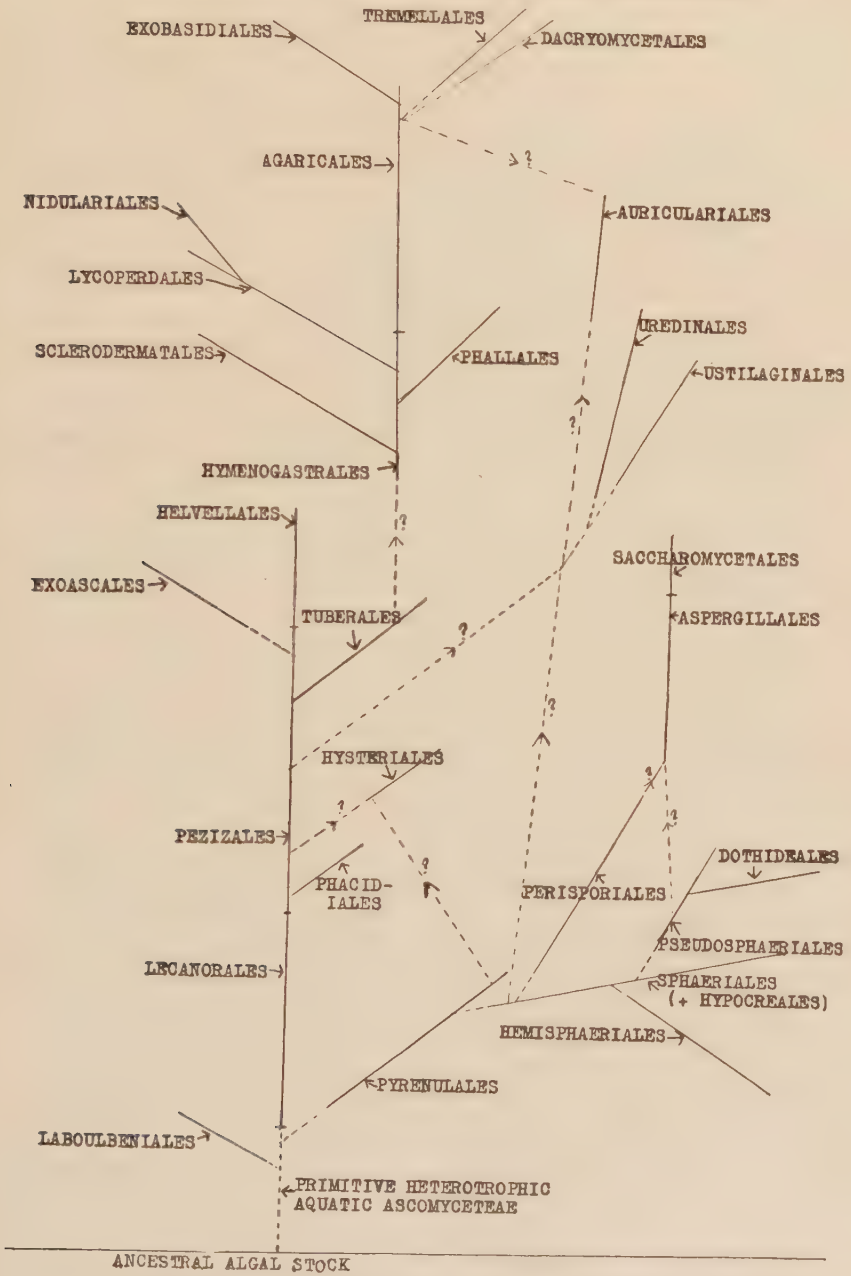


FIG. 3. Phylogenetic Arrangement of Orders of Higher Fungi

LITERATURE CITED

Atkinson, Geo. F. 1915. Phylogeny and Relationships in the Ascomycetes. Ann. Mo. Bot. Gard., 2: 315–376. Figs. 1–10.

Bensaude, Mathilde. 1918. Recherches sur le Cycle Évolutif et la Sexualité chez les Basidiomycètes. Pp. 1–156. 6 Pls., 30 figs. (*Thesis*)

Bessey, Ernst A. 1913. Some Suggestions as to the Phylogeny of the Ascomycetes. Mycol. Centralb., 3: 149–153.

Brown, Wm. H. 1915. The Development of Pyronema confluens var. inigneum. Amer. Journ. Bot., 2: 289–298.

Church, A. H. 1921. The Lichen Life-Cycle. Journ. Bot., 59: 139–145, 164–170, 197–202, 216–221.

Dodge, B. O. 1914. The Morphological Relationships of the Florideae and the Ascomycetes. Bull. Torr. Bot. Club, 41: 157–202. Figs. 1–13.

Flerov, B. 1923. Sur la Cytologie de l'Ustilago Avenae Pers. d'après les Cultures in Vitro. Travaux de la Section de Mycologie et de Phytopathologie de la Société Botanique de Russie, 1: 23–36. Pl. 3. (*In Russian*)

Janchen, Erwin. 1923. Die Stellung der Uredineen und Ustilagineen im System der Pilze. Oesterreichische Bot. Zeitschr., 72: 164–180, 302–304. Pl. 11, 1 fig.

Kniep, Hans. 1915. Beiträge zur Kenntnis der Hymenomyceten III. Zeitschr. f. Bot., 7: 369–398. Pl. 2, Figs. 1–20.

Lehfeldt, Werner. 1923. Über die Entstehung des Paarkernmycels bei heterothallischen Basidiomyceten. Hedwigia, 64: 30–51. Pl. 1, 4 figs.

Paravicini, Eugen. 1917. Untersuchungen über das Verhalten der Zellkerne bei der Fortpflanzung der Brandpilze. Ann. Mycol., 15: 57–96. Pls. 1–6, Figs. 1–5.

Rawitscher, F. 1912. Zur Kenntnis der Ustilagineen. Zeitschr. f. Botanik, 4: 673–706. Pl. 8, Figs. 1–20.

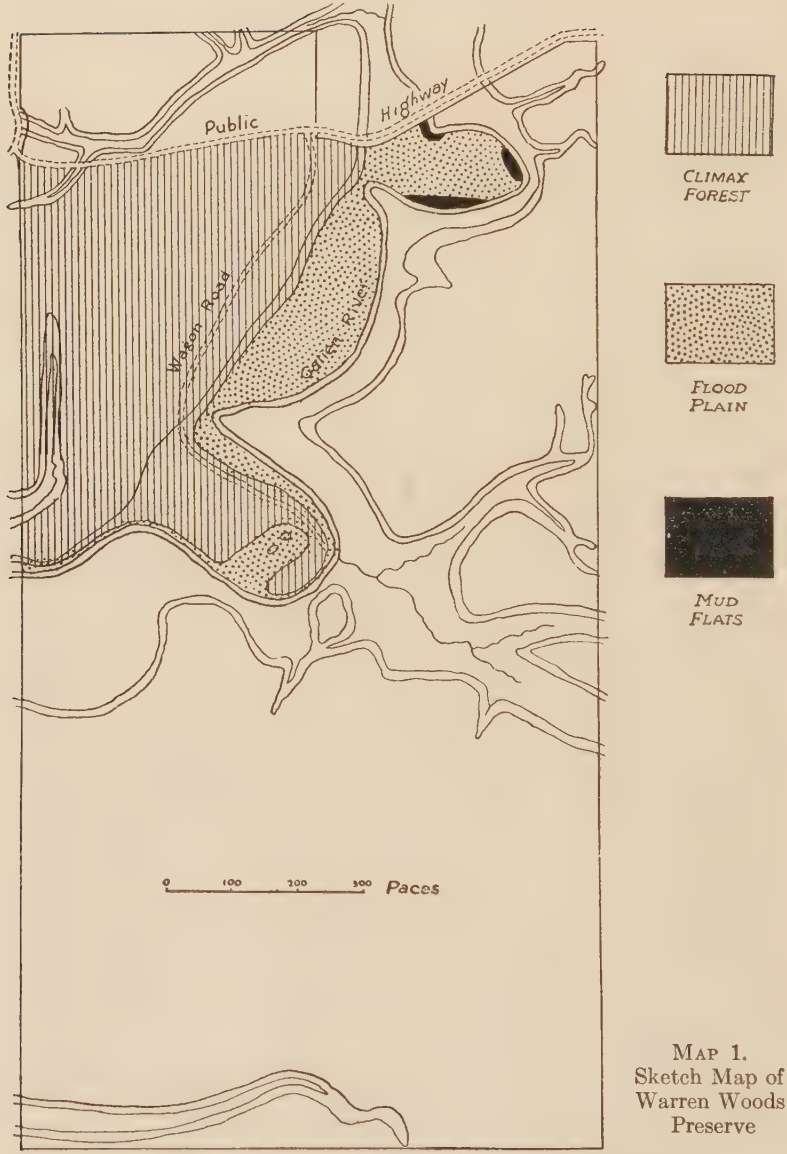
Sachs, Julius. 1874. Lehrbuch der Botanik (4te Auflage).

THE FLOWERING PLANTS AND FERNS OF WARREN WOODS, BERRIEN COUNTY, MICHIGAN

CECIL BILLINGTON

The Warren Woods are located in Berrien County, Michigan, about three miles north of Three Oaks. They are a part of the Edward K. Warren Foundation established by Mr. and Mrs. E. K. Warren of Three Oaks, Michigan. The woods includes one of the largest areas of original hardwood timber existing in the southern part of the state. It has never been lumbered or burned over and many of the trees are magnificent specimens, being from fifty to seventy-five feet to the first limbs and from two to four feet in diameter.

The accompanying map of the woods indicates the area covered by the list of species. The preserve is about two hundred acres in extent, of which approximately one half has been cleared and cultivated as farm lands, the remainder being mostly covered with forest. The Galien River enters the north end of the woods and flows in a general southerly direction through the wooded area where it turns to the west, forming a broad bend before it leaves the western edge of the forest. Only that portion north and west of the Galien River was studied, for the reason that the balance of the preserve had been heavily pastured by cattle and horses. The herbage was almost entirely destroyed and the shrubs and young trees badly broken and eaten. The stock apparently had never crossed the river to the west side, and as soil, drainage and other conditions are substantially the same on both sides of the river, this list may be fairly said to represent the flora of the entire wooded portion of the preserve. No attention was paid to the part which had pre-



MAP 1.
Sketch Map of Warren Woods Preserve

The three habitats and the portion of the woods studied are indicated. The remainder of the preserve was either being heavily pastured by cattle and horses or had been previously cultivated and was not examined.

viously been cultivated, so that the portion examined comprises approximately fifty acres.

The area examined may be separated into three well defined habitats: the Climax Beech-Maple Forest, the Flood-Plain, and the Mud-Flats.

THE CLIMAX FOREST

(Plates IX, X, XI, Fig. 3)

This division comprises the greater portion of the woods. It is comparatively level and some twenty feet or more above the flood-plain area. A small ravine cuts in at the north and a larger one in the southwest, the banks of which provide admirable habitats for several species of ferns. The whole area is dominated by the beech and the sugar maple. There are also a few oaks, elms, ash, wild cherry and whitewood scattered throughout. The trees are very large and the shade is dense. There are only a few small trees, mostly young beeches and maples. For the most part the forest floor is quite open, but in sections these small trees form dense thickets under which there is little or no herbage. In some sections the papaw also forms a dense underbrush. Spice bush, maple-leaved viburnum, alternate-leaved dogwood and flowering dogwood may also be mentioned as underbrush. The ground is heavily covered with decaying leaves, and for the most part conditions ordinarily found in deciduous woods prevail. This provides a very favorable habitat for the early spring flowers, and such deep woods favorites as spring beauty, phlox, hepatica, squirrel corn and Dutchman's breeches are abundant. There are several small low places in which water stands until midsummer, providing around their edges suitable places for a number of species of sedges, ferns, etc. These natural habitats are varied to some extent by the uprooting of trees by the wind and by a wagon road which traverses the entire woods. Where the natural conditions have been disturbed by the uprooting and taking out of trees, thistles, dandelions, wild lettuce, burdocks, and other cosmopolitans are quick to enter. Similarly the wagon road has introduced to the forest many plants which would not otherwise have been in evidence. The forest is bordered on the

west by cultivated fields and a number of species have invaded the woods from this source. But for the most part the portion of the forest north and west of the Galien River is practically in its original condition and is no doubt as satisfactory for the study of the native flora as can be found in southern Michigan today.

THE FLOOD-PLAIN
(Plates IX, XI, Fig. 2)

Below the level of the climax forest and bordering the Galien River for nearly its entire distance through the woods is the flood-plain. This is also densely forested and the entire area is in deep shade. Prominent trees of the flood-plain are the sycamore, basswood, soft maple, red maple, butternut, hackberry and willow. The thorns make up the greater portion of the small tree growth, but ironwood, red bud and wild crab are also frequent. The underbrush on the flood-plain is comparatively sparse and composed for the most part of spice bush, American bladdernut and buttonbush. This latter species occurs in buttonbush swamps, low places where water stands until late in the summer, providing suitable habitats for iris, sedges and ferns. In some portions the herbage is very dense and tall, and others sparse. Practically the entire flood-plain area apparently is subject to flooding by the spring freshets and the list of species reveals several annuals which are no doubt more or less transient on account of this fact.

THE MUD-FLATS
(Plate XI, Fig. 1)

Upon my first visit to the woods in July, 1919, I found three small mud-flats, or mud-bars, in the bends of the Galien River. These had apparently been washed up by the river earlier in the same season. The soil was soft mud and fine sand, and being continually damp furnished a suitable germinating place for a great variety of seeds, the result being that at the time of my first visit they bore a flora of no mean proportions, including seedling poplars, maples, willows and elms, as well as many

grasses, sedges and flowering plants. The first season the plants were, for the most part, back away from the water next to the flood-plain, the outer edge being comparatively bare, but in the succeeding seasons of 1920 and 1921 practically the entire bars were covered by plants, and except for the difference in their level and the absence of large trees, these mud-flats could scarcely be distinguished from the flood-plain proper. Considering their very limited area the list of species of these mud-flats seems to comprise an unusually large and varied vegetation.

The field work upon which this report is based was carried out in three trips to the woods, as follows: July 26 to 30, 1919; September 11 to 13, 1920; and May 18 to 21, 1921.

So far as possible duplicate specimens were procured of all species, one of which has been deposited with the Herbarium of the University of Michigan and the other with the Michigan Agricultural College.

For so small an area the portion of Warren Woods studied yielded an abundant flora, the list of species comprising seventy-nine families, two hundred and three genera and three hundred and fifty-eight species and varieties. No doubt a more extended survey covering an entire season would reveal others. The flood-plain has a great many hawthorns, but at no time when I was at the woods did any but the four species listed have either flowers or fruit, the shade apparently being too dense to permit of their free fruiting.

The list of species comprises at least one not previously reported from Michigan, *Uniola latifolia* Michx. In this locality it is approaching the northern limits of its range. Heretofore *Carex crus-corvi* Shuttlw., according to Beal's *Michigan Flora*, was known in only two localities. It grew abundantly in a small buttonbush swamp on the flood-plain. Also the grass, *Diarrhena diandra* (Michx.) Wood., given by the same authority as rare, was found on the flood-plain in considerable quantities at the south end.

The nomenclature used is that of Gray's *New Manual of Botany* (seventh edition). The work was supported by the Mich-

igan Geological and Biological Survey and was done under the direction of Dr. A. G. Ruthven in connection with a general biological survey of this portion of Berrien County. Much help was given by Mr. George R. Fox, director of the Warren Foundation, in getting to and from the woods, and many other courtesies freely extended by him during the three trips are gratefully acknowledged. Many thanks are also due to Mr. Oliver Atkins Farwell, to whom doubtful specimens were submitted, and for valued assistance in checking the list of species, and to Dr. J. H. Ehlers, who reviewed the genus Rubus. I am also indebted to Lee R. Dice for use of the map prepared by him for his article on the mammals of the woods and to the Museum of Zoölogy, of the University of Michigan, for the cut of the Mud-flat, which had previously appeared in one of its publications.

LIST OF SPECIES

POLYPODIACEAE (Fern Family)

1. Phegopteris hexagonoptera (Michx.) Fée. Beech Fern. Climax forest, occasional.
2. Adiantum pedatum L. Maidenhair. Climax forest, occasional.
3. Asplenium angustifolium Michx. Climax forest, occasional.
4. Asplenium acrostichoides Sw. Climax forest, abundant.
5. Polystichum acrostichoides (Michx.) Schott. Christmas Fern. Climax forest, frequent.
6. Aspidium Thelypteris (L.) Sw. Marsh Shield Fern. Climax forest, low places.
7. Aspidium noveboracense (L.) Sw. New York Fern. Climax forest, abundant.
8. Aspidium spinulosum (O. F. Müller) Sw. var. intermedium (Muhl.) D. C. Eaton. Climax forest, abundant.
9. Cystopteris fragilis (L.) Bernh. Fragile Fern. Climax forest, low places.
10. Onoclea sensibilis L. Sensitive Fern. Climax forest, low places.

11. Onoclea Struthiopteris (L.) Hoffm. Ostrich Fern. Flood-plain, found in only one buttonbush swamp.

OSMUNDACEAE (Flowering Fern Family)

12. Osmunda regalis L. Flowering Fern. Climax forest; flood-plain, low places, abundant.
13. Osmunda Claytoniana L. Interrupted Fern. Climax forest, frequent.
14. Osmunda cinnamomea L. Cinnamon Fern. Flood-plain, occasional.

OPHIOGLOSSACEAE (Adder's Tongue Family)

15. Botrychium obliquum Muhl. Climax forest, rare.
16. Botrychium obliquum Muhl. var. dissectum (Spreng.) Clute. Climax forest, rare.
17. Botrychium virginianum (L.) Sw. Rattlesnake Fern. Climax forest, frequent.

EQUISETACEAE (Horsetail Family)

18. Equisetum arvense L. Common Horsetail. Mud-flat.
19. Equisetum hyemale L. var. intermedium A. A. Eaton. Flood-plain; mud-flat, occasional.

ALISMACEAE (Water-plantain Family)

20. Sagittaria latifolia Willd. forma obtusa (Muhl.) Robinson. Arrow-head. Mud-flat; flood-plain, only two or three plants found.
21. Alisma Plantago-aquatica L. Water Plantain. Mud-flat.

GRAMINEAE (Grass Family)

22. Digitaria humifusa Pers. Small Crab Grass. Mud-flat.
23. Digitaria sanguinalis (L.) Scop. Crab Grass. Mud-flat.

24. Panicum capillare L. Old-witch Grass. Mud-flat.
25. Panicum clandestinum L. Mud-flat; flood-plain, occasional.
26. Echinochloa crusgalli (L.) Beauv. Barnyard grass. Mud-flat; flood-plain, occasional.
27. Setaria glauca (L.) Beauv. Foxtail, Pigeon Grass. Mud-flat.
28. Leersia virginica Willd. White Grass. Mud-flat; flood-plain, occasional.
29. Milium effusum L. Millet Grass. Climax forest, frequent.
30. Oryzopsis asperifolia Michx. Flood-plain, occasional.
31. Oryzopsis racemosa (Sm.) Ricker. Climax forest, occasional.
32. Muhlenbergia mexicana (L.) Trin. Mud-flat.
33. Muhlenbergia Schreberi J. F. Gmel. Drop-seed, Nimble Will. Mud-flat.
34. Brachyelytrum erectum (Schreb.) Beauv. Climax forest, frequent.
35. Agrostis perennans (Walt.) Tuckerm. Thin Grass. Climax forest, occasional.
36. Cinna arundinacea L. Climax forest; flood-plain; mud-flat.
37. Sphenopholis pallens (Spreng.) Scribn. Climax forest, occasional.
38. Eragrostis hypnoides (Lam.) BSP. Flood-plain; mud-flat, forming dense mats.
39. Melica striata (Michx.) Hitchc. Climax forest, frequent.
40. Diarrhena diandra (Michx.) Wood. Flood-plain, plentiful in a small area at the south end.
41. Uniola latifolia Michx. Spike Grass. Flood-plain, rare. Approaching its northern limit and not heretofore reported from Michigan.
42. Dactylis glomerata L. Orchard Grass. Climax forest, in and by the side of wagon road through forest.
43. Poa annua L. Low Spear Grass. Climax forest, in wagon road.

44. Poa pratensis L. June Grass, Kentucky Blue Grass. Climax forest.
45. Poa sylvestris Gray. Climax forest, frequent.
46. Poa alsodes Gray. Climax forest, frequent.
47. Glyceria nervata (Willd.) Trin. Fowl Meadow Grass. Climax forest, low places; flood-plain, abundant in low places; mud-flat.
48. Festuca nutans Spreng. Climax forest; flood-plain, occasional.
49. Bromus ciliatus L. Climax forest, low places.
50. Bromus altissimus Pursh. Flood-plain, low places.
51. Bromus incanus (Shear) Hitchc. Flood-plain, frequent.
52. Elymus brachystachys Scribn. & Ball. Flood-plain, abundant.
53. Hystrix patula Moench. Bottle-brush Grass. Climax forest; flood-plain, occasional.

CYPERACEAE (Sedge Family)

54. Cyperus esculentus L. Mud-flat.
55. Eleocharis acicularis (L.) R. & S. Mud-flat.
56. Scirpus atrovirens Muhl. Mud-flat.
57. Carex mirabilis Dewey. Climax forest, low places.
58. Carex brunnescens Poir. Climax forest, edge of low places.
59. Carex bromoides Schkuhr. Climax forest, low places.
60. Carex Deweyana Schwein. Climax forest, occasional.
61. Carex rosea Schkuhr. Climax forest; flood-plain, frequent.
62. Carex rosea Schkuhr. var. minor Boott. Climax forest; flood-plain, less frequent than the type.
63. Carex cephalophora Muhl. Climax forest, bank of ravine.
64. Carex sparganioides Muhl. Climax forest, low places.
65. Carex conjuncta Boott. Flood-plain, rare.
66. Carex stipata Muhl. Mud-flat.
67. Carex crus-corvi Shuttlw. Flood-plain, found only in one buttonbush swamp, rare.

68. Carex crinita Lam. Climax forest, low places; flood-plain.
69. Carex virescens Muhl. Climax forest, rare.
70. Carex virescens Muhl. var. Swanii Fernald. Climax forest, rare.
71. Carex Davisii Schwein. & Torr. Flood-plain, dense shade, rare.
72. Carex gracillima Schwein. Climax forest, frequent.
73. Carex gracillima Schwein. var. humilis Bailey. Climax forest, rare.
74. Carex Jamesii Schwein. Climax forest, rare.
75. Carex pennsylvanica Lam. var. lucorum (Willd.) Fernald. Climax forest, abundant.
76. Carex pubescens Muhl. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain, rare.
77. Carex prasina Wahlenb. Climax forest, low places, rare.
78. Carex plantaginea Lam. Climax forest, frequent.
79. Carex Careyana Torr. Climax forest, rare.
80. Carex laxiculmis Schwein. Climax forest, frequent.
81. Carex digitalis Willd. Climax forest, infrequent.
82. Carex laxiflora Lam. Climax forest, frequent.
83. Carex laxiflora Lam. var. gracillima Boott. Climax forest; flood-plain.
84. Carex laxiflora Lam. var. patulifolia (Dewey) Carey. Climax forest, frequent.
85. Carex laxiflora Lam. var. varians Bailey. Climax forest, occasional.
86. Carex laxiflora Lam. var. blanda (Dewey) Boott. Flood-plain, occasional.
87. Carex laxiflora Lam. var. latifolia Boott. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain, occasional.
88. Carex Hitchcockiana Dewey. Climax forest, frequent.
89. Carex grisea Wahlenb. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain, frequent.
90. Carex arctata Boott. Climax forest, frequent.
91. Carex lupulina Muhl. Flood-plain, frequent in low places; mud-flat.

92. Carex Grayii Carey. Climax forest, low places, frequent; flood-plain, low places, frequent.
93. Carex intumescens Rudge. Climax forest; flood-plain, less frequent than the following variety.
94. Carex intumescens Rudge. var Fernaldii Bailey. Climax forest, low places, frequent.
95. Carex Tuckermani Dewey. Climax forest, low place, rare.

ARACEAE (Arum Family)

96. Arisaema triphyllum (L.) Schott. Indian Turnip, Jack-in-the-Pulpit. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain, frequent.
97. Arisaema Dracontium (L.) Schott. Green Dragon, Dragon Root. Flood-plain, occasional.
98. Peltandra virginica (L.) Kunth. Mud-flat.
99. Symplocarpus foetidus (L.) Nutt. Skunk Cabbage. Flood-plain, occasional.

JUNCACEAE (Rush Family)

100. Luzula saltuensis Fernald. Climax forest, frequent.
101. Luzula campestris (L.) DC. var. multiflora (Ehrh.) Celak. Climax forest, frequent.

LILIACEAE (Lily Family)

102. Uvularia grandiflora Sm. Bellwort. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain.
103. Allium tricoccum Ait. Wild Leek. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain, occasional.
104. Allium canadense L. Wild Garlic. Flood-plain, occasional.
105. Lilium canadense L. Wild Yellow Lily. Flood-plain, occasional.
106. Erythronium americanum Ker. Yellow Adder's Tongue. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain, abundant.
107. Smilacina racemosa (L.) Desf. False Spikenard. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain, abundant.

108. Smilacina stellata (L.) Sesf. Flood-plain, abundant; mud-flat.
109. Maianthemum canadense Desf. Climax forest, abundant.
110. Polygonatum biflorum (Walt.) Ell. Small Solomon's Seal. Climax forest, abundant.
111. Polygonatum commutatum (R. & S.) Dietr. Great Solomon's Seal. Flood-plain, occasional.
112. Medeola virginiana L. Indian Cucumber-root. Climax forest, occasional.
113. Trillium recurvatum Beck. Climax forest, rare; flood-plain abundant.
114. Trillium grandiflorum (Michx.) Salisb. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain, occasional.
115. Smilax herbacea L. Carrion-flower. Flood-plain, occasional.
116. Smilax ecirrhata (Engelm.) Wats. Flood-plain, occasional.
117. Smilax rotundifolia L. var. quadrangularis (Muhl.) Wood. Climax forest, forming part of the underbrush in sections; flood-plain, occasional.
118. Smilax hispida Muhl. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain, frequent.

DIOSCOREACEAE (Yam Family)

119. Dioscorea villosa L. Wild Yam-root. Flood-plain, occasional.

IRIDACEAE (Iris Family)

120. Iris versicolor L. Larger Blue Flag. Flood-plain, in buttonbush swamp.

PIPERACEAE (Pepper Family)

121. Saururus cernuus L. Lizard's Tail. Flood-plain, low place, abundant.

SALICACEAE (Willow Family)

122. Salix nigra Marsh. Black Willow. Flood-plain, trees overhanging river, frequent. Mud-flat, seedling.
123. Salix cordata Muhl. Mud-flat, seedling.
124. Populus grandidentata Michx. Large-toothed Aspen. Climax forest, fence row western edge of woods.
125. Populus deltoides Marsh. Cotton-wood. Flood-plain; mud-flat, seedling.

JUGLANDACEAE (Walnut Family)

126. Juglans cinerea L. Butternut. Flood-plain, large trees, frequent.
127. Carya ovata (Mill.) K. Koch. Shag-bark Hickory. Climax forest, occasional.
128. Carya cordiformis (Wang.) K. Koch. Bitter Nut. Climax forest, occasional.

BETULACEAE (Birch Family)

129. Carpinus caroliniana Walt. American Hornbeam. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain, frequent.

FAGACEAE (Beech Family)

130. Fagus grandifolia Ehrh. Beech. Climax forest, one of the dominant trees, the seedlings and small trees forming dense underbrush in sections; also on flood-plain.
131. Quercus alba L. White Oak. Climax forest, occasional.
132. Quercus bicolor Willd. Swamp White Oak. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain, frequent.
133. Quercus Muhlenbergii Engelm. Yellow Oak, Chestnut Oak. Flood-plain, frequent.
134. Quercus rubra L. Red Oak. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain, occasional.

URTICACEAE (Nettle Family)

135. Ulmus fulva Michx. Slippery or Red Elm. Flood-plain, occasional.
136. Ulmus americana L. American or White Elm. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain, occasional.
137. Celtis occidentalis L. Hackberry, Nettle-Tree, Sugarberry. Flood-plain, a few large trees at the south end of the woods.
138. Humulus Lupulus L. Common Hop. Flood-plain; mud-flat.
139. Morus rubra L. Red Mulberry. Flood-plain, only one medium sized tree noted.
140. Urtica gracilis Ait. Common Nettle. Flood-plain, occasional.
141. Urtica Lyallii Wats. Flood-plain, frequent.
142. Laportea canadensis (L.) Gaud. Wood Nettle. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain, abundant; mud-flat.
143. Pilea pumila (L.) Gray. Clearweed. Flood-plain, abundant; mud-flat.
144. Boehmeria cylindrica (L.) Sw. False Nettle. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain, frequent; mud-flat.

ARISTOLOCHIACEAE (Birthwort Family)

145. Asarum canadense L. Wild Ginger. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain, abundant.

POLYGONACEAE (Buckwheat Family)

146. Rumex verticillatus L. Swamp Dock. Flood-plain, frequent; mud-flat.
147. Rumex obtusifolius L. Bitter Dock. Flood-plain, frequent; mud-flat.
148. Polygonum lapathifolium L. Mud-flat.
149. Polygonum amphibium L. var. terrestre Leers. Mud-flat.
150. Polygonum pennsylvanicum L. Mud-flat.

151. Polygonum acre HBK. var. leptostachyum Meisn. Mud-flat.
152. Polygonum Persicaria L. Lady's Thumb. Mud-flat.
153. Polygonum hydropiperoides Michx. Flood-plain, low places, abundant.
154. Polygonum hydropiperoides Michx. var. strigosum Small. Flood-plain; less frequent than the type.
155. Polygonum virginianum L. Flood-plain, abundant; mud-flat.
156. Polygonum convolvulus L. Black Bindweed. Flood-plain, occasional.
157. Polygonum scandens L. Climbing False Buckwheat. Flood-plain, occasional.

AMARANTHACEAE (Amaranth Family)

158. Amaranthus graecizans L. Tumble Weed. Flood-plain, occasional.
159. Acnida tuberculata Moq. Water Hemp. Flood-plain, frequent along the banks of the Galien River; mud-flat.

PHYTOLACCACEAE (Pokeweed Family)

160. Phytolacca decandra L. Common Poke or Scoke-weed. Climax forest, in openings where trees have been blown down and taken out and by the side of the wagon road; flood-plain, occasional.

AIZOACEAE

161. Mollugo verticillata L. Carpet Weed. Flood-plain, occasional.

CARYOPHYLLACEAE (Pink Family)

162. Stellaria longifolia Muhl. Flood-plain, frequent.
163. Stellaria media (L.) Cyrill. Common Chickweed. Climax forest, frequent in wagon road; flood-plain, frequent; mud-flat.

164. Cerastium vulgatum L. Common Mouse-ear Chickweed. Climax forest, frequent in wagon road.

PORTULACACEAE (Purslane Family)

165. Claytonia virginica L. Spring Beauty. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain.
166. Claytonia caroliniana Michx. Climax forest, rare.

RANUNCULACEAE (Crowfoot Family)

167. Ranunculus abortivus L. Small-flowered Crowfoot. Climax forest, in ravine and low places; mud-flat.
168. Ranunculus recurvatus Poir. Hooked Crowfoot. Climax forest, frequent.
169. Ranunculus septentrionalis Poir. Swamp Buttercup. Climax forest, frequent, low places; flood-plain; mud-flat.
170. Thalictrum dioicum L. Early Meadow Rue. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain, frequent.
171. Hepatica acutiloba DC. Climax forest, abundant.
172. Clematis virginiana L. Flood-plain, occasional.
173. Isopyrum biternatum (Raf.) T. & G. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain, abundant.
174. Aquilegia canadensis L. Wild Columbine. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain, occasional.
175. Actaea rubra (Ait.) Willd. Red Baneberry. Climax forest, occasional.
176. Actaea alba (L.) Mill. White Baneberry. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain.

MAGNOLIACEAE (Magnolia Family)

177. Liriodendron Tulipifera L. White Wood. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain.

ANONACEAE (Custard Apple Family)

178. Asimina triloba Dunal. Common Papaw. Climax forest, abundant, forming thick underbrush over large

portions of the woods; flood-plain, abundant, larger bushes than in the upland woods.

MENISPERMACEAE (Moonseed Family)

179. Menispermum canadense L. Flood-plain, occasional.

BERBERIDACEAE (Barberry Family)

180. Podophyllum peltatum L. Climax forest, abundant.
181. Caulophyllum thalictroides (L.) Michx. Blue Cohosh. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain, occasional.

LAURACEAE (Laurel Family)

182. Benzoin aestivale (L.) Nees. Spice Bush, Benjamin Bush. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain, abundant.

PAPAVERACEAE (Poppy Family)

183. Sanguinaria canadensis L. Climax forest, abundant, particularly on banks of ravines.

FUMARIACEAE (Fumitory Family)

184. Dicentra Cucullaria (L.) Bernh. Dutchman's Breeches Climax forest, abundant.
185. Dicentra canadensis (Goldie.) Walp. Squirrel Corn. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain, occasional.

CRUCIFERAE (Mustard Family)

186. Radicula palustris (L.) Moench. Marsh Cress. Mud-flat.
187. Barbarea vulgaris R. Br. Common Winter Cress, Yellow Rocket. Climax forest, low places; flood-plain, frequent; mud-flat.
188. Dentaria laciniata Muhl. Climax forest, frequent.
189. Cardamine bulbosa (Schreb.) BSP. Spring Cress. Flood-plain, low places, occasional.
190. Cardamine Douglassii (Torr.) Britton. Climax forest, abundant in low places; flood-plain.

191. Arabis laevigata (Muhl.) Poir. Climax forest, occasional near border; flood-plain, occasional.

CRASSULACEAE (Orpine Family)

192. Penthorum sedoides L. Mud-flat.

SAXIFRAGACEAE (Saxifrage Family)

193. Mitella diphylla L. Climax forest, frequent.
194. Ribes Cynosbati L. Prickly Gooseberry. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain, frequent.
195. Ribes Cynosbati L. var. glabratum Fernald. Climax forest, rare.

HAMAMELIDACEAE (Witch-hazel Family)

196. Hamamelis virginiana L. Witch-hazel. Climax forest, frequent.

PLATANACEAE (Plane Tree Family)

197. Platanus occidentalis L. Sycamore. Flood-plain, several very large trees.

ROSACEAE (Rose Family)

198. Pyrus coronaria L. American Crab. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain, frequent.
199. Pyrus Malus L. Apple. Climax forest, several small trees in fence row western border of woods.
200. Crataegus punctata Jacq. Flood-plain, frequent.
201. Crataegus punctata Jacq. var. canescens Britton. Climax forest, only one tree in fence row on west side of woods.
202. Crataegus pedicellata Sarg. var. Ellwangeriana (Sarg.) Eggleston. Flood-plain, one tree in fence row on public highway near the bridge. A very beautiful tree when in full fruit.

203. Crataegus Chapmani (Beadle) Ashe. var. Plukenetii Eggleston. Flood-plain.
204. Geum canadense Jacq. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain.
205. Geum virginianum L. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain.
206. Rubus occidentalis L. Black Raspberry. Climax forest, frequent, particularly near the wagon road.
207. Rubus frondosus Bigel. Climax forest, side of wagon road.
208. Rubus pergratus Blanchard. Climax forest.
209. Rubus elegantulus Blanchard. Climax forest, side of wagon road.
210. Rubus Andrewsianus Blanchard. Climax forest.
211. Rubus hispidus L. Flood-plain, low places.
212. Agrimonia mollis (T. & G.) Britton. Flood-plain, occasional.
213. Prunus serotina Ehrh. Climax forest, large trees occasional; flood-plain.

LEGUMINOSAE (Pulse Family)

214. Cercis canadensis L. Redbud. Flood-plain, occasional.
215. Desmodium nudiflorum (L.) DC. Climax forest, frequent.
216. Desmodium grandiflorum (Walt.) DC. Climax forest, frequent.
217. Amphicarpa monoica (L.) Ell. Hog Peanut. Climax forest, frequent.

OXALIDACEAE (Wood Sorrel Family)

218. Oxalis corniculata L. Lady's Sorrel. Flood-plain, occasional; mud-flat.

GERANIACEAE (Geranium Family)

219. Geranium maculatum L. Wild Cranesbill. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain.

RUTACEAE (Rue Family)

220. Ptelea trifoliata L. Flood-plain, occasional.

EUPHORBIACEAE (Spurge Family)

221. Acalypha virginica L. Flood-plain, occasional.

LIMNANTHACEAE (False Mermaid Family)

222. Floerkea proserpinacoides Willd. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain.

ANACARDIACEAE (Cashew Family)

223. Rhus typhina L. Staghorn Sumach. Climax forest, fence row.
224. Rhus Toxicodendron L. Poison Ivy, Poison Oak. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain, abundant.

CELASTRACEAE (Staff Tree Family)

225. Evonymus obovatus Nutt. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain.
226. Celastrus scandens L. Climbing Bittersweet. Flood-plain, occasional.

STAPHYLEACEAE (Bladder Nut Family)

227. Staphylea trifolia L. American Bladder Nut. Flood-plain, forming underbrush in places.

ACERACEAE (Maple Family)

228. Acer saccharum Marsh. Sugar or Rock Maple. Climax forest, the dominant tree; flood-plain.
229. Acer saccharum Marsh. var. nigrum (Michx. f.) Britton. Black Sugar Maple. Flood-plain, occasional.
230. Acer saccharinum L. White or Silver Maple. Climax forest; flood-plain; mud-flat, small seedling.

231. Acer rubrum L. Red or Swamp Maple. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain.

BALSAMINACEAE (Touch-me-not Family)

232. Impatiens pallida Nutt. Pale Touch-me-not. Climax forest, dense growth in low places; flood-plain.
233. Impatiens biflora Walt. Spotted Touch-me-not. Climax forest, abundant; mud-flat.

VITACEAE (Vine Family)

234. Psedera quinquefolia (L.) Greene. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain, abundant.
235. Vitis vulpina L. River-bank or Frost Grape. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain, frequent, climbing on trees near bank of Galien River.

TILIACEAE (Linden Family)

236. Tilia americana L. Basswood. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain.

VIOLACEAE (Violet Family)

237. Viola papilionacea Pursh. Climax forest, near western border, frequent.
238. Viola sororia Willd. Climax forest, frequent.
239. Viola blanda Willd. Sweet White Violet. Climax forest, low places.
240. Viola scabriuscula Schwein. Smooth Yellow Violet. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain, abundant.
241. Viola canadensis L. Canada Violet. Climax forest, abundant.
242. Viola striata Ait. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain, abundant; mud-flat.
243. Viola conspersa Reichenb. Flood-plain, occasional.
244. Viola rostrata Pursh. Long-spurred Violet. Climax forest, occasional.

M 506. Aclpv4bl

THYMELAEACEAE (Mezereum Family)

245. Dirca palustris L. Leatherwood. Climax forest, rare.

ONAGRACEAE (Evening Primrose Family)

246. Ludvigia palustris (L.) Ell. Water Purslane. Flood-plain, in low muddy places; mud-flat.
247. Epilobium coloratum Muhl. Climax forest, low places, frequent.
248. Circaea lutetiana L. Enchanter's Nightshade. Climax forest, frequent.
249. Circaea alpina L. Climax forest, on rotting logs in low places.

ARALIACEAE (Ginseng Family)

250. Aralia nudicaulis L. Wild Sarsaparilla. Climax forest, frequent.
251. Panax trifolium L. Dwarf Ginseng, Ground Nut. Climax forest, occasional.

UMBELLIFERAE (Parsley Family)

252. Sanicula marilandica L. Flood-plain, occasional.
253. Sanicula gregaria Bicknell. Flood-plain, abundant.
254. Sanicula trifoliata Bicknell. Climax forest, occasional.
255. Erigenia bulbosa (Michx.) Nutt. Harbinger-of-Spring. Climax forest, rare.
256. Chaerophyllum procumbens (L.) Crantz. Climax forest, densely matted in small areas; flood-plain, occasional.
257. Osmorhiza Claytoni (Michx.) Clarke. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain, abundant.
258. Osmorhiza longistylis (Torr.) DC. Flood-plain, abundant.
259. Cicuta maculata L. Spotted Cowbane. Flood-plain, low places, frequent; mud-flat.

260. Cryptotaenia canadensis (L.) DC. Honewort. Flood-plain, abundant.
261. Zizia aurea (L.) Koch. Golden Alexanders. Flood-plain, occasional.
262. Heracleum lanatum Michx. Cow Parsnip. Flood-plain, abundant.

CORNACEAE (Dogwood Family)

263. Cornus florida L. Flowering Dogwood. Climax forest, abundant, small plants in places forming underbrush; flood-plain.
264. Cornus alternifolia L. f. Climax forest, abundant, also forming underbrush; flood-plain.
265. Nyssa sylvatica Marsh. Black Gum, Pepperidge, Tupelo, Sour Gum. Climax forest, one large tree near southern end of woods.

ERICACEAE (Heath Family)

266. Pyrola elliptica Nutt. Shin Leaf. Climax forest, frequent.
267. Monotropa uniflora L. Indian Pipe, Corpse Plant. Climax forest, abundant.

PRIMULACEAE (Primrose Family)

268. Samolus floribundus HBK. Water Pimpernel, Brookweed. Mud-flat.
269. Steironema ciliatum (L.) Raf. Flood-plain, low places, frequent.

OLEACEAE (Olive Family)

270. Fraxinus americana L. White Ash. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain; mud-flat, small seedling.
271. Fraxinus pennsylvanica Marsh. Red Ash. Flood-plain, occasional.
272. Fraxinus nigra Marsh. Black Ash. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain.

ASCLEPIADACEAE (Milkweed Family)

273. Asclepias incarnata L. Swamp Milkweed. Flood-plain, occasional; mud-flat.

CONVOLVULACEAE (Convolvulus Family)

274. Cuscuta Cephalanthi Engelm. Flood-plain, occasional.

POLEMONIACEAE (Polemonium Family)

275. Phlox divaricata L. Blue Phlox. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain; mud-flat.

HYDROPHYLLACEAE (Waterleaf Family)

276. Hydrophyllum virginianum L. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain.
277. Hydrophyllum canadense L. Climax forest, rare.

BORAGINACEAE (Borage Family)

278. Lappula virginiana (L.) Greene. Beggar's Lice. Climax forest, occasional.

VERBENACEAE (Vervain Family)

279. Verbena urticaefolia L. White Vervain. Flood-plain, occasional; mud-flat.
280. Lippia lanceolata Michx. Fog-fruit. Mud-flat.

LABIATAE (Mint Family)

281. Teucrium canadense L. American Germander, Wood Sage. Flood-plain, occasional; mud-flat.
282. Teucrium occidentale Gray. var. boreale (Bicknell) Fernald. Flood-plain, rare.
283. Scutellaria lateriflora L. Mad-dog Skullcap. Climax forest, low places; flood-plain, frequent; mud-flat.
284. Prunella vulgaris L. Heal-all, Carpenter-weed. Flood-plain, frequent; mud-flat.

285. Stachys tenuifolia Willd. Climax forest, low places; flood-plain; mud-flat.
286. Monarda fistulosa L. Wild Bergamont. Flood-plain, occasional.
287. Blephilia hirsuta (Pursh) Benth. Wood Mint. Flood-plain, frequent; mud-flat.
288. Lycopus rubellus Moench. Flood-plain, frequent.
289. Lycopus americanus Muhl. Mud-flat.
290. Mentha arvensis L. var. canadensis (L.) Briquet. Flood-plain, occasional; mud-flat.

SOLANACEAE (Nightshade Family)

291. Solanum nigrum L. Common Nightshade. Climax forest, occasional; mud-flat.
292. Solanum carolinense L. Horse Nettle. Flood-plain, occasional.

SCROPHULARIACEAE (Figwort Family)

293. Scrophularia marilandica L. Flood-plain, occasional.
294. Scrophularia leporella Bicknell. Flood-plain, occasional.
295. Chelone glabra L. Turtlehead, Snakehead. Flood-plain, occasional.
296. Mimulus ringens L. Monkey Flower. Flood-plain, occasional; mud-flat.
297. Ilysanthes dubia (L.) Barnhart. Flood-plain, rare.
298. Veronica serpyllifolia L. Thyme-leaved Speedwell. Climax forest, in wagon road.
299. Veronica arvensis L. Corn Speedwell. Climax forest, in wagon road.

OROBANCHACEAE (Broom-rape Family)

300. Epifagus virginiana (L.) Bart. Beech-drops. Climax forest, abundant; flood-plain.

PLANTAGINACEAE (Plantain Family)

301. Plantago Rugelii Dene. Climax forest, in wagon road; mud-flat.

RUBIACEAE (Madder Family)

302. Galium Aparine L. Cleavers, Goose Grass. Climax forest, abundant; food-plain, abundant; mud-flat.
303. Galium circaezans Michx. Wild Liquorice. Climax forest, frequent.
304. Galium lanceolatum Torr. Climax forest, frequent.
305. Galium tinctorium L. Flood-plain, occasional.
306. Galium concinnum T. & G. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain, frequent.
307. Galium triflorum Michx. Sweet-scented Bedstraw. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain.
308. Mitchella repens L. Partridge Berry. Climax forest, frequent.
309. Cephalanthus occidentalis L. Buttonbush. Flood-plain, abundant, forming buttonbush swamps; mud-flat, seedlings.

CAPRIFOLIACEAE (Honeysuckle Family)

310. Lonicera canadensis Marsh. American Fly Honeysuckle. Climax forest, occasional.
311. Lonicera glaucescens Rydb. Climax forest, rare.
312. Viburnum acerifolium L. Maple-leaved Viburnum. Climax forest, abundant.
313. Sambucus racemosa L. Red-berried Elder. Climax forest, occasional.

VALERIANACEAE (Valerian Family)

314. Valerianella chenopodifolia (Pursh) DC. Flood-plain, low places, rare.

CUCURBITACEAE (Gourd Family)

315. Echinocystis Lobata (Michx.) T. & G. Wild Balsam-apple. Flood-plain, occasional; mud-flat.

CAMPANULACEAE (Bluebell Family)

316. Campanula americana L. Tall Bellflower. Climax forest, occasional near border; flood-plain, frequent.

LOBELIACEAE (Lobelia Family)

317. Lobelia Cardinalis L. Cardinal Flower. Flood-plain, occasional.
318. Lobelia siphilitica L. Great Lobelia. Mud-flat.

COMPOSITAE (Composite Family)

319. Vernonia missurica Raf. Mud-flat.
320. Eupatorium purpureum L. Joe-Pye Weed. Flood-plain, frequent.
321. Eupatorium perfoliatum L. Boneset, Thoroughwort. Mud-flat.
322. Eupatorium urticaefolium Reichard. White Snakeroot. Flood-plain, occasional; mud-flat.
323. Solidago caesia L. var. axillaris (Pursh) Gray. Climax forest, abundant.
324. Solidago latifolia L. Climax forest, occasional; flood-plain.
325. Solidago rugosa Mill. Climax forest, frequent.
326. Solidago canadensis L. Flood-plain, frequent.
327. Solidago serotina Ait. Mud-flat.
328. Aster macrophyllus L. Climax forest, abundant.
329. Aster cordifolius L. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain.
330. Aster lateriflorus (L.) Britton. Flood-plain, frequent; mud-flat.
331. Aster lateriflorus (L.) Britton. var. glomerellus (T. & G.) Burgess. Climax forest, rare.
332. Aster Tradescanti L. Climax forest, frequent; flood-plain; mud-flat.
333. Aster paniculatus Lane. Mud-flat.
334. Erigeron philadelphicus L. Flood-plain, occasional.

335. Erigeron annuus (L.) Pers. Daisy Fleabane. Flood-plain, occasional.
336. Erigeron canadensis L. Horse-weed, Butter-weed. Mud-flat.
337. Gnaphalium polycephalum Michx. Common Everlasting. Climax forest, in clearings made by fallen trees and in wagon road.
338. Silphium perfoliatum L. Cup Plant. Flood-plain, occasional.
339. Ambrosia trifida L. Great Ragweed. Flood-plain, abundant; mud-flat.
340. Ambrosia artemisiifolia L. Roman Wormwood, Hog-weed, Bitter-weed, Ragweed. Climax forest, in clearings made by uprooted trees; mud-flat.
341. Xanthium canadense Mill. Cocklebur. Flood-plain, frequent.
342. Xanthium commune Britton. Mud-flat.
343. Rudbeckia laciniata L. Flood-plain, occasional; mud-flat.
344. Helianthus decapetalus L. Flood-plain, occasional.
345. Bidens discoidea (T. & G.) Britton. Climax forest, in low places, infrequent.
346. Bidens frondosa L. Beggar-ticks. Mud-flat.
347. Bidens comosa (Gray) Wiegand. Mud-flat.
348. Bidens cernua L. Mud-flat.
349. Achillea Millefolium L. Common Yarrow, Milfoil. Climax forest, in wagon road and clearings made by uprooted trees.
350. Erechtites hieracifolia (L.) Raf. Climax forest, in clearings made by uprooted trees; flood-plain.
351. Senecio aureus L. Golden Ragwort. Flood-plain, occasional.
352. Arctium minus Bernh. Common Burdock. Climax forest, in clearings made by uprooted trees.
353. Cirsium lanceolatum (L.) Hill. Common or Bull Thistle. Climax forest, in clearings made by uprooted trees.
354. Taraxacum officinale Weber. Common Dandelion. Climax forest; flood-plain; mud-flat.

355. Taraxacum erythrospermum Andrz. Red-seeded Dandelion. Flood-plain, occasional.
356. Lactuca scariola L. Prickly Lettuce. Climax forest, frequent.
357. Lactuca spicata (Lam.) Hitchc. Flood-plain, occasional.
358. Prenanthes alba L. Rattlesnake-root. Climax forest, occasional.

Detroit, Michigan

EXPLANATION OF PLATES

PLATE IX

WARREN WOODS PRESERVE. Climax beech-maple forest at left of picture and flood-plain at right. The wagon road also is seen in this cut. (Photograph by George R. Fox)

PLATE X

WARREN WOODS PRESERVE. Climax beech-maple forest, showing almost complete absence of undergrowth. This condition prevails over large portions of the forest. (Photograph by George R. Fox)

PLATE XI

FIG. 1. One of the mud-flats beside the Galien River in the Warren Woods Preserve; photographed in August, 1919. The vegetation is confined to the inner edge. In 1921 the bar was entirely covered with vegetation and could scarcely be distinguished from the older portion of the flood-plain. (Photograph by Lee R. Dice. The cut is used by courtesy of the Museum of Zoölogy, University of Michigan.)

FIG. 2. The Galien River in Warren Woods Preserve and the flood-plain forest. (Photograph by George R. Fox)

FIG. 3. The climax beech-maple forest, Warren Woods Preserve, showing undergrowth of young beech and maple trees.

PLATE IX

Warren Woods Preserve

PLATE X

Warren Woods Preserve

PLATE XI

FIG. 1

FIG. 2

FIG. 3

WARREN WOODS PRESERVE

THE ABSENCE OF CHROMOSOME PAIRING DURING MEIOSIS IN *OENOTHERA BIENNIS* *

STERLING H. EMERSON

In a recent paper by Cleland [1] there appears a preliminary account of the reduction division in *Oenothera biennis*. He finds that as the chromosomes shorten and thicken in late heterotypic prophase they are arranged end to end in strings, as is common in Oenotheras, but in this species they generally form two closed rings, one of six chromosomes and the other with eight, with some minor variations. While he noted that there was no parasynaptic pairing of chromosomes at a metaphase stage, he did believe that there was a mechanism insuring the separation of homologous chromosomes. He observed that adjacent chromosomes became attached to spindle fibers from opposite poles, alternate ones becoming attached to fibers from the same pole. Presumably homologous chromosomes lie adjacent and would thus always be separated.

The studies reported in the present paper were begun in February, 1923, with material kindly supplied to me by Professor B. M. Davis. Additional material has since been collected from plants grown by Professor Davis. Second-contraction figures here showed chromosome arrangements very similar to the rings described by Cleland (Plate XII, Figs. 1–6). The great discrepancy between my observations and those of Cleland is that I found no regular method of separation of homologous chromosomes. Irregularities in chromosome separation were the outstanding features in my preparations.

* Paper from the Department of Botany, University of Michigan, No. 214.

[1] Cleland, Ralph E. *Chromosome Arrangements during Meiosis in Certain Oenotheras.* Amer. Nat., 57: 562–566. 1923.

As the spindles are forming preparatory to the separation of the chromosomes, the ring formations noted in second contraction are still evident (Plate XII, Figs. 8–12). In no case could it be seen that adjacent chromosomes uniformly became attached to fibers from opposite poles. As the chromosomes separate in anaphase, adjacent chromosomes still attached can often be seen passing to the same pole; in some cases as many as six or seven attached chromosomes go to the same pole (Plate XIII and Plate XIV, Fig. 1.) Often the chromosomes become detached early and it is impossible to tell what position they had in the rings. Chromosomes attached end to end can sometimes be seen in telophase as the daughter nuclei are passing into the interkinesis period (Plate XIV, Figs. 2–7). These chromosome arrangements do not permit a regular method of chromosome separation such as described by Cleland.

Oenothera biennis mut. *sulfurea* is a mutation from *Oe. biennis*, differing from it only in its lighter flower color. This form shows the same chromosomal behavior during meiosis as did its parent form and figures of it are included in the accompanying illustrations as noted in the explanation of plates.

It has been shown by De Vries [2] that the sulfur-flower character in *Oe. biennis* and mut. *sulfurea* is patroclinic in its inheritance, with the first generation resembling the male parent and breeding true in succeeding generations. The same sulfur-flower character was introduced into another species when Davis [3] crossed *Oe. biennis* with *Oe. franciscana*. This character in *Oe. franciscana* and the sulfur-flowered form resembling it behaved as a Mendelian recessive (manuscript data of Professor Davis). Cleland has shown that in *Oe. franciscana* [4] there is a normal pairing of homologous chromosomes, while in *Oe. franciscana sulfurea* [5] there is normal pairing of two chromosomes; the other

[2] De Vries, Hugo. *Gruppenweise Artbildung*, pp. 297–298. Gebr. Borntraeger: Berlin. 1913.

[3] Davis, Bradley Moore. *Hybrids of Oenothera biennis and Oenothera franciscana in the First and Second Generations. Genetics*, 1: 197–251. 1916.

[4] Cleland, Ralph E. *The Reduction Division in the Pollen Mother Cells of Oenothera franciscana. Amer. Journ. Bot.*, 9: 391–413. 1922.

[5] Cleland, Ralph E. *Meiosis in Pollen Mother Cells of Oenothera franciscana sulfurea. Bot. Gaz.*, 77: 149–170. 1924.

twelve behave as in *Oe. biennis*. This is the only case known in which a character shows patroclinic inheritance (non-Mendelian) in one species and when introduced into another species shows Mendelian behavior. Cytological studies show that in the former case there is no regular segregation of chromosomes such as is necessary for Mendelian inheritance, while in the latter case there is such a segregation.

It is possible that where there is no pairing of chromosomes there are no homologous chromosomes. *Oe. biennis* on this assumption would have fourteen different chromosomes in place of seven pairs of homologous chromosomes. The cytological and genetical results reviewed above are in harmony with such a view.

University of Michigan

EXPLANATION OF PLATES

PLATE XII

FIG. 1. *Oe. biennis.* — prophase, ring of six chromosomes and strings of six and two chromosomes.

FIG. 2. *Oe. biennis.* — prophase, incomplete section showing ring of six and string of six chromosomes.

FIGS. 3–4. *Oe. biennis.* — prophase, incomplete sections.

FIG. 5. Mut. *sulfurea.* — prophase, ring of six and strings of six and two chromosomes.

FIG. 6. Mut. *sulfurea.* — prophase, rings of six and eight chromosomes.

FIGS. 7–9. *Oe. biennis.* — spindle formation preceding "metaphase."

FIGS. 10–11. Mut. *sulfurea.* — spindle formation preceding "metaphase."

FIGS. 12–13. *Oe. biennis.* — "metaphase."

PLATE XIII

FIGS. 1, 2, 4, 6, 7, 8. *Oe. biennis.* — separation of chromosomes in anaphase.

FIGS. 3, 5. Mut. *sulfurea.* — separation of chromosomes.

PLATE XIV

FIG. 1. Mut. *sulfurea.* — polar view of late anaphase with diagrams of the chromosome groups at either pole; a = upper and b = lower group of chromosomes.

FIGS. 2, 5. *Oe. Biennis.* — chromosomes at one pole in late anaphase.

FIG. 3. *Oe. biennis.* — polar view of early telophase; c = upper and d = lower group of chromosomes (on the slide one lies directly over the other).

FIGS. 4, 6. *Oe. biennis.* — chromosomes grouped at poles in early telophase.

FIG. 7. Mut. *sulfurea.* — late telophase; six of the chromosomes are strongly attached in a string.

PLATE XII

PLATE XIII

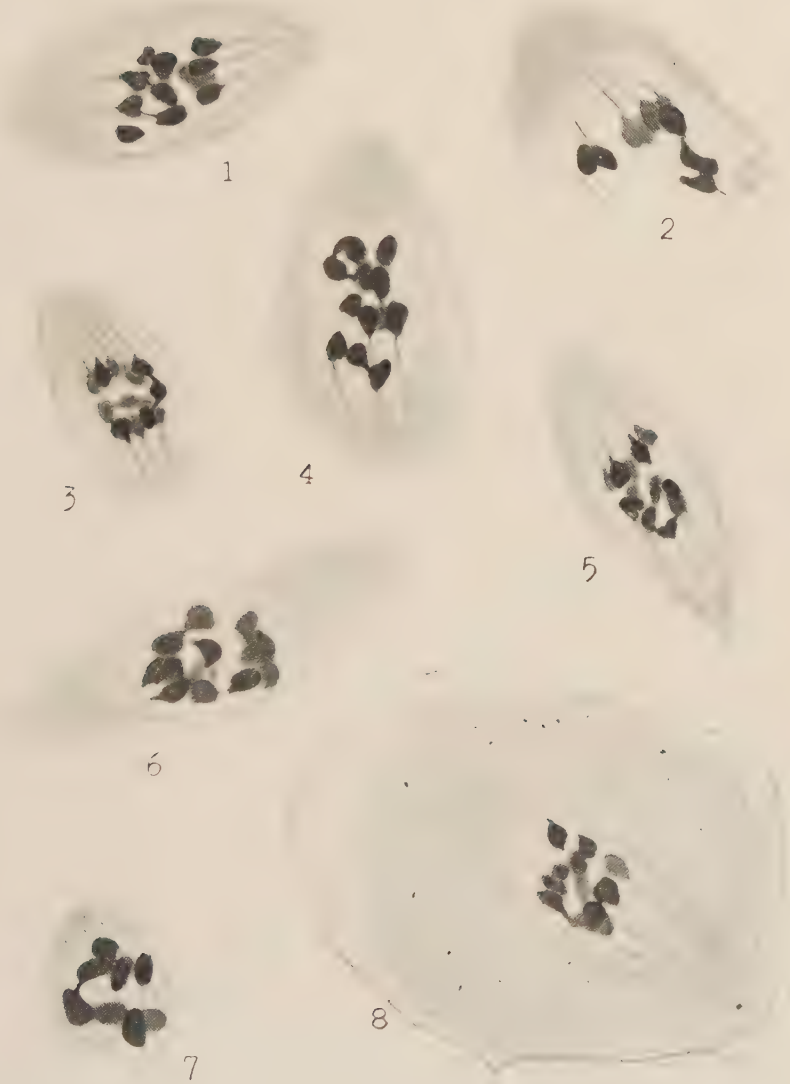


PLATE XIV

THE FLORA OF THE PENINSULA OF VIRGINIA *

EILEEN WHITEHEAD ERLANSON

The Peninsula of Virginia, which lies southeast of Richmond, is about sixty miles long by fifteen miles wide. It is bounded on the east by Chesapeake Bay, on the northeast by the York River estuary, and on the southwest by the James River; it is all within the coastal plain.

The old town of Williamsburg is situated thirty miles from the coast, on the divide between the two rivers. Although the highest point is only about one hundred feet above sea-level, the whole Peninsula is far from dull or uniform in surface.

The geological formations are Recent and Quaternary in the east and pass into Miocene in the western part. The soils are sandy with intermixtures of clay and shell marls.

The York River shore is a typical maritime coast, with salt marshes and small sand-dunes. The water of the James River estuary is fresh, or slightly brackish, and its many tributaries flow through extensive cypress swamps, the most noteworthy being those of the Chickahominy and Powhatan rivers. The area of uncultivated land is possibly as large as in any section of the east, exclusive of the mountainous regions.

In several respects the local flora is particularly interesting. The many typical pine-barren areas of the region contrast markedly with the conditions in the humid cypress swamps close by. Because of the diversified habitats the plants are in many cases very locally distributed; even *Claytonia virginica* grows in only a few, widely separated, flood-plains. Strange as it may seem, both Betula and Crataegus are extremely rare in the region. The only representatives of these genera which were found were

* Paper from the Department of Botany of the University of Michigan, No. 209.

two separate trees of *Betula nigra*, near Williamsburg, a few scattered individuals of *Crataegus Crus-galli*, and a clump of one other native species of hawthorn.

On the other hand *Monotropsis odorata*, which is generally considered as "rare," is frequent throughout the Peninsula in dry oak woods; it flowers in February and March. A few species more typical of the Alleghanian region are also to be found here; these are *Stewartia pentagyna*, *Parnassia asarifolia* and *Rudbeckia laciniata* var. *humilis*. During the Great War several European plants were introduced, it is thought, and have become established around Newport News and Norfolk. The only European species we found that had not previously been reported in North America was *Ajuga chamaepitys*, which was well established on the south shore of the York River, about a dozen miles above Yorktown.

The plants of the following list were collected by Earl Jerome Grimes and the writer, during the spring and autumn of 1920, and throughout 1921. The College of William and Mary, at Williamsburg, was our base, and the country in the immediate vicinity was thoroughly worked over for a radius of ten miles. Collecting trips were also made along the railway at various points between Newport News and Elko, Henrico County.

It is well known that Banister, Clayton and Mitchell made extensive botanical explorations in eastern Virginia in the eighteenth century; very little indeed has been done since in the State, except by visiting botanists. To this lack of local botanical interest are attributed the many rare "finds" which were made in this small area in two seasons.[1]

The most noteworthy plants of northern range discovered were: *Pogonia affinis* Aust., one of the rarest orchids of New England and Pennsylvania; *Juncus asper* Engelm., hitherto supposed to be confined to the pine-barrens of New Jersey; and *Polygonum densiflorum* Meisn., previously known from southern New Jersey and Delaware. Several plants belonging to the southern coastal plain, which had been reported from North Caro-

[1] An account of the most interesting plants found was published in *Rhodora*, 24: 148; 25: 17.

lina, were found. The most notable extension of range was made by the discovery of *Habenaria repens* Nutt., not previously reported north of Florida, growing beside the Chickahominy River near Lanexa. *Uniola longifolia* Scribn., heretofore known from Georgia and Tennessee, was found near Williamsburg. Of foremost interest is the apparent re-discovery of Clayton's "Chelone floribus speciosis pulcherrimis colore rosae damascenae," with sessile leaves. This plant has been named *Chelone Grimesii* by Mr. Weatherby.

A study of the flora of eastern Virginia not only helps to fill gaps in our knowledge of plant distribution, but also throws light on the type forms of many American species described by Gronovius and other early botanists, because a great many of their specimens came from this region. The correct interpretation of Linnaean species often depends upon an accurate knowledge of the flora of the region where Clayton worked. It is hoped that the present list will be of value, although it is not by any means a complete flora.

Duplicates of almost all the collections were sent to the Gray Herbarium. Thanks are due to Mr. C. A. Weatherby, Mrs. Agnes Chase, Dr. Ezra Brainerd, and other botanists, for kindly furnishing determinations. After Mr. Grimes' death in December, 1921, his herbarium was purchased for the Herbarium of the New York Botanical Gardens.

The list is arranged according to Gray's *Manual* (7th ed.), and the collection numbers of Grimes are given. While we were doing this work, an attempt was made to collect the most important references to the flora of Virginia; these are appended in the bibliography.

The stations for a thousand and fifty-two species and varieties are given. Those plants which are included in articles published in *Rhodora* are marked with an asterisk.

ADIANTUM PEDATUM L. Near Williamsburg. Oct. 17, 1920. 3167.

ASPIDIUM NOVEBORACENSE (L.) Sw. Rich moist hardwoods, throughout the Peninsula. 3735.

Aspidium spinulosum (O. F. Müller) Sw. White oak woods, near Williamsburg. June, 1921. 2712.

Aspidium Thelypteris (L.) Sw. Swamps along James River, near Camp Wallace. July, 1921.

Asplenium Filix-femina (L.) Bernh. Rich moist woods. 3765; 4098.

Asplenium platyneuron (L.) Oakes. Dry woods, near Williamsburg. 1920. 3156; 4148.

Asplenium platyneuron (L.) Oakes var. serratum (E. S. Miller) B. S. P. Dry ravine, west of Williamsburg. Oct., 1920. 3157.

Athyrium asplenioides (Michx.) Desv. Moist ravine, west of Williamsburg. Oct. 19, 1920. 3184.

Dennstaedtia punctilobula (Michx.) Moore. Rich wooded banks, west of Williamsburg. 3165; 3884.

Onoclea sensibilis L. Moist flood-plains. Common. 4575.

Polypodium polypodioides (L.) Hitchc. On trunk of Platanus, flood-plain of Queen's Creek, north of Williamsburg. March 13, 1921. 3275.

Polystichum acrostichoides (Michx.) Schott. Open woods, James City Co. Oct., 1920. 3161.

Polystichum acrostichoides Schott. var. incisum (Gray) Gilbert. Openings in mixed woods, west of Williamsburg. Oct., 1920. 3162.

Pteris aquilina L. Sandy heath near Ewell.

Thelypteris hexagonoptera (Michx.) Weatherby. Rich hardwoods. Common. 3957; 3117; 3163.

Thelypteris noveboracensis (L.) Nieuwl. Dry ravines and pine woods. Common. Oct., 1920. 3164; 3222.

Thelypteris palustris Schott. Open swamps at Longhill, James City Co. July, 1921. 4097.

Woodwardia areolata (L.) Moore. Wet wooded ravines near Williamsburg. Common. 3193.

Woodwardia virginica (L.) Sm. Sphagnum bogs, James City Co. June and July, 1921. 3855; 3914.

Osmunda cinnamomea L. Moist soil in pine woods, James City Co. May 4, 1921. 2554.

Osmunda Claytoniana L. Moist oak woods, James City Co. June 6, 1921. 3646.

Osmunda regalis L. Rich hardwoods, west of Williamsburg. May 17, 1921. 3571.

Botrychium obliquum Muhl. Young pine woods near Williamsburg. Oct. 1, 1920. 3113.

Botrychium obliquum var. dissectum (Spreng.) Clute. Flood-plain of Chisel's Run, west of Williamsburg. Aug. 25, 1921. 4307; 4436.

Botrychium virginianum (L.) Sw. Flood-plains of streams flowing north into Queen's Creek, York Co. April, 1921. 3403; 3443.

Ophioglossum vulgatum L. Rich soil of mixed woods north of Williamsburg. April 17, 1921. 3445.

Equisetum arvense L. Sandy soil near Williamsburg. March 28, 1921. 3368.

Equisetum hyemale L. var. affine (Engelm.) A. A. Eaton. Near Williamsburg. April, 1921. 3383.

Lycopodium adpressum Lloyd & Underw. Sandy soil in damp ditch in flat pine woods, C. & O. Railroad cut northwest of Williamsburg. July 1, 1921. 3908. Henrico Co. near Elko. 4199.

Lycopodium lucidulum Michx. Pine woods near Williamsburg. July 19, 1921. 4062.

Lycopodium obscurum L. Wet soil of flood-plain hardwoods, Chisel's Run, west of Williamsburg. March 22, 1921. 3305.

Selaginella rupestris (L.) Spring. Abundant in low moist places.

Juniperus virginiana L. Field north of Williamsburg. March 17, 1921. 3299. Common.

Pinus echinata Mill. Edge of flat woods near Williamsburg. Dec., 1920. 3248; 3261. Occasional.

? Pinus rigida Mill. Dry sandy embankment along railroad west of Williamsburg. Large tree. April, 1921. 3481.

Pinus Taeda L. Flat woods, sandy soil near Williamsburg. Dec., 1920. 3262; 3263; 3251.

Pinus virginiana Mill. Common in sandy soil throughout the Peninsula, invading abandoned fields in second year. Dec., 1920. 3249; 3250; 3259; 3260; 3265.

Taxodium distichum (L.) Richard. Chickahominy River at Lanexa, July 30, 1921. Shore of James River south of Williamsburg. Aug. 15, 1921. 4142; 4249.

Typha angustifolia L. Open swamp near Williamsburg. July 11, 1921. 3680.

Typha latifolia L. Near Williamsburg. June 23, 1921. 3811.

Sparganium americanum Nutt. Mouth of Chisel's Run at Longhill Swamp, James City Co. July 23, 1921. In a stream between Elko and Poplar Springs, Aug. 6, 1921. 4084; 4208.

Naias guadalupensis (Spreng.) Morong. In Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. Dec. 12, 1920.

Potomogeton crispus L. In Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. Dec., 1920. 3255.

Potomogeton pulcher Tuckerm. In a pond near Elko, Henrico Co., Aug. 6, 1921. 4196.

Zannichellia palustris L. var. major (Boeningh.) K. Koch. Running water, Queen's Creek, York Co., April 17, 1921. 3452.

Alisma subcordatum Raf. Wooded swamp along Chickahominy River at Lanexa. July 30, 1921. 4127.

Echinodorus tenellus (Mart.) Buchenau (submersed form). Edge of water, Chickahominy River at Lanexa. July 30, 1921. 4135.

Sagittaria falcata Pursh. Tidal marsh along Queen's Creek, north of Williamsburg. June 28, 1921. 3864.

Sagittaria pubescens Muhl. Sphagnum swamp, Longhill, James City Co., July 23, 1921. 4083.

Sagittaria subulata (L.) Buchenau. Tidal swamp along Chickahominy River near Lanexa. July 30, 1921. 4129.

Elodea canadensis Michx. Introduced into Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. 1920; established in creek, quarter of a mile below, in 1921.

Agrostis hyemalis (Walt.) B. S. P. Dry soil along railway,

Williamsburg, May 29, 1920. Sandy roadside north of town, June 12, 1921. 2620; 3694.

AGROSTIS PALUSTRIS Huds. Meadows and open ground, York Co. June and July, 1921. 3660; 3726; 3953; 3955.

AGROSTIS PERENNANS (Walt.) Tuckm. Roadside, west of Williamsburg, June, 1921. 3838; 4350.

AIRA CAPILLARIS Host. Edge of flat pine woods, Williamsburg. May 23, 1921. 3626.

AIRA PRAECOX L. Campus of College, Williamsburg. May 18, 1921. 3584.

ALOPECURUS AGRESTIS L. Cultivated field west of Williamsburg. May 1, 1921. 3508.

ANDROPOGON FURCATUS Muhl. Dry field, near Williamsburg, Sept., 1921. 4383.

ANDROPOGON GLOMERATUS (Walt.) B. S. P. Thin pine woods, north shore of Queen's Creek, north of Williamsburg, June 28, 1921. 3874.

ANDROPOGON SCOPARIUS Michx. Thin pine woods, sandy soil, west and north of Williamsburg. Sept., 1920; June and July, 1921. 3085; 3869; 4077.

ANDROPOGON VIRGINICUS L. Dry clayey field, Williamsburg. Oct. 17, 1920. 3171.

ANHTOXANTHUM ODORATUM L. Roadside and clearing in deep woods, near Williamsburg. May, 1920. 2547; 2606.

ARISTIDA DICHOTOMA Michx. Edge of flat pine woods, near Williamsburg. Sept. 25, 1920. 3092.

ARISTIDA GRACILIS Ell. Dry soil of roadside, north of Williamsburg. Oct. 8, 1921. 4566.

ARISTIDA OLIGANTHA Michx. Bright Farm, Williamsburg, clay soil. Oct. 8, 1920. 3127.

ARISTIDA PURPURASCENS Poir. Sandy soil of oak slope, near Williamsburg. Nov. 5, 1920. 3239.

ARRHENATHERUM ELATIUS (L.) Beauv. Wooded flood-plains, Queen's Creek, York Co. May 23, 1921. 3622.

ARUNDINARIA MACROSPERMA Michx. Small cypress swamp, south of Five Forks, James City Co. March 26, 1921. 3348.

AVENA SATIVA L. Common around Williamsburg.

Brachyelytrum erectum (Schreb.) Beauv. Deep shaded ravine in hardwood, southeast of Williamsburg. July 19, 1921. 4055.

Bromus commutatus Schrad. Near Williamsburg. June 10, 1921. 3658; 3835.

Bromus purgans L. Deep ravine, along James River, at Camp Wallace. July 5, 1921. 3936.

Bromus secalinus L. Old track in woods, Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3885.

Calamagrostis cinnoides (Muhl.) Barton. Sphagnum-magnolia swamps, James City Co., Aug., 1921; Oct., 1920, 1921. 4317; 3194; 4620.

Cenchrus pauciflorus Benth. Clay bank along railway, Lightfoot, James City Co., July 23, 1921. Sandy shore of York River, Oct., 1921. 4089; 4567.

Cinna arundinacea L. Tidal marshes and wooded flood-plain of James River, Aug., 1921. Tidal marshes of Queen's Creek, York Co., Aug., 1921. 4241; 4302.

Cynodon Dactylon (L.) Pers. Ballast along railway, near Williamsburg. June 17, 1921. 3735.

Dactylis glomerata L. Common, around Williamsburg.

Danthonia sericea Nutt. Edges of dry sandy pine woods. Common near Williamsburg. May 23, 1921. 3625.

Danthonia spicata (L.) Beauv. Clay slope, north end of Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. May 29, 1920. 2628.

Digitaria filiformis (L.) Koeler. Dry roadside, Williamsburg. Sept. 17, 1921. 4396.

Digitaria humifusa Pers. Dry roadside, Williamsburg. Sept., 1921. 4396a.

Digitaria sanguinalis (L.) Scop. Corn-field, Williamsburg, Oct., 1920. Along railway, east of Diascund, July, 1921. 3235; 4166.

Distichlis spicata (L.) Greene. Tidal salt marshes, south shore of York River. Constitutes the bulk of "salt hay." Aug., 1921. 4282.

Echinochloa crusgalli (L.) Beauv. Sandy roadside, south of Williamsburg, July, 1921. 3964.

Echinochloa Walteri (Pursh) Nash. Moist ground along Chickahominy River, at Lanexa, July, 1921. Moist ground, near Williamsburg, Sept., 1921. 4131; 4404.

Eleusine indica Gaertn. Cultivated ground, Williamsburg. Nov., 1920. 3240.

Elymus canadensis L. Low ground along Centerville-Williamsburg road, June 22, 1921.

Elymus striatus Willd. Wooded ravine beside James River, at Camp Wallace. July 5, 1921. 3934.

Elymus virginicus L. Edge of tidal marshes, and moist roadsides James City and York counties. July 1921. 3808; 3967.

Eragrostis caroliniana (Spr.) Scribn. Railway bank, at Williamsburg, July 22, 1921. 4071.

Eragrostis cilianensis (All.) Link. Cultivated ground, Williamsburg. July 31, 1921. 4178.

Eragrostis hirsuta (Michx.) Nees. Dry soil, along railway, west of Lightfoot, James City Co., Sept. 27, 1921. 4494.

Eragrostis hypnoides (Lam.) B. S. P. Mud-flat, Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. Sept., 1921. 4407.

Eragrostis megastachya (Koeler) Link. Cultivated land, Williamsburg.

Eragrostis pectinacea (Michx.) Steud. Dry soil, west of Williamsburg. Along railway, near Lanexa. July, 1921. 4051; 4169.

Erianthus saccharoides Michx. Sphagnum-magnolia swamp, southeast of Ewell. Sept. 27, 1921. 4473.

Festuca elatior L. Roadsides and fields around Williamsburg.

Festuca myurus L. In sand, near York River, north of Williamsburg, June 6, 1920. 2656.

Festuca obtusa Spreng. Rich woods and flood-plains, around Williamsburg. May, 1921. 3602; 3618.

Festuca octoflora Walt. Weed, in waste sandy soil, around Williamsburg. May, 1921. 2622; 3590.

Glyceria grandis Wats. Moist sandy soil, south of Williamsburg. June 23, 1921. 3813.

Glyceria nervata (Willd.) Trin. Shaded and open swamps, around Williamsburg. June, 1920; May, 1921. 2686; 3611.

Glyceria obtusa (Muhl.) Trin. Swampy woods, Poplar Springs, Henrico Co., Aug. 6, 1921. 4213.

Gymnopogon ambiguus (Michx.) B. S. P. Second-growth pine thicket, west of Williamsburg. Rare. Nov. 5, 1920. 3238.

Holcus halepensis L. Roadside, near Williamsburg. July 5, 1921. 3927.

Holcus lanatus L. Meadow, near Williamsburg. May 2, 1921. 3532.

Hordeum pusillum Nutt. Cultivated fields, Williamsburg. June, 1920. 2676.

Hystrix patula Moench. Rich moist hardwoods, north of Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3754.

Leersia oryzoides (L.) Sw. Open swampy flood-plains, west of Williamsburg. Sept., 1921. 4401.

Leersia virginica Willd. Sphagnum bog, Chisel's Run, Aug. 25, 1921. Roadside ditch, west of Williamsburg. Oct., 1921. 4311; 4599.

Lolium multiflorum Lam. Fields, around Williamsburg. June 28, 1921. 3879.

Lolium perenne L. Cultivated land, Williamsburg. May and June, 1921. 3623.

Lolium temulentum L. Roadside, near old Experiment Station, southwest of Williamsburg. Only one plant. May 30, 1921. 3638.

Muhlenbergia Schreberi Gmel. Waste land, Williamsburg, and flood-plains of small streams. Oct., 1921. 4576; 4582.

Panicum agrostoides Spr. Swamp along College Creek, south of Williamsburg. Oct. 3, 1920. 3135.

Panicum amarulum Hitchc. & Chase. Along sandy shore at Newport News. Sept. 30, 1921. 4502.

Panicum amarum Ell. Banks of James River, at Camp Wallace. Aug. 18, 1921. 4244.

Panicum anceps Michx. Wooded slope, Oct., 1920, and roadside, July 7, 1921, north of Williamsburg. 3201; 3951.

PANICUM ANGUSTIFOLIUM Ell. Dry soil at edge of woods, near Williamsburg. June 12, 1921. 3689.

PANICUM ASHEI Pears. Flat pine-oak woods, west of Williamsburg, June 26, 1921. 3852.

PANICUM BARBULATUM Michx. Flat pine-oak woods, west of Williamsburg, June 26, 1921. 3847.

PANICUM BOSCII Poir. Woods west of Williamsburg, near Five Forks. June, 1920 and 1921. 2711; 3654.

PANICUM CAPILLARE L. Roadside, near Williamsburg. July 17, 1921. 4377.

PANICUM CLANDESTINUM L. Wooded flood-plain of Queen's Creek, north of Williamsburg. June 17, 1921. 3746.

PANICUM CONDENSUM Nash. Tidal marsh, Queen's Creek. Aug. 22, 1921. 4303.

PANICUM DEPAUPERATUM Muhl. Dry pine-oak woods, near Williamsburg. June 26, 1921. 3845.

PANICUM DICHOTOMIFLORUM Michx. Along railway bank, near Lightfoot. July, 1921. Edge of Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. Sept., 1921. 4088; 4415.

PANICUM HUACHUCAE var. SILVICOLA Hitchc. & Chase. Dry soil, near Williamsburg. June 13, 1921. 3733.

PANICUM LANUGINOSUM Ell. Sandy fields, near Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3671; 3786.

PANICUM LINDHEIMERI Nash. Dry soil along C. & O. Railroad, near Williamsburg. June 12, 1921. 3688.

PANICUM LUCIDUM Ashe. Sphagnum-magnolia swamp, Chisel's Run, west of Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3764.

PANICUM NITIDUM Lam. Dry soil, near Williamsburg. June 13, 1921. 3732.

PANICUM POLYANTHES Schultes. Swampy places in woods, west of Williamsburg, June and Oct., 1921. Southeast of Ewell, Sept., 1921. 3799; 4627; 4491.

PANICUM SCOPARIUM Lam. Dry field, west of Williamsburg. June 22, 1921. Sphagnum swamp, near Ewell. Sept. 27, 1921. 3785; 4467.

PANICUM SPHAEROCARPON Ell. Sandy waste places, around Williamsburg, May and June, 1921. 3672; 3687; 3790.

PANICUM VERRUCOSUM Muhl. Moist soil, near Ewell. Sept., 1921. 4486.

PANICUM VIRGATUM L. Moist open ground, Williamsburg; edge of marshes at Queen's Creek, north of town. July, 1921. 3965; 4973.

PANICUM XALAPENSE H. B. K. Wooded flood-plain, near Williamsburg. July 7, 1921. 3960.

PANICUM YADKINENSE Ashe. Cleared hillside, south of Five Forks, James City Co., June 6, 1921. 3652.

PASPALUM CILIATIFOLIUM Michx. Dry pine wood, near Williamsburg. Sept. 18, 1920. 3022.

PASPALUM DILATUM Poir. Roadsides, Williamsburg. June and Aug., 1921. 3716; 4336.

PASPALUM FLORIDANUM Michx. Roadside, Williamsburg, Oct., 1920. Along railway, near Diascund, July 30, 1921. 3218; 4176.

PASPALUM LAEVE Michx. Along bank of C. & O. Railroad, west of Williamsburg, July 1; east of Lanexa, July 30, 1921. Sandy soil. 3906; 4148.

PASPALUM PUBESCENS Muhl. Dry pine woods, Williamsburg. Sept., 1921. 3022a; 4480.

POA ANNUA L. Williamsburg. May 16, 1921. 3564.

POA AUTUMNALIS Muhl. Moist wooded ravines, Williamsburg. May, 1921. 3544; 3577.

POA COMPRESSA L. Grass lands, Williamsburg.

POA CUSPIDATA Nutt. Wooded hillside, near Williamsburg. March 25, 1921. 3320.

POA PRATENSIS L. Rich moist soil, north of Williamsburg, May 23, 1921. 3621.

POA TRIVIALIS L. Rich soil and swamps, near Williamsburg. May, 1921. 3606; 3624.

SACCIOLEPIS STRIATA (L.) Nash. Bank of Chickahominy River, at Lanexa, July 30, 1921. 4168.

SETARIA GLAUCA (L.) Beauv. Fields and wooded slopes, west of Williamsburg. July and Aug., 1921. 4177; 4235.

SETARIA IMBERBIS R. & S. Swampy woods, James City and York counties. June, 1921. 3796; 3870.

Sorghastrum nutans (L.) Nash. Open oak slope, near Williamsburg. Sept. 19, 1920. 3956.

Spartina alternifolia glabra (Muhl.) Fern. Sandy shore, Newport News. Sept., 1921. Salt marshes, along York River north of Williamsburg. Oct., 1921. 4503; 4570.

Spartina cynosuroides (L.) Roth. Tidal marshes, below Jamestown Island, July 9, 1921. 3975.

Spartina patens (Ait.) Muhl. Tidal marshes, Queen's Creek Landing, Williamsburg. June 28, 1921. 3872.

Sphenopholis nitida (Spreng.) Scribn. Deep woods and moist ravines, around Williamsburg, May, 1920 and 1921. 2594; 2564; 3522.

Sphenopholis obtusata (Michx.) Scribn. Dry soil at edge of woods, near Williamsburg. June 12, 1921. 3692.

Sporobolus Berteronianum (Trin.) Hitchc. & Chase. Williamsburg. July 5, 1921. 3948.

Stipa avenacea L. Edge of pine woods, near Williamsburg. May, 1920. 2616.

Tridens flavus (L.) Hitchc. Sandy field, near Williamsburg. Oct., 1921. 4597.

Tridens strictus (Nutt.) Nash. At edge of Mill Creek Pond, James City Co. Oct. 15, 1921. 4611.

Tripsacum dactyloides L. Flood-plain of James River, at Camp Wallace, July 5, 1921. 3937. Abundant.

Trisetum pennsylvanicum (L.) Beauv. Open swamps, York Co. Common. May 23, 1921. 3604.

Uniola latifolia Michx. Flat pine-oak woods, near Williamsburg. Frequent. Aug., 1921. 4223.

Uniola laxa (L.) B. S. P. Flat pine-oak woods, around Williamsburg, Sept., 1920 and June, 1920. Rich woods, near Lanexa. July 30, 1921. 3108; 3841; 4144.

Uniola longifolia Scribn. Hardwood slopes beside Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. Sept., 1920 and 1921. 3038; 4417.

Zizania palustris L. Swamps along College and Queen's creeks, Williamsburg. Oct. 3, 1920. 3142; 3962.

Carex alata Torr. Open swampy flood-plains, around Williamsburg. Mid-May, 1921. 3742; 3745; 3780.

Carex albolutescens Schwein. Swamps, near Williamsburg. Common. Mid-June, 1921. 3747; 3783; 3856.

Carex bromoides Schkuhr. Wooded flood-plain, south of Five Forks, May 17, 1921. 3578.

Carex cephalophora Muhl. Rich shaded soil, west of Williamsburg, June 22, 1921. 3795.

Carex comosa Boott. Open swamp, north of Williamsburg. June 17, 1921. 3748.

Carex crinita Lam. Sphagnum swamp, near Williamsburg. June 12, 1921. 3693.

Carex debilis Michx. var. Rudgei Bailey. Rich woods, west of Williamsburg. June 16, 1921. 3770.

Carex decomposita Muhl. Swamp along College Creek, Williamsburg. July 3, 1921. 3925.

Carex Frankii Kunth. Moist places, near Williamsburg. July 7, 1921. 3961.

Carex grisea Wahlenb. Swamp, Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. May 7, 1921. 3541.

Carex grisea var. rigida Bailey. Shady swamp, near Williamsburg. June 10, 1920. 2690.

Carex hormathodes Fern. Sandy flat, along Queen's Creek. June 6, 1920. Chisel's Run, June 22, 1921. 2659; 3791.

Carex Howei Mackenz. Wooded swamp at Chisel's Run. May 1, 1921. 3509.

Carex incomperta Bickn. Roadside at Chisel's Run. May 1, 1921. 3510.

Carex intumescens Rudge. Sphagnum swamp, southeast of Ewell. July 1, 1921. 3896.

Carex laevivaginata (Kukenth.) Mackenz. Wooded ravine, north of Williamsburg. June 28, 1921. 3862.

Carex laxiculmis Schwein. Flood-plain of Chisel's Run. May 1, 1921. 3511.

Carex laxiflora Lam. Hardwoods, near Williamsburg. May, 1921. 3515; 3547.

Carex leptalea Wahl. Flood-plain, near Williamsburg. May 7, 1921. 3540.

Carex lupulina Muhl. Sphagnum swamp, southeast of Ewell. July 1, 1921. 3900.

Carex lurida Wahl. Along streams, around Williamsburg. Common. June and July, 1920, 1921. 2687; 2713; 3663 3807.

*Carex Mitchelliana M. A. Curtis. Open swamp, west of Williamsburg. June 16, 1921. 3781.

Carex Muhlenbergii Schk. Wooded bank, near Williamsburg. June 22, 1921. Dry sandy soil, along Chickahominy River, at Lanexa. July 30, 1921. 3797; 4149.

*Carex oxylepis Torr. & Hook. Hardwood slope south of Williamsburg. May and June, 1921. 3546; 3717.

Carex rosea Schkr. Beech slope south end of Jamestown Road. June 10, 1920. 2680.

Carex scoparia Schkr. Common in open swamps, around Williamsburg.

Carex tribuloides Wahlb. Swamp, south of Williamsburg. June 11, 1921. 3705.

Carex triceps Michx. var. hirsuta (Willd.) Bailey. Dry soil, Williamsburg. June, 1920 and 1921. 2682; 3741.

Carex triceps var. Smithii Porter. Edge of woods, near Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3805; 3871.

Carex varia Muhl. Dry hardwoods, near Williamsburg. May, 1921. 3525; 3550.

Carex verrucosa Muhl. Moist ground, southeast of Elko. Sept. 27, 1921. 4490.

Carex virescens Muhl. Stream bank, south of Williamsburg. June 13, 1921. 3714.

Carex vulpinoidea Michx. Open swamps, near Williamsburg. May and June, 1921. 3609; 3661.

Cyperus cylindricus (Ell.) Britt. Cut-over woods, west of Williamsburg. July 13, 1921. 3994.

Cyperus ferax Rich. Swamp, Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. Sept., 1920 and 1921. Swamp at Carter's Creek and York River, Aug. 20, 1921. 3031; 4406; 4275.

Cyperus filiculmis Vahl. Dry sandy flat, along Chickahominy River, at Lanexa. July 30, 1921.

Cyperus flavescens L. Ditch along railway, Williamsburg. Sept. 25, 1920. 3103.

Cyperus Gatesii Torr. Tidal marsh, Carter's Creek, near York River. Aug. 20, 1921. 4272.

Cyperus Nuttallii Eddy. Low ground along shore, Newport News. Sept. 30, 1921. 4506.

Cyperus ovularis (Michx.) Torr. Barren field, near Williamsburg. June 12, 1921. 3698.

Cyperus pseudovegetus Steud. Moist roadside, near Williamsburg. July 9, 1921. 3973.

Cyperus rivularis Kunth. Ditch along railway, near Williamsburg. Sept. 25, 1920. 3102.

Cyperus rotundus L. Water-front near C. & O. Railroad station, Newport News. Sept.,1921. 4657.

Cyperus strigosus L. Flat pine woods, near Williamsburg, and edge of marsh at Queen's Creek. July, 1921. 3969; 4064.

Dichromena colorata (L.) Hitchc. Swamp along College Creek, Williamsburg. July 3, 1921. 3919.

Dulichium arundinaceum (L.) Britt. Swampy flood-plain of Chickahominy River, at Lanexa. July 30, 1921. 4117.

Eleocharis capitata (L.) R. Br. Ditch beside railway, Williamsburg. June 16, 1921. 3774. (Extremely depauperate form only found; therefore probably the type form.)

Eleocharis Engelmanni Steud. Damp soil in woods, northeast of Williamsburg. June 11, 1921. 3707.

Eleocharis obtusa (Willd.) Schultes. Moist shaded situations, James City Co., Sept., 1920; June, 1921. 3021; 3706; 3709.

Eleocharis palustris (L.) R. & S. Pine woods, north of Williamsburg. June, 1920 and 1921. 2660; 3708.

Eleocharis quadrangulata (Michx.) R. & S. Bank of Chickahominy River, Wilcox Neck, opposite Lanexa. July 30, 1921. 4125.

Eleocharis tuberculosa (Michx.) R. & S. Wet ditch along railway, west of Williamsburg. Sept., 1920; June, 1921. 3101; 3771.

Fimbristylis spadicea (L.) Vahl. Tidal marsh, near mouth of Carter's Creek, York Co. July 15, 1921. 4017.

Fuirena hispida Ell. Sandy soil at edge of sphagnum swamp, five miles west of Williamsburg. July 13, 1921. 3993.

KYLLINGA PUMILA Michx. Edge of salt marsh, Carter's Creek at York River. Aug., 1921. 4261.

RYNCHOSPORA CAPITELLATA (Michx.) Vahl. var. DISCUTIENS (Clarke) Blake. Low places in mixed woods, James City Co. Oct. 16, 1921. 4619.

RYNCHOSPORA MACROSTACHYA Torr. Swamp along Chickahominy River, at Lanexa. July 30, 1921. 4155.

SCIRPUS AMERICANUS Pers. Tidal marshes, along Queen's Creek, College Creek and James River. June, 1920 and 1921. 2661; 3722; 3970.

SCIRPUS ATROVIRENS Muhl. var. GEORGIANUS (Harper) Fernald. Low ground at Chisel's Run. June 22, 1921. 3800.

SCIRPUS CYPERINUS (L.) Kunth. Sandy soil at edge of sphagnum swamp, west of Williamsburg. July 13, 1921. 3985.

SCIRPUS ERIOPHORUM Michx. Roadside ditch, west of Williamsburg. Oct. 19, 1920. 3176.

SCIRPUS LINEATUS Michx. Moist low grounds, Williamsburg. June 12, 1921. 3719.

SCIRPUS NANUS Spreng. In mud of tidal salt marsh, York River, at mouth of Carter's Creek. July 15, 1921. 4022.

SCIRPUS OLNEYI Gray. Tidal marsh, along Carter's Creek, half mile from York River. May and July, 1921. 3591; 4018.

SCIRPUS ROBUSTUS Pursh. In standing water, along Queen's Creek, and tidal marshes (brackish), at Carter's Creek, York Co. July, 1921. 3868; 4011.

SCIRPUS VALIDUS Vahl. Swamp along College Creek, Williamsburg. June 13, 1921. 3721.

SCLERIA OLIGANTHA Michx. Sandy soil of white oak woods, west of Williamsburg. June and July, 1921. 3662; 3920.

SCLERIA PAUCIFLORA Muhl. Sandy field and pine-barrens, near Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3701; 3839.

SCLERIA TRIGLOMERATA Michx. Sandy soil of thicket, two miles west of Williamsburg. June 26, 1921. 3843.

STENOPHYLLUS CAPILLARIS (L.) Britt. Ballast along railway, at Williamsburg. Sept. 17, 1921. 4397.

ARISAEMA TRIPHYLLUM (L.) Schott. Flood-plains, throughout area, March and April, 1921. 3354; 3439.

Orontium aquaticum L. Slow shallow streams, north of Williamsburg. March 24, 1921. 3321.

Peltandra virginica (L.) Kunth. Swampy flood-plain of small stream, south of Williamsburg. May 9, 1921. 3637.

Symplocarpus foetidus (L.) Nutt. Wooded flood-plain, south of Five Forks, James City Co., March, 1921. 3338.

Lemna perpusilla Torr. Stagnant pool, near Ewell. 1921.

Wolffia columbiana Karst. Floating, at edge of Jones' Pond, near Penniman, York Co., April 26, 1921. 3493.

* Eriocaulon Parkeri Robinson. Chickahominy River, near Lanexa. July 30, 1921. 4136.

Lachnocaulon anceps (Walt.) Morong. Sphagnum swamp, at headwaters of Chisel's Run. June 15, 1921.

Xyris caroliniana Walt. Wet sandy soil, along railway, west of Williamsburg. July 1, 1921. 3907.

Xyris elata Chapm. Low woods, along Queen's Creek, York Co., July 22, 1921. 4965.

? Xyris platylepis Chapm. Moist bank, east of Poplar Springs, Charles City Co. Aug. 6, 1921. 4184.

Xyris torta Sm. Wet sandy ditch, along railway, west of Williamsburg. Sept., 1920 and June 16, 1921. 3100; 3769.

Commelina erecta L. Loose sandy soil, at edge of woods, near Capitol Landing, Queen's Creek, July 22, 1921. 4081.

Commelina hirtella Vahl. Swampy flood-plains of Chickahominy River, at Lanexa. June, 1921. 4172a.

Commelina virginica L. Dry sandy field, Lanexa. June 30, 1921. 4172.

Pontederia cordata L. In standing water, College Creek, Williamsburg. Common. June 13, 1921. 3723.

Heteranthera reniformis R. & P. In mud, along Chickahominy River, at Lanexa, July 30, 1921. Mud, at head of Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. Sept. 20, 1921. 4171; 4410.

Juncus acuminatus Michx. Moist ground, Williamsburg. June 10, 1921. 3710.

Juncus aristulatus Michx. Edge of tidal marsh, James River at mouth of College Creek. July 9, 1921. 3974.

* JUNCUS ASPER Engelm. Sphagnum-magnolia swamps, near Mount Pleasant Church, James City Co. July 13, 1921; Oct. 16, 1921. 3992; 4616.

JUNCUS BUFONIUS L. Wet roadsides, near Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3743.

JUNCUS CANADENSIS Gay. Swamps, west of Williamsburg. 1921. 4040; 4287.

JUNCUS DEBILIS Gray. Wet soil in pine-oak woods, west of Williamsburg. Oct., 1921. 4621.

JUNCUS DICHOTOMUS Ell. Barren field, near Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3697.

JUNCUS EFFUSUS L. var. COSTULATUS Fernald. Swamps, near Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3749.

JUNCUS MARGINATUS Rostk. Barren field, near Williamsburg. June 12, 1921. 3704.

JUNCUS ROEMERIANUS Scheele. In water, at edge of James River, south of Williamsburg. July 9, 1921. 3977.

JUNCUS SETACEUS Rostk. Low grounds, near Williamsburg. 1920, 1921. 3043; 3718.

JUNCUS SCIRPOIDES Lam. Sandy soil, fields, near Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3699; 3898.

JUNCUS TENUIS Willd. Fields, near Williamsburg. 1920, 1921. 3711; 2701.

LUZULA CAMPESTRIS (L.) DC. var. BULBOSA Wood. Dry pasture, near Williamsburg. April 18, 1920. 2524.

* LUZULA SALTUENSIS Fernald. Hardwoods, near Williamsburg. April 9, 1921. 3400.

ALETRIS FARINOSA L. Flat pine woods, west of Williamsburg. May, 1921. 3585; 3633.

ALLIUM CANADENSE L. Wooded flood-plain, north of Williamsburg. June 11, 1921. 3677.

ALLIUM VINEALE L. Fields, near Williamsburg. June, 1920, 1921. 2669; 3787.

ASPARAGUS OFFICINALIS L. Roadside, near Williamsburg. May, 1921. 3558.

HEMEROCALLIS FULVA L. Escape, along roadsides. June, 1921.

Lilium canadensis L. Moist bank, west of Elko, Henrico Co. Aug. 6, 1921. 4201.

Lilium superbum L. Wooded swamp, at Longhill, James City Co. Edge of swampy flood-plain of Chickahominy River, at Lanexa. July, 1921. 4109; 4157.

Medeola virginiana L. Common in rich wooded flood-plains, around Williamsburg. April and May, 1921. 3474; 3566.

Melanthium virginicum L. Deep wet woods, Chisel's Run, James City Co. July 6, 1921. 4044. Open marsh, near Elko, Aug. 6. 4204.

Muscari racemosum (L.) Mill. Common weed in fields, Williamsburg. April, 1920. 2508.

Oakesia sessilifolia (L.) Wats. Rich soil of beech slope, north of Williamsburg. April 26, 1921. 3475.

Ornithogalum umbellatum L. Common weed in fields, around Williamsburg. April, 1921.

Polygonatum biflorum (Walt.) Ell. Rich wooded hillsides, near Williamsburg. May, 1920 and 1921. 2577; 3529.

Polygonatum commutatum (R. & S.) Dietr. Rich woods, around Williamsburg, April, 1921. 3472; 3597.

Smilacina racemosa Desf. Hardwoods, near Williamsburg. April, 1921. 3520.

Smilax Bona-nox L. Edge of pine woods, west of Williamsburg. June, 1921. 2633.

Smilax herbacea L. Wooded ravine, south of Williamsburg. April 24, 1921. 3471.

Smilax herbacea L. var. pulverulenta (Michx.) Gray. Rich wooded hillside, Chisel's Run, James City Co., June 24, 1921. 3823.

Smilax laurifolia L. Edge of woods and marshes, along Queen's Creek and Carter's Creek, York Co. March and Aug., 1921. 3277; 4267.

Smilax rotundifolia L. Moist roadside, north of Williamsburg. May 16, 1920. 2580.

Smilax tamnifolia Michx. Sphagnum swamp, at Longhill, west of Williamsburg. June 22, 1921. 3806.

Uvularia perfoliata L. Openings in rich hardwoods, around Williamsburg. May, 1920; April, 1921. 2576; 3425.

Yucca filamentosa L. Railway bank, one mile east of Diascund. July 30, 1921. 4114.

Zygadenus glaberrimus Michx. Open marsh, west of Elko. Aug. 6, 1921. 4200.

Dioscorea glauca Muhl. Wooded flood-plain, southeast of Williamsburg. May 2, 1921. 3526.

*Dioscorea quaternata (Walt.) Gmel. Dry wooded hillside, near Williamsburg. May 2, 1921. 3527.

Dioscorea villosa L. Woods near Williamsburg, and sphagnum swamp, at Longhill. June, 1920 and 1921. 2644; 3803.

Hypoxis hirsuta (L.) Coville. Sandy soil, in pine woods, around Williamsburg. May 1, 1920. 2544.

Narcissus poeticus L. Hedgerow, south of Williamsburg. April, 1921. 3421.

Narcissus Pseudo-Narcissus L. Waste places, southeast of Williamsburg.

Belamcanda chinensis (L.) DC. Roadside, just east of Williamsburg. Sept., 1921. 4578.

Iris verna L. Sandy soil, at edge of pine-barrens, north of Williamsburg. May 4, 1920; April 9, 1921. 2553; 3396.

Iris versicolor L. Common, in open swamps, Henrico Co. 1921.

Sisyrinchium angustifolium Mill. Flat open oak woods, west of Williamsburg. April 16, 1921. 3427.

Sisyrinchium gramineum Curtis. Moist places, around Williamsburg. May, 1920 and 1921. 2585; 3608; 3763.

? Sisyrinchium intermedium Bickn. Dry hardwood soil, west of Williamsburg. June 10, 1921. 3659.

Aplectrum hyemale (Muhl.) Torr. Rich moist woods, south and north of Williamsburg. Occasional. 3530. May, 1921. 3551; 4650.

Corallorrhiza odontorhiza Nutt. Rich wooded flood-plain, near Williamsburg. Sept. 17, 1921. 4390.

Cypripedium acaule Ait. Flat woods, around Williamsburg. Frequent. May, 1920; April, 1921. 2528; 2561.

Cypripedium parviflorum var. pubescens (Willd.) Knight. Open oak woods around Williamsburg. Occasional. June, 1920; April, 1921. 2647; 3410; 3430.

Epipactis pubescens (Willd.) A. A. Eaton. Rich pine woods, around Williamsburg. Sept., 1920. 3975; 3121; 4008.

Habenaria ciliaris (L.) R. Br. Sphagnum swamps, west of Williamsburg; and moist bank along railway, west of Elko. July, 1921. 4063; 4100; 4179.

Habenaria clavellata (Michx.) Spreng. Wooded swamps throughout the Peninsula. July, 1921. 4009; 4026; 4150.

Habenaria cristata (Michx.) R. Br. Sphagnum-magnolia swamp, Chisel's Run, July 16, 1921. Moist bank along railway, east of Poplar Springs, Charles City Co. Aug. 6, 1921. 4183; 4932.

Habenaria lacera (Michx.) R. Br. Deep woods in swamp, at Longhill, near Williamsburg-Centerville road. June 23, 1921. 3810.

*Habenaria repens Nutt. Wooded swamp, along Chickahominy River, south of Lanexa. July 30, 1921. 4128.

*Hexalectris spicata (Nutt.) Barnhart. Shell marl bank, at edge of mixed woods, at head of Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. June 30, 1921. 3915.

Liparis liliifolia (L.) Richard. Woods, near Williamsburg. June 1, 1920; May 9, 1921. 3556; 2635.

Microstylis unifolia (Michx.) B. S. P. Dry hardwoods, west of Williamsburg. June 1, 1920. 2634. Frequent.

Orchis spectabilis L. Rich woods, near Williamsburg. April and May, 1921. 3454; 3516.

*Pogonia affinis Aust. Open white oak woods, near Williamsburg. June 1, 1920; May 9, 1921. 2637; 3555. One station.

Pogonia ophioglossoides (L.) Ker. Sphagnum swamp at headwaters of Chisel's Run, James City Co. June 15, 1921. 3778.

Pogonia verticillata (Willd.) Nutt. Mixed woods, along Jamestown Road and at Chisel's Run, James City Co. April, 1920 and 1921. 2557; 3463. Frequent.

*Ponthieva racemosa (Walt.) Mohr. Damp shaded ravine, west of Williamsburg. Sept. 19, 1920. Heavy calcareous soil of flood-plain thicket, north of Williamsburg. Sept. 17, 1921. 3078; 4386.

Spiranthes Beckii Lindl. Dry oak slope, along west side of College Creek, south of Williamsburg. Oct. 3, 1920. 3145.

Spiranthes cernua (L.) Richard. In tidal marsh along College Creek, south of Williamsburg. Sept. and Oct., 1921. 4446; 4595.

Spiranthes gracilis (Bigel.) Beck. Oak slope between Elko and Poplar Springs. Aug. 6, 1921. Dry field near Williamsburg. 4211; 4234.

Spiranthes vernalis Englm. & Gray. Dry sandy soil, west of Williamsburg and also near Ewell. 3826; 3911; 3905.

Tipularia discolor (Pursh) Nutt. Rich mixed woods, throughout. Frequent. Flowering Aug., 1921. 3266; 4072; 4236.

Saururus cernuus L. Shaded swampy areas, throughout. Abundant. June, 1921.

Populus alba L. Waste land, Williamsburg. 1920, 1921.

Populus deltoides Marsh. Near Mount Pleasant Church, and beside Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. May and Oct., 1921. 3572; 4591.

Populus heterophylla L. Along James River, south of Williamsburg. 1921.

Salix alba L. Swampy soil, Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. April, 1921. 3417.

Salix babylonica L. Beside stream, one mile northwest of Williamsburg. Oct., 1921. 4645.

Salix humilis Marsh. Sandy soil, roadsides, York Co. March 13, 1921. 3276.

Salix nigra Marsh. Stream banks, around Williamsburg. 3352; 3482.

Salix tristis Ait. Wooded uplands, west of Williamsburg. March and April, 1921. 3312; 3414.

Myrica carolinensis Mill. Edge of dunes, at Cape Henry. Aug., 1921. (Not found on the Peninsula.) 4218.

Myrica cerifera L. At edge of pine-barrens, throughout

Peninsula. 1920 and 1921. 2519; 3270; 3446. Flowering Feb. 24, 1921.

Carya alba (L.) K. Koch. Edge of flat pine woods, northwest of Williamsburg. Oct. 24, 1920. 3227.

Carya laciniosa (Michx. f.) Loud. Rich soil in mixed woods, northwest of Williamsburg. 3180; 4655.

Juglans cinerea L. Mixed woods, west of Williamsburg. 1921.

Juglans nigra L. Williamsburg. 1921.

Alnus rugosa (DuRoi) Spreng. var. serrulata (Ait.) Winkler. Sphagnum swamp, near Williamsburg. Oct., 1920. Banks of Chickahominy River, near Lanexa, July, 1921. 3197; 4139.

Betula nigra L. North bank of Queen's Creek, Capitol Landing. Bank near Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. Only two trees found. May 19, 1921. 3598.

Carpinus caroliniana Walt. Flood-plains, around Williamsburg. July 7, 1921. 3956.

Corylus americana Walt. Head of Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg.

Corylus rostrata Ait. Chisel's Run flood-plain, west of Williamsburg. July 23, 1921. 4105.

Ostrya virginiana (Mill.) K. Koch. Flood-plain woods, near Williamsburg.

Castanea dentata (Marsh.) Borkh. Uplands around Williamsburg. Many large trees killed by *Endothia*, 1919-1921.

Castanea pumila (L.) Mill. Edge of woods, near Williamsburg. Sept., 1920. 3090. June, 1921. 3696.

Fagus grandifolia Ehrh. Frequent on heavy soil, on the Peninsula.

Quercus alba L. Dry woods, around Williamsburg. Sandy bank of Chickahominy River, at Lanexa. July, 1921. 3177; 3200; 4137.

Quercus coccinea Muench. Flat pine-oak woods, around Williamsburg. Oct., 1921. 4614; 4637.

Quercus marilandica Muench. Sandy soil, at edge of pine-barrens, near Williamsburg. Oct., 1920. 3226.

? Quercus Muhlenbergii Engelm. Calcareous bluff, James River, at Camp Wallace. Aug., 1921. 4245.

Quercus montana Willd. (*Q. Prinus* of authors) Edge of mixed woods four miles northeast of Williamsburg. June 11, 1921. 3682; 3213.

Quercus nigra L. Sandy bank of Chickahominy River, near Lanexa. July 30, 1921. 4138.

Quercus palustris Muench. Swampy flood-plain, along railway, west of Roxbury, Charles City Co. Aug. 6, 1921. 4192.

Quercus phellos L. Sandy flat, on south bank of railway, northwest of Williamsburg. Oct. 19, 1920. 3187.

Quercus phellos L. var. laurifolia (Michx.) Chapm. Sandy flat, one mile northwest of Williamsburg. Oct. 19, 1920. 3186.

Quercus Prinus L. (*Q. Michauxii* Nutt.) Edge of pine woods, west of Williamsburg. Oct., 1920. Calcareous bluff, along James River, at Camp Wallace. Aug. 18, 1921. 3119; 3926; 4251. Sandy slope, near mouth of Carter's Creek, York Co. Oct. 8, 1921. 4549.

Quercus rubra L. (*Q. falcata* Michx.) Common in flat pine-oak woods, around Williamsburg. 1920 and 1921. 3228. Flowering, April 3, 1921.

Quercus stellata Wang. Edge of flat oak woods, around Williamsburg. 1920. Calcareous bank, along James River, near Camp Wallace. Aug. 18, 1921. 3079; 3215; 4247.

Quercus velutina Lam. Flat sandy roadside, near Ewell, and same, west of Williamsburg. Sept., 1921. 4449; 4500; 4641.

Quercus virginiana Mill. Campus, College of William and Mary. Large tree.

Boehmeria cylindrica (L.) Sw. Low ground, along College Creek, Williamsburg. Flowering, July 3, 1921. 3122; 3921.

Broussonetia papyrifera (L.) Vent. Waste land, Williamsburg. 1921.

? Celtis georgiana Small. Flood-plain thicket, Queen's Creek, north of Williamsburg. May, 1920; Oct., 1921. 2584; 4564.

Celtis occidentalis L. Bank of Chickahominy River, near Lanexa, July 30, 1921. 4134.

Maclura pomifera (Raf.) Schneider. Waste land, west of Williamsburg. 1920.

Morus alba L. Waste land, Williamsburg. 1921.

Morus rubra L. Moist flood-plains, west of Williamsburg. Edge of marshes, York River, July, 1921. 4021; 4327.

Pilea pumila (L.) Gray. Shaded low ground, near Williamsburg. Sept. 20, 1921. 4409.

Ulmus alata Michx. In loose sand along railway west of Ewell. July 1, 1921. 3913.

Ulmus americana L. Common, around Williamsburg, in moist ground. 1921.

Ulmus fulva Michx. Edge of mixed woods, near Williamsburg. 1920. 2689.

Urtica gracilis Ait. Waste shaded places, Williamsburg. 1921. 4654.

Phoradendron flavescens (Pursh) Nutt. Common, in swamps, along Queen's Creek, on Nyssa. Bank of Chickahominy River, near Lanexa, on *Nyssa sylvatica*. July 30, 1921. 4121.

Aristolochia Serpentaria L. Bassett Hall woods, Williamsburg. June 1, 1920.

Asarum canadense L. Rich hardwoods, around Williamsburg. April, 1921. 2640; 3388.

Asarum virginicum L. Rich hardwood slopes, around Williamsburg. March, 1921. 3292; 3397.

Fagopyrum esculentum Moench. Roadside, west of Williamsburg. Oct., 1921. 4642.

Polygonum acre H. B. K. Moist ground, Williamsburg. June 23, 1921. Tidal marsh, Queen's Creek. Aug. 22, 1921. 3812; 4306.

Polygonum arifolium L. Wooded swamp, near Lanexa. July 30, 1921. 4124.

* Polygonum densiflorum Meisn. Edges of Mill Creek Pond, Jamestown Road. Oct. 15, 1921. 4596.

Polygonum erectum L. Cultivated grounds, Williamsburg. 1921.

Polygonum hydropiperoides Michx. Pond, near Williamsburg. 1920. Swamp, southwest of Ewell. June 2, 1921. 3030; 3902.

Polygonum lapathifolium L. Beside pond, Williamsburg. Sept., 1921. 4414.

Polygonum Persicaria L. Cultivated grounds, Williamsburg. 1921. 3987.

Polygonum pennsylvanicum L. var. laevigatum Fernald. Mud, beside pond, Williamsburg. Oct. 22, 1921. 4651.

Polygonum sagittatum L. Sphagnum-magnolia swamp, west of Williamsburg. June 15, 1921. 3766.

Polygonum scandens L. Railway bank, at Diascund, July 30, 1921. Thicket, west of Williamsburg. Sept. 27, 1921. 4164; 4468.

Polygonum setaceum Baldw. Edge of College Creek, Williamsburg. Oct. 17, 1921. 3170.

Polygonum virginianum L. Edge of rich woods, west of Williamsburg. July 16, 1921. 4035.

Rumex Acetosella L. Waste land, Williamsburg. Flowering March 26, 1921.

Rumex altissimus Wood. Ballast, along railway, Williamsburg. May, 1920. 2611.

Rumex conglomeratus Murr. In water of small stream, north of Williamsburg. June 17, 1921. Edge of tidal marsh, along Queen's Creek, near Capital Landing. July 17, 1921. 3751; 3952.

Rumex crispus L. Waste land, Williamsburg. 1921.

Rumex obtusifolius L. Waste land, Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3829.

Rumex pulcher L. Bright Farm, Williamsburg. June 10, 1920. 2692.

Rumex verticillatus L. Cypress swamp, south of Five Forks. May 30, 1921. 3628.

Atriplex patula L. var. hastata (L.) Gray. Tidal marsh, along York River, at Carter's Creek. Flowering Aug. 20, 1921. 4274.

Chenopodium album L. Weed in waste places, Williamsburg. Oct., 1921. 4653.

Chenopodium murale L. Cultivated grounds, Williamsburg. Oct., 1921. 4615.

Salicornia europaea L. Tidal marsh, York River, at Carter's Creek. Aug., 1921. 4285.

Salsola Kali L. Sandy shore, Newport News, Sept., 1921. Dry sandy beach, York River, near Scimino. Oct., 1921. 4505; 4572.

Acnida cannabina L. Tidal marshes, Queen's Creek and York River, north of Williamsburg. Aug. 22, 1921. 4301; 4286a.

Amaranthus retroflexus L. Common weed, Williamsburg.

Phytolacca decandra L. Common weed, Williamsburg.

Scleranthus annuus L. Weed in fields, Williamsburg. April. 3230; 3382.

Mollugo verticillata L. Common weed, Williamsburg. 4482.

Arenaria serpyllifolia L. var. tenuior Mert. & Koch. Corn-field, near Williamsburg. April 29, 1920. 2518.

Cerastium viscosum L. Common weed, Williamsburg. April 3, 1921. 3375.

Cerastium vulgare L. Fields, near Williamsburg. April 9, 1921. 3402.

Dianthus Armeria L. Grassy land, near Williamsburg. Common. June 9, 1921. 2670.

Lychnis alba Mill. Waste land, near Williamsburg. April, 1921. 2599; 3495.

Saponaria officinalis L. Waste land, Williamsburg. June 28, 1921. 3867.

Silene antirrhina L. Cultivated fields, Williamsburg. May 9, 1921. 3553.

Silene pennsylvanica Michx. Sandy bank at south end of Mill Creek Pond, Jamestown Road. May 9, 1920. 2563. Sandy soil south of Williamsburg, April 12, 1921.

Silene stellata (L.) Ait. f. Rich woods near Lanexa, New Kent Co., and along College Creek, Williamsburg. Aug., 1921. 4120; 4345.

Spergularia salina J. & C. Presl. Shell heap on edge of tidal marsh, York River, north of Williamsburg. July 15, 1921. 4012.

STELLARIA MEDIA (L.) Cyrill. Common in waste land, Williamsburg. 1921.

STELLARIA PUBERA Michx. Moist hardwood slopes, south of Williamsburg. April, 1921. 2510; 3394.

CLAYTONIA VIRGINICA L. Heavy soil of swampy flood-plain, at Chisel's Run, south of Williamsburg — Centerville Road. March 22, 1921. 3301. Also at Powhatan Creek, and at Jones' Pond near Penniman. Local.

PORTULACA OLERACEA L. Waste land, Williamsburg. 1921.

NYMPHAEA ADVENA Ait. Waller's Pond, north of Williamsburg. April 16, 1921. 3476.

ACTAEA ALBA (L.) Mill. Rich hardwood slopes, south and west of Williamsburg. May 2, and Aug. 25, 1921. 3519; 4324.

ANEMONE VIRGINIANA L. Wooded flood-plains, near Williamsburg. Sept., 1920; Aug., 1921. 3054; 4333.

ANEMONELLA THALICTROIDES (L.) Spach. Wooded slope north of Williamsburg. April, 1920; March 24, 1921. 2511; 3322.

AQUILEGIA CANADENSIS L. Edge of flat pine woods, northwest of Williamsburg. May 4, 1920. 2550.

CALTHA PALUSTRIS L. Jones' Mill Pond and College Creek, Williamsburg. April, 1920; March 17, 1921. 2504; 3291.

CIMICIFUGA RACEMOSA (L.) Nutt. Moist wooded ravine, near Williamsburg. June 24, 1921. 3819.

CLEMATIS PANICULATA Thunb. Escape, along roadside Williamsburg. Aug. 29, 1921. 4321.

CLEMATIS VIRGINIANA L. Low ground, at edge of thicket, Chisel's Run, west of Williamsburg. Aug. 25, 1921. 4319.

DELPHINIUM AJACIS L. Weed in cultivated fields, near Williamsburg and Grove. June 9, 1920; July, 1921. 2668; 3928.

HEPATICA TRILOBA Chaix. Wooded slopes, throughout. March 13, 1921. 3273.

RANUNCULUS ABORTIVUS L. Wooded flood-plain, near Williamsburg. March 26, 1921. 3341.

RANUNCULUS BULBOSUS L. Roadsides, Williamsburg. May 9, 1920. 2566.

RANUNCULUS HISPIDUS Michx. Wooded flood-plains, near Williamsburg. April, 1921. 3395; 3449.

Ranunculus hispidus var. falsus Fernald. Flood-plain, south of Williamsburg. April 24, 1921. 3464.

Ranunculus parviflorus L. Field, near Williamsburg. May 11, 1920. 2570.

Ranunculus recurvatus Poir. Hardwood ravines, near Williamsburg. June, 1920. April 17, 1921. 2688; 3440.

Ranunculus sceleratus L. In streams and marshes, around Williamsburg. May, 1920; June, 1921. 2593; 3861.

Thalictrum polygamum Muhl. Flood-plain swamps, at Longhill, Lanexa and Elko. July, 1921. 4086; 4158; 4203.

Thalictrum revolutum DC. Shell marl banks in woods, near Williamsburg. May 2, 1921. 3557.

Liriodendron Tulipifera L. Rich soil, throughout the Peninsula. Flowering April 26, 1921. 3485.

Magnolia tripetala L. Swampy flood-plains, east of Williamsburg. May 16, 1920. May 2, 1921. 2588; 3524.

Magnolia virginiana L. Swampy ground, west of Williamsburg, and near York River. Flowering May 19, 1921. 3588; 3595.

Asimina triloba Dunal. Rich woods, near Williamsburg.

Podophyllum peltatum L. Rich woods, near Williamsburg. April 7, 1921. 3387.

Benzoin aestivale (L.) Nees. Woods, near Williamsburg. April 4, 1921. 2501.

Sassafras variifolium (Salisb.) Ktze. Fields and waste land, throughout.

Papaver Argemone L. Waste ground, near Williamsburg. May 30, 1921. 3636.

Sanguinaria canadensis L. Woods, near Williamsburg. April 4, 1920. 2502.

Fumaria officinalis L. Dry fields, Williamsburg. May 1, 1920. 2526.

Arabis virginica (L.) Trel. Corn-field, near Williamsburg. March 19, 1921. 3296.

Barbarea verna (Mill.) Asch. Fields around Williamsburg. May 4, 1920. 2537.

Barbarea vulgaris R. Br. Corn-field, near Williamsburg. April 21, 1921. 3456.

Barbarea vulgaris R. Br. var. longisiliquosa Carion. Alfalfa field, Williamsburg. April 21, 1921. 3457.

Brassica arvensis (L.) Ktze. Fields, near Williamsburg. 1921.

Brassica campestris L. Fields, near Williamsburg. April 3, 1921. 3370.

Brassica nigra (L.) Koch. Fields, near Williamsburg. 1921.

Camelina microcarpa Andrz. Weed in alfalfa field, Williamsburg. May 4, 1921. 2538.

Capsella Bursa-pastoris (L.) Medic. Common, throughout the Peninsula. 1921.

Cardamine bulbosa (Schreb.) B. S. P. Swampy flood-plains, James City and York counties. March and April, 1921. 3378; 3447.

Cardamine Douglassii (Torr.) Britton. Moist hardwoods, around Williamsburg. March, 1921. 3283; 3355.

Cardamine hirsuta L. Woods and roadsides, near Williamsburg. March, 1921. 3308; 3314; 3360.

Cardamine pennsylvanica Muhl. Rich flood-plain, northwest of Williamsburg. March 28, 1921. 3359.

Coronopus didymus (L.) Sm. Waste land, Williamsburg. March 30, 1921. 3367.

Draba verna L. Corn-fields, near Williamsburg. March 25, 1920. 2500.

Lepidium campestre (L.) R. Br. Waste ground, Williamsburg. 1921. 3494.

Lepidium virginicum L. Waste ground, Williamsburg. 1921.

Radicula Nasturtium-aquaticum (L.) Britt. & Rend. Stream, near Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3756.

Raphanus Raphanistrum L. Fields, Williamsburg. April 4, 1921. 3384.

Sisymbrium altissimum L. Ballast of railroad, Williamsburg. 1921. 3877.

Sisymbrium Thalianum (L.) J. Gay. Field, near Williamsburg. 1921. 3376.

* Thlaspi arvense L. Alfalfa field, Williamsburg. May 4, 1920. 2534.

Sarracenia purpurea L. Swampy woods, at Chisel's Run, near Williamsburg-Centerville Road. July, 1921.

* Decumaria barbara L. Moist wooded ravines, James City County. June 15, 1920. 2709; 3972; 3423.

Heuchera americana L. Dry open oak woods, near Williamsburg. June 1, 1921. 2641.

Hydrangea arborescens L. Moist wooded hillsides, near Williamsburg. Occasional. June, 1920 and 1921. 2706; 3816.

Itea virginica L. Sphagnum swamps, James City Co. May 9, 1921. 3645; 3181.

* Parnassia asarifolia Vent. Open marsh, along railway, west of Elko. One station. Aug. 6, 1921. 4206.

Saxifraga pennsylvanica L. Swampy flood-plains, west of old battlefield, Williamsburg. March 28, 1921. 3353; 3448.

Saxifraga virginiensis Michx. Wooded slope, bank of James River, at Camp Wallace. March 14, 1921. 3280.

Tiarella cordifolia L. Rich hardwood slopes, near Williamsburg. May 20, 1920. 2591.

Hamamelis virginiana L. Sandy slopes, hardwoods, near Williamsburg. 1921. 4220; 4547.

Liquidambar Styraciflua L. Moist oak woods, near Williamsburg. Common. May 20, 1920. 2590.

Platanus occidentalis L. Williamsburg. Occasional. 1921.

Agrimonia mollis (T. & G.) Britt. Flood-plain thickets, around Williamsburg. Aug., 1921. 4079; 4344; 4382.

Agrimonia parviflora Ait. Rich woods, around Williamsburg. Aug., 1921. 4240. 4395.

Agrimonia rostellata Wallr. White oak slope, near Williamsburg. Sept., 1920. 3016.

Amelanchier canadensis (L.) Medic. Mixed woods, west of Williamsburg. March to May, 1921. 3311; 3332; 3343; 3415; 3518.

Amelanchier canadensis × oblongifolia (*fide* Wiegand). Edge of woods, around Williamsburg. March, 1921. 3289; 3309; 3328.

AMELANCHIER OBLONGIFOLIA (T. & G.) Roem. Dry sandy banks, near Williamsburg. March, 1921. 3287; 3302; 3313.

? AMELANCHIER SERA Ashe. Sandy hedgerow, west of Williamsburg. May 9, 1920. 2560.

ARUNCUS SYLVESTER Kostel. Shaded ravines, near Williamsburg. June, 1920. 2636.

CRATAEGUS CRUS-GALLI L. Bank of James River, below mouth of College Creek. Scattering. July 9, 1921. 3971.

CRATAEGUS OXYACANTHA L. Field on Bright Farm, Williamsburg. April 11, 1921. 3416.

? CRATAEGUS PHAENOPYRUM (L. f.) Medic. Hedgerow northwest of Williamsburg. One station. No flowers, 1921.

DUCHESNIA INDICA (Andr.) Focke. Waste ground, around towns. 2655.

FRAGARIA VIRGINIANA Duchesne. Roadsides. Abundant. June 1, 1920. 2642.

GEUM CANADENSE Jacq. Wooded flood-plains, James City Co. 1921. 3233; 3828.

* GEUM CANADENSIS Jacq. var. GRIMESII Fernald & Weatherby. Wooded flood-plains, near Williamsburg. May, 1921. 3583; 3605.

GEUM FLAVUM (Port.) Bickn. Rich woods, west of Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3821; 3859.

GILLENIA STIPULATA (Muhl.) Trel. Dry wooded slope, near Williamsburg. May 29, 1920. 2624.

GILLENIA TRIFOLIATA (L.) Moench. Sandy huckleberry thickets, west of Williamsburg. May, 1921. 3549; 3642.

POTENTILLA CANADENSIS L. Waste ground, Williamsburg. June 10, 1920. 2685.

POTENTILLA MONSPELIENSIS L. Fields, near Williamsburg. 1921.

POTENTILLA PUMILA Poir. Grassy places, near Williamsburg. March, 1921. 3364.

PRUNUS AMERICANA Marsh. Edge of woods, near Williamsburg. 1921.

PRUNUS AVIUM L. Edge of flat pine woods, southeast of Williamsburg. May 2, 1921. 3521; 2590.

Prunus Persica (L.) Stokes. Roadside, near Chisel's Run. March 22, 1921. 3304.

Prunus serotina Ehrh. Hedgerows, west of Williamsburg. April 9, 1921. 3401.

Pyrus arbutifolia (L.) L. f. Edge of flat woods, James City Co. April 3, 1921. 3373; 3331; 4484.

Pyrus coronaria L. Edge of pine woods, west of Mount Pleasant Church, James City Co. April 17, 1921. Bank of Chickahominy River, at Lanexa, July 30, 1921. 3435. 4154.

Pyrus Malus L. Edge of woods, in James City Co. 1921.

Pyrus melanocarpa (Michx.) Willd. Damp woods, roadside at Chisel's Run. March 28, 1921.

Rosa rubiginosa L. Roadside at edge of woods, Jamestown Road. 1921.

Rosa palustris Marsh. Dry soil at edge of woods, south of Williamsburg. About five feet high. June 13, 1921. 3724.

Rosa virginiana Mill. Open field, roadside, north of Williamsburg. May 23, 1921. 3620; 2684.

Rubus argutus Link.[2] Roadside, north of Williamsburg. April, 1921. 3473.

Rubus Baileyanus Britt. Swampy soil on edge of woods, old battlefield, Williamsburg. April, 1921. 3442.

Rubus cuneifolius Pursh. Dry open ground, near Williamsburg. 3656; 3878.

Rubus Enslenii Tratt. Edge of flat pine woods, near Williamsburg. 3433.

Rubus floridus Tratt. Abundant beside woods and in floodplains, James City and York counties. May to June, 1921. 3441; 3512; 3648, etc.

? Rubus floridus. Rich soil at edge of pine woods near Williamsburg. April 26, 1921. 3488.

Rubus nigricans Rydb. In a ploughed field, Williamsburg. June, 1920. 2703.

Rubus strigosus Michx. Moist soil at edge of mixed woods south of Williamsburg. April, 1921. 3467.

[2] All species of Rubus were determined by Dr. P. A. Rydberg, 1924.

Albizzia julibrissin Durazz. Bright Farm, Williamsburg. July, 1921. 4010.

Amphicarpa monoica (L.) Ell. Rich flood-plain thickets, throughout. 4384.

Amphicarpa Pitcheri T. & G. Wooded flood-plains, throughout the Peninsula. Sept., 1920. 3040; 3134.

Astragalus canadensis L. Dry open woods south James City Co. July 5, 1921. 3945.

Baptisia tinctoria (L.) R. Br. Dry soil on edge of pine woods, James City Co. July 13, 1921. 4006. 3091.

Cassia Chamaecrista L. Abandoned sandy fields, near Williamsburg. Oct. 3, 1920. 3125.

Cassia marilandica L. Flood-plain, near Williamsburg. Aug. 25, 1921. 4332.

Cassia Medsgeri Shafer. Sandy soil, near Williamsburg. Aug. and Sept., 1921. 4395.

Cassia nictitans L. Sandy fields, near Williamsburg. Sept. 9, 1921. 4360.

Centrosemum virginianum (L.) Benth. Dry sandy soil, James City and York counties. July, 1921. 3940; 4080.

Cercis canadensis L. Wooded uplands, throughout the Peninsula. York Co. March 24, 1921. 3319.

Clitoria mariana L. Dry soil, throughout the Peninsula. July 1, 1921. 3912.

Crotalaria Purshii DC. Flat dry pine-oak woods, three miles west of Williamsburg. One station. June 26, 1921. 3832.

Crotalaria sagittalis L. Occasional in sandy soil, along railway and roads, James City Co. June and July, 1921. 3833; 3910; 4095.

Cytisus scoparius (L.) Link. Sandy soil, along edge of pine woods, throughout the Peninsula. May 4, 1920. 2541. Flowering April 3, 1921.

Desmodium canescens (L.) DC. Moist woods, James City and York counties. July 8, 1921. 3950; 4112.

Desmodium Dillenii Darl. Dry oak woods, near Williamsburg. Sept., 1920. 3023.

Desmodium grandiflorum (Walt.) DC. Rich woods along

bank of James River, at Camp Wallace. Aug. 18, 1921. 4260.

Desmodium nudiflorum (L.) DC. Oak slopes, James City Co. Sept. 18, 1920. 3019.

Desmodium obtusum (Muhl.) DC. Edge of flat pine woods, near Williamsburg. Sept. 25, 1920. 3097.

Desmodium paniculatum (L.) DC. Dry woods, around Williamsburg. Sept., 1920. 3099; 3045.

Desmodium pauciflorum (Nutt.) DC. Rich moist woods around Williamsburg. July and Aug., 1921. 4175; 4322.

Desmodium rotundifolium (Michx.) DC. Open oak woods, near Williamsburg, Sept. 18, 1920.

Desmodium rigidum (Ell.) DC. Flat pine woods, around Williamsburg. Sept., 1920. 3093.

Desmodium viridiflorum (L.) Beck. Dry woods, around Williamsburg. 1920. Railway, east of Diascund, July 30, 1921. 3020; 4113.

Galactia volubilis (L.) Britton. Pine woods, James City Co Sept., 1920. 3062.

Gleditsia triacanthos L. Waste land, Williamsburg. 1920.

Gymnocladus dioica (L.) Koch. Williamsburg. 1920.

Lathyrus venosus Muhl. Grassy moist bank, at Williamsburg railway station. July, 1921.

Lespedeza procumbens Michx. Open pine woods, throughout the Peninsula. Sept., 1920. 3066; 3055.

Lespedeza repens (L.) Bart. Railway, at Williamsburg. Sept., 1920. 3098.

Lespedeza striata (Thunb.) H. & A. Edge of pine woods, James City Co. Oct., 1920. 3118.

Lespedeza Stuvei Nutt. Common in open pine woods, throughout the Peninsula. Sept., 1920. 3065.

Lespedeza virginica (L.) Britton. Pine-barrens, throughout the Peninsula. Oct., 1920. 3095.

*Lotus corniculatus L. Roadside, at Camp Eustis, June 13, 1920. Pine woods, near Queen's Cr., York Co., June, 1921. 2697; 3873.

LUPINUS PERENNIS L. Sandy banks, in pine-barrens, throughout the Peninsula. Beginning to flower March 24, 1921. 2562; 3478.

MEDICAGO LUPULINA L. Common, along roadsides. June 1, 1920. 2649.

MEDICAGO SATIVA L. Common, in fields, on railway banks and along roadsides.

MELILOTUS ALBA Desr. Moist soil, near Williamsburg. June 30, 1921. 3886.

MELILOTUS OFFICINALIS (L.) Lam. Waste land, Williamsburg. 1921.

PSORALIA PEDUNCULATA (Mill.) Vail. Pine-barrens, around Williamsburg. June 17, 1921. 3755.

RHYNCOSIA ERECTA (Walt.) DC. Pine-barrens, west of Williamsburg. Sept., 1920 and July, 1921. 3069; 4031.

RHYNCOSIA TOMENTOSA (L.) H. & A. Sandy bank along railway, northwest of Williamsburg. July 2, 1921. 4029.

ROBINIA PSEUDO-ACACIA L. Waste land, Williamsburg. 1921.

STROPHOSTYLES UMBELLATA (Muhl.) Britt. Open pine woods, around Williamsburg. Sept., 1920. 3070.

STYLOSANTHES BIFLORA (L.) B. S. P. Open sandy soil, around Williamsburg. Sept., 1920; July 17, 1921. 3105; 4047.

TEPHROSIA SPICATA (Walt.) T. & G. Dry sandy soil, edge of pine woods, James City Co. June 15, 1921. 3882.

TEPHROSIA VIRGINIANA (L.) Pers. Sandy roadsides, James City Co. May 23, 1921. 3587; 3613.

TRIFOLIUM AGRARIUM L. Roadside, east of Williamsburg. June 10, 1921. 3684.

TRIFOLIUM ARVENSE L. Roadsides, railway and abandoned fields, around Williamsburg. May 30, 1921. 2662; 3661.

TRIFOLIUM HYBRIDUM L. Moist grounds, around Williamsburg. May, 1921.

TRIFOLIUM INCARNATUM L. Escaped in a few places near Williamsburg.

TRIFOLIUM PRATENSE L. Abundant along roadsides and in waste land.

TRIFOLIUM PROCUMBENS L. Fields, James City Co. May 20, 1920. 2598.

Trifolium repens L. Abundant in waste grounds. 1921.

Ulex europaeus L. One thriving colony, near Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. June 10, 1920. 2694.

Vicia angustifolia (L.) Reich. Hedgerow, near Williamsburg. June 10, 1920. 2681.

Vicia Cracca L. Fields and roadsides, near Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3685.

Vicia hirsuta (L.) S. F. Gray. Flood-plain, near Williamsburg. May, 1920. 2585.

Vicia villosa Roth. Dry soil, near Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3752.

Linum floridanum (Planch.) Trel. var. intercursum (Bickn.) Weatherby. Dry soil of mixed woods, beside Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. June 30, 1921. 3889.

Linum medium (Planch.) Britt. Common, in sandy soil of roadsides. 1921. 3720; 4070.

Linum virginianum L. Openings in dry woods, frequent. June, 1921.

Oxalis europaea Jord. Openings in woods, near Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3849.

Oxalis stricta L. Weed in sandy fields, Williamsburg. May, 1920. 2573.

Oxalis violacea L. Hardwoods, near Williamsburg. April, 1921. 3453.

Erodium circutarium (L.) L'Hér. Weed in fields, Williamsburg. March and April, 1921. 3317; 3380.

Geranium carolinianum L. Roadsides, Williamsburg. April 24, 1921. 3469. A glandular form is common. 2699.

Geranium maculatum L. Rich soil, at edge of woods near Williamsburg. June 1, 1921. 2643.

Ailanthus glandulosa Desf. Edge of town, Williamsburg. Oct., 1920. 3145.

Melia azedarach L. Flourishing tree in Williamsburg. Probably northern limit.

Polygala cruciata L. Sandy soil, west of Elko, Henrico Co., Aug. 6, 1921. 4190.

Polygala incarnata L. Edge of pine-barrens, near Williamsburg. June 12, 1921. 3702.

Polygala lutea L. Sandy swamps, James City Co. June, 1921. 3767; 3854.

Polygala mariana Mill. Dry flat woods, near Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3729.

? Polygala sanguinea L. One specimen, in pine-barrens, west of Williamsburg. June, 1921.

Polygala verticillata L. Edge of pine-barrens, near Williamsburg. June 12, 1921. 3703.

Acalypha gracilens Gray. Sandy ballast of railway, near Poplar Springs, Charles City Co. Aug. 6, 1921. 4215.

Acalypha virginica L. Weed in fields, Williamsburg. Aug. 29, 1921. 4340.

Croton glandulosus L. var. septentrionalis Muell. Arg. Sandy corn-field, west of Williamsburg. Sept. 27, 1921. 4488.

Euphorbia corollata L. Shell bank, near Williamsburg. June, 1920. Along railway, at Poplar Springs, Aug. 6, 1921. 2648; 4209.

? Euphorbia corollata L. var. mollis Millsp. Opening in hardwoods, near Williamsburg. June 10, 1921. 3665.

Euphorbia maculata L. Weed around Williamsburg. 1921. 4433.

* Euphorbia marilandica Greene. Dry abandoned field, west of Williamsburg. Sept. 9, 1921. 4361.

Euphorbia paniculata Ell. Dry roadside soil, south of Williamsburg. July 5, 1921. 3938.

* Euphorbia prostrata Ait. Weed on old stone steps and pavements, Williamsburg. Oct. 16, 1921. 4640.

Phyllanthus caroliniensis Walt. Rich moist soil, west of Williamsburg. Sept. 9, 1921. 4358.

Tragia urens L. Barren burnt-over field, near Williamsburg. July 17, 1921. 4048.

Rhus copallina L. Dry uplands, James City Co. 1921.

Rhus glabra L. Edge of woods, James City Co. June 30, 1921. 3881.

Rhus quercifolia (Michx.) Steud. Sandy soil at edge of woods, near Williamsburg. June 10, 1921. 3667.

Rhus Toxicodendron L. Moist thickets, throughout. 1921.

Rhus typhina L. Dry upland thickets, throughout. Oct. 20, 1920. 3212.

Rhus Vernix L. Sphagnum swamp at Longhill, west of Williamsburg. Locally abundant. June, 1921.

Ilex glabra (L.) Gray. Sandy flats, James City Co. March, 1921. 3310; 3325.

Ilex opaca Ait. Woodlands, throughout. Flowering May 27, 1921. 2608.

Ilex verticillata (L.) Gray. Shores of Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. Dec., 1920. 3268.

Euonymus americanus L. Wooded flood-plains, James City Co. Flowering May 5, 1921. 3470.

Euonymus atropurpureus Jacq. Woods, around Williamsburg. 1921. 3923.

Staphylea trifoliata L. Jones' Mill Pond shores, Williamsburg. Flowering April 22, 1921.

? Acer leucoderma Small. Calcareous bluff along James River, near Camp Wallace. July 5, 1921. 3929; 4250.

Acer Negundo L. One tree, in hedgerow, Williamsburg. 1921.

Acer rubrum L. Wooded flood-plains and dry uplands, throughout. Flowering March 6, 1921. 3271; 3349.

Acer saccharinum L. Edge of mixed woods, west of Williamsburg. Oct., 1921. 3192.

Impatiens biflora Walt. Along streams, throughout the Peninsula. Aug. 25, 1921. 4342.

Ceanothus americanus L. Common in dry woods, throughout. June 6, 1921. 3647.

Psedera quinquefolia (L.) Greene. Common, in woods, throughout. 1921.

Vitis aestivalis Michx. Edge of woods, throughout the Peninsula. 1921. 4276; 4501; 3670.

Vitis rotundifolia Michx. Edge of thickets, James City Co., and flood-plain of Chickahominy River, at Lanexa, July 30, 1921. 4170.

Vitis cordifolia Michx. Thickets, James City Co. May 16, 1921. 3569.

TILIA AMERICANA L. Roadside, Williamsburg. June, 1921.

HIBISCUS INCANUS Wendl. Swampy flood-plain of Chickahominy River, at Lanexa. July 30, 1921. 4147. Also along James River.

HIBISCUS MOSCHEUTOS L. Tidal marshes, at Jamestown. June, 1921. 3981; 4256.

HIBISCUS SYRIACUS L. Escaped, around Williamsburg and Jamestown. 1921.

HIBISCUS TRIONUM L. Weed, in gardens, Williamsburg. July, 1921.

KOSTELETZKYA VIRGINICA (L.) Presl. Marsh along James River, at Camp Wallace. Flowering Aug. 18, 1921. 4254. Also along shore of York River.

MALVA ROTUNDIFOLIA L. Waste land, Williamsburg. April, 1921.

SIDA SPINOSA L. Roadside, near York River, north of Williamsburg. Aug. 20, 1921. 4284.

* STEWARTIA PENTAGYNA L'Hér. Dry wooded slope, along a stream south of Williamsburg. June 24, 1921. 3818.

ASCYRUM STANS Michx. Flat pine woods, throughout the region. Aug. 6, 1921. 3063; 4207.

ASCYRUM HYPERICOIDES L. Open pine-barrens James City Co. Aug., 1920 and 1921. 3071; 4222.

HYPERICUM CANADENSE L. Sphagnum-magnolia swamps, James City Co. June, 1921. 4110; 3773.

HYPERICUM GENTIANOIDES (L.) B. S. P. Dry sandy soil, James City Co. 1921.

HYPERICUM MUTILUM L. Low grounds, James City Co. July 15, 1921. 4005.

HYPERICUM PERFORATUM L. Roadsides, throughout the Peninsula. July, 1921. 4074; 4162.

HYPERICUM PUNCTATUM Lamb. Waste land, James City Co. July 5, 1921. 3933.

* HYPERICUM SETOSUM L. Sandy pine-barrens, west of Williamsburg. Infrequent. Aug. 15, 1921. 4237.

HYPERICUM VIRGINICUM L. Sphagnum swamp, at head of Chisel's Run, James City Co. Aug. 25, 1921. 4308.

Lechea racemulosa Lam. Dry open sandy soil, throughout. Frequent. Sept., 1921. 4419; 4492.

Viola affinis Le Conte. Hardwoods, south of Williamsburg. April 17, 1920. 2512.

Viola arvensis Murr. Weed in alfalfa field, Williamsburg. April 4, 1921. 3499; 3381.

Viola emarginata Le Conte. Sandy pine-barrens, near Williamsburg. March 28, 1921. Swamp at Longhill, James City Co. April 21, 1921. 3334; 3399; 3459.

Viola fimbriatula Sm. Bare cut-over land, west of Williamsburg. March 22, 1921. 3315.

Viola hirsutula Brainerd. Dry soil in mixed woods, north of Williamsburg, James City Co. April 17, 1921. 3442.

Viola papilionacea Pursh. Common in wooded ravines, and in damp soil of roadsides. March 17 to April, 1921. 3285; 3335; 3391; etc.

*Viola pedata L. Sandy soil at edge of pine woods, three miles west of Williamsburg. One station. April 17, 1921. 3437.

Viola pedata L. var. concolor Th. Holm. Common, in sandy soil along roadsides. May 4, 1920. 2535. Flowering April 9, 1921.

Viola primulifolia L. Moist soil in pine-oak woods, west of Williamsburg, and sphagnum swamp, at Chisel's Run. April 9 to June 16, 1921. 3543; 3758.

Viola Rafinesquii Greene. Roadside, on old battlefield, Williamsburg. 3362. March 28, 1921.

Viola sagittata Ait. Openings in flat oak woods, James City Co. April 14 and July 23, 1921. 3411; 4091.

Viola septemloba × sororia. One plant was collected near Williamsburg, March, 1921, and determined as a new hybrid by Dr. Brainerd. It possessed the foliage of *V. septemloba* with pubescence of *V. sororia*, and flowers intermediate between the two species. We never observed *V. septemloba* on the Peninsula.

Viola sororia Willd. Rich hardwoods soil, James City Co. April, 1920 and 1921. 2423; 3389.

Viola sororia × triloba. Rich woods soil, near Williamsburg. Two stations. April, 1921. 3404; 3413.

VIOLA TRILOBA Schwein. Sandy pine-barrens. May 9, 1920. March 28, 1921. 2558; 3351.

*VIOLA VILLOSA Walt. Sandy bank, in pine woods, three miles northeast of Williamsburg. March 28, 1921. 3356.

PASSIFLORA INCARNATA L. Fields and railway banks, James City Co. June 15, 1921. 3772.

PASSIFLORA LUTEA L. Flood-plain thicket, north of Williamsburg. Oct. 8, 1921. 4565.

OPUNTIA VULGARIS Mill. Open sandy hillsides, north of Williamsburg, York Co., May 19, 1921. 3603.

AMMANIA KOEHNEI Britt. Marsh, at mouth of Carter's Creek, on York River, Aug. 20, 1921. 4271.

CUPHEA PETIOLATA (L.) Koehne. Dry field, Williamsburg. July 3, 1921. 3918.

DECODON VERTICILLATUS (L.) Ell. Swampy shores of Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. Sept., 1920 and 1921. 3033; 4403.

LYTHRUM LINEARE L. Tidal salt marshes of York River and tributaries. Aug. 22, 1921. 4296.

ROTALA RAMOSIOR (L.) Koehne. Wet ground, beside pond at Williamsburg. Oct. 12, 1921. 4586.

RHEXIA MARIANA L. Moist roadside soil near Grove, James City Co. June 5, 1921. 3943.

RHEXIA VIRGINICA L. Sandy swamps, throughout the Peninsula. Aug. and Sept., 1921. 3094; 4315; 4212.

CIRCAEA LUTETIANA L. Moist soil of clearings in woods, throughout the region. June 23, 1921. 3814.

EPILOBIUM COLORATUM Muhl. Moist low grounds, around Williamsburg. Sept., 1921. 4371; 4429.

LUDVIGIA ALTERNIFOLIA L. Low wet woods, near Williamsburg. June 30, 1921. 3883.

LUDVIGIA LINEARIS Walt. Moist ground near Elko, Henrico Co. Aug. 6, 1921. 4187.

LUDVIGIA PALUSTRIS (L.) Ell. Mud-flat, around pond at Williamsburg. Oct. 2, 1920. 3123.

OENOTHERA BIENNIS L. Weed in fields, around Williamsburg. Oct. 8, 1921. 4577.

Oenothera fruticosa L. Sandy roadside, three miles west of Williamsburg. June 26, 1921. 3842.

Oenothera laciniata Hill. Waste land, around Williamsburg. May, 1920 and 1921. 2574; 3640.

Oenothera longipedicellata (Small) Robinson. Flat pine woods, west of Williamsburg. May 18, 1921. 3586.

Proserpinaca palustris L. In dried up pond bed, west of Elko, Henrico Co., Aug. 6, 1921. 4194.

Aralia racemosa L. Rich calcareous soil of shaded ravine, near Williamsburg. Sept., 1920. Flowering June 30, 1921. 3053; 3890.

Aralia spinosa L. Common, in thickets, throughout the region. 1921.

Hedera helix L. Extensively escaped in woods, around Williamsburg. 4061.

Panax quinquefolium L. Rich hardwoods' slope, near Williamsburg. Sept. 19, 1920. 3077. One station only.

Angelica villosa (Walt.) B. S. P. Edges of flat woods, James City Co. June 13, 1921. 3983.

Cicuta maculata L. Common, along streams. Aug. 27, 1921. 4330.

Cryptotaenia canadensis (L.) DC. Rich woods, James City Co. Sept., 1921. 3027. Flowering the last of June, 1921.

Daucus Carota L. Common in waste ground, throughout. Flowering June 1, 1921.

Eryngium virginianum Lam. Tidal marshes of York River and tributaries. Aug. 22, 1921. 4295.

Foeniculum vulgare Hill. Sandy shore of James River, along base of bluffs, at Camp Wallace. July, 1921.

Hydrocotyle ranunculoides L. f. In water of small stream, near Williamsburg. Oct. 12, 1921. 4584.

Hydrocotyle umbellata L. Edges of ponds and banks of streams, James City Co. June 19, 1921. 4056.

Hydrocotyle verticillata Thunb. Swampy wooded floodplain, of Chickahominy River, near Lanexa. July 30, 1921. 4156.

*Lilaeopsis lineata (Michx.) Greene. Mud of tidal marshes

of Queen's Creek, north of Williamsburg. June 28, 1921. 3863.

Osmorhiza longistylis (Torr.) DC. Shore of Tutter's Neck Pond, Williamsburg. April 21, 1921.

Osmorhiza longistylis var. villicaulis Fernald. Wooded ravines, near Williamsburg. May 19, 1921. 3601.

Oxypolis rigidior (L.) Coult. & Rose. Marsh along Queen's Creek, north of Williamsburg. Oct. 8, 1921. 4548.

Ptilimnium capillaceum (Michx.) Raf. Marshes along Chickahominy River, and Queen's Creek, near Williamsburg. July and Aug., 1921. 4119; 4294.

Sanicula canadensis L. Dry woods, throughout the region. June 13, 1921. 3727. Southern small-leaved form.

Sanicula marilandica L. Mixed woods, around Williamsburg. June 22, 1921. 3798. Southern small-leaved form.

Sium cicutaefolium Schrank. Swampy flood-plain of Chickahominy River. July 30, 1921. 4118.

Thaspium barbinode (Michx.) Nutt. Wooded ravine, near Williamsburg. June 15, 1920. 2705.

Cornus alternifolia L. f. Sandy-clay bank, near Williamsburg. Flowering April 26, 1921. 3539.

Cornus florida L. Abundant in dry woods, throughout the Peninsula. Flowering April 1, 1921. 3409.

Cornus paniculata L'Hér. Bank of College Creek, south of Williamsburg. Oct. 3, 1920. 3132.

Cornus stricta Lam. Edge of marshes, along College Creek south of Williamsburg. Oct. 3, 1921. 3133.

Nyssa sylvatica Marsh. Common, on edge of woods, throughout the region. April 26, 1921. 3477; 3594; 4557.

Chimaphila maculata (L.) Pursh. Common, in dry woods, throughout the Peninsula. Flowering June 10, 1921. 3264; 3668.

Chimaphila umbellata (L.) Nutt. Common, in dry woods, around Williamsburg. June 15, 1920. 2704.

Clethra alnifolia L. Wooded flood-plains, throughout the Peninsula. July 30 and Aug. 15, 1921. 4123; 4221.

Epigaea repens L. Sandy banks and edge of pine woods, south of Williamsburg. Frequent. April 11, 1920. 2506.

Gaultheria procumbens L. Occasional, in rich swampy forests. Oct., 1921.

Gaylussacia baccata (Wang.) C. Koch. Abundant as undergrowth in sandy flat pine woods, James City Co. May 11, 1920. 2587.

Gaylussacia dumosa (Andr.) T. & G. Common in pine-barrens, James City Co. Flowering in May, 1920 and 1921. 2619; 3506.

Gaylussacia frondosa (L.) T. & G. Common, on edge of pine woods, James City Co. Flowering April, 1921. 3480; 3801; 4053.

Kalmia latifolia L. Forms thickets in rich sandy soil, throughout the Peninsula. May 29, 1920. 2617.

Leucothoë racemosa (L.) Gray. Moist sandy soil on edge of pine woods, James City Co. 2582; 2555.

Lyonia ligustrina (L.) DC. Swampy thickets, west of Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3776; 3695.

Lyonia mariana (L.) D. Don. Thickets, along edges of pine woods, James City Co. May 1920. 2618; 2583.

Monotropa Hypopitys L. Rich woods, around Williamsburg. Sept., 1920 and July 7, 1921. 3048; 3959.

Monotropa uniflora L. Shady beech woods, near Williamsburg. June 10, 1920. 2678.

Monotropsis odorata Ell. Frequent, in flat oak woods of James City Co. Flowering Feb. 28 through March, 1921. Usually concealed by fallen leaves. 3269; 3282; 3293.

Oxydendrum arboreum (L.) DC. Common, in dry upland mixed woods, James City Co. June 10, 1920. 2679; 3990.

Pyrola rotundifolia L. var. americana (Sweet) Fernald. Rich wooded hillsides, west of Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3779; 3824.

Rhododendron nudiflorum (L.) Torr. Open pine-barrens, and along edge of swamps, throughout the Peninsula. May 1, 1920; April 11, 1921. 2527; 3428.

Rhododendron viscosum (L.) Torr. Clearings, in rich swampy flood-plains, west of Williamsburg. May 17, 1921. 3579.

Vaccinium atrococcum (Gray) Heller. Pine-oak woods, around Williamsburg. April 17, 1920. 2515. May, 1921. 3593.

VACCINIUM CORYMBOSUM L. Moist woods, James City Co. 1921.

VACCINIUM NEGLECTUM (Small) Fernald. Undergrowth in sandy soil of hardwoods, Jamestown Road. April 11, 1921. 3408. Flowers precocious.

VACCINIUM STAMINEUM L. Flat pine woods, throughout the region. April, 1921. 2581; 3434; 3429.

VACCINIUM VACILLANS Kalm. Dry sandy woods throughout the region. April, 1921. 3407; 3326; 3725.

GALAX APHYLLA L. Edge of thickets on sandy uplands, south of Williamsburg, and near mouth of Scimino Creek, at York River. April 21, 1921. 3324; 3465.

LIMONIUM CAROLINIANUM (Walt.) Britt. Tidal marshes, along the south shore of York River. Aug. 20, 1921. 4278.

ANAGALLIS ARVENSIS L. Weed in corn-field, Williamsburg. June 9, 1920. 2666.

ANAGALLIS ARVENSIS L. var. CAERULEA (Schreb.) Ledeb. Weed in field, Williamsburg. April 26, 1921. 3483.

LYSIMACHIA NUMMULARIA L. Moist grassy bank, near Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. June, 1921.

LYSIMACHIA QUADRIFOLIA L. Rich soil of mixed woods, around Williamsburg. June 1, 1920; May 23, 1921. 2638; 3616.

LYSIMACHIA TERRESTRIS (L.) B. S. P. Edge of swamp, near Carter's Creek and York River. June 6, 1920. 2664.

SAMOLUS FLORIBUNDUS H. B. K. Edges of shallow streams, throughout the region. May 29, 1920. 2630.

STEIRONEMA CILIATUM (L.) Raf. Moist woods, around Williamsburg. June 9, 1921. 3664.

STEIRONEMA LANCEOLATUM (Walt.) Gray. Edge of small pond, Ewell. Sept. 27, 1921. 4481.

BUMELIA LYCIOIDES (L.) Pers. Edges of tidal marsh, at mouth of Carter's Creek, York River. Aug. 20, 1921. 4269.

DIOSPYROS VIRGINIANA L. Edge of flat pine woods, near Williamsburg. May 23, 1921. 3619.

FRAXINUS AMERICANA L. Flood-plain of James River, James City Co. Aug., 1921. 4248.

CHIONANTHUS VIRGINICA L. Occasional along streams, James City Co., May, 1921. 3333; 3573.

Fraxinus americana L. var. acuminata (Lam.) Wesm. Calcareous bluff, beside James River near King's Mill. July 5, 1921. 3930.

Fraxinus pennsylvanica Marsh. Flood-plains of streams, throughout the region. June, 1921. 3880.

Gelsemium sempervirens (L.) Ait. f. Locally abundant, in swampy soil around Five Forks, James City Co. May 9, 1920. 2565.

Polypremum procumbens L. Dry sandy fields, James City Co. July, 1921. 3979. 4583.

Bartonia virginica (L.) B. S. P. Openings in sandy pine woods, near Williamsburg. June 17, 1921. 4049.

Gentiana Saponaria L. Rich pine woods, along Jamestown Road. Oct. 14, 1920. 3147.

Gentiana villosa L. Mixed woods, James City Co. May, 1921.

Obolaria virginica L. Rich hardwood soil, southwest of Williamsburg. March 15, 1921. 3281.

Sabatia angularis (L.) Pursh. Frequent, in abandoned fields and open ground, throughout the Peninsula. July 9, 1921. 3980; 4075.

Sabatia dodecandra (L.) B. S. P. Edges of tidal marshes, along James and York rivers and tributaries. July, 1921. 3982; 4068.

Sabatia paniculata (Michx.) Pursh. Frequent, in waste land, throughout the Peninsula. July 1, 1921. 3894; 3989.

Sabatia stellaris Pursh. In tidal marsh, at Capitol Landing and on Queen's Creek, York Co. July 22, 1921. 4076.

? Apocynum medium Greene. Dry soil along railway east of Lanexa. July 30, 1921. 4159.

Acerates viridiflora Ell. Dry soil, along railway, at Williamsburg. Aug., 1921. Flowering June 28. 3858; 4297.

Asclepias amplexicaulis Sm. Sandy woods, north of Williamsburg, June 28, and along railway at Lightfoot, July 23, 1921. 3875; 4082.

Asclepias incarnata L. var. pulchra (Ehrh.) Pers. Beside a stream, near Williamsburg. Oct. 20, 1920. 3210. In flower, July 5, 1921.

Asclepias purpurascens L. Sphagnum-magnolia swamps, west of Williamsburg. June 23, 1921. 3737; 3825.

Asclepias tuberosa L. Waste places, around Williamsburg. Common. June 11, 1921. 3673.

Asclepias variegata L. Rich oak woods, near Williamsburg. June 15, 1920. 2708.

Asclepias verticillata L. Dry woods, north of Williamsburg. Oct. 2, 1920. 3124.

Vincetoxicum carolinense (Jacq.) Britt. Sandy soil, in open places along old roads. Frequent. June 10, 1921. 3666; 3690.

Convolvulus arvensis L. Ballast along railway, at Williamsburg. May 27, 1920. 2610.

Cuscuta Gronovii Willd. On *Boehmeria cylindrica*, at edge of pond, near Williamsburg. Common in moist woods. Sept. 20, 1921. 4418.

Cuscuta pentagona Engelm. Frequent in abandoned fields, near Williamsburg. Aug. 15, 1921. 4230.

Ipomoea coccinea L. Common corn-field weed. Oct. 2, 1920. 3116.

Ipomoea hederacea Jacq. Common weed, throughout. Oct. 12, 1921. 4585.

Ipomoea pandurata (L.) Mey. Hedgerows, near Williamsburg. July, 1921.

Phlox maculata L. Wooded swamp at Longhill, James City Co. July 23, 1921. 4108.

Polemonium reptans L. Swampy flood-plains, north of Williamsburg. March 28, 1921. 3361.

Cynoglossum virginianum L. Dry oak woods, James City Co. May, 1920, 1921. 2589; 2646.

Echium vulgare L. Abundant, in cultivated fields, near Williamsburg. June 9, 1920. 2667.

Lappula virginiana (L.) Greene. Thickets along streams, James City Co. Aug. 20, 1921. 4280.

Lithospermum arvense L. In alfalfa field, near Williamsburg. May 4, 1920. 2536.

Myosotis arvensis (L.) Hill. Dry open woods, south of Williamsburg. May 9, 1921. 3548.

Myosotis laxa Lehm. In shallow water of ponds and streams, throughout the region. May, 1920 and 1921. 2626; 3574.

Onosmodium virginianum (L.) DC. Dry open oak woods, near Williamsburg. June 1, 1920. 2650.

Callicarpa americana L. Frequent, in rich woods, James City Co. Fruit, Oct. 3, 1920. 3126.

Verbena angustifolia Michx. Weed in dry fields, throughout the Peninsula. June, 1921. 3716; 3738.

Verbena urticaefolia L. Moist thickets, throughout the region. June, 1921. 3794; 4067.

* Ajuga chamaepitys (L.) Schreb. Calcareous sandy bank, at mouth of Carter's Creek, York River. July and Aug., 1921. 4020; 4273.

Blephilia ciliata (L.) Raf. Opening in dry hardwoods, near Williamsburg. July 21, 1921. 4174.

Lamium amplexicaule L. Common weed, Williamsburg. 1920–21.

Leonurus Cardiaca L. Common weed, Williamsburg. 1920–21.

Lycopus americanus Muhl. Edge of marshes, Queen's Creek, north of Williamsburg. Aug. 22, 1921. 4290.

Mentha arvensis L. Moist hedgerow, near Williamsburg. June, 1921.

Mentha citrata Ehrh. Low moist ground beside Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. Flowering Aug. 31, 1921. 4411.

Mentha piperita L. Wet swampy flood-plains, around Williamsburg. July 17, 1921. 4057.

Mentha spicata L. Moist grounds, near Williamsburg. July 17, 1921. 4058.

Monarda punctata L. Dry soil, throughout the Peninsula. Aug., 1921. 4305.

Nepeta Cataria L. Abandoned garden, at mouth of Scimino Creek, York Co. Oct. 8, 1921. 4559.

Nepeta hederacea (L.) Trevisan. Weed in moist places, Williamsburg. April 7, 1921. 3390.

Perilla frutescens (L.) Britt. Waste land on Duke of Gloucester St., Williamsburg. Sept. 24, 1921. 4457.

Prunella vulgaris L. Moist grounds and roadsides, throughout the region. May 30, 1921. 3632.

Pycnanthemum flexuosum (Walt.) B. S. P. Dry grounds, throughout the Peninsula. Flowering July 5, 1921. 3932.

Pycnanthemum incanum (L.) Michx. Dry wood, at Lanexa, July 30, and dry thicket, near Williamsburg. July 31, 1921. 4173.

Salvia lyrata L. About houses, along roadsides and even in wooded ravines. Abundant. May, 1920–1921. 2546; 2568.

Satureja Nepeta (L.) Scheele. Cultivated land, Williamsburg. Oct., 1920. 3223.

Scutellaria canescens Nutt. Moist hardwoods, around Williamsburg. June 26, 1921. 3830; 3892.

Scutellaria integrifolia L. Sandy soil, on edge of woods, near Williamsburg. June 5, 1921. 3644.

Scutellaria latiflora L. Swampy flood-plains of Chickahominy River and Chisel's Run. July, 1921. 4111; 4130.

Scutellaria pilosa Michx. Sandy bank, along Jamestown Road. May 30, 1921. 3629.

Stachys palustris L. Rich hedgerows, around Williamsburg. 1921.

Teucrium canadense L. Flood-plain of James River, near Camp Wallace. July 5, 1921. 3946.

Trichostema dichotomum L. Dry field, near Williamsburg. Sept. 13, 1921. 4379.

Datura Stramonium L. Common in waste land, Williamsburg. 1921.

Datura Tatula L. Common weed, Williamsburg. July, 1921.

Physalis pruinosa L. Dry sandy open soil, James City Co. July, 1921.

Physalis virginiana Mill. Weed around Williamsburg. July, 1921.

Solanum carolinense L. Common weed, in waste land, Williamsburg. July, 1921.

Solanum Dulcamara L. Hedgerows, near Williamsburg. June, 1921.

Solanum nigrum L. Rich moist soil, around Williamsburg. July, 1921.

Solanum rostratum Dunal. Weed in fields, near Williamsburg. July, 1921.

Agalinis Holmiana (Greene) Pennell. Edge of sandy pine woods. Sept. 25, 1920. 3104.

Agalinis purpurea (L.) Britt. Abundant in tidal marshes of Peninsula. Aug. 22, 1921. 4300.

Aureolaria flava (L.) Farwell. Dry woods, throughout the Peninsula. Began to flower June 15, 1921. 3815; 3846.

Aureolaria pedicularia (L.) Raf. Sandy soil of oak thicket, near Williamsburg. Sept. 9, 1921. 4357.

Bacopa acuminata (Walt.) Robinson. Wet soil, common west of Elko. Aug. 6, 1921. 4186.

Chelone glabra L. Beside streams and in swamps, throughout the region. Aug. and Sept., 1921. 4373.

*Chelone Grimesii Weatherby. Wooded swamp between Poplar Springs and Elko, Henrico Co. Aug. 6, 1921. 4189.

Gratiola pilosa Michx. Dry cut-over woods, west of Williamsburg. July 13, 1921. 4001.

Gratiola sphaerocarpa Ell. Swampy flood-plain, near Williamsburg. June, 1921.

Gratiola neglecta Torr. In wet mud by stream, west of Williamsburg. May 17, 1921. 3581.

Linaria canadensis (L.) Dumont. Sandy banks and roadsides, throughout the Peninsula. May, 1920; July, 1921. 2548; 4163.

Linaria Elatine (L.) Mill. Weed in cultivated ground, Williamsburg. July 3, 1921. 3917.

Linaria spuria (L.) Mill. Waste land, Williamsburg. June 15, 1921.

Linaria vulgaris Hill. Roadsides, throughout the region. July 30, 1921.

Mimulus alatus Ait. Swampy flood-plains, James City Co. Flowering July 19, 1921. 4412.

Mimulus ringens L. Swampy flood-plains, throughout the region. July and Sept., 1921. 4066; 4432.

Paulownia tomentosa (Thunb.) Steud. Edge of pine woods, near Williamsburg. Flowering April 12, 1921. 3420.

PEDICULARIS CANADENSIS L. Roadsides and dry oak woods, throughout. June 1, 1920; March 28, 1921.

PEDICULARIS LANCEOLATA Michx. Abundant in swampy flood-plains, throughout the region. Sept. 23, 1921. 4464.

PENTSTEMON HIRSUTUS (L.) Willd. Dry clayey bluff, along shore of York River at Penniman. May, 1921.

PENTSTEMON PALLIDUS Small. Rich moist flood-plain of Queen's Creek, north of Williamsburg. May 23, 1921. 3610.

SCROPHULARIS MARILANDICA L. Edge of moist woods, James City Co. Sept. 9, 1921. 4348.

VERBASCUM BLATTARIA L. Waste land, Williamsburg. 1921.

VERBASCUM THAPSUS L. Weed throughout the region. 1921.

VERONICA AGRESTIS L. Weed in sandy fields, Williamsburg. April, 1921.

VERONICA ANAGALLIS-AQUATICA L. In a small stream, near Williamsburg. Oct. 17, 1920.

VERONICA ARVENSIS L. Weed in waste land, around Williamsburg. Fruit, May 16, 1921. 3565.

VERONICA OFFICINALIS L. Dry pine woods, James City Co. May 27, 1920. 2615.

VERONICA GLANDIFERA Pennell. Wet ground along edge of Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. Oct. 12, 1921. 4587.

VERONICA PEREGRINA L. Weed in cultivated grounds, Williamsburg. Fruit, May 16, 1921. 3563.

VERONICA PERSICA Poir. Weed in fields, Williamsburg. April 17, 1921. 2513.

? UTRICULARIA INFLATA Walt. Floating in a ditch, Elko. Aug., 1921. 4216.

EPIFAGUS VIRGINIANA (L.) Bart. Beech woods, throughout the region. Common. Oct. 2, 1920. 3111.

BIGNONIA CAPREOLATA L. Wooded flood-plains and moist woods, throughout the Peninsula. May 17, 1921. 3580.

CATALPA BIGNONIOIDES Walt. Hedgerows, near Williamsburg. 1921.

TECOMA RADICANS (L.) Juss. Hedgerows and thickets, throughout the region.

RUELLIA CILIOSA Pursh. Dry soil along roadsides and borders of woods, James City Co. June 16, 1921. 3777; 3887.

Ruellia strepens L. Rich hillside, near Williamsburg. June 6, 1921. 3655.

Phryma Leptostachya L. Rich moist woods, throughout. Flowering June 24, 1921.

Plantago aristata Michx. Dry sandy soil of roadside, two miles west of Williamsburg. July 9, 1921. 3968.

Plantago lanceolata L. Common in waste land, throughout.

Plantago major L. Common in waste lands, throughout. Oct., 1921. 4649.

Plantago Rugelii Dcne. Moist waste land, Williamsburg. Aug. 14, 1921. Fruit.

Plantago virginica L. Weed in fields, around Williamsburg. April, 1920 2517.

Cephalanthus occidentalis L. Shores of Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. June 30, 1921. 3891.

Diodia teres Walt. Sandy waste land, throughout the region. July 15, 1921. 4014.

Diodia virginiana L. Moist roadside ditches, James City Co. July 5, 1921. 3942.

Galium Aparine L. Rich waste ground and wooded thickets, around Williamsburg. May 23, 1921. 3615.

Galium circaezans Michx. var. glabrum Britton. Dry beech woods, near Williamsburg. June 10, 1921. 3678.

Galium Claytoni Michx. Moist ditches and swampy floodplains, around Williamsburg. June, 1921. 3676; 3757.

Galium pilosum Ait. var. puncticulosum (Michx.) T. & G. Dry barren burnt-over land, northwest of Williamsburg. June 15, 1921. 3739.

Galium triflorum Michx. Rich mixed woods, near Williamsburg. Sept. 18, 1920. 3028.

Houstonia caerulea L. Mossy hardwoods' soil, throughout the region. April, 1920 and 1921. 2505; 3505.

Houstonia longifolia Gaertn. Dry gravelly soil along railway, Charles City Co. Aug. 6, 1921. 4198.

Houstonia purpurea L. Oak woods, around Williamsburg. June, 1920. 2710.

Mitchella repens L. Open pine and oak woods, throughout the region. June 1, 1920. 2654.

* Sherardia arvensis L. In grass of orchard, Williamsburg. June 10, 1920. 2691. Flowering April 5, 1921.

Lonicera japonica Thunb. Abundant in hedgerows and pine woods, throughout the region. May 27, 1920. 2609.

Lonicera sempervirens L. Moist thickets, throughout the region. May 1, 1920. 2529.

Sambucus canadensis L. Rich open soil, throughout the region. June 17, 1921. 3750.

Symphoricarpos orbiculatus Moench. Dry clayey bank, along railway, near Williamsburg. Fruit. Dec. 19, 1920. 3256.

Triosteum perfoliatum L. Edge of sandy woods, near Williamsburg. May 16, 1921. 3568.

Viburnum acerifolium L. Dry wooded slopes, around Williamsburg. Oct., 1920 and May 2, 1921. 3144; 3523.

Viburnum cassinoides L. Wooded swamps, along Carter's Creek, York Co. Oct., 1921. 4556.

Viburnum dentatum L. Swampy island in Chickahominy River, at Lanexa. July 30, 1921. 4133.

Viburnum nudum L. Wooded swamps, around Williamsburg. Oct., 1920 and May 19, 1921. 3185; 3589.

Viburnum prunifolium L. Abundant in wooded swamps and hillsides, Chisel's Run. April 3, 1921. 3371.

Viburnum rufidulum Raf. Rich woods, Oaktree, York Co. May 19, 1921. 3596.

Valerianella Locusta (L.) Betcke. Roadsides and grassy places, around Williamsburg. April 17, 1921. 3451.

Valerianella radiata (L.) Dufr. Low ground, along streams, around Williamsburg. April and May, 1921. 3504; 3545.

Melothria pendula L. Calcareous wooded bank west of Williamsburg. July, 1921. Hampton, collected by L. G. Tennis, Aug., 1921.

Campanula americana L. Moist wooded ravine, along James River, at Camp Wallace. Aug. 18, 1921. 4255.

Specularia perfoliata (L.) A. DC. Weed in fields, throughout. May, 1921. 3627.

Lobelia amoena Michx. Sphagnum-magnolia swamp at Chisel's Run, James City Co. July 16, 1921. 4039.

Lobelia cardinalis L. Swampy flood-plains, York Co. July 7, 1921. 3958.

Lobelia inflata L. Openings in flat pine woods, around Williamsburg. July 13, 1921. 4002.

Lobelia Nuttallii R. & S. Sandy soil of sphagnum swamps, James City Co. June and July, 1921. 3857; 3901.

Lobelia puberula Michx. Rich sandy woods, James City Co. Sept., 1920; Aug. and Sept., 1921. 3067; 4289; 4434.

Lobelia siphilitica L. Swampy soil on edge of Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. Oct. 12, 1921. 4589.

Achillea Millefolium L. Common, in waste places, Williamsburg.

Actinomeris alternifolia DC. Rich wooded flood-plains, at Tutter's Neck Pond and Camp Wallace, James City Co. Aug. and Sept., 1921. 4463.

Ambrosia artemisiifolia L. Roadside weed, Williamsburg.

Ambrosia trifida L. Weed, in moist waste land, Williamsburg.

Antennaria arnoglossa Greene. Opening on hardwood slope one mile north of Williamsburg. April 17, 1920. 2516.

Antennaria fallax Greene. Dry sandy roadside bank, near Williamsburg. May 11, 1920. 2540.

Antennaria Parlinii Fernald. Grassy railway embankment, near East Williamsburg. May 27, 1920. 2614.

Antennaria plantaginifolia (L.) Richards. Sandy roadside banks, and at edge of pine woods, around Williamsburg. May, 1920. 2545; 2569.

? Antennaria solitaria Rydb. East shore of College Creek, at Landing. April 12, 1921. 3419.

Anthemis arvensis L. Old field, near Williamsburg. June 15, 1920. 2700.

Anthemis Cotula L. Roadsides, Williamsburg. June.

Arctium Lappa L. Common, in waste places, throughout the region.

Arnica acaulis (Walt.) B. S. P. Edge of flat sandy pine-oak woods, near Williamsburg. May 8, 1921. 2621; 3542.

Artemisia annua L. Common in waste places, Williamsburg. July, 1922.

ASTER CONCINNUS Willd. Dry open roadside, west of Williamsburg. June 24, 1921. 3827.

ASTER CORDIFOLIUS L. Rich hardwoods, around Williamsburg. Oct., 1920. 3158.

ASTER CORDIFOLIUS var. POLYCEPHALUS Porter. Rich wooded slope, west of Williamsburg. Oct. 15, 1921. 4594.

? ASTER CORDIFOLUS × UNDULATUS. Wooded slope, near Williamsburg. Oct., 1920. 3204.

ASTER DUMOSUS L. Dry railway embankment, just west of Lightfoot. Sept. 27, 1921. 4497.

ASTER ERICOIDES L. Very common. Weed in fields abandoned one year. Oct. 24, 1920. 3232; 4428.

ASTER GRACILIS Nutt. Edge of mixed woods, near Williamsburg. Sept. 9, 1921. 4353.

ASTER GRANDIFLORUS L. Sandy roadside banks near Williamsburg. Oct. 19, 1920. 3178. Common.

ASTER INFIRMUS Michx. Dry woods, James City Co. Flowering third week in July, 1921. 4103.

ASTER LINARIIFOLIUS L. Sandy banks along roadsides, near Williamsburg. Sept. and Oct., 1921. 3084; 3179.

ASTER LATERIFLORUS (L.) Britton. Sandy soil of thickets, James City and York counties. Oct., 1920 and 1921. 3149; 4558.

ASTER PATENS Ait. Dry oak slope, near Williamsburg. Oct. 17, 1920. 3160.

ASTER PUNICEUS L. Swampy flood-plains of College Creek, south of Williamsburg. Oct., 1920; Sept., 1921. 3137; 4422.

ASTER SUBULATUS Michx. Tidal marshes of James and York Rivers. Sept. 23, 1921. 4424.

ASTER TENUIFOLIUS L. Salt marsh along York River, at Scimino Creek. Oct. 8, 1921. 4560.

ASTER UMBELLATUS Mill. Sphagnum-magnolia swamp, at Longhill, James City Co. Sept. 27, 1921. 4478.

ASTER UNDULATUS L. Dry wooded slopes, throughout the region. Frequent. Oct., 1920; Sept., 1921. 3150; 3155; 4454.

Aster virgatus Ell. Open hardwood slopes, around Williamsburg. Frequent. Sept., 1920 and 1921. 3049; 4450.

Baccharis halimifolia L. Cleared pine-barren, just north of Williamsburg. Sept. 25, 1920. Edge of tidal marshes, along York River. Oct. 1, 1921. 3109; 4561.

Bidens trichosperma (Michx.) Britt. (Now *B. coronata* (L.) Britt.) Tidal marshes along Queen's Creek, north of Williamsburg. Aug. 22, 1921. 4291.

Bidens frondosa L. Swampy ground, near Williamsburg. Oct., 1920. 3209.

Bidens laevis (L.) B. S. P. Swampy ground, Jones' Mill Pond, Williamsburg. Nov. 5, 1920. 3241.

Boltonia asteroides (L.) L'Hér. Oak slopes and dry woods, around Williamsburg. July and Aug., 1921.

Borrichia frutescens (L.) DC. Sandy shore of York River, at Penniman. July, 1922.

Cacalia atriplicifolia L. Sandy soil, at edge of mixed woods, near Williamsburg. Sept., 1920. 3205; 3061.

Chrysanthemum Leucanthemum L. var. pinnatifidum Lecoq & Lamotte. Common weed in fields, throughout the Peninsula. Flowering May 18, 1921.

Chrysogonium virginianum L. Rich oak slope, north shore of Tutter's Neck Pond, Williamsburg. April 20, and June 24, 1921. 3817.

* Chrysopsis aspera Shuttl. Open situations, on edge of woods, in dry clay soil, around Williamsburg. Frequent. Sept., 1920 and 1921. 3044; 4356.

? Chrysopsis gossypina (Michx.) Nutt. Dry woods, near Williamsburg. Sept., 1920. 3017.

Chrysopsis graminifolia (Michx.) Nutt. Dry sandy roadside, near the ferry, Newport News. Sept. 30, 1921. 4504.

Chrysopsis mariana (L.) Nutt. Dry woods and roadside banks, James City and York counties. Sept., 1920; June 26 and Aug., 1921. 3047; 4335. Common.

Cichorium Intybus L. Roadside, Williamsburg. Occasional.

Cirsium discolor (Muhl.) Spreng. Rich roadside soil and open swamps, near Williamsburg. Oct., 1920; Sept. 17, 1921. 3198; 4393.

CIRSIUM LANCEOLATUM (L.) Hill. In a pasture, south of Williamsburg. July 5, 1921. 3949.

CIRSIUM SPINOSISSIMUM (Walt.) Scop. Moist sandy roadside, north of Williamsburg. June 6, 1920. 2665.

COREOPSIS VERTICILLATA L. In dry acid soil of thin woods, near Williamsburg. June 15, and July 23, 1921. 3768; 4101.

ECLIPTA ALBA (L.) Hassk. Marshes along Queen's Creek, north of Williamsburg. Aug., 1921.

ELEPHANTOPUS CAROLINIANUS Willd. Dry ravines, around Williamsburg. Frequent. Aug. 25, 1921. 4341.

ELEPHANTOPUS NUDATUS Gray. Dry oak woods, near Williamsburg. Sept. 19, 1920. 3073.

ELEPHANTOPUS TOMENTOSUS L. Open situations in pine-oak woods, throughout the region. Sept. 18, 1920. 3034.

ERECHTITES HIERACIFOLIA (L.) Raf. Moist soil of cut-over woods, west of Williamsburg. July–Sept; 1921. 4354.

ERIGERON ANNUUS (L.) Pers. Weed in Williamsburg. Nov., 1920. 3244.

ERIGERON PHILADELPHICUS L. Fields, throughout. Common. Flowering March 21, 1921.

ERIGERON PULCHELLUS Michx. Scattered colonies in oak woods, around Williamsburg. April 29, 1920. 2520.

ERIGERON RAMOSUS (Walt.) B. S. P. Shaded ravines, around Williamsburg. June 15, 1920. 2707.

EUPATORIUM ALBUM L. Dry woods, throughout the region. Aug. and Sept., 1921. 4380.

EUPATORIUM CAPILLIFOLIUM (Lam.) Small. Abandoned fields, Williamsburg. Low ground by streams and ponds, throughout the Peninsula. Oct., 1920 and 1921. 3168; 4648.

EUPATORIUM COELESTINUM L. Low ground in open situations, Williamsburg. Common. Oct. 3, 1920. 3138.

EUPATORIUM HYSSOPIFOLIUM L. Hedgerow, near Williamsburg. Oct. 19, 1920. 3190.

EUPATORIUM PERFOLIATUM L. Swampy flood-plain, near Williamsburg. Oct. 12, 1921. 4589.

EUPATORIUM PUBESCENS Muhl. Sphagnum-magnolia swamp, west of Williamsburg. Aug. 25, 1921. 4316.

EUPATORIUM PURPUREUM L. Moist low ground of roadsides and woods. Aug., 1921.

EUPATORIUM ROTUNDIFOLIUM L. Flat pine woods, near Williamsburg. Sept. 25, 1920. 3083.

EUPATORIUM SEROTINUM Michx. Swampy ground, near Williamsburg. Oct. 20, 1920. 3208.

EUPATORIUM URTICAEFOLIUM Reichard. Moist rich woods, around Williamsburg. Sept., 1921. 4359; 4440.

EUPATORIUM VERBENAEFOLIUM Michx. Edge of sandy swamp, west of Williamsburg. Sept. 9, 1921. 4370.

EUPATORIUM VERTICILLATUM Lam. Damp sandy soil at edge of pine woods and marsh, Queen's Creek, north of Williamsburg. Aug. 22, 1921. 4298.

GALINSOGA ARISTULATA Bicknell. Weed in gardens, Williamsburg. Oct., 1920. 3236.

GNAPHALIUM OBTUSIFOLIUM L. Edge of cut-over woods west of Williamsburg. Oct. 17, 1920. 3172.

GNAPHALIUM OBTUSIFOLIUM L. var. MICRADENIUM Weatherby. Dry roadside, near Williamsburg. Sept. 9, 1921. 4351.

GNAPHALIUM PURPUREUM L. Weed in arable field, Williamsburg. May, 1920 and 1921. 2571; 3641.

GRINDELIA SQUARROSA (Pursh) Dunal. Sandy soil of an orchard, mouth of Carter's Creek at York River. Single plant observed. Aug. 20, 1921. 4265.

HELENIUM AUTUMNALE L. Moist ground of flood-plains, throughout. In flower Aug. 27, 1921. 4325.

HELENIUM TENUIFOLIUM Nutt. Dry sandy soil, streets of Norfolk. Sept. 30, 1921. 4511.

HELIANTHUS ATRORUBENS L. Opening on top of slope in oak woods, near Williamsburg. Sept. 19, 1920. 3036.

HELIANTHUS DIVARICATUS L. Sandy roadside soil, at Ewell, July 2, 1921. Roadside near Williamsburg. July 23, 1921. 3903; 4107.

HELIANTHUS SCHWEINITZII T. & G. Sphagnum-magnolia swamp, south of Ewell. Sept. 27, 1921. 4474.

HELIANTHUS STRUMOSUS L. Flood-plains of streams and rivers throughout. Flowering in Aug., 1921. 4243; 4334.

HELIANTHUS TRACHELIIFOLIUS Mill. Sphagnum-magnolia swamp, west of Williamsburg. Sept. 27, 1921. 4476.

HELIANTHUS TUBEROSUS L. Rich peaty soil of roadside, near Norfolk. 4544.

HELIOPSIS HELIANTHOIDES (L.) Sweet. Dry wooded slope, southeast of Williamsburg. Sept. 24, 1921. 4462.

HIERACIUM GRONOVII L. Dry pine woods and sandy fields, around Williamsburg. Aug., 1920 and 1921. 3076; 4232.

HIERACIUM MARIANUM Willd. Roadside, Camp Wallace. July 5, 1921. 3944.

HIERACIUM VENOSUM L. Open hardwood slope, near Williamsburg. May 20, 1920. 2596.

HYPOCHAERIS RADICATA L. Shaded bank along roadside, near Chisel's Run, James City Co. July 2, 1921. 3897.

IVA ORARIA Bartlett. Tidal marshes of York River. Oct., 1921. 4569.

KRIGIA VIRGINICA (L.) Willd. Dry uplands and sandy fields, James City Co. April 16, 1921. 3426.

KUHNIA EUPATORIOIDES L. Thin dry pine woods, near Williamsburg. Sept. 9, 1921. 4349.

LACTUCA CANADENSIS L. Cultivated ground, Williamsburg. Oct., 1920. 3243.

LACTUCA FLORIDANA (L.) Gaertn. Moist hardwood banks, James City Co. Sept., 1921 and Aug., 1920. 3026; 4253.

LACTUCA SCARIOLA L. Ballast along C. & O. Railroad, west of Williamsburg. July 23, 1921. 4090.

LIATRIS GRAMINIFOLIA (Walt.) Willd. var. DUBIA Gray. Opening in flat pine woods, west of Williamsburg. Sept. 25, 1920. 3107.

LIATRIS SQUARROSA Willd. Dry sandy soil, just west of Elko, Henrico Co. Aug. 6, 1921. 4195.

MIKANIA SCANDENS (L.) Willd. Tidal marsh of James River, near Jamestown. Swampy flood-plain, near Williamsburg. July and Sept., 1921. 3976; 3035.

PARTHENIUM INTEGRIFOLIUM L. Dry sandy soil, near Williamsburg. June 16, 1921. 3762.

PLUCHEA CAMPHORATA (L.) DC. Tidal marshes of York River and tributaries. August, 1921. 4268; 4292.

Polymnia uvedalia L. Rich heavy calcareous soil, around Williamsburg. Frequent. Aug. 11, 1921. 4219.

Prenanthes serpentaria Pursh. Sandy soil along railway and in woods, throughout the region. Sept. and Oct., 1921. 3166; 4553.

Prenanthes virgata Michx. Sphagnum swamp west of Williamsburg. Oct. 16, 1921. 4633.

Pyrrhopappus carolinianus (Walt.) DC. Dry roadsides, James City Co. June and July, 1921. 3804; 3931.

Rudbeckia fulgida Ait. Dry open cut-over woods, near Williamsburg. Aug. 27, 1921. 4347.

Rudbeckia hirta L. Fields and woods, throughout the Peninsula. June and Aug., 1921. 3834; 4181.

* Rudbeckia laciniata L. var. humilis Gray. Swampy flood-plains and wet thickets, in James City Co. End of August to Oct., 1921. 4372; 4469; etc.

Rudbeckia triloba L. Moist wooded ravine, near Camp Wallace, Aug. 18, 1921. 4257.

Senecio aureus L. Widespread throughout, especially in flood-plains of streams. March 17, 1921. 2521; 3290.

Senecio Smallii Britt. Abundant weed in abandoned ploughed fields, throughout the region. April and May. 2623; 3570.

Senecio tomentosa Michx. General, in dry sterile open soil. May, 1920; April, 1921. 2542; 3552.

Senecio vulgaris L. In a clover field, near Williamsburg. March 31, 1921. 3369. One station.

Sericocarpus asteroides (L.) B. S. P. Openings in pine woods, near Williamsburg. June. 2683; 3681. Abundant.

Sericocarpus linifolius (L.) B. S. P. Sandy soil, on edge of pine woods, near Williamsburg. May and June, 1921. 3744; 3643. Common.

Silphium trifoliatum L. Borders of woods, throughout the region. July, 1921. 4036.

Solidago altissima L. Abandoned fields, and edge of marsh along College Creek, Williamsburg. Sept. and Oct. 4439; 3128.

Solidago bicolor L. Pine slope, near Williamsburg. Oct. 20, 1920. 3202.

Solidago Boottii Hook. Reverted cultivated field, near Williamsburg. Sept. 23, 1921. 4445.

Solidago caesia L. Moist woods, throughout. Sept. and Oct. 3042; 3154.

Solidago erecta Pursh. Dry pine-oak woods, near Williamsburg. Sept., 1920. 3918; 3064.

Solidago graminifolia (L.) Salisb. var. Nuttallii (Greene) Fernald. Open sandy fields, south of Williamsburg. Sept. 23, 1921. 4437; 4444.

Solidago latifolia L. Rich wooded slopes, around Williamsburg. Sept. 3152; 4452.

Solidago minor (Michx.) Fernald. Dry open soil, near Williamsburg. Sept. 17, 1921. 4400.

Solidago nemoralis Ait. Old sandy fields, around Williamsburg. Sept. 3129; 4435.

Solidago rugosa Mill. var. aspera Fernald. Sandy flat, among trees on edge of marsh, Queen's Creek, north of Williamsburg. Oct. 8, 1921. 4550.

Solidago sempervirens L. Salt marshes of Queen's Creek, and along beach at Newport News. Sept., 1921. 4387; 4507.

Solidago suaveolens Schoepf. Sandy clearing on edge of marsh, Queen's Creek, and in dry pine woods, around Williamsburg. Aug. and Sept., 1920, 1921. 4078; 4239; 3068.

Solidago tenuifolia Pursh. Sandy roadsides, west of Williamsburg. Oct. 19, 1920. 3182.

Sonchus asper (L.) Hill. Fields and waste land, Williamsburg. Flowering at end of April, 1921.

Taraxicum officinale Weber. Fields and waste land, Williamsburg.

Tetragonotheca helianthoides L. Dry shaded hillside, near Williamsburg. June 30, 1921.

Verbesina occidentalis (L.) Walt. Edge of dry woods and in flood-plains, James City Co. Aug., 1921. 4339.

Verbesina virginica L. Rich shaded slopes, around Williamsburg. Aug. and Sept. 3058; 4328.

Vernonia noveboracensis Willd. Sandy soil near swamps, York and Henrico counties. Aug., 1921. 4180; 4262.

? Vernonia tomentosa (Walt.) Ell. Edge of tidal marsh, Queen's Creek, north of Williamsburg. Aug. 22, 1921. 4299.

Xanthium americanum Walt. Weed in cultivated fields, Williamsburg. Oct., 1920. 3231.

Xanthium chinensis Mill. Cultivated field, near Williamsburg. Nov. 5, 1920. 3253.

University of Michigan

SELECT BIBLIOGRAPHY OF VIRGINIA FLORA

(The arrangement is chronological)

1688. Banister, John. E catalogo huc transmisso anno 1680 quem composuit . . . Johannes Banister plantarum a seipso in Virginia observatarum. In Ray, Historia plantarum, 2: 1928–1928 bis. Londini, 1688.

1693. The Extracts of Four Letters from Mr. John Banister to Dr. Lister. Phil. Trans. Roy. Soc. Lond., 17 (March, 1693): 667–672.

1739. Gronovius, Johannes Fredericus. Flora virginica, exhibens plantas quas v. c. Johannes Clayton in Virginia observavit atque collegit. Pars prima. Lugduni Batavorum, apud C. Haak, 1739. Pages 3–128, 3 Pls.

1743. —— Pars II, pp. 129–206. Lugduni Batavorum, apud C. Haak, 1743 (paged continuously with Vol. I, which was also re-issued in 1743).

1748. Mitchell, John. Dissertatio brevis de principiis botanicorum et zoölogorum deque novo stabiliendo naturae rerum congruo, cum appendice aliquot generum plantarum recens conditorium. Ad virum celeberrimum Petrum Collinsonum . . . ex Virginia transmissa et hujus favore cum D. D. Christ. Jacob. Trew communicata. Acad. Caes. Nat. Curios., Acta Phys. Med., VIII. Appendix, pp. 187–224.

—— Norimbergae, impensis W. Schwartzkopfii, 1769. 46 pages, 1 Pl.

1799. Latrobe, B. H. Memoir on the Sand Hills of Cape Henry, in Virginia. Trans. Am. Phil. Soc., IV. 439–443.

1806. Barton, Benjamin Smith. Some Account of Mr. John Banister, the Naturalist. Phila. Med. and Phys. Journ., 2 (Part II): 134–139.

1814. Pursh, Frederick. Flora Americae Septentrionalis. 2 vols., London.

1837. Croom, H. B. Sarracenia flava Reported from Southampton Co., Virginia. Ann. Lyc. N. Y., 4: 103.

1842. Gray, Asa. Notes of a Botanical Expedition to the Mountains of North Carolina, etc. Am. Journ. Sci. and Arts, 42: 1–49.

1852. Lesquereux, Leo. Torfbildung im grossen Dismal Swamp. Zeitschr. der deutsche geolog. Gesellsch., 4: 695–697.

1873. Chickering, J. W. The Flora of the Dismal Swamp. Am. Nat., 7: 521–524.

Curtiss, A. H. Catalogue of the Phanerogams and Vascular Cryptogamous Plants of Canada and the Northeastern Portions of the United States including Virginia and Kentucky. Liberty, Va.

1875. Leggett, William Henry. Plants collected near Mobjack Bay, Va. Bull. Torr. Club, 6: 48–49.

1877. Chickering, J. W. A Botanical Trip in Virginia. Field and For., 3: 1–4.

Ward, Lester Frank. Timber Trees of the Dismal Swamp. Field and For., 3: 29–31.

—— Glimpses of the Cosmos, II. 141. N. Y., 1913.

1881. —— Guide to the Flora of Washington, D. C., and Vicinity (with map). Bull. U. S. Nat. Mus., 26: 1–264.

1884. Ridgeway, Robert. Additional Notes on the Native Trees of the Lower Wabash Valley. Proc. U. S. Nat. Mus., 17: 409–442, Pls. 10–15. (*Includes twenty-eight species of trees from near Falls Church, Virginia.*)

Shriver, Howard. Catalogue of Plants in Herbarium of Howard Shriver, Wytheville, Wythe Co., Virginia. 31 pages. Printed by Spangler & Davis, Philadelphia.

1886. Ward, L. F. Notes on the Flora of Eastern Virginia. Bot. Gaz., 11: 32–38.

1889. Michaux, André. Portions of the Journal of André Michaux, Botanist, Written during his Travels in the United States and Canada, 1785–1796 (edited by S. P. Sargent). Proc. Am. Phil. Soc., 26: 1–145.

1890. Hollick, Arthur. On the Autumn Flora of Southeastern Virginia. Mem. Torr. Club, 2: 54–56.

Shaler, Nathaniel S. General Account of the Freshwater Morasses of the United States, with a Description of the Dismal Swamp Region of Virginia and North Carolina (with illustrations and map). Ann. Report U. S. Geol. Surv., 10: 255–339.

Vail, A. M. Notes on the Spring Flora of Southwestern Virginia. Mem. Torr. Club, 2: 27–53.

1892. —— Notes on the Flora of Smythe County, Virginia. I–V. Gard. and For., 5: 364; 375–376; 388–389; 424; 437–438.

1893. Small, J. K., and Vail, A. M. Report of the Botanical Exploration of Southwestern Virginia during the Season of 1892. Mem. Torr. Club, 4: 93–201.

1894. Heller, Amos Arthur. Plants from Virginia New to Gray's Manual Range, with Notes on Other Species. Bull. Torr. Club, 21: 21–27.

1895. Small, J. K. Shrubs and Trees of the Southern States. Bull. Torr. Club, 21· 15–27, 300–307; 22· 43–48, 365–369; 24: 169–178, 228–236, 331–339, 487–496. 1895–1897.

1896. Pollard, C. L. Notes on a Trip to the Dismal Swamp. Gard. and For., 9· 462–463.

Greene, E. L. Critical Notes on Certain Violets. Pittonia, 3: 33–35.

1899. Krauss, Ernst Hans Ludvig. Nova Synopsis Ruborum Germaniae et Virginiae. Pars I. Monographische Beitrage zur Kenntniss der Gattung Rubus ins besondere der Brombeeren Deutschlands und Virginien, I Teil. Saarlouis, Selbstverlag, 1899.

Pollard, Charles L. The Ostrich Fern in Virginia. Fern Bull., 7: 71.

1901. Kearney, Thomas Henry. Report on the Botanical Survey of the Dismal Swamp Region. Contrib. U. S. Nat. Herb., 5: 321–550 (with illustrations, Pls. lxv–lxxvii, 2 folding maps.)

1903. Harper, Roland McMillan. Some Plants of Southeastern Virginia and Central North Carolina. Torreya, 3: 120–124.

Harshberger, John William. The Forests of the Natural Bridge, Virginia. Forest Leaves, 2: 42–44.

1906. Tidestrom, Ivar. Elysium marianum; Ferns and Fern Allies. 56 pages, 7 Pls. Privately printed, Washington, D. C. (*This work treats of ferns of Maryland and Virginia.*)

—— second edition, Washington, D. C., 1907–1908. 95 pages, 12 Pls. Part II, pp. 65–95, on "Evergreens" was published in 1908.

1909. Barnhart, J. H. Some American Botanists of Former Days. Torreya, 9: 241–243. (*Reference to Clayton's explorations.*)

1910. Hitchcock, Albert Spear, and Chase, Agnes. The North American Species of Panicum. Contrib. U. S. Nat. Herb., 15: 1–396, (with 370 figures).

1911. Coville, Frederick Vernon. The Recent Excursion into the Dismal Swamp. Science, N. S., 33: 871–872. June 2, 1911.

Tidestrom, Ivar. Populus virginiana Fouger. Rhodora, 13: 195–199. 1 figure.

Steele, Edward Strieby. New Plants from Eastern United States. Contrib. U. S. Nat. Herb., 13: 359–374.

1912. Clark, William B., and Miller, Benjamin L. The Physiography and Geology of the Coastal Plain Province of Virginia. Va. Geol. Surv. Bull., 4: 1–274 (with illustrations, Pls. i–xviii, folding map).

Hollick, Charles Arthur. Some Features of the Dismal Swamp of Virginia. Journ. N. Y. Bot. Gard., 13: 53–56 (with illustrations).

1913. Tidestrom, Ivar. Notes on the Flora of Maryland and Virginia. I. Rhodora, 15: 101–106.

1915. Sargent, C. S. Three of Clayton's Oaks in the British Museum. Rhodora, 17: 39–40.

Ashe, W. W. Monograph on the Loblolly or North Carolina Pine. N. Ca. Geol. Surv. Bull., 24: 1–169 (27 Pls.)

1916. Murrill, William A. Exploration of Apple Orchard Mountain, Virginia. Journ. N. Y. Bot. Gard., 17: 218–221. Dec., 1916.

—— A New Paradise for Botanists [Apple Orchard Mt.]. Torreya, 16: 251–257 (with illustrations).

Pennell, Francis W. Notes on Plants of the Southern United States. II. Bull. Torr. Club, 43: 407–421.

1918. Blake, S. F. Notes on the Clayton Herbarium. Rhodora, 20: 21–28, 48–54, 65–73.

Giles, Albert W. The Country about Camp Lee, Virginia. Va. Geol. Surv. Bull., 16: 1–40 (with illustrations, Pls. i–xviii, folding map).

Carrier, Lyman. Dr. John Mitchell, Naturalist, Cartographer and Historian. Ann. Rept. Am. Hist. Assn., 1: 201–219. 1918.

McAtee, Waldo Lee. Note on the Plants of Wallop's Island (Accomac Co.), Virginia. Torreya, 18: 70–71.

Ricker, P. L. A Sketch of Botanical Activity in the District of Columbia, II. Bibliography. Journ. Wash. Acad. Sci., 8: 516–521.

1919. Ewing, Clare O., and Stanford, Ernest E. Botanicals of the Blue Ridge. Journ. Amer. Pharm. Assn., 8: 16–26 (with illustrations).

Hitchcock, A. S., and Standley, Paul C. Flora of the District of Columbia and Vicinity. Contr. U. S. Nat. Herb., 21: 1–329. Pls. i–xlii.

Murrill, W. A. The Natural History of Staunton, Virginia. 216 pages, 4 Pls. W. A. Murrill, New York City, 1919.

1920. Young, J. P. Some Virginia Ferns. Am. Fern Journ., 10: 27 ff.

1921. Grimes, Earl Jerome. A New Station for Pogonia affinis. Rhodora, 23: 195–197.

1922. Fernald, M. L., and Weatherby, C. A. Varieties of Geum canadense. Rhodora, 24: 47–50.

Grimes, E. J. Some Plants of the Virginia Coastal Plain. Rhodora, 24: 148–152.

1923. Blake, S. F. Two Mediterranean Clovers New to the United States. Science, 57: 209.

Weatherby, C. A. Critical Plants of Atlantic North America. Rhodora, 25: 17–23.

AN ANNOTATED LIST OF THE HIGHER PLANTS OF THE REGION OF DOUGLAS LAKE, MICHIGAN *

F. C. GATES
Kansas State Agricultural College
AND
J. H. EHLERS
University of Michigan

Introduction

This list of species of ferns and seed-plants is based upon the work at the University of Michigan Biological Station, situated on Douglas Lake, Cheboygan County, Michigan. The list was started by F. M. Loew in 1909 and 1910, when somewhat fewer than one hundred and fifty species were listed. In 1911, during a survey of the region for the Michigan Biological and Geological Survey, F. C. Gates brought the list up to about five hundred and thirty species. It was published in the *Fourteenth Report of the Michigan Academy of Science*. In 1912, while making a herbarium of the region for the Biological Station, Miss Maude Robertson further extended the recorded flora, bringing it up to six hundred and fifty species. From this time until 1915 the list was in charge of Dr. H. A. Gleason. In 1915 it reverted to F. C. Gates. Since 1916 responsibility for revisions and extensions has been shared by the authors of this paper, which will take the place, in a much more detailed form, of the list of species that would otherwise have accompanied a forthcoming paper on the vegetation of the Douglas Lake region by F. C. Gates.

* Contribution No. 221 from the Botanical Laboratory of the Kansas State Agricultural College and Paper No. 203 from the Department of Botany of the University of Michigan.

The Station herbarium, started in 1912 and continued to date, has been in charge of J. H. Ehlers since 1916. It is the basis of the flora of the region. The present list, however, takes account of several sources of information that have been accessible to the authors, including all papers that have dealt exclusively or in part with the systematic botany of the region. Attention should be called here to the detailed representation of the flora of Emmet County in the private herbarium of C. W. Fallass of Petoskey, Michigan.

In addition to the persons mentioned above, others who have made contributions to the Douglas Lake flora are L. H. Barnum, R. M. Holman, G. E. Nichols, W. E. Praeger, G. A. Spots, G. L. Linker, Earl E. Lambert, Mrs. Charles C. Deam, Dorothy J. Cashen, Ella M. Clark and C. O. Erlanson.

The genus Carex, by far the largest genus of vascular plants in the region, has been thoroughly studied by Mrs. Lois Smith Ehlers. To her the authors are indebted for careful work in the thorough presentation of the Carex-flora.

The basis of the present list is in general Britton and Brown's *Illustrated Flora of the Northern States and Canada*, second edition, although we are not in sympathy with the splitting of genera that is responsible for much of the unfamiliar nomenclature in this work. Wherever different, the names as given in Gray's *Manual*, seventh edition, are cited. For the grasses, Hitchcock's *Genera of Grasses* (*Bulletin No. 772, U. S. Dept. of Agr.*) is used, and in certain other cases, for instance, in the genus Carex, later work than either of the two manuals cited above is utilized. Where varieties are recognized in Gray's *Manual*, indication of that fact is made in this list. The names, arrangement and numbers of families are those of the system developed by Bessey. The annotations, while primarily made by Gates in connection with ecological work, also reflect throughout the list the experience of both authors, and further, in the case of the ferns, that of G. E. Nichols. In the case of the genus Carex especial acknowledgment has been made of the observations of Mrs. L. S. Ehlers.

Of the various collections that have been made in the region,

the more extensive have been deposited in the Herbarium of the University of Michigan, the Herbarium of Yale University and the Gray Herbarium, by J. H. Ehlers; the herbaria of Carthage College, Brooklyn Botanic Garden, University of Illinois and Kansas State Agricultural College, by F. C. Gates; and the Herbarium of the University of Kentucky, by F. T. McFarland.

STATISTICS OF THE FLORA

The flora is prevailingly of a northern type. A statistical summary showing the relative representation of the plant families is shown in the accompanying table.

TABLE OF SPECIES

Families	Douglas Lake Region Proper	Emmet County	Cheboygan County	Total in This List
Phylum 9. PTERIDOPHYTA				
1. Ophioglossaceae	8	2	8	8
3. Isoetaceae	2	0	2	2
4. Osmundaceae	3	3	3	3
11. Polypodiaceae	17	12	17	17
Phylum 10. CALAMOPHYTA				
2. Equisetaceae	10	10	10	10
Phylum 11. LEPIDOPHYTA				
1. Lycopodiaceae	5	4	5	5
3. Selaginellaceae	1	2	2	3
Phylum 13. STROBILOPHYTA				
3, 5, 6. Pinaceae	10	11	10	11
9. Taxaceae	1	1	1	1

TABLE OF SPECIES — *Continued*

Families	Douglas Lake Region Proper	Emmet County	Cheboygan County	Total in This List
Phylum 14. ANTHOPHYTA				
1. Alismataceae	4	3	4	5
4. Scheuchzeriaceae	2	2	2	3
5. Typhaceae	1	1	1	1
6. Sparganiaceae	6	6	6	8
9. Potamogetonaceae	14	10	14	14
10. Liliaceae	20	19	18	22
18. Juncaceae	11	12	10	13
19. Eriocaulonaceae	1	0	1	1
22. Naiadaceae	1	0	1	1
24. Araceae	4	2	4	4
25. Lemnaceae	2	1	2	2
30. Cyperaceae	102	86	102	112
(Carex)	(77)	(65)	(76)	(85)
31. Poaceae	78	75	78	91
32. Hydrocharitaceae	3	4	3	4
35. Iridaceae	1	3	1	3
45. Orchidaceae	32	28	33	34
60. Ranunculaceae	24	21	24	25
62. Berberidaceae	2	1	2	2
67. Ceratophyllaceae	1	0	1	1
71. Malvaceae	4	3	4	4
76. Tiliaceae	1	1	1	1
79. Ulmaceae	1	1	1	1
81. Urticaceae	3	3	3	5
82. Sarraceniaceae	1	1	1	1
84. Geraniaceae	2	1	2	2
85. Oxalidaceae	1	1	1	1
87. Balsaminaceae	2	2	2	2
89. Linaceae	1	1	1	1
101. Polygalaceae	1	1	2	2
104. Euphorbiaceae	7	7	4	8
105. Callitrichaceae	1	1	0	1
107. Cistaceae	1	1	1	1
108. Hypericaceae	6	4	6	8
118. Violaceae	11	10	11	11
126. Papaveraceae	3	3	1	3
128. Nymphaeaceae	4	3	4	4
132. Brassicaceae	32	28	30	36

TABLE OF SPECIES — *Continued*

Families	Douglas Lake Region Proper	Emmet County	Cheboygan County	Total in This List
Phylum 14. ANTHOPHYTA — *Continued*				
133 Caryophyllaceae	17	15	16	19
135. Portulacaceae.....	2	3	2	3
136. Aizoaceae.....	0	1	1	1
140. Salicaceae.....	20	16	21	21
145. Amaranthaceae.....	3	4	3	4
146. Chenopodiaceae.....	5	6	5	6
147. Polygonaceae.....	21	20	21	23
151. Primulaceae.....	4	4	4	5
152. Plantaginaceae.....	3	3	3	3
157. Ericaceae.....	16	17	16	17
160. Pyrolaceae.....	8	8	8	8
166. Polemoniaceae.....	1	0	1	1
167. Convolvulaceae.....	4	3	4	4
168. Hydrophyllaceae.....	1	1	0	1
169. Boraginaceae.....	11	10	10	12
171. Solanaceae.....	7	5	7	7
172. Oleaceae.....	4	4	4	4
175. Gentianaceae.....	4	5	4	6
176. Apocynaceae.....	3	2	4	4
177. Asclepiadaceae.....	3	2	4	4
178. Scrophulariaceae.....	15	17	14	17
179. Bignoniaceae.....	1	1	0	1
182. Orobanchaceae.....	2	1	2	2
185. Lentibulariaceae.....	4	5	4	5
189. Phrymaceae.....	1	0	1	1
190. Verbenaceae.....	3	2	3	4
191. Lamiaceae.....	24	19	24	25
192. Rosaceae.....	31	29	27	33
193. Malaceae.....	10	7	10	10
194. Prunaceae.....	5	4	5	5
199. Fabaceae	16	13	15	19
200. Saxifragaceae.....	3	4	2	5
202. Grossulariaccae.....	9	8	7	10
203. Crassulaceae.....	2	2	1	2
204. Droseraceae.....	2	4	2	4
211. Hamamelidaceae	1	1	1	1
215. Lythraceae.....	1	1	1	1
223. Oenotheraceae.....	11	10	11	12

TABLE OF SPECIES — *Concluded*

Families	Douglas Lake Region Proper	Emmet County	Cheboygan County	Total in This List
Phylum 14. ANTHOPHYTA — *Concluded*				
224. Halorrhagidaceae	3	4	4	4
232. Cucurbitaceae	2	1	2	2
236. Rhamnaceae	1	1	3	3
237. Vitaceae	2	2	2	2
238. Celastraceae	2	0	2	2
240. Aquifoliaceae	2	2	2	2
250. Thymelaeaceae	1	1	1	1
252. Elaeagnaceae	1	1	1	1
254. Santalaceae	2	2	2	2
258. Loranthaceae	1	1	1	1
262. Aceraceae	6	6	6	6
268. Anacardiaceae	3	3	3	3
269. Juglandaceae	2	2	2	2
270. Betulaceae	7	7	7	7
271. Fagaceae	4	5	5	5
272. Myricaceae	2	1	2	2
275. Araliaceae	3	3	3	3
276. Apiaceae	14	12	12	15
277. Cornaceae	6	7	7	7
278. Rubiaceae	10	7	10	11
279. Caprifoliaceae	14	14	13	14
281. Valerianaceae	1	1	1	2
283. Campanulaceae	8	6	10	10
287. Helianthaceae	15	11	13	17
288. Ambrosiaceae	3	5	3	5
289. Heleniaceae	1	1	1	1
292. Inulaceae	9	7	9	9
293. Asteraceae	26	26	27	30
295. Eupatoriaceae	3	3	4	4
296. Anthemidaceae	12	10	9	14
297. Senecionidaceae	4	4	4	4
298. Carduaceae	5	6	6	7
300. Lactucaceae	20	15	20	20
(287–300: "Compositae")	(98)	(88)	(96)	(111)

SUMMARY BY PHYLA

Families	Douglas Lake Region Proper	Emmet County	Cheboygan County	Total in This County
9. Pteridophyta	30	17	30	30
10. Calamophyta	10	10	10	10
11. Lepidophyta	6	6	7	8
13. Strobilophyta	11	12	11	12
14. Anthophyta	864	780	847	966
Monocotyledoneae	(282)	(252)	(280)	(318)
Dicotyledoneae-Axiflorae	(296)	(268)	(288)	(328)
Dicotyledoneae-Calyciflorae	(286)	(260)	(279)	(320)
Totals	921	825	905	1026

LIST OF SPECIES

In the list attention has been called definitely to the occurrence of the plants in Emmet and Cheboygan counties by the capital letter "E" or "C," or by both at the end of the first line for each species. Most of the records, however, pertain to Cheboygan County. In cases where a species has not been found by the authors in the comparatively small part of Emmet County included in the Douglas Lake region, but is recorded by Fallass and Swift in an unpublished list of Emmet County plants, an asterisk follows the "E" (E*).

Phylum 9. PTERIDOPHYTA (THE FERNS)

1. OPHIOGLOSSACEAE (Adder's Tongue Family)

OPHIOGLOSSUM VULGATUM L. Adder's Tongue. C.

In a clearing in Reese's Bog in 1915, and in an overgrown clearing northwest of Burt Lake in 1922.

Botrychium simplex E. Hitchcock. C.
Infrequent in beech-maple woods along Burt Lake and in the aspens in North Fishtail Bay.

Botrychium onondagense Underw. C.
Found once in the North Fishtail Bay region.

Botrychium neglectum Wood. (*Botrychium ramosum* (Roth) Aschers.) C.
Rare in beech-maple woods.

Botrychium matricariae (Schrank) Spreng. (*B. ternatum rutaefolium* (A. Br.) D.C. Eaton) C.
In a beech-maple woods. Quick, 1911.

Botrychium silaifolium Presl. (*B. ternatum intermedium* D.C. Eaton.) E.* C.
Occasional in thickets bordering boggy areas, East Point, etc.

Botrychium lanceolatum (S. G. Gmel) Angs. (*B. lanceolatum angustisegmentum* Pease & Moore.) C.
In the Burt Lake beech-maple forest.

Botrychium virginianum (L.) Sw. E. C.
Common in both beech-maple woods and cedar bogs. Cecil.

3. Isoetaceae (Quillwort Family)

Isoetes macrospora Durieu. C.
In Vincent Lake.

Isoetes Braunii Durieu (*I. echinospora Braunii* (Dur.) Engelm.) C.
A few plants off Hook Point in Douglas Lake.

4. Osmundaceae (Royal Fern Family)

Osmunda regalis L. Royal Fern. E. C.
In boggy or wet ground in various shrub associations and in openings in tree associations — not critical in association. Cecil.

Osmunda cinnamomea L. Cinnamon Fern. E. C.
Locally in cedar bogs and boggy places in beech-maple forests and various shrub associations, especially in the Salix-Cornus thickets. Cecil.

OSMUNDA CLAYTONIANA L. E.* C.
Local in beech-maple woods or occasionally in bogs.

11. POLYPODIACEAE (Fern Family)

ONOCLEA SENSIBILIS L. Sensitive Fern E. C.
In wet ground associations; common. Cecil.

MATTEUCCIA STRUTHIOPTERIS (L.) Todaro. (*Onoclea Struthiopteris* (L.) Hoffm. Ostrich Fern. E. C.
Locally abundant in wet places in the better soils, north and west of Douglas Lake. Cecil.

FILIX BULBIFERA (L.) Underw. (*Cystopteris bulbifera* (L.) Bernh.) E. C.
Locally abundant in soggy ground, in ravines, in beech-maple forests, and along streams in woods.

FILIX FRAGILIS (L.) Underw. (*Cystopteris fragilis* (L.) Bernh.) C.
Local in beech-maple forests; rare.

DRYOPTERIS NOVEBORACENSIS (L.) A. Gray. (*Aspidium noveboracense* (L.) Sw.) C.
Rare in cedar bogs (F. Smith).

DRYOPTERIS THELYPTERIS (L.) A. Gray. (*Aspidium Thelypteris* (L.) Sw.) Marsh Shield Fern. E. C.
In boggy ground associations, but characteristic and frequently representative of the Iris association. Very common. Cecil.

DRYOPTERIS CRISTATA (L.) A. Gray. (*Aspidium cristatum* (L.) Sw.) E. C.
In wet woods; frequent.

DRYOPTERIS GOLDIANA (Hook.) A. Gray. (*Aspidium Goldianum* Hook.) C.
In beech-maple woods on the west side of Burt Lake; rather rare.

DRYOPTERIS SPINULOSA (Muell.) Kuntze. (*Aspidium spinulosm* (O. F. Müller) Sw.) Shield Fern. E. C.
Fairly common in the beech-maple association and in cedar bogs.

DRYOPTERIS INTERMEDIA (Muhl.) Gray. (*Aspidium spinulosum*

intermedium (Muhl.) D.C. Eaton.) C.
Rather common, especially in the beech-maple forests.

Dryopteris Phegopteris (L.) C. Chr. (*Phegopteris polypodioides* Fée.) Beech Fern. C.
In the beech-maple forest, but rare. North Fishtail and Burt Lake hardwoods in 1914 (Frank Smith); Reese's in 1918 (Praeger).

Dryopteris Dryopteris (L.) Britton. (*Phegopteris Dryopteris* (L.) Fée.) Oak Fern. E. C.
Locally abundant in cedar bogs and the beech-maple forest. Cecil.

Athyrium thelypteroides (Michx.) Desv. (*Asplenium acrostichoides* Sw.) E.* C.
A plant found in the Mud Lake beech-maple forest, in 1921 (E. Walker).

Athyrium filix-foemina (L.) Roth. (*Asplenium filix-femina* (L.) Bernh.) Lady Fern. E. C.
Common in wet or moist woods. Cecil.

Adiantum pedatum L. Maiden-hair Fern. E. C.
Locally abundant in the beech-maple woods west of Pellston and along the west shore of Burt Lake, often maintaining itself in the open for several years after the woods are cut. N. Fishtail and Mud Lake areas.

Pteridium aquilinum (L.) Kuhn. (*Pteris aquilina* L.) Bracken Fern. E. C.
A low dominant; very abundant in the aspen association; present in several others. Cecil.

Polypodium vulgare L. Polypody. C.
Locally abundant on an eroding bluff west of Grapevine Point. The only station.

Phylum 10. CALAMOPHYTA

2. Equisetaceae (Horsetail Family)

Equisetum arvense L. Horsetail. E. C.
Occasional on dunes along Douglas Lake and along roads, in moist sandy soil. Becoming more common. Cecil.

EQUISETUM SYLVATICUM L. Wood Horsetail. E. C.
Fairly common in cedar bogs and in thickets following the burning of such bogs.

EQUISETUM PALUSTRE L. Marsh Horsetail E.* C.
Occasional on wet shores of Douglas and Burt lakes.

EQUISETUM LITTORALE Kühlewein. Shore Horsetail. E. C.
In the gorge and in Reese's Bog along Burt Lake.

EQUISETUM FLUVIATILE L. Swamp Horsetail. E. C.
Locally very abundant in water of lakes, streams, ditches, etc. Cecil.

EQUISETUM ROBUSTUM A. Br. (*E. hyemale robustum* (A. Br.) A. A. Eaton) Stout Scouring Rush. E. C.
Locally abundant, as in the gorge.

EQUISETUM HYEMALE L. Common Scouring Rush. E. C.
In ravines in the beech-maple forest; occasional.

EQUISETUM HYEMALE var. INTERMEDIUM A. A. Eaton. C.
Collected in 1911 (Margaretta Packer).

EQUISETUM LAEVIGATUM A. Br. Smooth Scouring Rush. E.* C.
Occasional in wet ground near Maple River, Pine Point.

EQUISETUM VARIEGATUM Schleich. E. C.
Frequent to locally abundant; Pine Point, Sedge Point. Var. *Nelsoni* A. A. Eaton is occasional in Big Stone Bay, Ingleside and in a marsh in the jack pine plains. Var. *Jesupi* A. A. Eaton found at Fontinalis Run, 1923 (C. O. Erlanson).

EQUISETUM SCIRPOIDES Michx. E. C.
Frequent in cedar bogs and along sandy, wooded bluffs.

Phylum 11. LEPIDOPHYTA

1. LYCOPODIACEAE (Club-Moss Family)

LYCOPODIUM LUCIDULUM Michx. E. C.
Fairly common in the beech-maple forest.

LYCOPODIUM OBSCURUM L. (*L. obscurum* var. *dendroideum* (Michx.) D. C. Eaton.) Ground Pine. E. C.
Frequent in the beech-maple forest and in the gorge. Cecil.

LYCOPODIUM ANNOTINUM L. E. C.
Occasional in the beech-maple forest and in cedar bogs. Big Stone Bay.

LYCOPODIUM CLAVATUM L. E. C.
Frequent in wooded areas, cedar bogs and the aspens, becoming more common. Big Stone Bay.

LYCOPODIUM TRISTACHYUM Pursh. C.
Locally abundant in pine land aspens; spreading.

3. SELAGINELLACEAE (Selaginella Family)

SELAGINELLA RUPESTRIS (L.) Spring. C.
Jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

SELAGINELLA SELAGINOIDES (L.) Link. E.
Low ground on Temperance Point and in Cecil Bay.

SELAGINELLA APUS (L.) Spring. E. C.
Low ground near Cecil, Temperance Point and near the base of a bluff on Colonial Point.

Phylum 13. STROBILOPHYTA (Conifers)

3, 5, 6. PINACEAE (including ABIETACEAE, THUYOPSIDACEAE and JUNIPERACEAE of Bessey's list.)

PINUS STROBUS L. White Pine. E. C.
Formerly extensively dominating an association; now a few trees remain as relicts, apparently in several associations. The abundant seedlings and small trees indicate that it may again take possession of the sandy types of upland soil. Occasional also in the beech-maple forest and less frequently in the cedar bogs. A fine tree in original stands, none of which are now present. Cecil.

PINUS RESINOSA Ait. Red Pine, Norway Pine. E. C.
Formerly a dominant tree in the pine association, now represented in the aspens and other associations by a few old trees and in places by many seedlings and young trees. Becoming rapidly more abundant each year. Cecil.

PINUS BANKSIANA Lamb. Jack Pine. E. C.
A very few old trees in the aspens and seedlings invading the aspens in the area east of Pellston. The characteristic tree of the barrens south of Burt Lake. Cecil.

LARIX LARICINA (Du Roi) Koch. Tamarack. Larch. E. C.
A dominant tree in the Larix association, normally in bogs, but also on the upland near Lake Michigan and a little west of Lancaster Lake. Abundant as a relict in cedar bogs. The depredations of the saw-fly larvae have materially aided in suppressing tamarack bogs in favor of spruce or cedar bogs in a much shorter time than normal. Cecil.

PICEA CANADENSIS (Mill.) B. S. P. White Spruce. E. C.
A dominant tree in the Picea-Abies association, but also sparingly in cedar bogs. Cecil.

PICEA MARIANA (Mill.) B. S. P. Black Spruce. E. C.
An abundant tree in tamarack and cedar bogs. Cecil.
A xerophytic modification occurring in the Chamaedaphne association at Bryant's and the Mud Lake bogs often has witches' brooms, due to the dwarf mistletoe. Cecil.

TSUGA CANADENSIS (L.) Carr. Hemlock. E. C.
A dominant tree in the beech-maple forest, either freely interspersed among the other trees or occasionally assembled in hemlock "knolls" or "islands," these especially near streams or lakes. Invading the aspens near Douglas Lake just east from Bryant's. Some are very large trees, most of which are about 400 to 450 years of age.

ABIES BALSAMEA (L.) Mill. Balsam Fir. E. C.
A dominant tree in the Picea-Abies association; common in cedar bogs and found sparingly in the beech-maple forest. Cecil.

THUJA OCCIDENTALIS L. White Cedar, Arbor Vitae. E. C.
The dominant tree in cedar bogs, a ready invader of genetically lower, wet-ground associations, and to a moderate degree a relict in genetically higher associations, such as the beech-maple forest near lakes or streams. Very common, being one of the most abundant trees in the region.

At Cecil it frequently grows on dunes, following the heath or starting in a beach pool and keeping pace with a slow accumulation of sand.

JUNIPERUS SIBIRICA Burgsd. (*J. communis depressa* Pursh.) Low Juniper. E. C.
Rare in the immediate vicinity of Douglas Lake; a station on the east shore and along the road to Pellston, but abundant in the Cecil and Big Stone Bay regions.

JUNIPERUS HORIZONTALIS Moench. Creeping Juniper. E.
Common on dunes in the Big Stone Bay region.

9. TAXACEAE (Yew Family)

TAXUS CANADENSIS Marsh. Yew, Ground Hemlock. E. C.
Fairly abundant in cedar bogs and hemlock islands, but also in the beech-maple forest especially near lakes. Gorge, Fairy Island. Cecil.

Phylum 14. ANTHOPHYTA (Flowering plants)

1. ALISMATACEAE (Water Plantain Family)

ALISMA SUBCORDATUM Raf. (*A. plantago-aquatica* L.) Water Plantain. C.
A few plants found in a marsh between Vincent and Munro lakes in 1918.

SAGITTARIA CUNEATA Sheldon. (A form of *S. arifolia* Nutt.) C.
Occasional; Crooked River, Fontinalis Run, Lancaster Lake.

SAGITTARIA LATIFOLIA Willd. Arrow-Leaf. E. C.
Alternating with Menyanthes in an association around bog lakes and beach pools. Extending out into the lakes in sheltered places. Abundant at the mouth of Maple River. Forma *gracilis* (Pursh) Robinson is found in Crooked River.

SAGITTARIA CRISTATA Engelm. (Apparently a form of *S. graminea* Michx.) E.
A small patch in Crooked River near Alanson.

SAGITTARIA GRAMINEA Michx. E. C.
Occasional in pools or streams, Sedge Point, Bessey Creek and Crooked River.

4. SCHEUCHZERIACEAE (Arrow-Grass Family)

TRIGLOCHIN PALUSTRIS L. Marsh Arrow-Grass. E.
Occasional in the marshy margins of boggy areas at Cecil.

TRIGLOCHIN MARITIMA L. Arrow-Grass. E. C.
A rare secondary species in the *Carex lasiocarpa* association at Mud Lake — the only station in the immediate area. Moderately frequent in marshy and boggy areas at Cecil, and on wet sandy shores of Temperance Point in Big Stone and Sturgeon bays.

SCHEUCHZERIA PALUSTRIS L. C.
Occasional in Sphagnum and Chamaedaphne in the Mud Lake bog and rare in Smith's Bog.

5. TYPHACEAE. (Cattail Family)

TYPHA LATIFOLIA L. Cattail. E. C.
In marshes, at the edges of bogs or roads and in ditches. Becoming more abundant each year. Forms with the spikes separated as in *Typha angustifolia* are occasionally found. Cecil.

6. SPARGANIACEAE (Bur-Reed Family)

SPARGANIUM EURYCARPUM Engelm. Bur-Reed. E.* C.
In the *Scirpus validus* association at Sedge Point and at the mouth of Bessey Creek; uncommon.

SPARGANIUM AMERICANUM Nutt. C.
Bessey Creek; rare.

SPARGANIUM LUCIDUM Fernald and Eames. E.
In a ditch from West Maple River, west of Pellston.

SPARGANIUM SIMPLEX Huds. C.
In the Menyanthes-Sagittaria association in Bessey Creek and at Fontinalis Run.

SPARGANIUM DIVERSIFOLIUM Graebner. E. C.
Occasional in streams.

SPARGANIUM ACAULE (Beeby) Rydb. (*S. diversifolium* var. *acaule* (Beeby) Fernald & Eames) E.
Crooked River; rare.

SPARGANIUM ANGUSTIFOLIUM Michx. E.* C.
In a pool at Hook Point; rare.

SPARGANIUM MINIMUM Fries. E.* C.
In the Eleocharis association at Smith's Bog; rare.

9. POTAMOGETONACEAE (Pondweed Family)

POTAMOGETON NATANS L. Pondweed. E. C.
A dominant species in the Potamogeton association in most of the lakes and streams of the region. Cecil.

POTAMOGETON AMPLIFOLIUS Tuckerm. C.
Sedge pool.

POTAMOGETON ALPINUS Balbis. E. C.
Occasional, especially in lakes. In a slow stream in Big Stone Bay.

POTAMOGETON HETEROPHYLLUS Schreb. E. C.
Common. Two forms of this species, f. *myriophyllus* (Robbins.) Morong and f. *maximus* Morong, were collected in Douglas Lake in 1911 (Margaretta Packer and Ada K. Dietz).

POTAMOGETON LUCENS L. E. C.
A dominant species in the Potamogeton association in the lakes and larger streams of the region. Common.

POTAMOGETON PRAELONGUS Wulf. White-stemmed Pondweed. E.* C.
A dominant species in the Potamogeton association in deep water of Douglas Lake. From a small patch off Bryant's in 1911, it has developed considerably and spread to additional stations. Specimens 7 to 19 feet in length have been obtained.

POTAMOGETON PERFOLIATUS L. Clasping-leaved Pondweed. (including *P. Richardsonii* (Benn.) Rydb.) E.* C.

A dominant species in the Potamogeton association. Common.

POTAMOGETON COMPRESSUS L. (*P. zosterifolius* Schum.) E. C.
A dominant species in the Potamogeton association. Common.

POTAMOGETON FOLIOSUS Raf. C.
Maple River; not common.

POTAMOGETON FRIESII Ruprecht E. C.
Not infrequent in lakes and streams.

POTAMOGETON PUSILLUS L. C.
Lancaster Lake and perhaps elsewhere.

POTAMOGETON DIMORPHUS Raf. C.
Lancaster Lake.

POTAMOGETON FILIFORMIS Pers. E.* C.
Not infrequent in lakes and streams.

POTAMOGETON PECTINATUS L. E.* C.
A dominant species in the Potamogeton association, especially abundant in streams and over flats. Cecil.

10. LILIACEAE (Lily Family)

TRIANTHA GLUTINOSA (Michx.) Baker. (*Tofieldia glutinosa* (Michx.) Pers.) E.
Frequent in the marshy margins of boggy areas at Cecil, and on marshy lake shores in Big Stone and Sturgeon bays.

ANTICLEA ELEGANS (Pursh) Rydb. (*Zigadenus chloranthus* Richards.) E.
Occasional in marshes along streams and even on low dunes at Cecil and Big Stone bays. Temperance Point.

HEMEROCALLIS FULVA L. Day Lily C.
Cultivated in gardens and found at least once as an escape.

ALLIUM TRICOCCUM Ait. Wild Onion. E. C.
Occasional in beech-maple forests, especially those along Burt Lake and west of Pellston.

LILIUM PHILADELPHICUM L. E. C.
Infrequent along roads and in cedar bogs.

LILIUM UMBELLATUM Pursh. (*Lilium philadelphicum* var. *an-*

dinum (Nutt.) Ker.) Red Lily. E. C.
Locally abundant in cedar bogs and near the margins of woods in the Cecil region. Formerly more frequent.

LILIUM (intermediate between CANADENSE and SUPERBUM) E. C.
A few specimens were found in Reese's Bog in 1911 and along a road west of Cecil, but, since the clearing of the localities, they have not again been seen.

ERYTHRONIUM AMERICANUM Ker. Yellow Adder's-Tongue. E.
In the beech-maple forests west of Pellston.

ERYTHRONIUM ALBIDUM Nutt. White Adder's-Tongue. E.
In the beech-maple forests west of Pellston.

CLINTONIA BOREALIS (Ait.) Raf. E. C.
Common herb in all the tree associations, but most abundant in the cedar and beech-maple woods. Cecil.

VAGNERA RACEMOSA (L.) Morong. (*Smilicina racemosa* (L.) Desf.) E. C.
Most characteristic of beech-maple woods, but occurring in nearly all tree associations.

VAGNERA STELLATA (L.) Morong. (*Smilicina stellata* (L.) Desf.) E. C.
Common in the aspens especially on sandy ridges near lake shores. Cecil.

VAGNERA TRIFOLIA (L.) Morong. (*Smilicina trifolia* (L.) Desf.) E. C.
Frequent in Chamaedaphne and cedar bogs, especially Reese's, Bryant's and Mud Lake bogs. Cecil.

UNIFOLIUM CANADENSE (Desf). Greene. (*Maianthemum canadense* Desf.) E. C.
A very characteristic herb of beech-maple woods, although abundant also in cedar bogs and aspens and on sandy ridges along the lake.

UVULARIA GRANDIFLORA J. E. Smith. Bellwort. E. C.
A fairly common herb in beech-maple woods, especially those along Burt Lake and west of Pellston.

STREPTOPUS AMPLEXIFOLIUS (L.) DC. E. C.
A characteristic herb of cedar bogs although nowhere common in this region.

STREPTOPUS ROSEUS Michx. E. C.
Occasional in the beech-maple forest. Cecil.
Including *Streptopus longipes* Fernald, which is rather rare in beech-maple woods.

POLYGONATUM BIFLORUM (Walt.) Ell. Solomon's Seal. E. C.
Frequent in beech-maple woods and present in other tree associations. Cecil.

MEDEOLA VIRGINIANA L. Indian Cucumber-root. E. C.
Quite characteristic of beech-maple woods, but found also in cedar bogs.

TRILLIUM GRANDIFLORUM (Michx.) Salisb. Large-flowered Trillium. E. C.
Characteristic of beech-maple woods, but occurring also in cedar bogs and in the aspens. Cecil.

TRILLIUM CERNUUM L. Nodding Trillium. C.
Rare, in cedar bogs, north of Sunny Strand, Reese's Bog. and along Trout Creek.

SMILAX HISPIDA Muhl. Smilax. C.
In the beech-maple forest on Colonial Point, 1923 (Erlanson).

18. JUNCACEAE (Rush Family)

JUNCUS EFFUSUS L. Rush. E. C.
Occasional especially along roads through cedar bogs; becoming more frequent. Cecil.

JUNCUS BALTICUS Willd. (*Juncus balticus* var. *littoralis* Engelm.) E. C.
Dominating a shore association and remaining as a relict in other shore associations, sometimes on dunes, but not common in the immediate vicinity of Douglas Lake. Fairly common along Lake Michigan at Cecil Bay and around beach pools in Big Stone Bay.

JUNCUS BUFONIUS L. Toad Rush. E. C.
Roadsides in low ground in clayey soil both in the open and in beech-maple woods; often locally very abundant. Cecil.

JUNCUS DUDLEYI Wiegand. E. C.
Wet ground at the head of Burt Lake. Big Stone Bay.

JUNCUS TENUIS Willd. Yard Rush. E. C.
A rather common ruderal especially in the heavier soils.

JUNCUS LONGISTYLIS Torr. E.
Plants from the very low dunes between pools west of Cecil approach most closely to this.

JUNCUS ARTICULATUS L. E.
Along Crooked River.

JUNCUS ALPINUS Vill. (*J. alpinus insignis* Fries.) E. C.
Marshes near Bessey Creek and in the jack-pine plains. Big Stone Bay and Temperance Point.

JUNCUS NODOSUS L. Knotted Rush. E. C.
Roadsides through bogs and margins of beach pools, streams, and lake shores.

JUNCUS BRACHYCEPHALUS (Engelm.) Buch. E. C.
Frequent in low wet ground.

JUNCUS CANADENSIS J. Gay. C.
Vincent Lake and in the Carex mat at Smith's Bog.

JUNCUS BREVICAUDATUS (Engelm.) Fernald. E. C.
In low wet ground at Douglas Lake, Carp Creek and Cecil.

JUNCUS ACUMINATUS Michx. E.
In a ditch along a road west of Douglas Lake.

19. ERIOCAULONACEAE (Pipewort Family)

ERIOCAULON SEPTANGULARE With. (*E. articulatum* (Huds.) Morong.) C.
Abundant in a single station in the region, the east shore of Vincent Lake, where it carpets the ground below the ice ridge and occasionally extends out into about 20 cm. of water.

22. NAIADACEAE

NAIAS FLEXILIS (Willd.) Rost. & Schmidt. C.
A secondary species in the Potamogeton association.

24. Araceae (Arum Family)

Arisaema triphyllum (L.) Torr. (*Arisaema triphyllum* (L.) Schott.) Jack-in-the-pulpit. E. C.
Common in the beech-maple forests. Cecil.

Arisaema Stewardsonii Britton. C.
A single specimen in Reese's Bog. (Ehlers.)

Calla palustris L. Water Arum. C.
Known from but two stations in the region — bog woods at Mud Lake and north of Sedge Point.

Acorus Calamus L. Sweet Flag. E. C.
A few patches in the vicinity of Ingleside. Mackinaw City.

25. Lemnaceae (Duckweed Family)

Lemna trisulca L. Duckweed. C.
Occasional with the following in the northwest corner of Douglas Lake and at Fontinalis Run, growing on the bottom.

Lemna minor L. Lesser Duckweed. E. C.
Occasional in the quiet waters of streams and lakes; most abundant in West Maple River, growing on the surface.

30. Cyperaceae (Sedge Family)

Cyperus Houghtoni Torr. (*Cyperus Houghtonii* Torr.) C.
In 1916 a few small patches in sandy roads, west of the gorge and along the grade. Becoming more common and appearing in the aspens in 1922. Jack pine plains.

Eleocharis olivacea Torr. C.
Abundant in a single station, the flocculent mud in the eastern edge of Mud Lake.

Eleocharis ovata (Roth) R. & S. E.* C.
In Reese's Bog.

Eleocharis palustris (L.) R. & S. (including *E. palustris vigens* Bailey, in Gray's *Manual*; *E. p. major* Sonder.) E. C.
Besides being a dominant species in an aquatic association, it occurs in several of the aquatic and semi-aquatic associations in standing and wave-tossed water. Cecil.

ELEOCHARIS ACICULARIS (L.) R. & S. E.* C.
Sandy margins of lakes.

ELEOCHARIS TENUIS (Willd.) Schultes. E.* C.
In wet ground at East Point.

ELEOCHARIS ACUMINATA (Muhl.) Nees. E. C.
Dominating in an aquatic association and commonly present in several aquatic and semi-aquatic associations.

ERIOPHORUM ALPINUM L. (*Scirpus hudsonianus* (*Michx.*) Fernald.) E. C.
A few patches in the sphagnum at the west end of Mud Lake. Occasional in the marshy margin of boggy areas near Cecil.

ERIOPHORUM CALLITHRIX Cham. E. C.
Found in Chamaedaphne bogs at Bryant's, Mud Lake and southeast of Big Stone Bay.

ERIOPHORUM TENELLUM Nutt. E. C.
In the Hogback Bog and at Cecil.

ERIOPHORUM ANGUSTIFOLIUM Roth. Cotton-Grass. (*E. angustifolium majus* Schultz.) C.
Occasional in boggy areas, East Point, Hogback Bog.

ERIOPHORUM VIRIDICARINATUM (Engelm.) Fernald. Cotton-Grass. E. C.
Frequent to abundant in openings in cedar bogs.

ERIOPHORUM VIRGINICUM L. Cotton-Grass. E. C.
In Chamaedaphne and cedar bogs, particularly abundant in Bryant's and Mud Lake bogs. Cecil. Var. *album* Gray found at least once in Reese's Bog.

SCIRPUS PAUCIFLORUS Lightf. E. C.
Locally abundant beach-pool species, especially so on the flat at the southern margin of Lancaster Lake. Cecil.

SCIRPUS SUBTERMINALIS Torr. C.
A submerged aquatic in Silver Lake in Bryant's Bog and in Crooked River. Has not yet been found in flower.

SCIRPUS AMERICANUS Pers. E. C.
Dominating an aquatic association and readily persisting as a relict in later associations. Cecil.

SCIRPUS VALIDUS Vahl. Bulrush. E. C.

Dominating an important aquatic association and readily persisting as a relict in later associations, even into thickets. In Douglas Lake occurs in water up to 8 feet in depth. Abundant. Cecil.

SCIRPUS OCCIDENTALIS (S. Wats.) Chase. E. C.
In lakes and rivers, Colonial Point, Crooked River.

SCIRPUS HETEROCHAETUS Chase. C.
Patches along Crooked River.

SCIRPUS ATROVIRENS Muhl. E. C.
Frequent in roadside ditches. Cecil. Including *S. georgianus* Harper, found at Fontinalis Run.

SCIRPUS LINEATUS Michx. C.
A single clump in a grassy road west of Munro Lake.

SCIRPUS CYPERINUS (L.) Kunth. (*S. cyperinus* var. *pelius* Fernald.) E. C.
In moist-ground associations, especially where the original ground-cover has been disturbed. Cecil.

SCIRPUS ATROCINCTUS Fernald. E. C.
Frequent in bogs or marshy areas.

DULICHIUM ARUNDINACEUM (L.) Britton. E. C.
A common secondary species in the *Carex lasiocarpa* association and occasionally in other bog or aquatic associations. Particularly abundant in the second pool at Sedge Point, Nichols' bog and in the Hogback bog. In the station last named it replaces the Sphagnum, developing after the Chamaedaphne is locally removed.

RYNCHOSPORA ALBA (L.) Vahl. E. C.
In Sphagnum in the Mud Lake Bog and in bogs west of Cecil.

RYNCHOSPORA CAPILLACEA Torr. E.
Occasional in marshy margins of boggy areas west of Cecil. The variety *laeviseta* E. J. Hill is abundant on Temperance Point.

MARISCUS MARISCOIDES (Muhl.) Kuntze. (*Cladium mariscoides* (Muhl.) Torr.) E. C.
Infrequent, dominating an association on the western shore of Douglas Lake and occasional in bogs elsewhere. East Point. Cecil.

NOTE. — The following list of the species of Carex has been contributed by Mrs. Lois Smith Ehlers. The determinations, except in a very few cases, have been confirmed by Mr. Kenneth K. Mackenzie.

CAREX GYNOCRATES Wormsk. E.
In a wet Sphagnum bog just west of Cecil. Round Lake, Harbor Point.

CAREX CONVOLUTA Mackenzie. C.
A few clumps on Grapevine Point, Douglas Lake and on Colonial Point, Burt Lake.

CAREX VULPINOIDEA Michx. E. C.
Very common in roadside ditches and rather frequent in roadways and clearings in bogs. Cecil.

CAREX DIANDRA Schrank. E. C.
Forming hummocks at Fontinalis Run, Carp Creek, Mud Lake, and Lancaster Lake. Round Lake, Little Traverse Bay.

CAREX PRAIREA Dewey. (*C. diandra* var. *ramosa* (Boott.) Fern.) E. C.
In an opening in a cedar bog along Carp Creek. Little Traverse Bay, Round Lake.

CAREX STIPATA Muhl. E. C.
Common in moist places along roads and in bogs.

CAREX DISPERMA Dewey. (*C. tenella* Schk.) E. C.
Abundant in damp woods and in cedar bogs.

CAREX TRISPERMA Dewey. E. C.
Common in various types of bogs. Var. *Billingsii* Knight occurs in Reese's Bog.

CAREX CANESCENS L. E. C.
In moist ground, infrequent. Big Stone Bay. Var. *subloliacea* Laestad. on a hemlock knoll in the beech-maple forest west of Pellston (F. C. Gates).

CAREX BRUNNESCENS (Pers.) Poir. C.
In moist thickets.

CAREX DEWEYANA Schwein. E. C.
Common in the beech-maple forest. Big Stone Bay.

CAREX INTERIOR Bailey. (*C. scirpoides* Schkuhr.) E. C.
Abundant in wet soil and in bogs in the shade. Cecil.

CAREX STERILIS Willd. E. C.
Bogs, Smith's Bog. Cecil, Harbor Point, Little Traverse Bay.

CAREX LEERSII Willd. (*C. stellulata* var. *ormantha* Fernald.) C.
A specimen collected in the open in the Mud Lake Bog (F. C. Gates) appears to be closest to this species.

CAREX CEPHALANTHA (Bailey) Bickn. (*C. stellulata* var. *cephalantha* (Bailey) Fernald.) C.
In shaded swales.

CAREX CRAWFORDII Fernald. E. C.
Open boggy places at the head of Burt Lake. Round Lake and Little Traverse Bay. Var. *vigens* Fernald occurs at the old saw-mill at the head of Burt Lake.

CAREX SCOPARIA Schk. E.* C.
Boggy ground at the head of Burt Lake, North Fishtail Bay.

CAREX TRIBULOIDES Wahl. E.* C.
In burnt-over boggy areas.

CAREX CRISTATELLA Britton. (*C. cristata* Schwein.) E. C.
An opening in a beech-maple forest on Colonial Point. Round Lake.

CAREX CRISTATELLA × C. BEBBII (*fide* Mackenzie). E.
Little Traverse Bay. (J. H. and L. S. Ehlers).

CAREX PROJECTA Mackenzie. (*C. tribuloides* var. *reducta* Bailey.) C.
Common in moist places, mostly northward of Douglas Lake and especially in burnt-over boggy areas.

CAREX BEBBII Olney. E. C.
Common in moist places in thickets, swales and bogs.

CAREX STRAMINEA Willd. C.
In moist open places in bogs and along ditches.

CAREX BREVIOR (Dewey) Mackenzie. (*C. festucacea* Schk., *C. festucacea* var. *brevior* (Dewey) Fernald.) E. C.
Not infrequent in the aspens.

CAREX ADUSTA Boott. C.
In the aspens, near Smith's Bog. Rare.

CAREX AENEA Fernald. E. C.
Not infrequent in the aspens.

CAREX FOENEA Willd. E.* C.
Occasional in the aspens.

CAREX MERRITT-FERNALDII Mackenzie. C.
Aspen association just east of Douglas Lake. Rare.

CAREX DURIFOLIA Bailey. (*C. Backii* Boott.) C.
In cut-over beech-maple woods on Grapevine Point and near Camp Davis.

CAREX LEPTALEA Wahl. E. C.
Very abundant in bogs, usually with *Carex disperma* and *Carex interior*.

CAREX PAUCIFLORA Lightf. E. C.
Frequent in the Chamaedaphne association at Bryant's and the Mud Lake bogs. Little Traverse Bay (L. S. Ehlers).

CAREX COMMUNIS Bailey. E. C.
Common in the aspens on the better soils and in second-growth beech-maple forests. Harbor Point.

CAREX PENNSYLVANICA Lam. E. C.
In the Ammophila dune on Douglas Lake and south of Burt Lake. Big Stone Bay.

CAREX LUCORUM Willd. (*C. pennsylvanica* var. *lucorum* (Willd.) Fernald.) E. C.
A few patches in the aspens near Jarman's, Grapevine Point and south of Camp Davis.

CAREX ALBICANS Willd. C.
In cut-over beech-maple woods on east side of Burt Lake and frequent on Grapevine Point.

CAREX UMBELLATA Schk. (including *C. rugosperma* Mackenzie.) E. C.
An abundant and very characteristic ground species in the aspens, sometimes forming rings 30 or more feet in diameter.

CAREX TONSA (Fernald) Bicknell. (*Carex umbellata tonsa* Fernald.) C.
On a sandy ridge in the aspens south of the Biological Station.

CAREX PEDUNCULATA Muhl. E. C.

In cut-over beech-maple forests on Grapevine Point. Harbor Springs.

CAREX CONCINNA R. Br. E.
Moist woods back of Big Stone Bay.

CAREX EBURNEA Boott. E.
Damp woods back of Big Stone Bay and on flats on Temperance Point.

CAREX HASSEI Bailey. (*C. bicolor* All.) E. C.
In an old beach pool on the east side of Douglas Lake. Stream-side in Big Stone Bay.

CAREX AUREA Nutt. E. C.
A common species in beach pools, roadside ditches, and roads through bogs. Cecil.

CAREX VAGINATA Tausch. E.* C.
In Reese's Bog; rare. Swamp at Conway (Fallass).

CAREX PLANTAGINEA Lam. E. C.
Rare; beech-maple woods near Mud Lake and west of Pellston (F. C. Gates).

CAREX ALBURSINA Sheldon. (*C. laxiflora* var. *latifolia* Boott.) E.
Two clumps in a beech-maple forest west of Pellston. Station since destroyed.

CAREX BLANDA Dewey. (*C. laxiflora* var. *blanda* (Dewey) Boott). E.* C.
Cut-over beech-maple forest on Grapevine Point.

CAREX LAXIFLORA Lam. E. C.
Common in cleared beech-maple areas.

CAREX ANCEPS Muhl. (*C. laxiflora* var. *patulifolia* (Dewey) Carey.) E. C.
In second-growth beech-maple forests.

CAREX LEPTONERVIA Fernald. (*C. laxiflora* var. *leptonervia* Fernald, *Carex anceps* Muhl.) E. C.
In beech-maple forests along North Fishtail Bay and along Burt Lake.

CAREX ORMOSTACHYA Wiegand. C.
In cut-over beech-maple forests on Grapevine Point.

CAREX SHRIVERI Britton. (*C. granularis* var. *Haleana* (Olney) Porter.) C.

Boggy ground at the head of Burt Lake, roadside ditch along east shore of Burt Lake, and in Reese's clearing.

CAREX CRAWEI Dewey. E.

On a stony beach on Temperance Point, Big Stone Bay, Little Traverse Bay.

CAREX GRACILLIMA Schwein. E. C.

In wet thickets, aspens, cedar bogs, etc.

CAREX PRASINA Wahl. C.

Along a road through Reese's Bog; rare (F. C. Gates).

CAREX ARCTATA Boott. E. C.

Frequent in beech-maple forests, stream banks and beach thickets.

CAREX CASTANEA Wahl. E. C.

In damp shady spots in bogs and open thickets, Cecil.

CAREX KNIESKERNII Dewey. E.

Roadside through damp woods back of Big Stone Bay.

CAREX CAPILLARIS L. (including *C. capillaris* var. *elongata* Olney.) E.

In a bog west of Cecil.

CAREX SCABRATA Schwein. E.* C.

In and near the gorge; not common, but locally abundant. Linker's Spring.

CAREX LIMOSA L. E. C.

Abundant in the Mud Lake Bog and found first in Bryant's Bog in 1923. Harbor Point.

CAREX PAUPERCULA Michx. (including *C. paupercula* var. *irrigua* Fernald.) E. C.

In shaded wet places, especially frequent in the tree zone of wooded bogs. Cecil.

CAREX BUXBAUMII Wahl. (*C. polygama* Schk.) E. C.

In a bog west of Cecil. Once collected in the edge of a Sphagnum bog north of Douglas Lake in 1915.

CAREX STRICTA Lam. E. C.

Common along marshy shores and ditches. Cecil.

CAREX STRICTIOR Dewey. E. C.

Opening in cedar bog along Carp Creek (J. H. Ehlers). Little Traverse Bay, Round Lake.

CAREX AQUATILIS var. SUBSTRICTA Kukenth. E. C.
Along edges of bogs and streams, Burt Lake, Mud Lake, Cecil and Big Stone bays.

CAREX CRINITA Lam. E. C.
Common in moist places, in the shade.

CAREX LACUSTRIS Willd. (*C. riparia* W. Curtis.) E.
A single station in a stream north of Levering (F. C. Gates).

CAREX LANUGINOSA Michx. C.
In Reese's Bog at the head of Burt Lake.

CAREX LASIOCARPA Ehrh. (*C. filiformis* L.) E. C.
A dominant species in the *Carex lasiocarpa* bog association, a very efficient mat-former; Smith's, Bryant's, Mud Lake bogs, etc. Cecil.

CAREX HOUGHTONII Torr. E. C.
Ditch along State Road, three miles east of the Biological Station (station since destroyed). At least two stations in railroad ditches between Pellston and Cecil.

CAREX VIRIDULA Michx. (*C. Oederi* var. *pumila* (Cosson and Germain) Fernald.) E. C.
Common on the sandy shores of lakes. Cecil.

CAREX CRYPTOLEPIS Mackenzie. (*C. lepidocarpa* Tausch., *C. flava elatior* Schlecht.) C.
Wolff's Bog, East Point bogs, and east side of Lancaster Lake; rare.

CAREX CRYPTOLEPIS × FLAVA (*fide* Mackenzie). C.
Shore of Lancaster Lake.

CAREX FLAVA L. E. C.
Frequent in boggy margins of beach pools and small streams. Cecil.

CAREX VESICARIA L. C.
Forming large hummocks in boggy places, east of Smith's Bog, Vestal's Bog.

CAREX ROSTRATA Stokes. E. C.
In bogs and in other moist places; common.

CAREX TUCKERMANI Dewey. E. C.
In swampy areas near Burt Lake and west of Pellston (stations since destroyed).

CAREX RETRORSA Schwein. E. C.
In moist to wet places; very common.

CAREX OLIGOSPERMA Michx. E. C.
A common species in some Sphagnum-Chamaedaphne bogs, Mud Lake Bog, Cecil.

CAREX SCHWEINITZII Dewey. C.
Locally abundant along the banks of Carp Creek.

CAREX HYSTRICINA Muhl. E. C.
Quite abundant in boggy ground. Cecil.

CAREX PSEUDO-CYPERUS L. E.* C.
Occasional in moist places and in bogs, especially in burnt-over areas.

CAREX COMOSA Boott. E. C.
Mud Lake Bog. Round Lake Bog, near Bay View.

CAREX INTUMESCENS Rudge. (including *C. intumescens* var. *Fernaldii* Bailey.) E. C.
Common in moist places in shady areas near streams.

CAREX LUPULINA Muhl. E.* C.
Locally abundant in wet thickets. The var. *pedunculata* Dewey occurs in a boggy area near East Point.

31. POACEAE (Grass Family)

(Both for arrangement of genera and nomenclature in this family, A. S. Hitchcock's *Genera of Grasses of the United States, U. S. Dept. Ag. Bull. 772,* has been followed.)

Special studies in the grasses of the region have been made by J. H. Ehlers, Dorothy J. Cashen and Ella M. Clark.

BROMUS TECTORUM L. Downy Brome Grass. E.
Rare; on railway ballast near Pellston in 1918 and 1920.

BROMUS CILIATUS L. Brome Grass, Wood Chess. E. C.
Uncommon; in willow and alder thickets on cut- or burnt-over bogs. Cecil.

BROMUS PURGANS L. (including *B. altissimus* Pursh.) E.
Rare; Temperance Point, 1921.

BROMUS INERMIS Leyss. Awnless Brome Grass. E.
Rare as a ruderal in the vicinity of Levering. Cecil.

BROMUS KALMII A. Gray. C.
Under aspens in jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

BROMUS SECALINUS L. Cheat. E.* C.
In saw-dust at an abandoned saw-mill at the head of Burt Lake.

FESTUCA OCCIDENTALIS Hook. E. C.
A very few clumps in the aspens near the base-line back of Camp Davis (J. H. Ehlers in 1917 and later); becoming less frequent. Big Stone Bay.

FESTUCA OVINA L. Sheep's Fescue Grass. E. C.
Occasional in the aspens, especially on pine land in the vicinity of Douglas Lake; becoming more abundant. Cecil.

FESTUCA ELATIOR L. E. C.
Roadside near Levering and in Riggsville and sandy shore of Maple Bay.

FESTUCA NUTANS Willd. (*F. nutans* Spring) Nodding Fescue Grass. E.* C.
In second-growth woodland on Grapevine Point (J. H. Ehlers), 1918 and later. Colonial Point.

PANICULARIA CANADENSIS (Michx.) Kuntze. (*Glyceria canadensis* (Michx.) Trin.) Rattlesnake Grass. C.
A few plants in a roadside ditch near a bog north of North Fishtail (J. H. Ehlers).

PANICULARIA NERVATA (Willd.) Kuntze. (*Glyceria nervata* (Willd.) Trin.) Nerved Mannagrass. E. C.
Abundant in open bogs and in willow-thickets along streams and ditches as well as in most wet-ground associations.

PANICULARIA GRANDIS (S. Wats.) Nash. (*Glyceria grandis* Wats.) E.
In west Maple River and similar places.

PANICULARIA BOREALIS Nash. (*Glyceria borealis* (Nash) Batchelder.) E. C.
Rather frequent in wet places both in bogs and along streams. Especially abundant in a wet area north of the Riggsville bog.

POA ANNUA L. E. C.
Sparingly as a ruderal in the better soils.

Poa nemoralis. E.* C.
Near the head of Bessey Creek, 1921.

Poa saltuensis Fern. & Wieg. C.
One collection in the aspens in the North Fishtail Bay region, 1920; determined by A. S. Hitchcock.

Poa palustris L. (*P. triflora* Gilib. in both B. and B. and Gray.) False Red-top. E. C.
Common in open wooded areas, both upland and boggy.

Poa pratensis L. Blue Grass, June Grass. E. C.
A common meadow grass, occurring also in abundance along roads and in the aspens. Cecil.

Poa sylvestris A. Gray. Sylvan Spear Grass. C.
Infrequent to rare in wooded areas. Pine Point.

Poa alsodes A. Gray. E.* C.
Has been found in Reese's Bog.

Poa compressa L. English Blue-Grass. E. C.
A common ruderal along roads and railroads, frequent in meadows and rather common in the aspens. Cecil.

Eragrostis cilianensis (All.) Link. (*E. major* Host, *E. megastachya* (Koeler) Link.) E. C.
Local in the mill-yard at Pellston, Goodrich Farm.

Phragmites Phragmites (L.) Karst. (*P. communis* Trin.) Reed-grass. E. C.
Occasional in wet ground in the immediate vicinity of Douglas Lake, East Point and Sedge Point. The most abundant plant on "Phragmites Flat" in the west part of Douglas Lake. Frequently covered with may-fly exuvia. Cecil.

Dactylis glomerata L. Orchard Grass. E.* C.
A ruderal, not common, but becoming more so; gorge.

Melica purpurascens (Torr.) Hitchcock. (*Avena torreyi* Nash. *Melica striata* (Michx.) Hitchcock, *Bromelica* Farwell.) E. C.
A characteristic although not abundant species in heavily wooded areas, particularly of the beech-maple forest.

Melica Smithii (Porter) Vasey. (*Avena Smithii* Porter.) E.
In the beech-maple forest at Levering.

Agropyron repens (L.) Beauv. Couch-grass. E. C.

Ruderal and edificarian, becoming more abundant. On the "grade" west of Bryant's. Capturing low dunes under appropriate circumstances. Cecil.

AGROPYRON SMITHII Rydb. Blue-joint. E.
Occasional clumps along roads and with the preceding on the "grade."

AGROPYRON DASYSTACHYUM (Hook) Vasey. (*Agropyron dasystachyum* (Hook) Scribn.) E.
A characteristic grass on Ammophila dunes along Lake Michigan in Cecil and Big Stone bays.

AGROPYRON TENERUM Vasey. E.* C.
Occasional in thickets, on dunes and in Riggsville.

TRITICUM AESTIVUM L. Wheat. E. C.
Cultivated and sparingly escaped in the vicinity of lumber camps.

SECALE CEREALE L. Rye. E. C.
Commonly cultivated and frequently as an escape along roads and railroads.

ELYMUS VIRGINICUS L. E.
In a thicket along W. Maple River, 1920 (Clark and Cashen).

ELYMUS CANADENSIS L. Wild Rye. E. C.
Frequent on low sand-dunes with *Salix longifolia*, on Ammophila dunes, and occasional in the aspens farther from Douglas Lake. Cecil.

HYSTRIX HYSTRIX (L.) Millsp. (*Hystrix patula* Moench.) Bottle-brush Grass. E. C.
Locally abundant in the beech-maple forest.

HORDEUM JUBATUM L. Squirrel-tail Grass. E. C.
Occasional in waste places. Cecil.

TRISETUM MELICOIDEUM (Michx.) Scribn. (*Trisetum melicoides* (Michx.) Vasey var. *majus* (Gray) Hitchcock, *Graphephorum melicoideum* (Michx.) Beauv.) C.
Rare; along the shore of Douglas Lake at the Biological Station (Fallass, July 31, 1920).

SPHENOPHOLIS PALLENS (Spreng.) Scribn. (*S. pallens* var. *major* (Torr.) Scribn.) C.
A rare secondary species in boggy places in the aspens.

AVENA BYZANTINA (*Avena sativa* L.) Oats. E. C.
Cultivated; also frequent as a ruderal and on sand-dunes along Douglas Lake.

AIRA FLEXUOSA L. (*Deschampsia flexuosa* (L.) Trin.) E. C.
A few clumps in a pine wood southeast of Big Stone Bay. Jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

AIRA CAESPITOSA L. (*Deschampsia caespitosa* (L.) Beauv. E. C.
On the shore of Lake Michigan in Sturgeon and Cecil bays.

DANTHONIA SPICATA (L.) Beauv. E. C.
A very common secondary species in the aspens on sandy soil.

CALAMAGROSTIS CANADENSIS (Michx.) Beauv. Blue-joint Grass. E. C.
A common grass, dominating in a meadow association around several of the bogs and lowland areas of the region. Quite responsive to marked changes of water-level.

CALAMAGROSTIS INEXPANSA A. Gray. Bog Reed Grass E. C.
With the preceding in boggy habitats, but much less common. Lancaster Lake, Mud Lake, Cecil, south of Burt Lake.

CALAMAGROSTIS HYPERBOREA Lange. E.
Lake shore in Cecil, Big Stone and Sturgeon bays.

AMMOPHILA ARENARIA (L.) Link. Beach Grass. E. C.
Abundant on a single dune in South Fishtail Bay of Douglas Lake. Quite common on dunes along Lake Michigan in Cecil and Big Stone bays.

CALAMOVILFA LONGIFOLIA (Hook.) Hack. E.
Occasionally dominating dunes in Big Stone Bay.

AGROSTIS PALUSTRIS Huds. (*A. alba* L.) Red-top. E. C.
Abundant in meadows, in the aspens, on dunes and on the better soils, when cleared. A very common ruderal.

AGROSTIS CAPILLARIS L. (*A. alba* var. *vulgaris* With.) C.
Banks of Bessey Creek. Determined by A. S. Hitchcock.

AGROSTIS HYEMALIS (Walt.) B. S. P. Hair Grass. E. C.
A common secondary species in the aspens.

CINNA LATIFOLIA (Trev.) Griseb. Wood Reed Grass. E. C.
Occasional in lowland woods along Maple River and less frequently along Bessey Creek and elsewhere.

ALOPECURUS GENICULATUS L. Marsh Foxtail. E. C.
Locally common in cultivated bog land northwest of Ingleside, Smith's Bog (J. H. Ehlers, 1920), Vestal's Bog, and in ditches along the road into Cecil.

PHLEUM PRATENSE L. Timothy. E. C.
Cultivated and freely present in cut-over hardwood land; along roads and in the aspens.

MUHLENBERGIA MEXICANA (L.) Trin. E.* C.
Roadside west of Burt Lake.

MUHLENBERGIA RACEMOSA (Michx.) B. S. P. E. C.
Wet ground in bogs and along streams. Mud Lake, Alanson.

MUHLENBERGIA UMBROSA Scribn. (*M. sylvatica* Torr.) Dropseed. E. C.
Locally abundant in open thickets on dunes and fringing ridges around Douglas Lake; also along Maple River and Bessey Creek. Cecil.

MUHLENBERGIA AMBIGUA Torr. (*M. foliosa* Trin.) E.* C.
D. J. Cashen, 1921, and road west of Topinabee, Ehlers.

BRACHYELYTRUM ERECTUM (Schreb.) Beauv. C.
Sparingly present in lowland woods along Trout Creek in North Fishtail Bay; becoming more common.

MILIUM EFFUSUM L. Millet Grass. E. C.
A lax grass occasional in the beech-maple forests, especially along the west side of Burt Lake and west of Pellston.

ORYZOPSIS PUNGENS (Torr.) Hitchcock. Mountain Rice. E. C.
Local in pine land aspens, especially north of Reese's Bog and in North Fishtail area; spreading rapidly in the aspens.

ORYZOPSIS ASPERIFOLIA Michx. Mountain Rice. E. C.
A common secondary species in the aspens, particularly on the sandier soils.

SPARTINA MICHAUXIANA Hitchcock. Slough, Cord or Marsh Grass. E. C.
A marsh grass, but in this region mostly at the edge of ice work around Douglas Lake and locally on dunes rather close to water level. In one place west of Bryant's on the "grade."

TORRESIA ODORATA (L.) Hitchcock. (*Hierochloe odorata* (L.) Wahlenb. *Savastana odorata* (L.) Scribn.) Vanilla Grass. E.* C.

Locally in Myrica thickets and at the edges of bogs and lowland woods along the shores of Douglas Lake. Head of Burt Lake.

PHALARIS ARUNDINACEA L. Reed Canary Grass. E. C.

Infrequent in the Calamagrostis association near the mouth of Bessey Creek, Maple River and in marshes in Sturgeon Bay.

HOMALOCENCHRUS ORYZOIDES (L.) Poll. (*Leersia oryzoides* (L.) Sw.) Cut-grass. Rice Cut-grass. C.

An infrequent secondary species in the Carex association in Smith's Bog and in associations along North Fishtail Bay and Grapevine Point and in a ditch at Ingleside.

ZIZANIA AQUATICA L. Wild Rice. E. C.

An aquatic grass locally abundant in spots in Crooked River.

SYNTHERISMA SANGUINALE (L.) Dulac. (*Digitaria sanguinalis* (L.) Scop.) Crab Grass. E.

Locally in the Pellston mill-yard.

PANICUM CAPILLARE L. Witch Grass, Tumble Weed. E. C.

A tumble weed occurring sparingly along roadsides.

PANICUM VIRGATUM L. Switch Grass. C.

A very few plants near the bridge over Carp Creek in the gorge. The variety *cubense* Griseb. collected by Ehlers in 1920 and 1923 in marshy ground in the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

PANICUM DEPAUPERATUM Muhl. E. C.

A common secondary species in the aspens.

PANICUM LINEARIFOLIUM Scribn. C.

A secondary species in the aspens.

PANICUM WERNERI Scribn. C.

In the aspens (Ehlers, 1922).

PANICUM HUACHUCAE Ashe. E. C.

At Sedge Point and in the aspens. On the strand in Big Stone Bay and on low ground on Temperance Point.

PANICUM VILLOSISSIMUM Nash. E.
Wet strand in Sturgeon Bay.

PANICUM PRAECOCIUS Hitchc. & Chase. C.
Common on blowing sand on dunes along Douglas Lake.

PANICUM IMPLICATUM Scribn. E.* C.
On the beach at Pine Point and Sedge Point.

PANICUM MERIDIONALE Ashe. E. C.
A common secondary species in the aspens, especially on sandy ground.

PANICUM TENNESSEENSE Ashe. C.
In the aspens in pine land.

PANICUM TSUGETORUM Nash. C.
Pine Point.

PANICUM XANTHOPHYSUM A. Gray. E. C.
A common secondary species in the aspens, especially on the sandier soils; becoming abundant.

PANICUM LATIFOLIUM L. E.* C.
In a swampy area in the aspen association south of Burt Lake.

ECHINOCHLOA CRUSGALLI (L.) Beauv. Barn-yard Grass. E. C.
A ruderal; occasional also in cultivated ground; not very common. Cecil.

CHAETOCHLOA LUTESCENS (Weigel) Stuntz. (*Setaria glauca* (L.) Beauv.) Yellow Foxtail. E. C.
Ruderal, uncommon to rare; near Mud Lake, and Munro Lake.

CHAETOCHLOA VIRIDIS (L.) Scribn. (*Setaria viridis* (L.) Beauv.) Green Foxtail. E. C.
Ruderal; also in cultivated ground. Cecil.

CHAETOCHLOA ITALICA (L.) Scribn. (*Setaria italica* (L.) Beauv.) Millet. E. C.
Found in a burnt-over area in 1919. Cultivated west of Pellston.

CENCHRUS PAUCIFLORUS Benth. (*C. carolinianus* Walt.) Sand-bur. E.* C.
Railroad ballast at Indian River.

ANDROPOGON SCOPARIUS Michx. (*Schizachyrium scoparium*

(Michx.) Nash in B. & B.) Bunchgrass. E. C.
A few clumps in grass land in the vicinity of an abandoned lumber mill west of Cecil. Railroad ballast, Mackinaw City. Abundant in the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

Andropogon furcatus Muhl. E.* C.
Occasional in the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

Sorghastrum nutans (L.) Nash. Indian Grass. C.
Common in the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

Zea mays L. Corn. E. C.
Cultivated for silage for the most part, but occasionally a waif along roadsides or more frequently along railroads.

32. Hydrocharitaceae

Philotria canadensis (Michx.) Britton. (*Elodea canadensis* Michx.) E.
In a stream in Big Stone Bay.

Philotria angustifolia (Muhl.) Britton. (*E. canadensis* Michx.) E. C.
A secondary species in many aquatic associations; also floating in the open lake.

Philotria Nuttallii (Planch.) Rydb. (*Elodea canadensis* Michx.) E. C.
A secondary species in many aquatic associations; also floating in the open lake. Silver Lake in Bryant's Bog.

Vallisneria spiralis L. Eel-grass. E. C.
A secondary species in the Potamogeton association, especially in North Fishtail Bay, Bessey Creek and Crooked River.

35. Iridaceae (Iris Family)

Iris versicolor L. Iris or Blue Flag. E. C.
Besides characterizing an association it occurs in many of the associations of moist or wet ground, persisting as a relict even in thickets or under trees. Cecil.

Iris lacustris Nutt. Lake Dwarf Iris. E.

Fairly abundant in the Thuja association, both along ridges and in depressions along Lake Michigan between Cecil and Big Stone Bay.

SISYRINCHIUM ANGUSTIFOLIUM Mill. Blue-eyed Grass. E.
Rare; in a marsh in Cecil Bay region and on rocky shores, Big Stone Bay.

45. ORCHIDACEAE (Orchid Family)

CYPRIPEDIUM REGINAE Walt. (*C. hirsutum* Mill.) Showy Lady's-Slipper. E. C.
Occasional in openings and along pathways in cedar bogs. Cecil.

CYPRIPEDIUM PARVIFLORUM Salisb. (including var. *pubescens* (Willd.) Knight.) Yellow Lady's Slipper. E. C.
Frequent in cedar bogs. Cecil.

CYPRIPEDIUM ACAULE Ait. Stemless Lady's-Slipper. E.* C.
Occasional in pine land aspens, particularly in depressions; becoming more frequent.

COELOGLOSSUM BRACTEATUM (Willd.) Parl. (*Habenaria bracteata* (Willd.) R. Br.) C.
Beech-maple forest on Colonial Point, 1922 (Nichols).

GYMNADENIOPSIS CLAVELLATA (Michx.) Rydb. (*Habenaria clavellata* (Michx.) Spreng.) E. C.
Infrequent in cedar bogs. Cecil.

LIMNORCHIS HYPERBOREA (L.) Rydb. (*Habenaria hyperborea* (L.) R. Br.) E. C.
Common and extremely variable in all the wooded bogs. Cecil.

LIMNORCHIS DILATATA (Pursh) Rydb. (*Habenaria dilatata* (Pursh) Gray.) E.
In a bog at Cecil.

LYSIAS ORBICULATA (Pursh) Rydb. (*Habenaria orbiculata* (Pursh) Torr.) E. C.
Rare; gorge, beech-maple forests west of Pellston, and southwest of Cecil. Stations in North Fishtail region now destroyed.

LYSIAS ORBICULATA (Pursh) Rydb. (*Habenaria macrophylla* Goldie) E. C.
Rare; usually in coniferous forests. Temperance Point.

LYSIELLA OBTUSATA (Pursh) Rydb. (*Habenaria obtusata* (Pursh) Richards.) E. C.
Rather common in cedar bogs.

BLEPHARIGLOTTIS BLEPHARIGLOTTIS (Willd.) Rydb. (*Habenaria blephariglottis* (Willd.) Torr.) White-Fringed Orchis. C.
Local in the Chamaedaphne association at Bryant's and the Mud Lake bogs.

BLEPHARIGLOTTIS LACERA (Michx.) Farwell. (*Habenaria lacera* (Michx.) R. Br.) C.
On *Carex lasiocarpa* mat at Mud Lake; rare.

BLEPHARIGLOTTIS LEUCOPHAEA (Nutt.) Farwell. (*Habenaria leucophaea* (Nutt.) Gray.) E.* C.
A few plants in the *Carex lasiocarpa* association at the Mud Lake Bog.

BLEPHARIGLOTTIS GRANDIFLORA (Bigel.) Rydb. (*Habenaria fimbriata* (Ait.) R. Br.) C.
A single plant in the bog at Fontinalis Run, 1920.

BLEPHARIGLOTTIS PSYCHODES (L.) Rydb. (*Habenaria psychodes* (L.) Sw.) Purple-Fringed Orchis. E. C.
Occasional, particularly at the edges of cedar bogs.

POGONIA OPHIOGLOSSOIDES (L.) Ker. E.* C.
In the *Carex lasiocarpa* mat at the Mud Lake Bog.

ARETHUSA BULBOSA L. E.* C.
At Mud Lake Bog and Reese's Bog; rare.

LIMODORUM TUBEROSUM L. (*Calopogon pulchellus* (Sw.) R. Br.) E.* C.
A few plants in the Chamaedaphne association at Bryant's Bog, but abundant at the Mud Lake Bog.

IBIDIUM STRICTUM (Rydb.) House. (*Spiranthes Romanzoffiana* Cham.) Ladies' Tresses. E.* C.
Occasional at East Point and at Mud Lake.

IBIDIUM CERNUUM (L.) House. (*Spiranthes cernua* (L.) Richard.) E.* C.
At East Point and at Mud Lake.

IBIDIUM GRACILE (Bigel.) House. (*Spiranthes gracilis* (Bigel.) Beck.) E.* C.
Swamp in jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

OPHRYS CONVALLARIOIDES (Sw.) W. F. Wight. (*Listera convallarioides* (Sw.) Torr.) Twayblade. E.* C.
Rare; in cedar bogs.

OPHRYS CORDATA L. (*Listera cordata* (L.) R. Br.) E.* C.
Rare; in cedar bogs.

PERAMIUM OPHIOIDES (Fernald) Rydb. (*Epipactis repens* var. *ophioides* (Fernald) A. A. Eaton.) Rattlesnake Plantain. E. C.
Rare; in Reese's cedar bog, a hemlock knoll in the gorge and at Cecil.

PERAMIUM TESSELATUM (Lodd.) Heller. (*Epipactis tesselata* (Lodd.) A. A. Eaton.) E.* C.
Colonial Point.

PERAMIUM DECIPIENS (Hook.) Piper. (*Epipactis decipiens* (Hook.) Ames.) E. C.
A few plants in beech-maple forests north of Douglas Lake. Cecil.

PERAMIUM PUBESCENS (Willd.) MacM. (*Epipactis pubescens* (Willd.) A. A. Eaton.) E.* C.
Occasional in the East Point region and elsewhere.

MALAXIS MONOPHYLLA (L.) Sw. (*Microstylis monophyllos* (L.) Lindl.) E.* C.
Rare; Reese's Bog and formerly in the North Fishtail region.

LIPARIS LILIIFOLIA (L.) L. C. Rich. Twayblade. C.
Mud Lake Bog.

LIPARIS LOESELII (L.) L. C. Rich. Twayblade. E.* C.
Rare; Reese's Bog.

CORALLORRHIZA CORALLORRHIZA (L.) Karst. (*C. trifida* Chat.) Coral-root. E. C.
Occasional in cedar bogs.

CORALLORRHIZA MACULATA Raf. Coral-root. E. C.
Occasional in woods.

CORALLORRHIZA ODONTORRHIZA (Willd.) Nutt. C.
A single plant in the Mud Lake Bog, 1920.

CORALLORRHIZA STRIATA Lindl. Coral-root. E. C.
Occasional in low spots in the beech-maple forest.

60. RANUNCULACEAE (Crowfoot Family)

CALTHA PALUSTRIS L. Marsh Marigold. E. C.
In open places along streams through cedar bogs. Frequent. Cecil.

COPTIS TRIFOLIA (L.) Salisb. Gold-thread. E. C.
An abundant species in cedar bogs; frequent in low places in pine land, and on hemlock knolls in the beech-maple forest. Cecil.

ACTAEA RUBRA (Ait.) Willd. Red Baneberry. E. C.
Occasional in cedar bogs. Forma *neglecta* (Gillman) Robinson in boggy areas in Cecil and Sturgeon bays.

ACTAEA ALBA (L.) Mill. White Baneberry. E. C.
Fairly frequent in beech-maple forests. Cecil.

AQUILEGIA CANADENSIS L. Columbine. E. C.
Sparingly in cedar bogs and in beech-maple forests. Cecil.

ANEMONE HUDSONIANA Richards. (*A. multifida* Poir.) Red Anemone. E.
A characteristic interdunal plant in Big Stone Bay, although not abundant. Mackinaw City.

ANEMONE CYLINDRICA A. Gray. E. C.
Occasional in thickets and open places. Cecil.

ANEMONE VIRGINIANA L. E. C.
Occasional in open beech-maple country. Cecil.

ANEMONE CANADENSIS L. E. C.
Common in open parts of cedar bogs, especially along roads, ditches and low places along railroads. Cecil.

HEPATICA HEPATICA (L.) Karst. (*H. triloba* Chaix.) Hepatica. E. C.
Occasional in beech-maple forests and to a limited extent in the aspens.

HEPATICA ACUTILOBA DC. E.* C.
Infrequent in the beech-maple forest and in the aspens.

RANUNCULUS PURSHII Richards. C.
Muddy banks of Bessey Creek.

RANUNCULUS REPTANS L. (*R. flammula* var. *reptans* (L.) Mey.) C.
Occasional in protected places on the Douglas Lake strand, Grapevine Point, Ingleside, west side, Bryant's, etc. Much less frequent than formerly, probably on account of ice work in 1917 and 1918.

RANUNCULUS ABORTIVUS L. Small-flowered Crowfoot. E. C.
Occasional in wet places; Gorge, Bessey Creek, and Riggsville Bog.

RANUNCULUS SCELERATUS L. E. C.
Wet ground; especially vigorous following fire in cedar bogs.

RANUNCULUS RECURVATUS Poir. Hooked Crowfoot. E. C.
Occasional in cedar bogs, abundant west of Pellston.

RANUNCULUS ACRIS L. Tall or Meadow Buttercup. E. C.
Frequent and abundant along roads through cedar bogs and in other wet places. Cecil.

RANUNCULUS PENNSYLVANICUS L. f. E. C.
In wet places, willow-thickets, gorge, cedar bogs, etc.

RANUNCULUS SEPTENTRIONALIS Poir. Swamp or Marsh Buttercup. E. C.
Occasionally abundant in lowland woods and in burnt-over bogs and lowlands.

RANUNCULUS HISPIDUS Michx. C.
In brambles and cedar bogs.

BATRACHIUM TRICHOPHYLLUM (Chaix) F. Schultz. (*Ranunculus aquatilis capillaceus* DC.) E.* C.
In Maple River.

BATRACHIUM CIRCINATUM (Sibth.) Rchb. (*Ranunculus circinatus* Sibth.) C.
An aquatic herb at the mouths of Carp Creek and a creek entering Lancaster Lake.

THALICTRUM DASYCARPUM Fisch. & Lall. Meadow-rue. E. C.
Occasionally abundant in willow and Myrica thickets and other wet-ground associations.

THALICTRUM DIOICUM L. Early Meadow-rue. E.* C.
A few stations in beech-maple forests on Grapevine Point and on Colonial Point.

CLEMATIS VIRGINIANA L. Virgin's Bower. E. C.

Willow-thickets along Maple River, Lancaster Lake and occasional in tree associations on burnt-over bog land. Larix bog west of Lancaster Lake, growing high.

62. Berberidaceae (Barberry Family)

Caulophyllum thalictroides (L.) Michx. Blue Cohosh. E. C.
Occasional in beech-maple forests, especially those along Burt Lake; North Fishtail Bay region.

Podophyllum peltatum L. May Apple. C.
A specimen found in a beech-maple forest by B. E. Quick in 1911, but none have been found since.

67. Ceratophyllaceae (Hornwort Family)

Ceratophyllum demersum L. Hornwort. C.
A secondary species in the Potamogeton association, especially abundant in Bessey Creek.

71. Malvaceae (Mallow Family)

Althaea rosea L. Hollyhock. E. C.
Cultivated in gardens and occasionally escaping along roads.

Malva rotundifolia L. Dwarf Mallow. E. C.
Ruderal and farm-yard weed, especially in heavier soils.

Malva moschata L. Musk Mallow. E.* C.
Escaped from cultivation and now rather frequent and becoming more so along roads in the vicinity of Riggsville and northward. Flowers white or pink.

Abutilon Abutilon (L.) Rusby. (*A. Theophrasti* Medic.) Velvet Leaf. C.
Introduced accidentally in seed in 1917 and cultivated as an ornamental through 1919 in a yard near Mud Lake. Not since noted.

76. Tiliaceae (Linden Family)

Tilia americana L. Basswood. E. C.
A dominant tree in the beech-maple forest, although not

very abundant. Of late years it has been fruiting very much more plentifully than formerly. Cecil.

79. Ulmaceae (Elm Family)

Ulmus americana L. American or White Elm. E. C.
A few old trees in the wetter parts of beech-maple woods and along the lakes, occasional medium-sized trees in the lowland woods, and seedlings and small trees quite commonly in either open or thicket-covered lowlands. At Sedge Point seedlings 8–10 years old are on sand-dunes. Cecil.

81. Urticaceae (Nettle Family)

Humulus lupulus L. Hops. E.* C.
Cultivated, but escaped along roads near Munro Lake and in Riggsville.

Urtica gracilis Ait. Nettle. E.
In an open pasture west of Pellston, 1923. Bay View.

Urticastrum divaricatum (L.) Kuntze. (*Laportea canadensis* (L.) Gaud.) Wood Nettle. E.
Rare; in beech-maple forests west of Pellston.

Pilea pumila (L.) A. Gray. Clearweed. C.
Rather rare. In low places along roads through beech-maple forests along Burt Lake and near Munro Lake.

Boehmeria cylindrica (L.) Sw. False Nettle. C.
A few patches along a small stream at the northwest corner of Mud Lake.

82. Sarraceniaceae (Pitcher Plant Family)

Sarracenia purpurea L. Pitcher Plant. E. C.
A characteristic species in the Chamaedaphne association in bogs, especially abundant in the Mud Lake and Bryant's bogs. Cecil.

84. Geraniaceae (Geranium Family)

Geranium Robertianum L. Herb Robert. E.* C.
Occasional in beech-maple forests.

GERANIUM BICKNELLII Britton. C.
Occasional in beech-maple forests.

85. OXALIDACEAE (Wood Sorrel Family)

OXALIS STRICTA L. Sour Grass. E. C.
A few plants in the mill-yard at Pellston and along the lumber railroad west. Also near Mud Lake.

87. BALSAMINACEAE (Touch-me-not Family)

IMPATIENS BIFLORA Walt. Spotted Touch-me-not. E. C.
Common in and about streams in cedar bogs, hardwoods, and in cultivated land. Cecil.

IMPATIENS PALLIDA Nutt. Pale Touch-me-not. E. C.
Rare; in a small flat in a streamlet in the Burt Lake hardwoods. Occasional west of Pellston.

89. LINACEAE (Flax Family)

LINUM USITATISSIMUM L. Flax. E. C.
Occasional in fields near Munro Lake previous to 1917. Rare in mill-yard at Pellston and at Harbor Springs.

101. POLYGALACEAE (Milkwort Family)

POLYGALA POLYGAMA Walt. C.
On the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

POLYGALA PAUCIFOLIA Willd. Fringed Milkwort. E. C.
Moderately frequent in dune thickets, cedar bogs and in the aspens. Cecil.

104. EUPHORBIACEAE (Spurge Family)

CHAMAESYCE POLYGONIFOLIA (L.) Small. (*Euphorbia polygonifolia* L.) Seaside Spurge. E.
Rare; strand of Lake Michigan at Big Stone Bay.

CHAMAESYCE SERPYLLIFOLIA (Pers.) Small. (*Euphorbia serpyllifolia* Pers.) C.
Near Ingleside.

CHAMAESYCE GLYPTOSPERMA (Engelm.) Small. (*Euphorbia glyptosperma* Engelm.) E. C.
Occasional in waste places.

CHAMAESYCE MACULATA (L.) Small. (*Euphorbia maculata* L.) Milk Purslane or Spurge. E. C.
Occasional on ballast of railroads.

CHAMAESYCE RAFINESQUI (Greene) Small. (*Euphorbia hirsuta* (Torr.) Wiegand.) Hairy Spurge. E.
Pellston.

CHAMAESYCE PRESLII (Guss) Arthur. (*Euphorbia Preslii* Guss.) Upright Spotted Spurge. E.
Ruderal; locally abundant. Lumber yard at Pellston.

TITHYMALOPSIS COROLLATA (L.) Kl. & Garcke. (*Euphorbia corollata* L.) Flowering Spurge. E.
Railroad ballast north of Pellston.

TITHYMALUS CYPARISSIAS (L.) Hill. (*Euphorbia cyparissias* L.) Cypress Spurge. E. C.
Occasional along roads in the better soils, south of Mud Lake, Ingleside, and Cecil.

105. CALLITRICHACEAE (Water Starwort Family)

CALLITRICHE PALUSTRIS L. E.
In a wet place in a road south of Cecil and along the G. R. & I. Railroad north of Pellston.

107. CISTACEAE (Rockrose Family)

CROCANTHEMUM CANADENSE (L.) Britton. (*Helianthemum canadense* (L.?) Michx.) Frostweed. E. C.
In pine land areas; not common, but becoming much more so.

108. HYPERICACEAE (GUTTIFERACEAE) (St. John's-wort Family)

HYPERICUM ASCYRON L. Giant St. John's-wort. E.
Shrub along swales west of Cecil.

HYPERICUM KALMIANUM L. Kalm's St. John's-wort. E.
Shrub on small dunal ridges along Lake Michigan west of Cecil, Big Stone Bay.

HYPERICUM PERFORATUM L. Common St. John's-wort. E.* C.
Locally abundant in an aspen thicket on pine land near Reese's Bog and of late spreading into Riggsville and elsewhere.

HYPERICUM BOREALE (Britton) Bicknell. C.
Locally abundant, Marl Bay, Wolff's Bog, Nichols' Bog.

HYPERICUM MUTILUM L. C.
Plants from part of Marl Bay are closest to this species.

HYPERICUM GYMNANTHUM Engelm. & Gray. C.
Plants from Sedge Point are closest to this species.

HYPERICUM MAJUS (A. Gray) Britton. St. John's-wort. C.
Occasional in beach pools and roadside ditches, East Point, Maple River.

TRIADENUM VIRGINICUM (L.) Raf. (*Hypericum virginicum* L.) Marsh St. John's-wort. E. C.
Common; in marsh associations such as the Iris, Cladium and Calamagrostis associations. Cecil.

118. VIOLACEAE (Violet Family)

VIOLA PAPILIONACEA Pursh. E. C.
Occasional in beech-maple woods.

VIOLA CUCULLATA Ait. E.* C.
Along Carp Creek; rare.

VIOLA RENIFOLIA A. Gray. E.* C.
In cedar bogs.

VIOLA BLANDA Willd. E.* C.
From the Burt Lake beech-maple forest.

VIOLA PALLENS (Banks) Brainerd. E. C.
Common in cedar bogs.

VIOLA ERIOCARPA Schwein. (*V. scabriuscula* Schwein.) Smooth Yellow Violet. E. C.
Common in beech-maple forests.

VIOLA PUBESCENS Ait. Hairy Yellow Violet. E. C.
Common in beech-maple forests.

VIOLA CANADENSIS L. E. C.
Rather common in cedar bogs and low places in beech-maple woods.

VIOLA CONSPERSA Reichenb. E. C.
In a bog near Van; also in Reese's Bog.

VIOLA SUBVESTITA Greene (*V. arenaria* DC.) Sand Violet. C.
A few patches found in the aspens northeast of Burt Lake in 1911 (F. C. Gates). Area since severely burnt over and station destroyed.

VIOLA TRICOLOR L. Pansy. E.* C.
Persisting near an abandoned house north of Douglas Lake.

126. PAPAVERACEAE incl. FUMARIACEAE (Poppy Family)

BICUCULLA CUCULLARIA (L.) Millsp. (*Dicentra cucullaria* (L.) Bernh.) Dutchman's Breeches. E.
Has been collected only in beech-maple forests west of Pellston, but doubtless is much more common than given credit for, because the plants dry up before activities commence at the Biological Station.

BICUCULLA CANADENSIS (Goldie) Millsp. (*Dicentra canadensis* (Goldie) Walp.) Squirrel Corn. E.
The statements given for the previous species apply to this also.

CAPNOIDES SEMPERVIRENS (L.) Borck. (*Corydalis sempervirens* (L.) Pers.) Pink Corydalis. E. C.
In 1916 collected on Pine Point. As a fireweed locally abundant west of Bryant's in 1917, but since found only west of Pellston.

128. NYMPHAEACEAE (Water Lily Family)

NYMPHAEA ADVENA Soland. Yellow Water Lily. E. C.
A dominant species in the Castalia-Nymphaea association and common in other aquatic associations. Cecil.

CASTALIA ODORATA (Dryand.) Woodv. & Wood. White Water Lily. E. C.

A dominant species in the Castalia-Nymphaea association; more frequent in streams and small lakes than in the larger ones; occurring also in other aquatic associations. Cecil.

Castalia tuberosa (Paine) Greene. White Water Lily. E. C. Rare.

Brasenia Schreberi Gmel. Water Shield. C.
A single small patch in *Scirpus validus* in Douglas Lake, northwest of the mouth of Bessey Creek.

132. Brassicaceae (Mustard Family)

Berteroa incana (L.) DC. E. C.
About a dozen plants on railroad ballast near Cecil, 1918, and Colonial Point, 1923.

Alyssum alyssoides L. E.
A few plants found in railroad ballast near Pellston in 1918.

Camelina microcarpa Andrz. C.
A ruderal; two stations north of Douglas Lake.

Bursa bursa-pastoris (L.) Britten. (*Capsella bursa-pastoris* (L.) Medic.) Shepherd's Purse. E. C.
A weed and ruderal plant.

Radicula obtusa (Nutt.) Greene. C.
Rare in low ground along roadsides.

Radicula palustris (L.) Moench. C.
Maple bay of Burt Lake.

Radicula hispida (Desv.) Britton. (*Radicula palustris* (L.) Moench, var. *hispida* (Desv.) Robinson.) E. C.
Frequent in the Iris association, at the borders of willow-thickets and in a few aquatic associations. Cecil.

Sisymbrium nasturtium-aquaticum L. (*Radicula nasturtium-aquaticum* (L.) Britten and Rendle.) Water Cress. E. C.
Carp Creek in the gorge; rare.

Armoracia armoracia (L.) Britton. (*Radicula armoracia* (L.) Robinson.) Horse-radish. E.* C.
Escaped from cultivation along the east side of Burt Lake; Ehlers, 1916.

Lepidium campestre (L.) R. Br. E. C.

A few plants found on railroad ballast at Pellston and near Cecil, Ingleside.

LEPIDIUM VIRGINICUM L. Peppergrass. E. C.
A fairly common ruderal and occasional in the aspens. Cecil.

THLASPI ARVENSE L. Penny Cress. E.* C.
A single plant along the road west of Bryant's, 1921.

SOPHIA SOPHIA (L.) Britton. (*Sisymbrium Sophia* L.) E.* C.
Roadside weed, Colonial Point.

SOPHIA INCISA (Engelm.) Greene. (*Sisymbrium incisum* Engelm.) C.
Bluff on Colonial Point.

CHEIRINIA CHEIRANTHOIDES (L.) Link. (*Erysimum cheiranthoides* L.) E. C.
A ruderal in roadside ditches and a weed in wet fields in better soils.

ERYSIMUM OFFICINALE L. (*Sisymbrium officinale* (L.) Scop.) Hedge Mustard. E. C.
Ruderal and edificarian, railroad ballast; occasional. Var. *leiocarpum* D. C. is an uncommon ruderal; Reese's, Ingleside.

NORTA ALTISSIMA (L.) Britton. (*Sisymbrium altissimum* L.) Tumble Mustard. E.* C.
A ruderal and weed; very sparingly in the aspens.

CONRINGIA ORIENTALIS (L.) Dumort. Hare's-ear Mustard. E.
A single collection, mill-yard in Pellston, July 20, 1917 (H. A. Gleason).

BARBAREA STRICTA Andrz. E.
Ditch along railroad into Cecil, Carp Lake.

ARABIS LYRATA L. E.
Frequent on dunes in Big Stone Bay.

ARABIS GLABRA (L.) Bernh. Tower Mustard. E.* C.
Common secondary species in the aspens.

ARABIS CANADENSIS L. Sickle-pod. C.
Rather rare in aspens, Sedge Point region.

ARABIS DRUMMONDII A. Gray. C.
Occasional in the aspens. Grapevine Point.

Arabis brachycarpa (T. & G.) Britton. Purple Rock Cress. E.* C.

Frequent in thickets and aspens. Increasing in abundance.

Arabis Holboellii Hornem. E.

A few plants on sand-dunes in Big Stone Bay.

Cardamine pratensis L. Cuckoo Flower. E.* C.

A single plant in a clump of Sphagnum and Chamaedaphne in the Mud Lake Bog, 1920 (Ikenberry and Gates). In moss along a stream in Reese's Bog, 1923 (Ehlers).

Cardamine pennsylvanica Muhl. E. C.

Banks of Bessey Creek in 1911. Cecil.

Sinapis alba L. (*Brassica alba* (L.) Boiss.) C.

Weed near Bryants, 1917 (H. A. Gleason).

Sinapis arvensis L. (*Brassica arvensis* (L.) Kuntze.) Charlock. E.* C.

Ruderal and weed; not very common.

Brassica nigra (L.) Koch. Black Mustard. E.* C.

Occasional as a weed or ruderal.

Brassica juncea (L.) Cosson. E. C.

Occasional in the vicinity of lumber camps. Cecil.

Brassica campestris L. (*Brassica rapa* L.) Turnip. E. C.

Cultivated and sparingly escaped in the vicinity of lumber camps, N. Fishtail Bay, Cecil.

Diplotaxis muralis (L.) DC. E. C.

From a clearing in Riggsville Bog (J. H. Ehlers). Bay View, Fallass.

Raphanus raphanistrum L. Wild Radish. C.

A weed at Ingleside; uncommon.

Raphanus sativus L. Garden Radish. E. C.

Cultivated.

Cakile edentula (Bigel) Hook. American Sea Rocket. E.

Strand of Lake Michigan at Big Stone Bay. Not common.

133. Caryophyllaceae (Pink Family)

Alsine media L. (*Stellaria media* (L.) Cryill.) Chickweed. E. C.

Ruderal in low ground, especially along roads through beech-maple forests.

ALSINE LONGIFOLIA (Muhl.) Britton. (*Stellaria longifolia* Muhl.) E. C.
Occasional in open low places in beech-maple forests, also in tamarack woods northwest of Lancaster Lake.

ALSINE BOREALIS (Bigel.) Britton. (*Stellaria borealis* Bigel.) C.
Riggsville Bog.

CERASTIUM VULGATUM L. Mouse-ear Chickweed. E. C.
Along roads through cedar bogs and in similar low places. Cecil.

CERASTIUM LONGIPEDUNCULATUM Muhl. (*C. nutans* Raf.) E.
Railroad ballast at W. Maple River.

ARENARIA SERPYLLIFOLIA L. Thyme-leaved Sandwort. E. C.
Ruderal, occasional. Ingleside, Munro Lake, Cecil.

ARENARIA LEPTOCLADOS Reichenb. (*Arenaria leptoclados* Guss).
Railroad ballast near Van, Carp Lake and Cecil. Sandy road into Big Stone Bay.

ARENARIA STRICTA Michx. Rock Sandwort. E.
In the heath association and on sand-dunes in Big Stone Bay.

SPERGULA ARVENSIS L. Spurry. C.
A weed in a field near Vincent Lake, 1916 and 1917.

AGROSTEMMA GITHAGO L. Corn Cockle. E.* C.
In 1911 and 1913 abundant in an abandoned rye field near Vincent Lake. Rare since.

SILENE LATIFOLIA (Mill.) Britten & Rendle. Bladder Campion. E.* C
Ruderal; occasional. Grapevine Point.

SILENE ANTIRRHINA L. Sleepy Catchfly. E. C.
Occasional in the aspens and open thickets, and as a weed in fields and along roads; becoming more frequent. Cecil.

SILENE NOCTIFLORA L. Night-flowering Catchfly. E. C.
In low places along roads.

SILENE DICHOTOMA Ehrh. C.
Farm-yard west of Lancaster Lake.

LYCHNIS ALBA Mill. White Campion. E. C.
Ocasional in burnt-over areas and as a ruderal, but rapidly becoming more common. Cecil.

Lychnis coronaria (L.) Desr. Mullen Pink. E. C.
A patch west of Burt Lake and others west of Pellston.

Gypsophila paniculata L. C.
Near an abandoned lumber camp in North Fishtail Bay region, 1915. Not present after 1920.

Dianthus barbatus L. Sweet William. E.* C.
Escaped from cultivation near an Indian cottage west of Bryant's. Last noted in 1915.

Saponaria officinalis L. Bouncing Bet. E. C.
Locally abundant in certain farm-yards and occasional as a ruderal in the better soils. Two or three patches with double flowers.

135. Portulacaceae (Purslane Family)

Claytonia caroliniana Michx. Spring Beauty. E.
Occasional in beech-maple woods around Petoskey, according to Mr. Charles W. Fallass, and should be present in the vicinity of the Biological Station, but has never yet been found there, possibly having completely withered up after developing in the early spring before the Biological Station opens.

Portulaca oleracea L. Purslane. E. C.
A weed in fields; uncommon.

Portulaca grandiflora Hook. Garden Portulaca. E. C.
Cultivated and escaping for a year or two near Pellston and Munro Lake.

136. Aizoaceae (Carpetweed Family)

Mollugo verticillata L. Carpetweed. E. C.
Railroad ballast near Indian River and west of Pellston.

140. Salicaceae (Willow Family)

Populus alba L. Silver-leaf Poplar. C.
A few trees in different farm-yards, spreading by suckers. West side of Burt Lake, Ingleside, Riggsville, etc.

POPULUS BALSAMIFERA L. Balsam Poplar. E. C.
Locally abundant on ice-ridges, on dunes, in bogs, and along roads; spreading rather rapidly. Making tall trees in Larix bogs, but otherwise mostly as a shrub or small tree. Cecil.

POPULUS GRANDIDENTATA Michx. Large-toothed Aspen. E. C.
One of the most abundant species in the region, dominating in the aspen association and occurring in several of the other associations in the region, especially on drier ground. Seldom a large tree. Sprouts the first year after a fire, sometimes ten and twelve feet high, with enormous leaves. Cecil.

POPULUS TREMULOIDES Michx. Aspen. E. C.
About the same status as *Populus grandidentata*, but prefers moister ground, consequently more often found in burnt-over bog land and on the ice-ridges around lakes. More likely to grow into a tall tree, sometimes about sixty-five feet high, as in the bog land west of Lancaster Lake. Cecil.

POPULUS ITALICA Moench. (*P. nigra italica* Du Roi.) Lombardy Poplar. C.
A few trees in a farm-yard on the west side of Burt Lake and in other similar places.

POPULUS DELTOIDES Marsh. Cottonwood. E. C.
Uncommon, a few trees on an ice-ridge on the north side of Douglas Lake, Colonial Point on Burt Lake, and planted in Pellston.

SALIX NIGRA Marsh. Black Willow. C.
A few trees in a few farm-yards north of Douglas Lake.

SALIX LUCIDA Muhl. Shining Willow. E. C.
One of the commonest shrubs in willow-thickets and invading many of the wet-ground associations. Cecil.

SALIX SERISSIMA (Bailey) Fernald. Autumn Willow. E. C.
Most frequently found at the limit of ice work around Douglas Lake, Marl Bay, Grapevine Point. Also margins of bogs. Cecil.

SALIX INTERIOR Rowlee. (*Salix longifolia* Muhl.) Sandbar Willow. E. C.

Along the shore and on low dunes around Douglas Lake. On dunes the plants are often badly infested with larvae, as in 1917 and 1918. Cecil and Big Stone bays. Common, but always as a shrub.

SALIX PYRIFOLIA Anders. (*S. balsamifera* Barratt.) Balsam Willow. C.

Reported by F. M. Loew in 1910.

SALIX GLAUCOPHYLLA Bebb. E. C.

On a low dune along the east side of Douglas Lake. Cecil and big Stone bays.

SALIX ADENOPHYLLA Hook. (*S. syrticola* Fernald.) Furry Willow. E. C.

Local on low dunes in the East Point region; the plants there are smaller than those along Lake Michigan in Cecil and Big Stone bays, where it is common.

SALIX CANDIDA Fluegge. E. C.

One of the dominant species in the Myrica association in bogs, but not common. Cecil.

SALIX SERICEA Marsh. Silky Willow. E.* C.

Edge of a cedar bog, west side of Douglas Lake.

SALIX PETIOLARIS J. E. Smith. E. C.

Shrub along the G. R. & I. Railroad. Riggsville Bog.

SALIX BEBBIANA Sarg. (*S. rostrata* Richards.) Beaked Willow. E. C.

The most abundant willow in willow-thickets and in the aspens, although also in cedar bogs and beech-maple woods. Cecil.

SALIX DISCOLOR Muhl. Pussy Willow. E. C.

Very common in willow-thickets and wet ground generally. Cecil.

SALIX DISCOLOR × BEBBIANA. C.

A common hybrid in the aspens and in the beech-maple forest.

SALIX HUMILIS Marsh. E.* C.

In a swale south of Burt Lake. Nichols in 1920.

SALIX PEDICELLARIS Pursh. Bog Willow. E.* C.

A characteristic shrub in the low bog-thickets; readily invading the *Carex lasiocarpa* mat.

145. Amaranthaceae (Amaranth Family)

Amaranthus retroflexus L. Pigweed, Red Root. E. C.
Ruderal and fireweed; not common.

Amaranthus hybridus L. E.
At Bay View, according to C. W. Fallass.

Amaranthus graecizans L. Tumbleweed. E. C.
Rather infrequent as a ruderal and a fireweed, but becoming more common. Pellston. Just west of Bryant's in 1919.

Amaranthus blitoides S. Wats. E.* C.
Reese's clearing, 1914 (Gleason and McFarland.)

146. Chenopodiaceae (Goosefoot Family)

Chenopodium album L. Lamb's Quarters. E. C.
A fireweed of limited distribution; also a ruderal and a field weed.

Chenopodium hybridum L. Maple-leaved Goosefoot. E. C.
A fireweed; not common. Mill sites at Ingleside and W. of Pellston.

Chenopodium Bonus-Henricus L. Good King Henry. E. C.
A weed near a saw-mill at Cecil. Mill site in North Fish-tail Bay region.

Chenopodium botrys L. E. C.
Railroad ballast; Mackinaw City and Indian River.

Blitum capitatum L. (*Chenopodium capitatum* (L.) Asche.) Strawberry Blite. E. C.
A fireweed of limited distribution and a ruderal and field weed. Mostly on the better classes of soils, but three plants found in the sand at the Biological Station in 1919.

Salsola pestifer A. Nelson. (*Salsola kali tenuifolia* G. F. W. Mey) Russian Thistle. E.
Local in Pellston, mostly in vacant lots and along roads.

147. Polygonaceae (Buckwheat Family)

Rumex acetosella L. Sheep Sorrel. E. C.
A common fireweed, also abundant in the aspens and along roads. Cecil.

RUMEX MEXICANUS Meisn. Willow-leaved Dock. E. C.
In moist places. Infrequent. Cecil.

RUMEX BRITANNICA L. Great Water Dock. C.
On the mat at the mouth of Maple River.

RUMEX OCCIDENTALIS S. Wats. C.
Near the mouth of Maple River (Ehlers).

RUMEX CRISPUS L. (The form called *Rumex elongatus* Guss. in Gray's *Manual.*) E. C.
Mostly as a ruderal, but also fairly frequent in the Iris association.

RUMEX OBTUSIFOLIUS L. Dock. E. C.
Mostly as a ruderal, but in wet places in thickets along Burt Lake, west of Pellston and on hummocks at the mouth of Maple River.

RHEUM RHAPONTICUM L. Rhubarb. E. C.
Cultivated and persisting on abandoned farms. Infrequent.

POLYGONUM AVICULARE L. Knotweed. E. C.
Ruderal.

POLYGONUM ERECTUM L. Erect Knotweed. E. C.
Mill-yard at Pellston and at Bryant's, 1917 (H. A. Gleason).

POLYGONUM RAMOSISSIMUM Michx. E.
A ruderal collected in 1913, and as a weed in the parking in Mackinaw City in 1916, and Big Stone Bay in 1922.

PERSICARIA AMPHIBIA (L.) S. F. Gray. (*Polygonum amphibium* L.) E. C.
One of the dominant species in an aquatic association and in moist ground in thickets. Forma *Hartwrightii* (Gray) is infrequent. East Point.

PERSICARIA LAPATHIFOLIA (L.) S. F. Gray. (*Polygonum lapathifolium* L.) E. C.
Munro Lake and Maple River west of Pellston.

PERSICARIA LAPATHIFOLIA var. (*Polygonum tomentosum* Schrank, var. *incanum* (Schmidt) Gurke.) C.
Collected near Bryant's hotel by F. T. McFarland in 1915.

PERSICARIA PENNSYLVANICA (L.) Small. (*Polygonum pennsylvanicum* L.) E. C.
A ruderal and field weed; not common.

PERSICARIA PERSICARIA (L.) Small. (*Polygonum persicaria* L.) Lady's Thumb. E. C.
A ruderal; not common, but becoming more so. Cecil.

PERSICARIA HYDROPIPEROIDES (Michx.) Small. (*Polygonum hydropiperoides* Michx.) Mild Water Pepper. E. C.
In wet ground associations along the banks of Maple River, Bessey Creek, etc. Cecil.

PERSICARIA SETACEA (Baldw.) Small. (*Polygonum setaceum* Bald.) E.
Maple River west of Pellston (Ehlers).

PERSICARIA HYDROPIPER (L.) Opiz. (*Polygonum hydropiper* L.) E. C.
Shore of Burt Lake at Colonial Point, west of Pellston and elsewhere.

PERSICARIA PUNCTATA (Ell.) Small. (*Polygonum acre* H. B. K.) Water Smartweed. E. C.
In wet ground along roads through beech-maple woods; not common. The var. *leptostachya* (Meisn.) occurs along Maple River, west of Pellston.

FAGOPYRUM FAGOPYRUM (L.) Karst. (*Fagopyrum esculentum* Moench.) Buckwheat. E. C.
Cultivated frequently and quite commonly running wild as a ruderal.

TINIARIA CONVOLVULUS (L.) Webb & Moq. (*Polygonum Convolvulus* L.) Bindweed. E. C.
Occasional in thickets, in the aspens, and as a ruderal. Cecil.

TINIARIA CILINODIS (Michx.) Small. (*Polygonum cilinode* Michx.) E.* C.
A ruderal. Occasional also in fields and in the beech-maple forest.

POLYGONELLA ARTICULATA (L.) Meisn. E. C.
On a pine-covered dune southeastward from Big Stone Bay and on the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

151. Primulaceae (Primrose Family)

Primula farinosa L. (*Primula farinosa* var. *americana* Torr.) Bird's-eye Primrose. E.
A few plants at the edge of the Thuja association on a low ridge in a boggy area west of Cecil and abundant towards the end of Temperance Point.

Lysimachia terrestris (L.) B. S. P. Loosestrife. E. C.
Fairly frequent in wet-ground associations such as the Iris and Calamagrostis. Cecil.

Steironema ciliatum (L.) Raf. C.
Near the mouth of Maple River in a thicket, and at the lake edge of bogs at the head of Burt Lake; infrequent.

Naumburgia thyrsiflora (L.) Duby. (*Lysimachia thyrsiflora* L.) Tufted Loosestrife. E. C.
Most frequently in Calamagrostis meadows, willow-thickets, pioneer stages of bogs, but locally very abundant on the beach in a cove west of Grapevine Point landward of the *Scirpus americanus* association. Cecil.

Trientalis americana Pursh. Star Flower. E. C.
Characteristic of the beech-maple ground layer, but occurring also in cedar bogs and in the Picea-Abies association. Common.

152. Plantaginaceae (Plantain Family)

Plantago major L. Plantain. E. C.
A ruderal, and farm-yard weed. Infrequent.

Plantago Rugelii Dcne. E.* C.
Along Maple River and at Hook Point.

Plantago lanceolata L. Buckthorn Plantain. E. C.
A ruderal, Pellston, Riggsville.

157. Ericaceae (Heath Family)

Pterospora andromedea Nutt. Pine Drops. E.
Occasional in a mixed coniferous forest between Cecil and Big Stone Bay.

MONOTROPA UNIFLORA L. Indian Pipe. E. C.
Occasional in beech-maple forests and less frequently in other wooded areas. Cecil.

HYPOPITYS LANUGINOSA (Michx.) Nutt. (*Monotropa hypopitys* L.) Pinesap. E.* C.
Infrequent in cedar bogs, such as Reese's, and northwestward of Robert's Point, but several large clumps in a restricted area in the aspens near the Biological Station were found July 2, 1920.

LEDUM GROENLANDICUM Oeder. Labrador Tea. E. C.
A low shrub, fairly common in tamarack and cedar bogs. Cecil.

KALMIA POLIFOLIA Wang. Pale Laurel. E. C.
Fairly frequent shrub in Chamaedaphne bogs, or along roads through cedar bogs.

CHAMAEDAPHNE CALYCULATA (L.) Moench. Leatherleaf. E. C.
A very common shrub in suitable places in the region, dominating a bog association, invading the *Carex lasiocarpa* association, remaining as a relict in cedar bogs and sometimes found in low places in the aspens. Burnt-over bogs frequently grow up and remain in Chamaedaphne. Cecil region, where it is very abundant in certain interdunal areas.

ANDROMEDA POLIFOLIA L. (*Andromeda glaucophylla* Link) Bog Rosemary. E. C.
Frequent in Chamaedaphne bogs, along roads and in open places in cedar bogs. Cecil.

EPIGAEA REPENS L. Trailing Arbutus. E. C.
Occurs sparingly in the pine land aspens, cedar bogs and the Picea-Abies association.

GAULTHERIA PROCUMBENS L. Wintergreen. E. C.
In cedar bogs and very common in the aspens, there a relict of pine dominance. Cecil.

UVA-URSI UVA-URSI (L.) Britton. (*Arctostaphylos Uva-Ursi* (L.) Spreng.) Bearberry. E. C.
Representing the heath association in the aspens, particularly on the ice-ridge along Douglas Lake. Also on dunes. Cecil Bay and Big Stone Bay regions.

GAYLUSSACIA BACCATA (Wang.) K. Koch. Huckleberry. E. C. Rather abundant shrub in the aspens. Kingsley's. A few bushes of forma *glaucocarpa* (Robinson) Mackenzie occur in the Chamaedaphne association at Bryant's Bog.

VACCINIUM CANADENSE Kalm. Velvet-leaved Blueberry. E. C. In beech-maple woods, in the Chamaedaphne and aspen associations and on dunes along Douglas Lake, common. A bush with black berries found by Ehlers in 1918 had all the other characteristics of this species. Cecil. The white-fruited shrub forma *chiococcum* Deane, has been found once or twice in the North Fishtail region.

VACCINIUM ANGUSTIFOLIUM Ait. (*V. pennsylvanicum* Lam.) Blueberry. E. C.
A very abundant small shrub in the aspens and other burnt-over areas, the burning at more or less regular intervals being much more favorable to its presence in quantity than to the trees that would otherwise shade it too serverely. Cecil.

VACCINIUM NIGRUM (Wood) Britton. (*V. pennsylvanicum nigrum* Wood.) Low Black Blueberry. E. C.
With the preceding, frequent in the aspens. Cecil.

CHIOGENES HISPIDULA (L.) T. & G. Creeping Snowberry. E. C. Fairly common in cedar bogs, especially on logs along roadways or other openings.

OXYCOCCUS OXYCOCCOS (L.) MacM. (*Vaccinium Oxycoccos* L.) Small Cranberry. E. C.
In Chamaedaphne and cedar bogs. Fruit very light-green and sometimes mottled (Mud Lake Bog) in August. Common. Cecil. Var. *intermedium* Gray occurs at Mud Lake Bog.

OXYCOCCUS MACROCARPUS (Ait.) Pursh. (*Vaccinium macrocarpon* Ait.) Large or American Cranberry. E. C.
In the Chamaedaphne association at Mud Lake and in bogs west of Cecil.

160. Pyrolaceae (Wintergreen Family)

Pyrola americana Sweet. E.* C.
Occasional in beech-maple forests.

Pyrola chlorantha Sw. E. C.
Occasional in beech-maple forests and in the aspens. Cecil.

Pyrola elliptica Nutt. Shin-leaf. E. C.
Fairly frequent in beech-maple forests and in the aspens.

Pyrola uliginosa Torr. (*Pryola asarifolia* var. *incarnata* (Fisch.) Fernald). E.* C.
Rather common in open places in cedar bogs.

Pyrola asarifolia Michx. E.* C.
Occasional in tamarack and cedar bogs.

Pyrola secunda L. E. C.
Common in tamarack and cedar bogs and occasional in beech-maple forests. Cecil. Var. *obtusata* Turcz. collected in Smith's Bog in 1911 by F. C. Gates (station now destroyed) and in Riggsville Bog in 1919 by Mrs. C. C. Deam. Emmet County (Fallass).

Moneses uniflora (L.) A. Gray. E. C.
Locally abundant in cedar bogs. Cecil.

Chimaphila umbellata (L.) Nutt. Pipsissewa, Prince's Pine. E. C.
Frequent in beech-maple forests and in pine land aspens. Cecil.

166. Polemoniaceae (Phlox Family)

Phlox paniculata L. Garden Phlox. C.
Escaped from cultivation near a farm-house near Mud Lake, 1922.

167. Convolvulaceae (Morning Glory Family)

Ipomoea purpurea (L.) Lam. Morning Glory. C.
A few plants in a yard near Mud Lake in 1919.

Convolvulus Sepium L. Hedge Bindweed. E. C.
As a ruderal in isolated stations; rare. Also in thickets

on the ice-ridge along Burt Lake, especially near Maple River and Carp Creek.

CONVOLVULUS SPITHAMAEUS L. E. C.
An abundant secondary species in the aspens; becoming more abundant.

CONVOLVULUS ARVENSIS L. Bindweed. E.* C.
A single, although fairly large, patch in an orchard just west of Munro Lake and a second patch in a field east of Burt Lake, 1923 (F. C. Gates).

168. HYDROPHYLLACEAE (Waterleaf Family)

HYDROPHYLLUM VIRGINIANUM L. Waterleaf. E.
A single small patch under a lumber platform in the mill-yard at Pellston. Present only in 1916 and 1917.

169. BORAGINACEAE (Borage Family)

CYNOGLOSSUM OFFICINALE L. Hound's-Tongue. E.* C.
Ruderal and field weed in the better soils. Cecil.

LAPPULA LAPPULA (L.) Karst. (*Lappula echinata* Gilibert). Stickseed. E. C.
Occasional as a ruderal or a field weed in the better soils.

LAPPULA TEXANA (Scheele) Britton. (*L. Redowskii* var. *occidentalis* (Wats.) Rydb.) E.
Occasional on railroad ballast and in the aspens; infrequent.

LAPPULA VIRGINIANA (L.) Greene. Beggar's Lice. E. C.
Occasional in wooded areas.

LAPPULA DEFLEXA (Wahl.) Garcke. E.* C.
Occasional in the better soils

MYOSOTIS SCORPIOIDES L. Forget-me-not. E. C.
Abundant in ditches along the highway in Odin. From there transplanted to the gorge in 1918; a small patch still persisting.

LITHOSPERMUM ARVENSE L. Corn Gromwell. E. C.
Infrequent in fields and a single plant in the drift-line at the edge of Douglas Lake in Camp Davis.

LITHOSPERMUM OFFICINALE L. Gromwell. E.* C.
Roadside on Colonial Point.

LITHOSPERMUM CAROLINENSE (Walt.) MacM. (*Lithospermum Gmelini* (Michx.) Hitchc.) Hairy or Gmelin's Puccoon. E.
Characteristic, although not common on dunes in Big Stone Bay.

SYMPHYTUM ASPERIMUM Donn. (*S. asperum* Lepechin.) C.
A few isolated clumps in ditches along roads in and about Riggsville, Mud Lake and north end of Burt Lake, escaped from cultivation.

BORAGO OFFICINALIS L. C.
A few plants about an abandoned house north of Douglas Lake, June, 1917 (J. H. Ehlers).

ECHIUM VULGARE L. Viper's Bugloss. E.* C.
Rare, west of Lancaster Lake and north of Riggsville in a field.

171. SOLANACEAE (Potato Family)

PHYSALIS SP.? Ground Cherry. C.
Along a road northeast of North Fishtail.

PHYSALIS HETEROPHYLLA AMBIGUA (A. Gray) Rydb. Ground Cherry. E.* C.
Occasionally as a fireweed or a field weed.

LEUCOPHYSALIS GRANDIFLORA (Hook.) Rydb. (*Physalis grandiflora* Hook.) White Ground Cherry. E. C.
Three plants found in the North Fishtail aspens by F. M. Loew in 1911; specimens found in a cultivated field west of Lancaster Lake in 1920.

SOLANUM NIGRUM L. Garden Nightshade. E. C.
Edges of cedar bogs and along roads through beech-maple forests and infrequently as a weed. Cecil.

SOLANUM TUBEROSUM L. Potato. E. C.
Frequently cultivated, and also seldom a waif from cultivation.

LYCOPERSICUM LYCOPERSICUM (L.) Karst. (*L. esculentum* Mill) Tomato. E. C.
Frequently cultivated; seldom escaping.

DATURA STRAMONIUM L. (*D. tatula* L.) Jimson weed. C.
As a ruderal at Crump's Corners and in a barn-yard near Nichols' Bog; rare.

172. OLEACEAE (Olive Family)

SYRINGA VULGARIS L. Lilac. E. C.
Cultivated in yards and persisting after abandonment. West of Pellston.

FRAXINUS AMERICANA L. White Ash. E. C.
One of the less abundant dominant species in the beech-maple forest and occasional in lowland woods.

FRAXINUS PENNSYLVANICA Marsh. Green or Red Ash. E.* C.
A few trees near the head of Burt Lake.

FRAXINUS NIGRA Marsh. Black Ash. E. C.
The most abundant tree in the lowland woods and plentiful in tamarack and cedar bogs, readily invading almost any low areas. Exceedingly abundant (with much enlarged bases) in the deltas of Maple and Crooked rivers.

175. GENTIANACEAE (Gentian Family)

GENTIANA PROCERA Holm. Smaller Fringed Gentian. E.
A single plant found along a sandy ridge three or four miles east of Cecil.

GENTIANA ANDREWSII Griseb. (Dasystephana in B. & B., ed. 2.) Closed Gentian. C.
In developing cedar bogs; rare. East Point.

GENTIANA LINEARIS Froel. (Dasystephana in B. & B., ed. 2.) E.
Rare, Sturgeon Bay.

GENTIANA GRAYI Kusnezow. (Dasystephana in B. & B., ed. 2.) (*Gentiana linearis* var. *latifolia* Gray.) E. C.
Occasional in the fourth bog at East Point and at Cecil.

HALENIA DEFLEXA (J. E. Smith) Griseb. Spurred Gentian. E. C.
Now rare along a road in Reese's Bog, but frequent in the Big Stone Bay region.

MENYANTHES TRIFOLIATA L. Buckbean. E. C.
Occasional in bogs, sometimes as an association, at other

times as a few plants merely. Bryant's and Mud Lake bogs. Forming a large association on the mat at the mouth of Maple River, which is being replaced by Typha rather rapidly.

176. Apocynaceae (Dogbane Family)

Apocynum androsaemifolium L. Spreading Dogbane. E. C.
In the aspens and in beech-maple woods; becoming more frequent. Cecil.

Apocynum medium Greene. C.
In the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

Apocynum cannabinum L. C.
Occasional in sandy areas.

Apocynum sibiricum Jacq. (*A. cannabinum* var. *hypericifolium* (Ait.) Gray.) E. C.
On dunes and fringing ice-ridges and occasional in the aspens.

177. Asclepiadaceae (Milkweed Family)

Asclepias tuberosa L. Butterfly-weed. C.
Infrequent in the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

Asclepias incarnata L. Swamp Milkweed. E. C.
Occasional in willow-thickets, but fairly abundant in the Iris and other marsh associations. Cecil.

Asclepias exaltata (L.) Muhl. (*A. phytolaccoides* Pursh.) C.
Infrequent in the aspens near the Biological Station; spreading.

Asclepias syriaca L. Common Milkweed. E. C.
Occasional in the aspens and abundant as a weed in fields and in abandoned yards; spreading rapidly. Cecil.

178. Scrophulariaceae (Figwort Family)

Verbascum Thapsus L. Mullen. E. C.
A ruderal and fairly common in the brambles, aspens and abandoned fields. Very scarce in some years. Cecil.

Verbascum Blattaria L. Moth Mullen. E.
Rare; roadside west of Pellston (Ehlers).

LINARIA LINARIA (L.) Karst. (*Linaria vulgaris* Hill.) Butter-and-eggs. E. C.
A ruderal in Pellston and on the ice-ridge along the east side of Munro Lake. Not common.

SCROPHULARIA LEPORELLA Bicknell. Figwort. E. C.
A ruderal both in the open and in woods; infrequent but spreading rapidly.

CHELONE GLABRA L. Turtle-head. E. C.
In boggy ground at the head of Burt Lake, near the mouth of Maple River and at Cecil; rare.

MIMULUS RINGENS L. Monkey-flower. E.* C.
Not common; in willow-thickets, ditches, and in the Iris association along Maple River.

MIMULUS GEYERI Torr. (*M. glabratus* var. *Jamesii* (T. & G.) Gray.) E.* C.
In streams through cedar bogs; locally abundant in Carp Creek in the gorge.

VERONICA ANAGALLIS-AQUATICA L. Water Speedwell. E. C.
An aquatic in Bessey Creek and Maple River west of Pellston.

VERONICA AMERICANA Schwein. American Brooklime. E.* C.
Occasional along streams through cedar bogs.

VERONICA SCUTELLATA L. Marsh Speedwell. C.
In marshes near Bessey Creek.

VERONICA SERPYLLIFOLIA L. Thyme-leaved Speedwell. E.* C.
Ruderal in aspens and in beech-maple forests; infrequent.

VERONICA PEREGRINA L. Purslane Speedwell. E.
Weed in garden in Pellston.

VERONICA ARVENSIS L. Corn Speedwell. E. C.
Occasional in the aspens north of Douglas Lake and as a garden or field weed.

AGALINIS PAUPERCULA (A. Gray) Britton. (*Gerardia paupercula* (Gray) Britton.) E.
In interdunal boggy areas along Lake Michigan west of Cecil.

CASTILLEJA COCCINEA (L.) Spreng. Painted-cup. E. C.
In a low spot in the aspens southward from Vestal's Bog,

1923. Locally abundant in low ground in the Cecil-Big Stone Bay region.

PEDICULARIS CANADENSIS L. Lousewort. E. C.
Frequent in the aspens.

MELAMPYRUM LINEARE Lam. Cow-Wheat. E. C.
An abundant secondary species in the aspens. Cecil.

179. BIGNONIACEAE (Bignonia Family)

CATALPA SPECIOSA Warder. Catalpa. E.
Sparingly cultivated tree in Pellston. Tips of shoots frequently winter-killed.

182. OROBANCHACEAE (Broom-rape Family)

CONOPHOLIS AMERICANA (L. f.) Wallr. Cancer-root. C.
At least one patch in the beech-maple forest on Colonial Point, 1922 (G. E. Nichols).

LEPTAMNIUM VIRGINIANUM (L.) Raf. (*Epifagus virginiana* (L.) Bart.) Beechdrops. E.* C.
In beech-maple woods north of Douglas Lake in 1915 (H. A. Gleason and others). Locality since cut over.

185. LENTIBULARIACEAE (Bladderwort Family)

PINGUICULA VULGARIS L. Butterwort. E.
In a low area on Temperance Point.

UTRICULARIA INTERMEDIA Hayne. Bladderwort. E.* C.
Along a little stream in Mud Lake Bog and at Sedge Point.

UTRICULARIA MACRORHIZA LeConte (*U. vulgaris* var. *americana* Gray.) E. C.
Occasional in aquatic associations.

UTRICULARIA RESUPINATA B. D. Greene. (*Lecticula Barnhart* in B. & B., ed. 2.) E.* C.
Locally fairly abundant at Deer Bay, Maple Bay and at the south edge of Marl Bay. Seldom seen as it flowers only in very dry summers when the water of Douglas Lake is low and warm, as in 1916 and 1921.

UTRICULARIA CORNUTA Michx. (Stomoisia Raf. in B. & B., ed. 2.) Bladderwort. E. C.
Locally common in *Scirpus americanus* associations on sandy shores of Douglas Lake. Cecil.

189. PHRYMACEAE (Lopseed Family)

PHRYMA LEPTOSTACHYA L. Lopseed. C.
One patch along a road near the tip of Colonial Point in the beech-maple forest, 1922.

190. VERBENACEAE (Vervain Family)

VERBENA HASTATA L. Blue Vervain. E. C.
A ruderal, also in grassy thickets; infrequent. West of Pellston.

VERBENA STRICTA Vent. Hoary Vervain. E.
One large clump along a road west of Pellston.

VERBENA BRACTEOSA Michx. Large bracted Vervain. C.
A ruderal in the better soils.

VERBENA CANADENSIS (L.) Britton. C.
Three clumps along a road in Riggsville, probably an escape.

191. LAMIACEAE (Labiatae) (Mint Family)

TEUCRIUM CANADENSE L. C.
Shore of Burt Lake; rare.

TEUCRIUM OCCIDENTALE A. Gray. Hairy Germander. C.
In a marsh south of Burt Lake. Var. *boreale* (Bicknell) Fernald, occurs in the North Fishtail region and in a grassy thicket at the mouth of Carp Creek.

SCUTELLARIA LATERIFLORA L. Mad-dog or Blue Skullcap. E. C.
In bogs; infrequent. West of Pellston, Cecil, Big Stone Bay.

SCUTELLARIA GALERICULATA L. Marsh Skullcap. E. C.
Rather common in the Iris and other marsh associations. Cecil.

MARRUBIUM VULGARE L. Hoarhound. E.* C.
In wet places in two roads in Riggsville in 1911 (F. C. Gates). Stations since destroyed.

NEPETA CATARIA L. Catmint. E. C.
A ruderal; occasional in the areas of better soils. Cecil.

GLECOMA HEDERACEA L. (*Nepeta hederacea* (L.) Trevisan.) Ground Ivy. E. C.
Escaped in a few places near Ingleside and west of Pellston.

PRUNELLA VULGARIS L. Self-heal. E. C.
Abundant along roads and streams in the beech-maple forest and in cedar bogs; in the latter habitat usually more or less dwarfed.

GALEOPSIS TETRAHIT L. Hemp Nettle. E. C.
Disturbed places in the beech-maple forest near Burt Lake and west of Pellston as well as occasionally as a ruderal.

LEONURUS CARDIACA L. Motherwort. E. C.
An infrequent ruderal west of Pellston in good soil, also near the head of Burt Lake.

LAMIUM MACULATUM L. Spotted Dead Nettle. C.
Along a road north of Douglas Lake.

LAMIUM ALBUM L. White Dead Nettle. C.
Roadside in Riggsville.

STACHYS PALUSTRIS L. E. C.
Occasional, head of Burt Lake, in the aspens west of Bryant's, west of Pellston, and at Cecil.

STACHYS ASPERA Michx. (*Stachys tenuifolia* var. *aspera* (Michx.) Fernald.) Ruff Hedge Nettle. C.
Occasional along the west shore of Burt Lake.

MONARDA FISTULOSA L. Wild Bergamot. E. C.
In the beech-maple forest on Colonial Point, Burt Lake, and westward, Big Stone Bay.

MONARDA MOLLIS L. E. C.
Colonial Point, Mackinaw City, and jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

HEDEOMA PULEGIOIDES (L.) Pers. American Pennyroyal. E.* C.
A single locality — in cow dung in a field near Nichols' Bog, 1923.

CLINOPODIUM VULGARE L. (*Satureja vulgaris* (L.) Fritsch. E. C.
In thickets, aspens and roadsides; frequent. Cecil.

CLINOPODIUM ACINOS (L.) Kuntze. (*Satureja acinos* (L.) Scheele.) C.
Introduced about the Biological Station in 1912, from where it spread into the aspens for a few years, but failed to maintain itself. Reese's Clearing, 1923.

CLINOPODIUM GLABRUM (Nutt) Kuntze. (*Satureja glabra* (Nutt.) Fernald.) E.
Very abundant on a flat on Temperance Point.

LYCOPUS UNIFLORUS Michx. Bugleweed. E. C.
Occasional in boggy areas, Reese's Bog, East Point, Burt Lake ice-ridges, west of Pellston and Cecil.

LYCOPUS AMERICANUS Muhl. Water Hoarhound. E. C.
In several aquatic and semi-aquatic marsh associations; common, Cecil.

MENTHA SPICATA L. Spearmint. E.* C.
Roadsides north of Douglas Lake, Munro Lake.

MENTHA PIPERITA L. Peppermint. E.* C.
Roadside ditch east of Douglas Lake, mouth of Bessey Creek.

MENTHA CANADENSIS L. (*M. arvensis* var. *canadensis* (L.) Briquet.) Mint. E. C.
In a number of wet-ground associations of herbaceous plants and persisting into thickets; sandy shores.

192. ROSACEAE (Rose Family)

OPULASTER OPULIFOLIUS (L.) Kuntze. (*Physocarpus opulifolius* (L.) Maxim.) Ninebark. E.
A shrub along West Maple River. Cecil.

SPIRAEA ALBA Du Roi. (*S. salicifolia* L.) E. C.
A shrub in willow-thickets, invading the Chamaedaphne association at Smith's Bog. West of Pellston and in marshes south of Burt Lake.

POTENTILLA CANADENSIS L. Five-Finger. E.* C.
In a tamarack bog northwest of Ingleside and in the aspens near the Hogback Bog.

POTENTILLA MONSPELIENSIS L. Cinquefoil. E. C.
On fringing dunes, in willow-thickets and as a ruderal; fairly frequent. Cecil.

POTENTILLA ARGENTEA L. Silvery Cinquefoil. E. C.
Locally abundant in the mill-yard at Pellston and occasional as a ruderal elsewhere. South of Burt Lake on jack pine plains.

POTENTILLA RECTA L. E. C.
In a mill-yard in Pellston and as a ruderal near Levering and Mud Lake.

ARGENTINA ANSERINA (L.) Rydb. (*Potentilla anserina* L.) Silverweed. E. C.
Dominating the *Potentilla anserina* association and occurring in a few other beach associations around Douglas and Burt lakes. Cecil.

COMARUM PALUSTRE L. (*Potentilla palustris* (L.) Scop.) Marsh. Five-Finger. E. C.
In the Cladium and *Carex lasiocarpa* as well as in other marsh and bog associations; mostly aquatic. Cecil.

FRAGARIA GRAYANA Vilmorin. Strawberry. E.
Railroad ballast north of Pellston.

FRAGARIA VIRGINIANA Duchesne. Strawberry. E. C.
Common on low ground.

FRAGARIA AMERICANA (Porter) Britton. (*F. vesca* var. *americana* Porter.) E. C.
Occasional in cedar bogs.

SIBBALDIOPSIS TRIDENTATA (Soland.) Rydb. (*Potentilla tridentata* Ait.) Three-toothed Cinquefoil. E.
A single but rather large patch in the right-of-way of the G. R. & I. Railroad about one mile north of Pellston.

DASIPHORA FRUTICOSA (L.) Rydb. (*Potentilla fruticosa* L.) Shrubby Cinquefoil. E. C.
Local in boggy areas along West Maple River, Munro Lake, Cecil.

DRYMOCALLIS AGRIMONIOIDES (Pursh) Rydb. (*Potentilla arguta* Pursh.) C.
Local along a road north of Lancaster Lake and also near Mud Lake.

AGRIMONIA GRYPOSEPALA Wallr. E. C.
Roadways through beech-maple forests and less frequently through cedar bogs.

GEUM CANADENSE Jacq. White Avens. E.* C.
Occasional in willow-thickets and beech-maple slashings.

GEUM MACROPHYLLUM Willd. E.* C.
A few plants in a tamarack bog northwest of Ingleside.

GEUM STRICTUM Ait. Yellow Avens. E. C.
Pasture lands and along roads through beech-maple woods and cedar bogs.

GEUM VERNUM (Raf.) T. & G. E.
Along West Maple River.

GEUM RIVALE L. Purple or Water Avens. E. C.
Occasional in wet ground of various sorts. Gorge.

RUBUS ODORATUS L. E.
A low shrub in aspens west of Cecil.

RUBUS PARVIFLORUS Nutt.
A low shrub in aspens along the road between Cecil and Big Stone Bay.

RUBUS STRIGOSUS Michx. Wild Red Raspberry. E. C.
(*Rubus idaeus* var. *aculeatissimus* (C. A. Mey.) Regel & Tiling.)
Dominant in the bramble association especially when occurring on burnt-over beech-maple land, and present in the aspens as well as in other associations; common.

RUBUS IDAEUS L. (of Gray's *Manual*, 7th Edit.) C.
A few bushes found along Maple River.

RUBUS NEGLECTUS Peck. Purple Wild Raspberry. C.
A few bushes found in the openings in the second-growth woods on Grapevine Point.

RUBUS OCCIDENTALIS L. Black Raspberry. E.* C.
Cultivated along Lancaster Lake; found once as an escape.

RUBUS TRIFLORUS Richards. Dwarf Red Blackberry. E. C.
Abundant in bogs, also in low places in beech-maple woods and in the aspens. Cecil.

RUBUS CANADENSIS L. Blackberry. E.* C.
A shrub in the North Fishtail aspens and Riggsville Bog.

RUBUS ALLEGHANIENSIS Porter. Blackberry. E. C.
Dominant in the bramble association especially on the sandier ground and more or less common in the aspens. Very common. Cecil.

RUBUS PROCUMBENS Muhl. (*Rubus villosus* Ait.) Dewberry. C.
Occasional in the aspens near shores.

ROSA BLANDA Ait. Wild Rose. E. C.
Frequent in the aspens along the shore of Douglas Lake and elsewhere. Cecil.

ROSA ACICULARIS Lindl. Prickly Rose. E. C.
On ridges along Burt Lake, Cecil.

ROSA CAROLINA L. Swamp Wild Rose. E. C.
One of the dominating shrubs in a wet-ground association, usually bordering streams or lakes. Maple River, Bessey Creek, etc. Cecil.

193. MALACEAE (Apple Family)

SORBUS AMERICANA Marsh. (*Pyrus americana* (Marsh) DC.) Mountain Ash. E. C.
Infrequent in the Picea-Abies association and present also in cedar bogs. West of Pellston and Cecil.

MALUS MALUS (L.) Britton. (*Pyrus Malus* L.) Apple. E. C.
Escaped about abandoned lumber camps, farm-houses, etc.

ARONIA ARBUTIFOLIA (L.) Ell. (*Pyrus arbutifolia* (L.) L. f.) Chokeberry. E.* C.
A dominant shrub in certain bog thickets; Bryant's.

ARONIA ATROPURPUREA Britton. (*Pyrus arbutifolia* var. *atropurpurea* (Britton) Robinson.) Purple-fruited Chokeberry. E. C.
With *Aronia arbutifolia*, but more abundant. A dominant shrub in certain bog thickets, especially after the removal of the original forest, northwest of Lancaster Lake. Invades the Chamaedaphne association readily. Abundant.

ARONIA MELANOCARPA (Michx.) Britton. (*Pyrus melanocarpa* (Michx.) Willd.) Black Chokeberry. E. C.
Frequent in cedar bogs.

AMELANCHIER CANADENSIS (L.) Medic. June-berry, Service-berry. (Probably including *A. laevis* Wiegand.) E. C.

As an under shrub in tree associations, particularly the aspens, or a tree in exposed situations on dunes and the ice-ridge around the lakes. Common. Cecil.

AMELANCHIER SPICATA (Lam.) C. Koch. Low Shad-bush. C.
A low shrub, 1 to 1.5 feet high, growing in patches and often fruiting exceedingly abundantly.

AMELANCHIER SANGUINEA (Pursh) DC. E. C.
With *A. canadensis;* a shrub or a small tree. Cecil.

CRATAEGUS MACROSPERMA Ashe. C.
A few small trees in the beech-maple forest on Colonial Point.

CRATAEGUS (nearest to *C. roanensis* Ashe.) C.
Occasional small bushes in the aspens back of Camp Davis. Becoming more abundant and spreading.

194. PRUNACEAE (Peach Family)

PRUNUS NIGRA Ait. Canada Plum. E.* C.
A few trees in the beech-maple forest on Colonial Point, the north end of Burt Lake, and in the aspens in the North Fishtail region.

PRUNUS PUMILA L. Sand Cherry. E. C.
A few shrubs on sand-dunes and ice-ridges along Douglas Lake; becoming more common. Plentiful at Cecil and Big Stone bays. Jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

PRUNUS PENNSYLVANICA L. f. Wild Red, Pin, or Fire Cherry. E. C.
A dominant species in the aspens, relatively more abundant than *Populus spp.* where the aspen association has followed on burnt-over beech-maple areas.

PADUS NANA (Du Roi) Roemer. (*Prunus virginiana* L.) Choke-cherry. E. C.
Occasional in the aspens, willow-thickets and brambles. Cecil.

PADUS VIRGINIANA (L.) Mill. (*Prunus serotina* Ehrh.) Wild Black Cherry. C.
Occasional in the aspens and beech-maple forests.

199. FABACEAE (Pea Family)

MEDICAGO SATIVA L. Alfalfa. E. C.
Sparingly cultivated and escaping as a ruderal.

MEDICAGO LUPULINA L. E.* C.
In a pasture north of Ingleside.

MELILOTUS ALBA Desv. White Sweet Clover. E. C.
Local in cultivated ground.

MELILOTUS OFFICINALIS (L.) Lam. Yellow Sweet Clover. E.
Rare; around barns in Pellston and at Mackinaw City.

TRIFOLIUM AGRARIUM L. Yellow or Hop Clover. C.
A few patches along roads or in fields; rare.

TRIFOLIUM PROCUMBENS L. Low Hop Clover. E.
Woodland path near Carp Lake.

TRIFOLIUM PRATENSE L. Red Clover. E. C.
Widely cultivated and freely escaping to various habitats, especially along roads in the aspens. Cecil.

TRIFOLIUM HYBRIDUM L. Alsike Clover. E. C.
Same status as the preceding. Cecil.

TRIFOLIUM REPENS L. White Clover. E. C.
Same status as the two preceding, but more common than either, especially in low ground. Cecil.

ROBINIA PSEUDO-ACACIA L. Black Locust. E.
Occasionally planted in towns.

ROBINIA VISCOSA Vent. Clammy Locust. C.
Planted along the Topinabee Road.

MEIBOMIA CANADENSIS (L.) Kuntze. (*Desmodium canadense* (L.) DC.) Tick-trefoil. C.
A few plants in the second-growth beech-maple woods on Colonial Point and in thickets along Maple River.

VICIA VILLOSA Roth. C.
Cultivated and rather freely escaping in the better soils.

LATHYRUS MARITIMUS (L.) Bigel. Beach Pea. E.
A characteristic species of Ammophila dunes in Cecil and Big Stone bays. Seeds have repeatedly been brought from there to the Ammophila dune at Douglas Lake, but no plants from them have been seen as yet.

LATHYRUS VENOSUS Muhl. C.
Near Bryant's in 1917 and on Colonial Point in 1923.

LATHYRUS PALUSTRIS L. Vetchling. E. C.
Occasional in open dune thickets along Douglas Lake. Cecil.

LATHYRUS MYRTIFOLIUS Muhl. (*L. palustris* var. *myrtifolius* (Muhl.) Gray.) E. C.
In open places and in open beach thickets along Douglas and Burt lakes.

GLYCINE APIOS L. (*Apios tuberosa* Moench.) Groundnut. E. C.
Occasional in beach pools, on dunes, and in open dune thickets along Douglas and Burt lakes. Becoming more frequent.

FALCATA PITCHERI (T. & G.) Kuntze. (*Amphicarpa Pitcheri* T. & G.) Hog peanut. C.
Infrequent in open areas along the east side of Burt Lake.

200. SAXIFRAGACEAE (Saxifrage Family)

PARNASSIA CAROLINIANA Michx. E.
Infrequent in boggy areas west of Cecil.

PARNASSIA PARVIFLORA DC. E.
Low ground on Temperance Point. Little Traverse Bay.

TIARELLA CORDIFOLIA L. False Mitrewort. E.
Wet spots in beech-maple forests west and north of Pellston; infrequent.

MITELLA NUDA L. Bishop's Cap. E. C.
Common in cedar bogs, also occurring in beech-maple forests.

CHRYSOPLENIUM AMERICANUM Schwein. C.
Sandy margin of a bog stream entering Burt Lake from Reese's Bog; rare.

202. GROSSULARIACEAE (Gooseberry Family)

RIBES LACUSTRE (Pers.) Poir. Swamp Black Currant. E.* C.
Recorded by F. M. Lowe in 1910 from the vicinity of Ingleside.

RIBES HUDSONIANUM Richards. Northern Black Currant. C.
A few times found in cedar bogs and in the gorge; rare. Possibly a new southern limit for this species.

RIBES NIGRUM L. Black Currant. E.
In cultivation.

RIBES TRISTE Pall. American Red Currant. E. C.
Common in bogs and occasional elsewhere, especially var. *albinervium* (Michx.) Fernald.

RIBES GLANDULOSUM Grauer. (*R. prostratum* L'Hér.) Skunk Currant. E. C.
Occasional in cedar bogs.

RIBES AMERICANUM Mill. (*R. floridum* L'Hér.) Wild Black Currant. E. C.
Occasional in thickets and woods. Cecil.

RIBES ODORATUM Wendl. Golden Currant. E.
Cultivated in Pellston.

GROSSULARIA CYNOSBATI (L.) Mill. (*Ribes Cynosbati* L.) Prickly Gooseberry. E. C.
A dominant species in the bramble association and present in willow-thickets, cedar bogs and less frequently in the aspens.

GROSSULARIA OXYACANTHOIDES (L.) Mill. (*Ribes oxyacanthoides* L.) Smooth Gooseberry. E.
Occasional in wet woods west of Pellston. Cecil.

GROSSULARIA HIRTELLA (Michx.) Spach. (*Ribes oxyacanthoides* var. *calcicola* Fernald.) C.
Reese's Bog.

203. CRASSULACEAE (Orpine Family)

SEDUM TRIPHYLLUM (Haw.) S. F. Gray. (*Sedum purpureum* Tausch.) E.
Formerly cultivated at a farm-house north of Pellston, remaining after abandonment.

SEDUM ACRE L. Stonecrop. E. C.
Occasional near the shore at a few points, especially along the north side of Douglas Lake, Bryant's, and abundant along a road in the outskirts of Levering. Cecil.

204. Droseraceae (Sundew Family)

Drosera rotundifolia L. Sundew. E. C.
Fairly common on logs and in moss in open places and along roads in cedar and Chamaedaphne bogs. Cecil.

Drosera intermedia Hayne. (*D. longifolia* L.) E.* C.
In Sphagnum in the Mud Lake bog.

Drosera longifolia L. (*Drosera anglica* Huds.) E.
Local in the marly margin of a developing beach-pool bog. West of Cecil.

Drosera linearis Goldie. E.
In a beach pool west of Cecil.

211. Hamamelidaceae (Witch Hazel Family)

Hamamelis virginiana L. Witch Hazel. E.* C.
In the gorge and in the aspens east of the gorge; infrequent.

215. Lythraceae (Loosestrife Family)

Decodon verticillatus (L.) Ell. Swamp Loosestrife or Willow-herb. E.* C.
At the outer edge of vegetation around parts of Vincent Lake, the north and south ends of Munro Lake, and in the northeast part of Lancaster Lake. Has been transferred to Douglas Lake, but without success. Aerenchymous tissue well developed.

223. Oenotheraceae (Evening Primrose Family)

Isnardia palustris L. (*Ludvigia palustris* (L.) Ell.) Water Purslane. E. C.
A few patches along Bessey Creek, especially towards Lancaster Lake, on a grassy road west of Munro Lake, and along Maple River west of Pellston.

Chamaenerion angustifolium (L.) Scop. (*Epilobium angustifolium* L.) Fireweed. E. C.
The most abundant fireweed in the region, persisting in

many associations even to the dense beech-maple forest where however it seldom flowers. Cecil.

EPILOBIUM LINEARE Muhl. (*E. densum* Raf.) E.* C.
Occasional. Mud Lake bog and Pine Point.

EPILOBIUM STRICTUM Muhl. (*E. molle* Torr.) E.* C.
In the Mud Lake bog in a small stream.

EPILOBIUM ADENOCAULON Haussk. E. C.
As a fireweed in wet ground and in several wet ground associations. Cecil.

OENOTHERA BIENNIS L. Evening Primrose. E. C.
A ruderal and occasional in the aspens. Cecil.

OENOTHERA MURICATA L. Northern Evening Primrose. E. C.
Occasional as a ruderal and locally abundant on the ice-ridge of Douglas Lake near Camp Davis. Cecil.

OENOTHERA OAKESIANA Robbins. E.
Three plants in ballast at Cecil, 1921.

KNEIFFIA PUMILA (L.) Spach. (*Oenothera pumila* L.) C.
A single station in a small roadside bog north of North Fishtail, 1920 (Mrs. L. S. Ehlers).

CIRCAEA LUTETIANA L. Enchanter's Nightshade. E. C.
Fairly common in the beech-maple forest.

CIRCAEA INTERMEDIA Ehrh. C.
Beech-maple forests; uncommon.

CIRCAEA ALPINA L. E. C.
Very common in the Picea-Abies association in the gorge and in cedar bogs.

224. HALORAGIDACEAE (Water Milfoil Family)

HIPPURIS VULGARIS L. Mare's-tail. E. C.
In small quantities near an abandoned saw-mill at the head of Burt Lake, on the north shore of Lancaster Lake, Maple River west of Pellston and Crooked River. Aquatic.

PROSERPINACA PALUSTRIS L. (*P. palustris* var. *amblyogona* Fernald). Mermaid-weed. E. C.
Occasional in beach pools. Cecil.

MYRIOPHYLLUM SPICATUM L. Water-Milfoil. E. C.

In nearly all the strictly aquatic associations of lakes and streams of the region; especially abundant in the Potamogeton association.

MYRIOPHYLLUM HETEROPHYLLUM Michx. E. C.
A few plants in Crooked River near Alanson and in the mouth of Maple River.

232. CUCURBITACEAE (Gourd Family)

CITRULLUS CITRULLUS (L.) Karst. (*Citrullus vulgaris* Shrad.) Watermelon. C.
A few vines on the back strand at the tip of Colonial Point, 1921.

MICRAMPELIS LOBATA (Michx.) Greene. (*Echinocystis lobata* (Michx.) T. & G.) Wild Balsam-Apple. E. C.
Often cultivated as an ornamental in Pellston and persisting in some abandoned farm-yards near Burt Lake.

236. RHAMNACEAE (Buckthorn Family)

RHAMNUS ALNIFOLIA L'Hér. Alder-leaved Buckthorn. E. C.
In bog thickets, cedar bogs and in lowland woods. Cecil.

CEANOTHUS AMERICANUS L. New Jersey Tea. C.
Jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

CEANOTHUS OVATUS Desf. C.
Jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

237. VITACEAE (Grape Family)

VITIS VULPINA L. Grape. E. C.
In dune thickets along lakes and streams. Grapevine Point.

PARTHENOCISSUS QUINQUEFOLIA (L.) Planch. (*Psedera quinquefolia* (L.) Greene.) Virginia Creeper. E.* C.
Thickets and second-growth upland woods; not very common.

238. CELASTRACEAE (Staff-Tree Family)

EUONYMUS SP. C.
Ground shrub in beech-maple forests; never found in flower.

CELASTRUS SCANDENS L. Bittersweet. C.
A liana in beech-maple forests, especially those along Burt Lake. Abundant on Grapevine Point.

240. AQUIFOLIACEAE (Holly Family)

ILEX VERTICILLATA (L.) A. Gray. Virginia Winterberry, Holly. E. C.
In bog-thickets, especially abundant back of Sedge Point, and in Vestal's Bog. West of Pellston and Cecil.

NEMOPANTHUS MUCRONATA (L.) Trelease. Mountain Holly. E. C.
Frequent in bogs, but occasionally in aspens and beech-maple forests. Succeeding the Chamaedaphne association over considerable of Bryant's Bog. Cecil.

250. THYMELAEACEAE (Mezereum Family)

DIRCA PALUSTRIS L. Moosewood. E.* C.
Formerly a single bush in a beech-maple forest in North Fishtail Bay previous to lumbering in 1916–1917. A few bushes in the beech-maple forest on Colonial Point.

252. ELAEAGNACEAE (Oleaster Family)

LEPARGYRAEA CANADENSIS (L.) Greene. (*Shepherdia canadensis* (L.) Nutt.) Buffalo-berry. E. C.
Three stations in the aspens in the general vicinity of Douglas Lake, northwest of Lancaster Lake, but rather common between Cecil and Big Stone Bay.

254. SANTALACEAE (Sandalwood Family)

COMANDRA UMBELLATA (L.) Nutt. Bastard Toad-flax. E. C.
A very abundant secondary species in the aspens. Cecil.

COMANDRA LIVIDA Richards. E. C.
Twice found at the head of Burt Lake in Reese's Bog. Locally common on pine and heath dunes in Big Stone Bay.

258. Loranthaceae (Mistletoe Family)

Razoumofskya pusilla (Peck) Kuntze. (*Arceuthobium pusillum* Peck.) Dwarf Mistletoe. E. C.
Parasitic on *Picea mariana* (less frequently on Larix) in Bryant's, Mud Lake, Riggsville, and Vestal's bogs. In Big Stone Bay region also on *Picea canadensis.*

262. Aceraceae (Maple Family)

Acer saccharinum L. Soft Maple. E.* C.
A few trees, mostly large, along the shore of Douglas Lake.

Acer rubrum L. Red Maple. E. C.
One of the commonest species in the lowland woods and in other lowland and boggy situations, but also in the aspens and beech-maple woods. Cecil.

Acer saccharum Marsh. Sugar or Hard Maple. E. C.
Very common; a dominant tree in the beech-maple forests. Readily invades many associations. One of the most abundant trees of the region. Cecil.

Acer pennsylvanicum L. Striped Maple, Moosewood. E. C.
Occurring on the borders of bogs, but characteristically an undershrub in the beech-maple forest. Cecil.

Acer spicatum Lam. Mountain Maple. E. C.
Most abundant in the Picea-Abies association, but also very common in cedar and tamarack bogs and to a limited extent in the beech-maple forest. Cecil.

Acer negundo L. Box Elder. E. C.
A few trees planted in Pellston and in other towns.

268. Anacardiaceae (Sumac Family)

Rhus hirta (L.) Sudw. (*Rhus typhina* L.) Staghorn Sumac. E. C.
In the aspens; rare. West of Lancaster Lake, Cecil.

Rhus glabra L. Smooth Sumac. E. C.
A shrub present in the aspens, openings in different types of forests, and often abundant along roads and abandoned

fields in the better soils. Most of the plants belong to *Rhus glabra borealis* Britton.

TOXICODENDRON RADICANS (L.) Kuntze. (*Rhus radicans* L., *R. toxicodendron* L.) Poison Ivy. E. C.
In dune thickets, especially on the ice-ridge margining Douglas and Burt lakes. Occasionally in the beech-maple forest. Cecil.

269. JUGLANDACEAE (Walnut Family)

JUGLANS NIGRA L. Black Walnut. E.* C.
Planted along roads near Burt Lake and east from Munro Lake.

JUGLANS CINEREA L. Butternut. E.* C.
Planted along a roadway east from Munro Lake.

270. BETULACEAE (Birch Family)

OSTRYA VIRGINIANA (Mill.) Willd. (*O. virginiana* (Mill.) K. Koch.) Hop-Hornbeam. E. C.
A small tree; occasional in beech-maple forests.

CORYLUS ROSTRATA Ait. Beaked Hazelnut. E. C.
A shrub, very common in the aspens and in bog thickets.

BETULA PAPYRIFERA Marsh. (*B. alba* var. *papyrifera* (Marsh.) Spach.) Paper, Canoe or White Birch. E. C.
Abundant; a dominant species in the aspens, but occurring in other associations. Partial to back-shore conditions. Cecil.

BETULA SP. (possibly *B. lenta* L.) Cherry, or Sweet Birch. E.* C.
A few trees in the gorge.

BETULA LUTEA Michx. f. Yellow Birch. E. C.
Most abundant in the beech-maple forest, where it frequently grows to a very large tree, but also occurring in other tree associations. Cecil.

BETULA GLANDULOSA Michx. Glandular Birch. E. C.
Formerly in Smith's Bog, until burnt out in 1914. Occasional along West Maple River. Locally abundant in the southeastern part of Mud Lake bog and in bogs northwest of Ingleside.

ALNUS INCANA (L.) Willd. Alder. E. C.
A dominant shrub in the high bog-shrub association. Cecil.

271. FAGACEAE (Beech Family)

FAGUS GRANDIFOLIA Ehrh. Beech. E. C.
Common; a dominant tree in the beech-maple forest and occurring in other associations as an invader. Cecil.

QUERCUS RUBRA L. Red Oak. E.* C.
A few trees in the beech-maple forest on Colonial Point.

QUERCUS BOREALIS Michx. f. (included in *Q. rubra* L.) E. C.
A few old trees occur in beech-maple woods; seedlings, stump sprouts and young trees occur in other associations, especially in the aspens. Cecil.

QUERCUS VELUTINA Lam. Black Oak. E.* C.
Infrequent in the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

QUERCUS ALBA L. White Oak. E.* C.
A few trees along the street in Topinabee, at least one large tree on a hill north of Fontinalis Run, and occasional at the southern end of Burt Lake.

272. MYRICACEAE (Bayberry Family)

MYRICA GALE L. Sweet Gale. E. C.
A low shrub, dominating a bog association and remaining as a relict in willow-thickets and cedar bogs. With root tubercles. Cecil.

COMPTONIA PEREGRINA (L.) Coulter. (*Myrica asplenifolia* L.) Sweet Fern. C.
Locally in pine land aspens, especially west of the gorge; spreading. Also on the jack pine plains south of Burt lake.

275. ARALIACEAE (Ginseng Family)

ARALIA RACEMOSA L. American Spikenard. E. C.
In beech-maple woods and in cedar bogs. Cecil.

ARALIA NUDICAULIS L. Wild Sarsaparilla. E. C.
Most common in beech-maple forests, although very

common in cedar bogs, and in the Picea-Abies association, as well as in the aspens. Cecil.

ARALIA HISPIDA Vent. Bristly Sarsaparilla. E. C.
In the aspens, fireweed and bramble associations; common.

276. APIACEAE (AMMIACEAE or UMBELLIFERAE) (Carrot Family)

SANICULA MARYLANDICA L. Black Snake-root. E. C.
Occasional in the gorge and in beech-maple forests.

SANICULA GREGARIA Bicknell. C.
Occasional in cedar bogs.

SANICULA TRIFOLIATA Bicknell. C.
In a beech-maple forest on Colonial Point.

DAUCUS CAROTA L. Wild Carrot. E.
As a ruderal, but rare. Cultivated.

WASHINGTONIA CLAYTONI (Michx.) Britton. (*Osmorhiza Claytoni* (Michx.) Clarke.) Hairy Sweet-Cicely. E. C.
Occasional in beech-maple forests.

WASHINGTONIA LONGISTYLIS (Torr.) Britton. (*Osmorhiza longistylis* (Torr.) DC. Smooth Sweet-Cicely. E. C.
Occasional in beech-maple forests.

WASHINGTONIA DIVARICATA Britton. (*Osmorhiza divariata* Nutt.) E.
In a cedar bog west of Pellston.

PASTINACA SATIVA L. Wild Parsnip. E. C.
Occasional in thickets along Maple River and along streams emptying into Burt Lake. Cecil.

HERACLEUM LANATUM Michx. Cow Parsnip. E.* C.
In the beech-maple forest on Colonial Point; rare.

TAENIDIA INTEGERRIMA (L.) Drude. Yellow Pimpernel. E. C.
In the beech-maple forest on Colonial Point and west of Cecil.

HYDROCOTYLE UMBELLATA L. Marsh Pennywort. C.
In a cedar bog along Trout Creek, 1915 (F. T. MacFarland).

CONIUM MACULATUM L. Poison Hemlock. E.
Woodlot near Levering, 1920 (Ehlers).

Sium cicutaefolium Schrank. Hemlock Water Parsnip. E. C.
Occasional in marshes along streams, Bessey Creek, Maple River.

Cicuta maculata L. Cicuta. E. C.
Meadows and thickets along streams; not common. Cecil.

Cicuta bulbifera L. E. C.
Occasional, especially in burnt-over cedar bogs. Cecil.

277. Cornaceae (Dogwood Family)

Cornus rugosa Lam. (*C. circinata* L'Hér.) Round-leaved Dogwood. E. C.
Most abundant in the aspens, but occurs also in the tamarack, beech-maple and bramble associations. Cecil.

Cornus Amomum Mill. E.* C.
Sandy shores of Douglas Lake.

Cornus Baileyi Coult. & Evans. E. C.
Occasional in thickets along the lake shores. Big Stone Bay.

Cornus stolonifera Michx. Red-osier Dogwood. E. C.
A dominant shrub in a thicket association and readily invading many wet-ground associations. Common. Cecil.

Cornus femina Mill. (*C. paniculata* L'Hér.) E.* C.
Occasional in the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

Cornus alternifolia L. f. E. C.
Occasional in beech-maple forests, or in the aspens following the burning of hardwoods. West of Pellston.

Chamaepericlymenum canadense (L.) Asch. & Graebn. (*Cornus canadensis* L.) E. C.
Very common in cedar bogs, especially along roads, but also rather plentiful in the beech-maple forest and in the aspens. Cecil.

278. Rubiaceae (Madder Family)

Mitchella repens L. Partridge-berry, Twin Berry. E. C.
Generally distributed in forest associations especially the beech-maple and the Picea-Abies associations. Cecil.

GALIUM LANCEOLATUM Torr. C.
Occasional in beech-maple forests, Grapevine Point.

GALIUM CIRCAEZANS Michx. Wild Liquorice. E.* C.
Occasional in thickets and in the beech-maple forest. Grapevine Point.

GALIUM BOREALE L. Northern Bedstraw. E. C.
In Myrica thickets west of Pellston and at Cecil. Previous to the fire of 1914, at Smith's Bog.

GALIUM TRIFLORUM Michx. E. C.
Generally distributed in wooded areas; common.

GALIUM TINCTORIUM L. E.* C.
Rare in bogs.

GALIUM LABRADORICUM Wiegand. C.
In Sphagnum at the Mud Lake Bog.

GALIUM TRIFIDUM L. Bedstraw. E. C.
Frequent in various bog and wet-ground associations.

GALIUM CLAYTONI Michx. C.
In a bog back from Sedge Point.

GALIUM CONCINNUM Torr. & Gray. C.
In a wooded area bordering Burt Lake.

GALIUM ASPRELLUM Michx. E.
In a creek bottom west of Pellston.

279. CAPRIFOLIACEAE (Honeysuckle Family)

SAMBUCUS CANADENSIS L. Common Elder. E. C.
Not common; in willow-thickets along Maple River and Bessey Creek and in farm-yards. Becoming more frequent. Cecil.

SAMBUCUS RACEMOSUS L. Red-berried Elder. E. C.
Abundant, in willow-thickets, brambles and suitable places in the beech-maple forest and in aspens. Cecil.

VIBURNUM OPULUS L. (*V. Opulus* L. var. *americanum* (Mill.) Ait.) Cranberry-tree. E. C.
Occasional in bogs and willow-thickets along streams. Cecil.

VIBURNUM ACERIFOLIUM L. Maple-leaved Arrow-wood. E.* C.
Occasional in the aspens and in the gorge.

VIBURNUM CASSINOIDES L. E. C.
Abundant in thickets on the borders of bogs.

VIBURNUM LENTAGO L. Nanny-berry. E. C.
Infrequent in rich soil along streams.

LINNAEA AMERICANA Forbes. (*L. borealis americana* (Forbes) Rehder.) Twin-flower. E. C.
Abundant in cedar bogs, especially so in openings along roadways through them. Cecil.

LONICERA HIRSUTA Eaton. Hairy Honeysuckle. E.* C.
Occasional in bogs.

LONICERA GLAUCESCENS Rydb. E.* C.
Found in a cedar bog and in the beech-maple forest.

LONICERA DIOICA L. E. C.
In thickets and bogs along streams; common. Cecil.

LONICERA OBLONGIFOLIA (Goldie) Hook. Swamp Fly-Honeysuckle. E. C.
Occasional in bogs. West of Pellston.

LONICERA CANADENSIS Marsh. American Fly-Honeysuckle. E.* C.
Occasional in beech-maple woods and becoming more frequent in the aspens.

LONICERA TATARICA L. Bush Honeysuckle. E.
Cultivated shrub in Pellston.

DIERVILLA DIERVILLA (L.) MacM. (*D. Lonicera* Mill.) Bush Honeysuckle. E. C.
One of the most abundant species in the aspens, but occurring also in the beech-maple forest and in cedar bogs, with modified leaves in the shade. Cecil.

281. VALERIANACEAE (Valerian Family)

VALERIANA ULIGINOSA (T. & G.) Rybd. E.
Abundant in a tamarack-spruce-cedar bog west of Pellston.

VALERIANA OFFICINALIS L. Garden Valerian. C.
Cultivated in a yard along Burt Lake.

283. Campanulaceae (Bellflower Family)

Campanula rotundifolia L. Harebell. E. C.
Common on dunes and in meadows in swales along Lake Michigan in Cecil and Big Stone bays. Jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

Campanula rapunculoides L. C.
A few patches along roads in Riggsville and north of North Fishtail Bay.

Campanula aparinoides Pursh. Bedstraw Bellflower. E. C.
Occasional in bog and marsh associations in the open.

Campanula uliginosa Rydb. E. C.
Infrequent in bog and marsh associations.

Specularia perfoliata (L.) A. DC. Venus' Looking-glass. C.
Infrequent in a field near Ingleside and along the state road in the aspens south of Camp Davis.

Lobelia cardinalis L. Cardinal Flower. E. C.
In marsh associations in beach pools and along streams and persisting into thickets; frequent. Cecil.

Lobelia cardinalis alba. C.
A few plants in the Iris association along Maple River just west of its source in Douglas Lake.

Lobelia siphilitica L. Blue Lobelia. E.* C.
Grassy areas near Bessey Creek and at the head of Burt Lake; infrequent.

Lobelia spicata Lam. C.
Swampy area in the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

Lobelia Kalmii L. E. C.
Frequent in beach-pool associations. Cecil.

287–300. COMPOSITAE (Composite Family)

287. Helianthaceae

Silphium laciniatum L. Compass Plant. C.
A few plants in a former garden along Burt Lake, brought in from Kansas several years ago, flourished during the life

of the settler (to 1916), but since has been gradually disappearing in competition with *Asclepias syriaca* and grasses.

SILPHIUM TEREBINTHINACEUM Jacq. C.

A few plants in the same garden as the preceding and with the same status.

HELIOPSIS SCABRA Dunal. E. C.

A few stations along roadsides and in meadows. West of Pellston and on Temperance Point.

RUDBECKIA HIRTA L. Black-Eyed Susan. E. C.

In the aspens and along roads; becoming more frequent. Cecil.

HELIANTHUS ANNUUS L. Common Sunflower. E.* C.

Occasional along roads near farm houses. As a weed in a corn field in 1918 and in an abandoned road in the center of Wolff's Bog in 1920.

HELIANTHUS SCABERRIMUS Ell. E.

A few plants in a mill-yard in Pellston, 1917 (Gleason). Brutus.

HELIANTHUS SUBRHOMBOIDEUS Rydb. C.

A fair-sized patch in an abandoned farm near Mud Lake.

HELIANTHUS OCCIDENTALIS Riddell. C.

Rather common in the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

HELIANTHUS MAXIMILIANI Schrad. E.

A few plants in a mill-yard in Pellston, 1917; also rare along roads.

HELIANTHUS TUBEROSUS L. Jerusalem Artichoke. C.

Occasional in the aspens on Grapevine Point.

COREOPSIS LANCEOLATA L. E.

In marshy meadows around boggy areas west of Cecil and on established dunes westward. Previous to 1918, abundant in a sandy clearing towards Big Stone Bay, but then destroyed by cultivation.

BIDENS CERNUA L. Bur Marigold. E. C.

Fairly common in wet places.

BIDENS CONNATA Muhl. C.

Occasional in wet places, especially beach pools.

BIDENS COMOSA (A. Gray) Wiegand. E. C.
Occasional in wet places. Stems sometimes partly purple.

BIDENS FRONDOSA L. Beggar-ticks, Stick-tight. E.
In wet places.

BIDENS VULGATA Greene. E. C.
In wet places; occasional as a fireweed in wet ground.

MEGALODONTA BECKII (Torr.) Greene. (*Bidens Beckii* Torr.) Water Marigold. E. C.
Locally abundant in a few places in Maple River near its mouth and in Crooked River.

288. AMBROSIACEAE

IVA XANTHIIFOLIA Nutt. (*I. xanthifolia* Nutt.) E. C.
Local in at least three places near Levering, west of Pellston, near Lancaster Lake and Big Stone Bay.

AMBROSIA TRIFIDA L. Giant Ragweed. E.
Shore of Lake Michigan in Big Stone Bay near a dwelling.

AMBROSIA ELATIOR L. (*A. artemisiaefolia* L.) Ragweed. E. C.
Ruderal and grain-field weed.

AMBROSIA PSILOSTACHYA DC. Western Ragweed. E. C.
Infrequent, but locally abundant along roads and in fields.

XANTHIUM SP? Cocklebur. E.
A few small plants near a hog-pen in Big Stone Bay, without flowers or fruit.

289. HELENIACEAE

GAILLARDIA ARISTATA Pursh. E. C.
Found in 1920 near Carp Lake (J. H. & L. S. Ehlers). Cultivated in Riggsville, 1923.

287–300. COMPOSITAE (292. INULACEAE)

ANTENNARIA CANADENSIS Greene. E. C.
Frequent in the aspens, especially in the drier places.

ANTENNARIA PLANTAGINIFOLIA (L.) Richards. E.* C.
In the aspens; infrequent.

ANTENNARIA NEODIOICA Greene. E. C.
Frequent in the aspens, especially west of Douglas Lake.

ANTENNARIA NEGLECTA Greene. (including *A. petaloidea* Fernald. C.
Found in 1915.

ANAPHALIS MARGARITACEA (L.) Benth. and Hook. Pearly Everlasting. E. C.
Rather frequent; in brambles, the aspens and cedar bogs. Cecil.

GNAPHALIUM OBTUSIFOLIUM L. (*G. polycephalum* Michx.) Fragrant Life Everlasting. E. C.
Occasional in the aspens, jack pine plains south of Burt Lake and at Cecil.

GNAPHALIUM DECURRENS Ives. Clammy Everlasting. E. C.
Frequent in the aspens.

GNAPHALIUM ULIGINOSUM L. E. C.
Along roads through bogs or in other wet places in burnt-over areas. Cecil.

INULA HELENIUM L. C.
A patch along a road west of Lancaster Lake.

293. ASTERACEAE

GRINDELIA SQUARROSA (Pursh) Dunal. Tarweed. E. C.
About a dozen clumps along a road east of Pellston in 1920; spreading extensively eastward along that road; a few plants in a field bordering the east side of Lancaster Lake, 1923 (J. H. Ehlers).

SOLIDAGO CAESIA L. E.* C.
Beech-maple forest on Colonial Point.

SOLIDAGO FLEXICAULIS L. (*S. latifolia* L.) Goldenrod. E.* C.
Occasional in the beech-maple forest.

SOLIDAGO HISPIDA Muhl. E. C.
Very common in the aspens. Cecil.

SOLIDAGO ULIGINOSA Nutt. Bog Goldenrod. E. C.
Local in tamarack and cedar bogs. Mud Lake and Cecil.

SOLIDAGO RIGIDIUSCULA (T. & G.) Porter. (*S. speciosa* var. *angustata* T. & G.) C.
Common on the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

SOLIDAGO GILLMANI (A. Gray) Steele. (*S. racemosa* var. *gillmani* (Gray) Fernald.) E.
On dunes along Lake Michigan in the Big Stone Bay region.

SOLIDAGO RUGOSA Mill. E. C.
Mostly in burnt parts of cedar bogs, especially along roads in such places. Gorge, Cecil. Var. *villosa* (Pursh) Fernald in a swamp in the jack pine planes south of Burt Lake.

SOLIDAGO JUNCEA Aiton. E.* C.
In the aspens westward of Camp Davis and on the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

SOLIDAGO CANADENSIS L. E. C.
Common as a fireweed, occurring also in associations of dry sandy land, especially in the aspens and in the brambles. Occasional as a ruderal. Cecil.

SOLIDAGO SEROTINA Ait. E.* C.
In the Iris association along Maple River.

SOLIDAGO ALTISSIMA L. E.* C.
In the Iris association along Maple River.

SOLIDAGO NEMORALIS Ait. E.* C.
Common on the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake, occasional in the pine land southeast of Bryant's.

SOLIDAGO OHIOENSIS Riddell. E.
Common in the marshy meadows bordering boggy areas just west of Cecil. Big Stone Bay.

SOLIDAGO HOUGHTONII T. & G. E.
Swamps in Big Stone Bay.

EUTHAMIA GRAMINIFOLIA (L.) Nutt. (*Solidago graminifolia* (L.) Salisb.) E. C.
Common in Myrica and willow-thickets and in a few of the wet beach associations, as the *Scirpus americanus*. Cecil.

ASTER MACROPHYLLUS L. Large-leaved Aster. E. C.
Beech-maple forest, aspens, and cedar bogs. Cecil and Big Stone Bay region; abundant. Var. *sejunctus* Burgess occurs in the Burt Lake beech-maple forests.

ASTER NOVAE-ANGLIAE L. E.* C.
Occasional as a fireweed and in willow-thickets.

ASTER PUNICEUS L. E. C.
In cedar bogs, in openings and in roadside ditches.

ASTER LAEVIS L. Smooth Aster. E. C.
A very common secondary species in the aspens. Cecil.

ASTER JUNCEUS Ait. Rush Aster. E. C.
Common in bogs and other wet-ground associations along lakes and streams. Cecil.

ASTER LATERIFLORUS (L.) Britton. E. C.
Occasional in wet ground in ditches, along streams and in bogs. Cecil.

ASTER HIRSUTICAULIS Lindl. (A. *lateriflorus* var. *hirsuticaulis* (Lindl.) Porter). C.
Wet ground near Munro Lake.

ASTER MULTIFLORUS Ait. C.
In a roadside ditch in North Fishtail Bay.

ASTER TRADESCANTI L. E.* C.
Occasional in wet ground.

ERIGERON PULCHELLUS Michx. C.
Found in a burnt-over cedar bog in 1911 (Gates).

ERIGERON PHILADELPHICUS L. Philadelphia Fleabane. E. C.
As a ruderal and common in many wet-ground associations. Cecil.

ERIGERON ANNUUS (L.) Pers. Daisy Fleabane. E.* C.
A ruderal; occasional.

ERIGERON RAMOSUS (Walt.) B. S. P. E. C.
A common ruderal and frequent in the aspens.

LEPTILON CANADENSE (L.) Britton. (*Erigeron canadensis* L.) Horseweed. E. C.
A common fireweed; also very abundant in the aspens.

295. EUPATORIACEAE

EUPATORIUM MACULATUM L. (*E. purpureum* var. *maculatum* (L.) Darl.) E. C.
A dominant species in the Iris association; occasionally very abundant, as at the source of Bessey Creek.

EUPATORIUM PURPUREUM L. Joe-pye Weed. E. C.
A dominant species in the Iris association and occurring in many other associations of wet ground, including thickets and cedar bogs. Cecil.

EUPATORIUM PERFOLIATUM L. Boneset. E. C.
Dominant in the Iris association, but occurring in many of the other wet-ground associations, as well as in some bramble areas. Common. Cecil.

LACINARIA CYLINDRACEA (Michx.) Kuntze. (*Liatris cylindracea* Michx.) Blazing Star. C.
Locally abundant on the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

296. ANTHEMIDACEAE

ACHILLEA MILLEFOLIUM L. Yarrow. E. C.
A common ruderal and common in the aspens. Cecil. Flowers infrequently pink.

ANTHEMIS COTULA L. Mayweed. E. C.
Ruderal. Cecil.

ANTHEMIS ARVENSIS L. C.
A few plants along a road near a farm-house east of North Fishtail.

CHRYSANTHEMUM LEUCANTHEMUM L. (*C. Leucanthemum* var. *pinnatifidum* Lecoq & Lamotte.) Ox-eye Daisy. E. C.
Ruderal and frequent in the aspens. Cecil.

CHRYSANTHEMUM PARTHENIUM (L.) Pers. Feverfew. C.
Roadside between Munro and Mud lakes.

CHRYSANTHEMUM BALSAMITA L. (*C. Balsamita* var. *tanacetoides* Boiss.) Mint Geranium. C.
Roadsides, usually in the vicinity of farm-houses.

TANACETUM VULGARE L. Tansy. E.* C.
Local along roads in the vicinity of farm-houses, infrequent. Colonial Point.

TANACETUM HURONENSE Nutt. E.
Common on sand-dunes along Lake Michigan in Cecil and Big Stone bays.

Artemisia caudata Michx. E.
Common on dunes along Lake Michigan in Cecil and Big Stone bays.

Artemisia Absinthium L. Absinth. E.* C.
Roadsides.

Artemisia annua L. Wormwood. E.
Collected in the mill-yard in Pellston, 1917 (H. A. Gleason).

Artemisia biennis Willd. E.
Roadsides west of Pellston. Big Stone Bay.

Artemisia Stelleriana Bess. E.
Cultivated in a garden in Pellston and persisting after abandonment.

Artemisia vulgaris L. Common Mugwort. C.
A patch along a road near Mud Lake.

297. Senecionidaceae

Petasites palmata (Ait.) Gray. E. C.
A few plants in Reese's Bog, Riggsville Bog, west of Lancaster Lake and west of Pellston, but more common along boggy areas and in pine woods west of Cecil.

Erechtites hieracifolia (L.) Raf. Fireweed. E. C.
A common fireweed, but quite local in its distribution; most frequently found following burns of beech-maple forests. Cecil.

Senecio aureus L. Golden Ragwort. E. C.
In a ditch along the railroad near Cecil and along Carp Creek in the gorge.

Senecio pauperculus Michx. (*Senecio balsamitae* Muhl.) E. C.
Occasional in the aspens, best developed in low spots. Specimens in dry years approach *S. plattensis* Nutt.

298. Carduaceae

Arctium minus Schk. (*Arctium minus* (Hill) Bernh.) Burdock. E. C.
Ruderal and farm-yard weed; rarely in the aspens. Cecil.

CIRSIUM LANCEOLATUM (L.) Hill. Common Thistle. E. C.
A ruderal; not common. Cecil.

CIRSIUM PITCHERI (Torr.) T. & G. E. C.
Fairly common and characteristic of Ammophila dunes and infrequently on the strand in Cecil and Big Stone bays.

CIRSIUM UNDULATUM (Nutt.) Spreng. E.
A few plants in the mill-yard in Pellston, 1917 (H. A. Gleason).

CIRSIUM HILLII (Canby) Fernald. C.
On the jack pine plains south of Burt Lake.

CIRSIUM MUTICUM Michx. Swamp Thistle. E. C.
Occasional in wet places in the bramble association, but more commonly along streams through cedar bogs, or through willow-thickets; gorge. Cecil.

CIRSIUM ARVENSE (L.) Scop. Canada Thistle. E. C.
A ruderal and in the aspens, becoming locally abundant. White-flowered plants have been found. Cecil.

300. LACTUCACEAE

CICHORIUM INTYBUS L. Chicory. E. C.
A ruderal becoming more frequent in the vicinity of farm-houses; Riggsville, Cheboygan, etc. Cecil.

TRAGOPOGON PRATENSIS L. Yellow Salsify. E. C.
Ruderal; Pellston, east side of Burt Lake; infrequent.

TRAGOPOGON PORRIFOLIUS L. Purple Oyster Plant. E. C.
A ruderal; east side of Burt Lake; rare.

TARAXACUM VULGARE (Lam.) Schrank. (*T. officinale* Weber, *Leontodon Taraxacum* L.) Dandelion. E. C.
Ruderal, etc. Fairly common in the aspens. Cecil.

SONCHUS ASPER (L.) Hill. Sow-thistle. E. C.
Ruderal and farm-yard weed; infrequent.

LACTUCA VIROSA L. (*Lactuca scariola* L.) Prickly Lettuce. E.* C.
Ruderal; uncommon.

LACTUCA VIROSA INTEGRATA Gren. & Godr. C.
Ruderal and a field weed; not common.

LACTUCA CANADENSIS L. Wild Lettuce. E. C.

A common ruderal and rather abundant in the aspens. Also as a fireweed. Cecil.

LACTUCA SAGITTIFOLIA Ell. (*L. integrifolia* Bigel.) E.* C.
Occasional as a ruderal and a fireweed.

LACTUCA PULCHELLA (Pursh) DC. C.
Found by Gleason in 1911; ruderal.

LACTUCA SPICATA (Lam.) Hitchcock. Tall Blue Lettuce. E.* C.
Occasional in beech-maple forests, tamarack and cedar bogs. Var. INTEGRIFOLIA (A. Gray) Britton occurs in a beech-maple forest.

HIERACIUM CANADENSE Michx. Hawkweed. E.* C.
Fairly frequent in the aspens.

HIERACIUM PANICULATUM L. C.
Infrequent in the aspens — the plants with glandular pedicels.

HIERACIUM SCABRUM Michx. E. C.
Fairly common in the aspens and in thickets.

HIERACIUM GRONOVII L. C.
Rare; in the aspens.

HIERACIUM VENOSUM L. E. C.
An abundant secondary species in the aspens. Cecil.

HIERACIUM PRATENSE Tausch. Field Hawkweed. C.
Three plants found by F. M. Loew in a beech-maple area in 1911.

HIERACIUM AURANTIACUM L. Orange Hawkweed. E. C.
Occasional along roads and in the aspens on the better soils, whether upland or lowland. Becoming more common. More conspicuous some years than others.

NABALUS ALBUS (L.) Hook. (*Prenanthes alba* L.) Rattlesnake-root. E.* C.
Infrequent on low ground in thickets.

NABALUS RACEMOSUS (Michx.) DC. (*Prenanthes racemosa* Michx.) E. C.
Occasional in the aspens. In low ground west of Cecil. Colonial Point.

BIBLIOGRAPHY OF THE FLORA OF THE DOUGLAS LAKE REGION

(In the bibliography which follows we have included, for the sake of completeness and convenience of reference, not only the papers pertaining to the higher plants, but also those pertaining to the lower cryptogams, although the latter plants are not included in the list.)

Bonar, Lee. 1918. The Rusts of the Douglas Lake Region. Report Mich. Acad. Sci., 20: 277–278.

Ehlers, J. H. 1921. *Panicum virgatum*, var. *cubense* in Michigan. Rhodora, 23: 200.

Fallass, Charles W., and Swift, Charles H. A List of Plants (Pteridophytes, Gymnosperms and Angiosperms) Found in Emmet County, Michigan. (*Unpublished*)

Gates, F. C. 1911. An Addition to the Description of *Streptopus longipes*, Fernald. Rhodora, 13: 237.

—— 1912. The Vegetation of the Region in the Vicinity of Douglas Lake, Cheboygan County, Michigan, 1911. Report Mich. Acad. Sci., 14: 46–106. Pls. V–XXI.

—— 1922. Extensions of Range of Plants in the Douglas Lake Region, Cheboygan County, Michigan. Papers of the Mich. Acad. of Sci., Arts and Letters, 2: 47–48.

—— The Vegetation of the Region of Douglas Lake, Michigan. (*In preparation*)

Gleason, Henry Allen. 1913. Some Interesting Plants from the Vicinity of Douglas Lake. Report Mich. Acad. Sci., 15: 147–149.

—— 1918. Notes on the Introduced Flora of the Douglas Lake Region. Report Mich. Acad. Sci., 20: 153. (*Abstract*)

—— 1918. Local Distribution of Introduced Species near Douglas Lake, Michigan. Torreya, 18: 81–89.

Gleason, Henry Allen, and McFarland, Frank T. 1914. The Introduced Vegetation in the Vicinity of Douglas Lake, Mich. Bull. Torrey Bot. Club, 41: 511–521.

Harper, Roland M. 1914. Car-window Notes on the Vegetation of the Upper Peninsula (of Michigan). Report Mich. Acad. Sci., 15: 193–198.

—— 1918. The Plant Population of Northern Lower Michigan and its Environment. Bull. Torrey Bot. Club, 45: 23–42.

Holman, R. M., and Reed, E. 1918. Notes on the Phytoplankton and Other Algae of Douglas Lake and Vicinity. Report Mich. Acad. Sci., 20: 153–154. (*Abstract*)

McFarland, Frank T. 1916. The Ferns and their Distribution at Douglas Lake, Mich. Amer. Fern Journ., 6: 106–112.

Nichols, G. E. 1922. The Bryophytes of Michigan with Particular Reference to the Douglas Lake Region. The Bryologist, 25: 41–58. May, 1922.

Praeger, W. E. 1919. A Collection of Sphagnales from Douglas Lake. Report Mich. Acad. Sci., 21: 237–238, 1919.

Transeau, Edgar N. 1917. The Algae of Michigan. The Ohio Journ. of Sci., 17: 217–232.

THE STRUCTURE OF THE MAPLE–BEECH ASSOCIATION IN NORTHERN MICHIGAN

HENRY ALLAN GLEASON

INTRODUCTION

The northern part of the Lower Peninsula of Michigan was originally occupied chiefly by two plant associations, the one characterized by Norway pine and white pine, and the other by sugar maple and beech. Only a small proportion of the area was held by the numerous minor associations which constitute the varied vegetation of bogs, swamps, shores, and dunes. Of these two important associations, the pine forest was composed chiefly of northern species, which in this region were near or at their southern limit, while the hardwood forest of beech, elm, basswood, sugar maple, and other deciduous trees included chiefly southern species, which found their northern limit of distribution here or a comparatively short distance farther north.

Abundant evidence has been brought forward to show that the pine forests are a part of a great series of associations which have been closely related to one another since pre-glacial time, which are connected by certain definite successional trends, and which occupy the same general range, extending in a broad belt across the continent from Alaska to Newfoundland. The hardwood forest is, similarly, a part of another great vegetation-complex, occupying most of the land between the Missouri Valley and the Atlantic Ocean and between the Great Lakes and the southern end of the Appalachian Mountain system. It has also been shown for this portion of Michigan, and the same condition is doubtless true for many other regions as well, that there is great competition between the various associations of these two complexes wherever they come in contact, and that

in general the associations of the southern complex tend to displace those of the northern. This was early demonstrated by Whitford (1901) and needs no further discussion here. Again, it seems entirely probable that this present tendency is only the continuation of a similar competition between the two types of vegetation which has existed since shortly after the close of the last glacial period, the general result of which (Gleason, 1923) has been the retreat northward of the pine forests and the associations related to them for some three hundred or four hundred miles and the corresponding advance of the hardwood forest for the same distance.

Numerous papers have appeared during the past two decades dealing with the general ecology and distribution of these two types of vegetation. Two of the more recent are those by Clayberg (1920), who well describes the environment and the life-history of the maple-beech forest and its relations to the other associations of the region, and by Quick (1924), who discusses the general distribution of the association throughout the Lower Peninsula of Michigan. Both authors cite the important earlier papers in their bibliographies.

No paper, however, has so far presented a full statement of the floristic structure of this exceedingly important association. Since it is rapidly disappearing before the encroachment of the lumberman, it seems highly desirable to put on record an account of the component species and of their relative importance. During the summer of 1923, the writer accompanied Dr. Lee R. Dice, of the Zoölogical Museum of the University of Michigan, on a reconnaissance of some large tracts of virgin maple-beech forest, and to the observations made then he has added others made by him at various times and places in the same general region.

AREAS EXAMINED

1. A square mile of virgin forest on Section 13, Town 30 North, Range 5 West, in the extreme eastern end of Antrim County, bordering on Otsego County, about six miles east of

Alba. The whole surface is essentially flat and without surface drainage; soil sandy, allowing easy percolation of rain water; altitude about 1200 feet.

2. A square mile on Section 8, Town 30 North, Range 4 West, near the western end of Otsego County, about two miles northeast of Area 1 and with the same topography and soil.

3. A square mile on Section 17, Town 30 North, Range 4 West, in Otsego County, adjoining Area 2 on the south and with the same topography and soil.

4. A tract almost a square mile in extent on Section 35, Town 32 North, Range 4 West, in the eastern end of Charlevoix County, about eight miles north of Area 2. The surface is rolling, freely traversed by narrow ravines with gently sloping sides which carry flood waters only; soil sandy; altitude probably about 1000 feet and distinctly lower than the high morainic hills of the vicinity.

5. A small tract, not exceeding forty acres in extent, on the land of the State Game Refuge in Emmet County, about nine miles southwest of Mackinaw City, on an old beach of Lake Nipissing; soil sandy; surface level; altitude about 650 feet. The area is completely surrounded by coniferous forest, composed chiefly of arbor-vitae and balsam on the low ground of the same general level and of pine on the adjoining high fossil dunes.

METHOD

The composition of the dominant forest layer was determined by counting all the trees six inches or more in diameter on a strip about fifty feet wide extending across the area, and the results are here expressed in percentages. The frequency of the secondary species, including the herbs, shrubs, and seedling trees, was determined by listing every species in each of 100 quadrats one meter square. The results of this count are expressed by a percentage known as the frequency index, showing the percentage of the total quadrats examined (in this case 100 in each area) in which the species actually occurs. The quadrats were located in a strip, spaced ten paces apart, and the strip

is accordingly 1000 paces long, extending across the area, or back and forth in the small Area 5. Quadrats were in every case counted where they lay, no matter what might be the local conditions on each. Thus some were largely occupied by large trees, others by fallen logs, and others by dense thickets of shrubbery. Determination of the frequency index by this method is of course impartial: it indicates the important species, expresses the relative importance and commonness of each, and gives a basis of data upon which the total number of species may be calculated with a high degree of accuracy. In addition to these statistical observations, all other species of vascular plants were listed so far as noted.

In every plant association of considerable age and general uniformity of environment, of which the maple-beech forest is an excellent illustration, the vegetation attains also a great uniformity. A hundred quadrats, scattered widely over an area, are sure to include all the typical species and the frequency index shows their relative importance. Other species of minor importance may be represented by so few individuals that they are not included in any of the quadrats, but are noted elsewhere, while still others may escape attention completely unless every square foot of the area is searched. The number of these unobserved species may be estimated with great accuracy, since the increase in number of species from small tracts to large varies as the logarithm of the area.

In the following tables, the frequency index of each species is expressed in figures, the presence of a species outside the quadrats is indicated by x, and blanks indicate that the species was not observed in the area. The first table refers only to trees more than six inches in diameter, while reference to trees in the second table pertains only to seedlings and saplings. Scientific names follow the usage of Gray's *New Manual of Botany*, with the exception of certain species of Carex, for the identification of which the writer is under obligations to Mrs. John H. Ehlers.

TABLE I

COMPOSITION OF THE FOREST COVER

SPECIES	AREA			
	1	2	3	4
Acer Saccharum	91	75	75	48
Betula lutea	4	1	4	x
Fagus grandifolia	x	1	5	28
Ostrya virginiana	..	x	1	..
Tilia americana	1	4	1	1
Tsuga canadensis	x	1	5	3
Ulmus americana	4	18	9	20

TABLE II

FREQUENCY INDEX OF SECONDARY SPECIES

A. SPECIES NORMALLY ASSOCIATED WITH THE MAPLE-BEECH ASSOCIATION

SPECIES	AREA				
	1	2	3	4	5
Acer Saccharum	100	100	100	100	100
Acer spicatum	3	9	5	10	..
Actaea alba	x	x	..	..	3
Adiantum pedatum	1	4	x	9	..
Aralia nudicaulis	20	36	45	24	4
Aralia racemosa	x	..	x	1	..
Arisaema triphyllum	x	8	x	13	..
Asarum canadense	..	..	..	1	..
Aspidium spinulosum	44	41	67	38	..
Betula lutea	3	x	x	1	3
Botrychium virginianum	1	..	..	..	x
Brachyelytrum erectum	x	..	1	..	..
Carex arctata	1	..	4	3	..
Carex convoluta	..	..	..	x	..
Carex intumescens	4	3	1	x	..
Carex laxiflora latifolia	..	..	..	x	..
Carex leptonervia	..	..	1	..	2

TABLE II — *Continued*

FREQUENCY INDEX OF SECONDARY SPECIES

A. SPECIES NORMALLY ASSOCIATED WITH THE MAPLE-BEECH ASSOCIATION

SPECIES	AREA				
	1	2	3	4	5
Caulophyllum thalictroides.	x	x	x	x	..
Cornus alternifolia	1	1	x	x	..
Corylus rostrata	..	x	1	..	..
Cystopteris fragilis	..	..	1	x	x
Fagus grandifolia	x	2	5	70	14
Fraxinus americana	..	..	..	3	..
Galium triflorum	11	22	7	20	x
Geranium Robertianum	..	7	x	2	..
Hepatica acutiloba	..	..	..	2	..
Melica Smithii	..	1	x	5	..
Milium effusum	3	8	11	3	..
Mitella diphylla	..	..	..	x	..
Monotropa uniflora	..	..	..	..	1
Osmorhiza Claytoni	10	51	3	78	1
Ostrya virginiana	..	x	x	x	..
Oxalis Acetosella	..	..	x	..	..
Polygonatum biflorum	18	8	10	8	..
Psedera quinquefolia	..	..	..	3	..
Ribes Cynosbati	4	8	2	1	..
Sambucus racemosa	9	32	9	23	..
Smilacina racemosa	x	2	2	5	13
Streptopus roseus	3	x	6	..	..
Thalictrum dioicum	x	..	..	..	..
Tiarella cordifolia	59	50	40	20	..
Tilia americana	2	3	1	2	..
Trillium grandiflorum	3	x	5	7	3
Ulmus americana	22	21	23	18	..
Ulmus fulva	x	..	..	..	..
Viburnum acerifolium	1	x	..	..	..
Viola scabriuscula	28	59	13	41	..

TABLE II — *Continued*

B. SPECIES NORMALLY ASSOCIATED WITH CONIFEROUS FORESTS, EITHER OF BOG OR OF UPLAND

SPECIES	Area				
	1	2	3	4	5
Abies balsamea	..	..	..	..	x
Aster macrophyllus	..	..	1	..	x
Circaea intermedia	..	1	..	1	..
Clintonia borealis	..	..	x	..	1
Cornus canadensis	..	..	..	..	x
Lonicera canadensis	1	1	4	x	4
Lycopodium annotinum	..	..	..	..	12
Maianthemum canadense	2	3	14	5	13
Mitchella repens	2	3	5	5	35
Pinus Strobus	..	..	x	..	..
Pyrola americana	..	..	..	..	x
Pyrola secunda	..	..	..	..	4
Streptopus amplexifolius	x	..	..	..	..
Taxus canadensis	x	6	2	x	25
Trientalis americana	2	..	4	..	41
Trillium cernuum	x	..	..	..	..

C. SPECIES NORMALLY ASSOCIATED WITH THE ASPEN FOREST

SPECIES	Area				
	1	2	3	4	5
Acer pennsylvanicum	..	..	..	x	14
Acer rubrum	x	..	..	..	..
Diervilla Lonicera	..	..	1	.	..
Hamamelis virginiana	..	..	x	..	..
Lactuca spicata	x	x	..	x	..
Oryzopsis asperifolia	..	..	x	..	..
Polygonum cilinode	..	x	..	..	..
Prunus virginiana	1	..	x	x	x
Rubus allegheniensis	4	2	21	..	..
Rubus idaeus aculeatissimus	..	16	..	..	..

TABLE II — *Concluded*

D. MISCELLANEOUS OR UNIDENTIFIED SPECIES

SPECIES	Area				
	1	2	3	4	5
Asplenium filix-femina	..	..	..	..	x
Carex sp	..	..	..	..	x
Corallorhiza sp	..	..	..	..	x
Prunus serotina	x	x	2	..	..
Viola sp	10	9	1	..	x

GENERAL DISCUSSION

A survey of the preceding tables reveals some interesting conditions and enables us to draw certain conclusions respecting the ecology of this association. A summary of the statistical matter may first be presented. The total number of species observed is 79, of which 78 occur as secondary species in the ground cover, and 7 are trees which at maturity form the forest cover. Other species of trees are represented, of which mature individuals were not observed. Hemlock is the single arborescent species of which young plants were not detected.

The average number of secondary species per meter quadrat is 2.93 in Area 5, and varies from 3.73 to 5.17 in Areas 1 to 4. The probable total number of species for a square mile of the association is computed to range from 84 in Area 1 to 100 in Area 3, and the total flora of the association in the northern part of the Lower Peninsula probably does not exceed 200 species, excluding those recently introduced as a result of grazing, partial clearing, occasional fires, or other human activities.

The allotment of species among the four ecological groups may be open to criticism. As they stand, however, the first, containing the species considered to be normal to the maple-beech association, includes 23 species represented in four or all of the five areas, and 24 species limited to three areas or fewer. Groups B and C, containing the casual species, include only five

of general distribution through four or all of the areas, and 21 restricted to three areas or fewer, and two-thirds of these are reported from a single area only. The average frequency index of the species in Group A is 13; Group B, 5; Group C, 3; Group D, 2. Within Group A, those species which are represented in four or five areas have an average frequency of 18, which sinks to 1 for the species limited to three or fewer areas.

Twenty-three species are accordingly indicated by the tables as the characteristic species of the association, distinguished not only by wide distribution among the areas, but also by high frequency indexes within the areas. These species are as follows:

TREES

Acer Saccharum
Betula lutea
Fagus grandifolia
Tilia americana
Ulmus americana

SHRUBS

Acer spicatum
Cornus alternifolia
Ribes Cynosbati
Sambucus racemosa

HERBS

Adiantum pedatum
Aralia nudicaulis
Arisaema triphyllum
Aspidium spinulosum
Carex intumescens
Caulophyllum thalictroides
Galium triflorum
Milium effusum
Osmorhiza Claytoni
Polygonatum biflorum
Smilacina racemosa
Tiarella cordifolia
Trillium grandiflorum
Viola scabriuscula

It is probable that other prevernal species belong in this category, but these plants had completed their vegetative cycle and disappeared above ground before August, when this survey was made.

A high frequency index necessarily requires a large number of individuals, and it is generally true that the number of individuals of any species is an indication of the degree of its adaption to the environment. These twenty-three species are accordingly distinguished, in general, as the ones best fitted to live and multiply in the prevailing environment and under the strenuous competition of the maple-beech forest. Some of them have a uniformly high frequency index, as *Acer Saccharum*, *Aspidium spinulosum*,

and *Tiarella cordifolia*; others are very constant in their abundance, as *Ulmus americana*, but a few show striking variations in frequency, as *Osmorhiza Claytoni* and *Fagus grandifolia*. In the latter cases, the variation is too great to be ascribed merely to chance, and a causal difference in environment is suggested. The nature of these environmental differences, if they exist, cannot be accurately determined except by experimental methods, but there is good reason, in the case of *Fagus grandifolia* at least, for believing that soil moisture is the controlling factor.

In Areas 1, 2, and 3 the terrain is high and level. Rain-water percolates into the ground at once and doubtless reaches a considerable depth, later to emerge in springs around the margin of the plateau on which these areas are situated. In these three areas beech is relatively rare, especially in the seedling stage. But in Area 4, situated on rolling ground at a lower elevation and probably better supplied by water by seepage, seedling beech is abundant and mature trees constitute a considerable part of the forest. In a tract of hardwoods on the northwest shore of Burt Lake, where subterranean water seeps out into several boggy spots, mature beeches constitute 42 per cent of the forest, and the frequency index of seedlings rises to 43. Along a bluff west of Douglas Lake, now cleared, beech originally composed 28 per cent of the forest cover. During the dry summer of 1923, it was very evident that beech seedlings were suffering from drought in the first three areas, while in Area 4 they showed no sign of such injury. It is probably safe to conclude that the proportion of beech in the association depends chiefly on the amount of available water.

Hemlock is present in all five areas in a small and rather variable amount, but hemlock seedlings were not observed. Records by Dr. Frank C. Gates or by the writer, extending over a period of thirteen years at the Biological Station of the University of Michigan in Cheboygan County, indicate that reproduction of hemlock is very rare, and the general deficiency of hemlock saplings shows that this condition has prevailed for many years. Almost all hemlock trees in the hardwood forests of the region are veterans. After their death, which may be

expected in a comparatively short time, hemlock will practically disappear as a component of the association. On the other hand, conditions were undoubtedly favorable for the establishment of hemlock some three centuries ago, when the present veterans were seedlings. Such a period is too short to expect any fundamental climatic variation to have taken place, and it is more plausible to assume tentatively that the chief environmental change has been caused by the vegetation itself. The forest cover has a great effect on the environment of the ground vegetation, through its control of light, through its effect on the physical nature of the soil by the addition of fallen vegetable matter and the chemical nature by the decomposition of twigs and leaves, and through its control of the soil fauna and flora. Whatever the vegetation of three hundred years ago may have been, it evidently produced an environment in which hemlock seeds could germinate and grow, and that is not true of the present forest cover of maple and beech.

If the general successional relations of the coniferous and deciduous forests, as described by Whitford, are conceded, it follows that, in general, the youngest part of the deciduous forest is near its margin where it comes in contact with the earlier coniferous associations, and that small detached bodies of hardwood are generally younger than those of large extent. Areas 1 to 3 are all parts of a great body of maple-beech forest which originally covered many square miles of land without interruption, while Area 5 is a small detached body, several miles from the nearest forest of the same type. In Area 2 for example, there are 30 species assigned to Group A, species characteristic of the hardwood association, with an average frequency index of 16, and only five species of Group B, including those normal to coniferous forests, with an average frequency index of 3. In Area 5, Group A is represented by only 13 species, with an average frequency of 11, while Group B has 12 species with an average frequency of 11. The contrast between the two areas, as shown by these figures, is striking, and may well indicate that Area 2 is considerably older than Area 5, either ecologically or chronologically, and perhaps both.

There is other ecological evidence, largely of a circumstantial nature, pointing to the same conclusion, which may be expressed by the following general theory: The hemlock forest represents the mesophytic climax of various successional series of the northern type of vegetation, and the veteran hemlocks of the modern hardwood forest are the last generation of trees of this earlier association. Succession by hardwood forests is a modern process, which in some places has not yet been completed in respect to the secondary species, and the present veteran trees of sugar maple and beech represent, in some places at least, the first generation of dominant species of this association.

GENERAL CONCLUSIONS

1. The hardwood forest of the region is dominated by sugar maple, with beech, birch, elm, and basswood as important co-dominants, the proportions of each depending on the available moisture.

2. The flora of the association includes some two hundred species of vascular plants, of which about a score are regarded as characteristic, and of which many others are chance invaders from neighboring associations or relicts of an earlier occupation of the land by coniferous forest. Hemlock belongs in the latter category.

3. The hardwood forest is still young historically and may have attained its full ecological dominance only one generation (about three centuries) ago.

New York Botanical Garden

LITERATURE CITED

Clayberg, H. D. 1920. Upland Societies of Petoskey-Walloon Lake Region. Bot. Gaz., 69. 28–53. 1 fig.

Gleason, H. A. 1923. The Vegetational History of the Middle West. Annals Assn. Amer. Geogr., 12: 39–85.

Quick, B. E. 1924. A Comparative Study of the Distribution of the Climax Association in Southern Michigan. Papers Mich. Acad. Sci., 3: 211–244. Pl. XX.

Whitford, H. N. 1901. The Genetic Development of the Forests of Northern Michigan; A Study in Physiographic Ecology. Bot. Gaz., 31: 289–325. Figs. 1–18.

AN ECOLOGICAL STUDY OF MUD LAKE BOG, CHEBOYGAN COUNTY, MICHIGAN *

LOUISE GOE, ELSIE ERICKSON AND EDITH WOOLLETT

Mud Lake is a small peat bog lake in the northwestern part of Inverness Township, Cheboygan County, Michigan (See Map II). The lake itself is about one fifth of a mile wide and approximately twice as long (Fig. 4). The greatest depth is

Fig. 4. General View of Mud Lake Bog from the Southeast.
August, 1921. Perry A. Glick

* A contribution from the Biological Station of the University of Michigan.

The work at Mud Lake was done under the direction and supervision

twenty-two feet. The shortest distance to sand is eight feet. The lake itself is alkaline while the surrounding mat is decidedly acid (See Table). It has a small stream flowing into it at the southeast side and an outlet, with no perceptible current, excepting in times of high water, at the northwest side. The bog forest at the northwest continues for two miles, where it joins the bog forest extending up from Carp Lake, Although the bog evidently drains into Carp Lake, there is no perceptible stream flowing from one bog to the other, so that most of the drainage is probably due to seepage.

The open water of the lake is surrounded by a quaking mat of vegetation. Much of the mat is made up of *Sphagnum spp.* The *Carex filiformis*,[1] Iris-Aspidium and Chamaedaphne associations are also present on the mat. The mat varies in width from one or two feet to a quarter of a mile. It also varies in stability. In some places it is fairly dry and level, but more often it is hummocky and spongy, with very wet areas in the depressions.

At the outer edge of the mat the high shrub zone is present and is dominated by the Nemopanthus-Alnus consocies of the high bog shrub association. The best examples of the high shrub zone are found at the north side of the lake, where the shrubs are very numerous and grow close together.

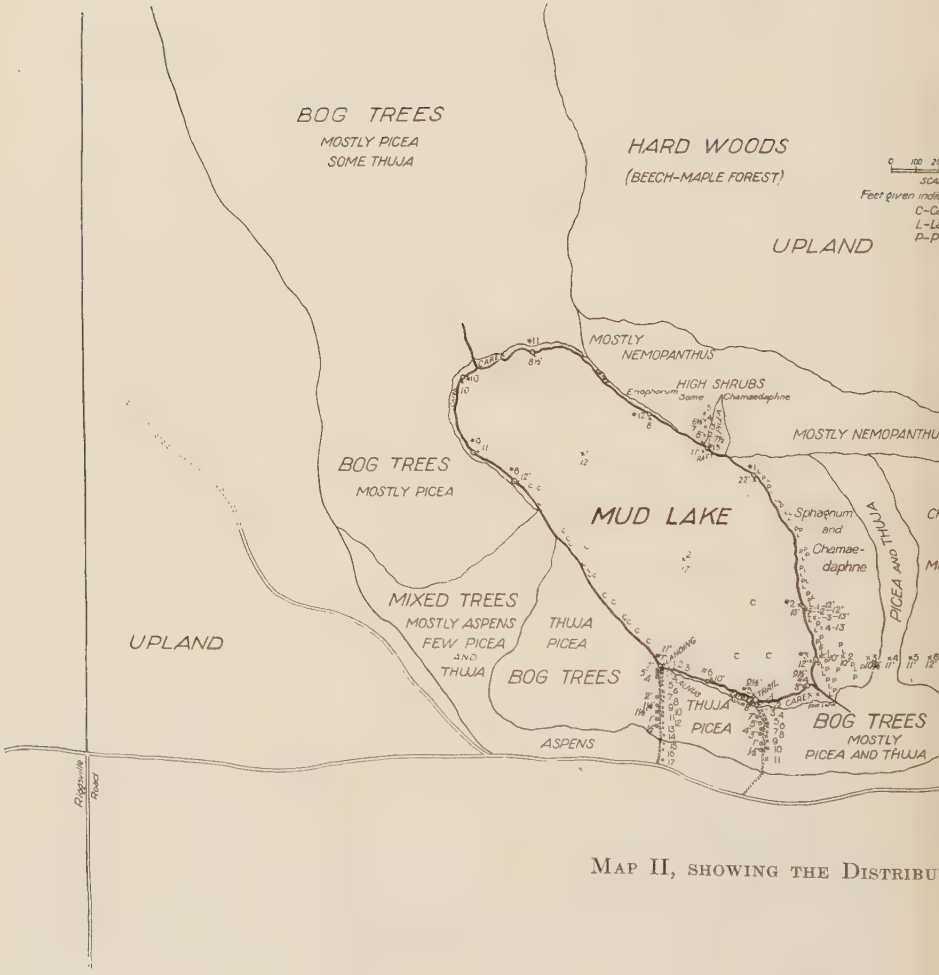
Beyond the high shrub zone is the lowland Thuja-Picea-Larix forest. On the higher, better drained land adjoining, trees such as *Acer saccharum, Fagus grandifolia, Acer rubrum* and *Ostrya virginiana* are found.

While there are a few examples of pure associations, as a

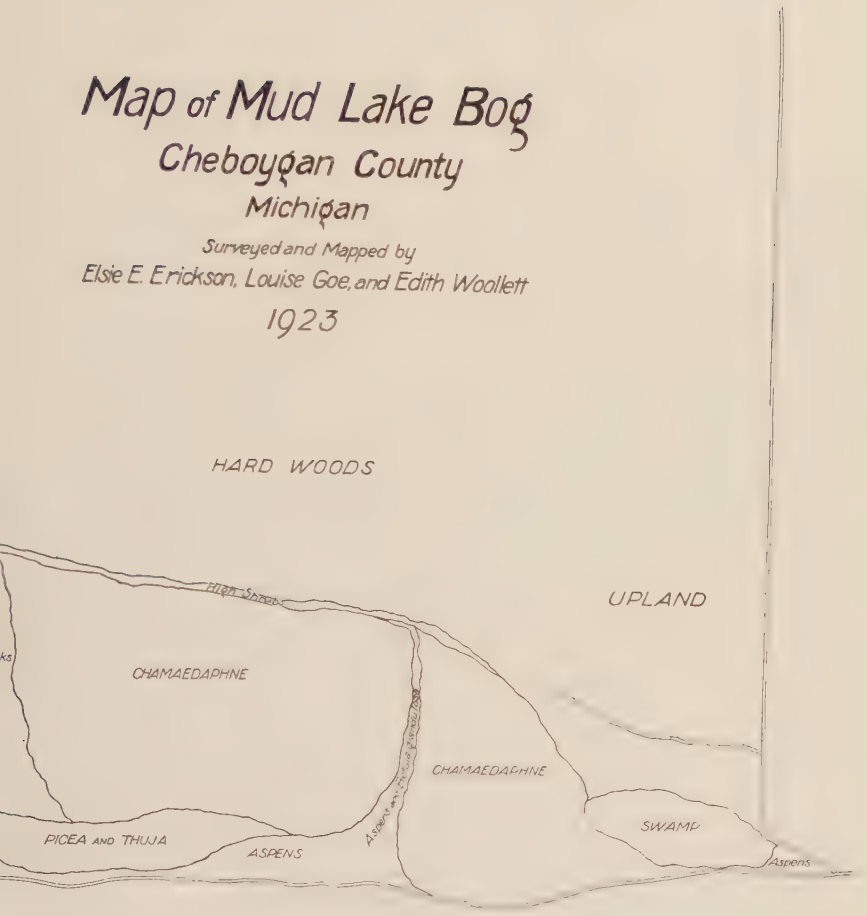
---

of Dr. F. C. Gates while the authors were enrolled as students at the University of Michigan Biological Station, Cheboygan County, Michigan. It was begun during the summer of 1922 by Louise Goe and was continued during the summer of 1923 by Louise Goe, Elsie Erickson and Edith Woollett. Elsie Erickson was primarily responsible for the map, Edith Woollett for the peat readings, and Louise Goe for the general ecological description, although the three authors are jointly responsible for the entire paper.

[1] The nomenclature is that of Gray's *New Manual of Botany*, seventh edition.



Map II, showing the Distribu



ETATION AT THE MUD LAKE BOG

general thing there is more or less of an intermingling, and many species present in an association may not belong there, but may be either invaders or relicts. This is especially true in the Iris association. Since the fires, *Typha latifolia* has invaded this association until the Iris has been crowded out. In 1921 there was still a little left, but in 1922 it had completely disappeared (Fig. 5).

FIG. 5. South Shore of Mud Lake, showing *Aspidium thelypteris, Typha latifolia, Carex spp.* and *Calamagrostis inexpansa.* July, 1922. Louise Goe.

Fires of various degrees of severity have burned over most of the bog, but the latest severe one was in 1916. The worst burning in this fire was at the northeast and east sides of the lake. Dead trees and charred stumps still remain in large numbers. Between the hummocks caused by the roots of dead trees are large areas of *Polytrichum juniperinum*, a condition which also indicates severe burning. Fires have burned through at the southeast side where the mat is very wide and also on the west side. Because of its natural protection the south side of the lake is practically untouched (Fig. 6). There the mat is very narrow, in some places almost non-existent, and the trees

extend to the water's edge. After the fires retrogression has taken place and in many places *Eriophorum viridi-carinatum* or *Eriophorum virginicum* may be very abundant.

FIG. 6. General View of the Southern Edge of Mud Lake.
July, 1916. F. C. Gates.

At the northeast, east, south and west sides of the lake, beyond the bog forest, is higher land where aspens and fireweed are abundant.

The vegetation of the Mud Lake Bog may be divided according to habitat into the following natural divisions:

A. OPEN WATER:
   1. Chara-Potamogeton Association
   2. Castalia-Nymphaea Association

B. MAT:
   1. *Carex filiformis* Association
   2. Iris-Aspidium Association
   3. Chamaedaphne Association

C. HIGH SHRUBS:
   1. Nemopanthus-Alnus consocies of the high bog shrub Association

D. BOG FOREST:
   1. Larix-Picea-Thuja Association

The lake has a very even shore-line which is practically unbroken for a number of feet at a time. There is a false bottom

which varies from two or three inches below the surface of the water to about a foot and a half. It is composed of decaying vegetation and is quite easily disturbed. The depth of the water above it depends upon the season and the amount of rain. During the summer of 1921 the water was so low that a large part of it was exposed at the south end of the lake (Fig. 7). In 1922 and 1923 the entire false bottom was under water.

FIG. 7. General View of the Southeastern Corner of Mud Lake, showing the False Bottom above Water.
The small plants carpeting the mud are *Eleocharis olivacea*. August, 1921. Perry A. Glick.

The number of plant species found in the lake is not large. Growing submerged upon the false bottom the Chara-Potamogeton association is represented by *Potamogeton spp.* and by *Myriophyllum spicatum.*.

The floating aquatics are represented by the Castalia-Nymphaea association. These plants are found in isolated cases in the center of the lake and fairly well out in open water, but the most typical habitat for them is fairly close to the shore

where there are little bays. In some of the very moist depressions on the mat, among the species of Sphagnum, both Castalia and Nymphaea were found. Although *Nymphaea advena* is fairly well represented, *Castalia odorata* is much more abundant. In the open water of the stream at the southeast side *Lemna minor* is very abundant.

All around the lake there are clumps of *Carex filiformis* sometimes extending out in jagged patches into the water, but more often in pure stands forming close mats which cover large areas. The roots of this plant mat together and the mats thus formed are hard to break through and provide a place where other plants can grow. When the *Carex filiformis* mat has become fairly solid, other plants begin to invade, chiefly grasses and sedges.

Following the *Carex filiformis* association, plants characteristic of the Iris-Aspidium association begin to appear. Of these, *Aspidium thelypteris, Aspidium spinulosum, Campanula aparinoides, Drosera rotundifolia, Potentilla palustris* and *Lysimachia terrestris* were the ones most commonly found at Mud Lake.

With the Chamaedaphne several additional ericaceous shrubs were associated. The Chamaedaphne area was, for the most part, drier than either of the preceding areas, but no part of the bog was entirely dry during the summer of either 1922 or 1923. The bulk of the mat in this association was made up of a number of species of Sphagnum, including *Sphagnum capillaceum tenellum, Sphagnum fuscum, Sphagnum cuspidatum* and *Sphagnum dusenii.* The most common herbs and shrubs in this association are: *Andromeda glaucophylla, Drosera rotundifolia, Kalmia polifolia, Ledum groenlandicum, Menyanthes trifolia, Sarracenia purpurea, Scheuchzeria palustris, Vaccinium oxycoccos, Vaccinium pennsylvanicum nigrum.* It is in this area that the orchids are present. There were several species present at Mud Lake including *Habenaria hyperborea, Habenaria blephariglottis, Habenaria psychodes, Arethusa bulbosa, Calopogon pulchellus* and *Pogonia ophioglossoides.*

A high bog shrub association succeeds the Chamaedaphne. In it *Alnus incana, Nemopanthus mucronata* and *Ilex verticillata* are dominant. Other shrubs present are *Rhamnus alnifolia.*

Viburnum cassinoides, and seedlings of *Larix laricina*, *Picea mariana*, *Picea canadensis* and *Pyrus arbutifolia*.

At many places about the lake both the *Carex filiformis* mat and the Iris association are missing and either Chamaedaphne or Alnus are at the water's edge. A few feet behind it the high shrubs and trees appear.

The bog is open and the plants growing in it are exposed to wind, light and heat. There is practically no shade excepting that afforded by the few scattered trees and occasional shrubs. There is always a supply of water available but, because of the stagnant conditions, oxidation and the removal of humic acids is slow. The plants growing in the bog have many xerophytic adaptations, such as leathery leaves and special water-absorption structures, but they are merely xeromorphic rather than true xerophytes.

In the lowland forest which succeeds the open peat bog the condition is quite different. The floor of the forest is well shaded and very little direct sunlight enters. There are many bare places in it. Mosses are quite abundant, especially species of Mnium, Thuidium and Hylocomium. In some of the depressions where water is standing species of Sphagnum are found. In other wet areas Drepanocladus is present. In the higher places the ground plants were quite mesophytic. The herbs most commonly found are *Coptis trifolia*, *Clintonia borealis*, *Cornus canadensis*, *Mitchella repens*, *Galium spp.*, *Linnaea borealis americana* and *Pyrola sp.*

The trees are quite large and close together. In areas which have not been disturbed *Picea mariana*, *Picea canadensis* and *Thuja occidentalis* are practically the only trees in the forest. *Larix laricina* is found at the edge of the forest. The forest at the south, southwest and north edges of the bog are of this type, but examples of it may be found at almost any point about the lake.

In the lowland at the northeast part of the bog where fires have burned the trees, there is an area with considerable standing water with a thicket of young trees. Here the aspens and the peat bog birch, *Betula glandulosa*, are present in great numbers.

Most of the forest surrounding Mud Lake is, however, of the first type.

There are a number of plants in the bog that are not common in the region and should be given special mention. At the west end of the lake *Scirpus hudsonianus* is present. Other plants which are rare in the region are *Scheuchzeria palustris, Carex limosa, Pogonia ophioglossoides, Drosera longifolia* and several of the mosses, *Sphagnum papillosum, Meesia triquetra, Drepanocladus vernicosus* and *Dicranum bergerii.*

The peat borings, which were taken in certain definite lines beginning at the margin of the lake and extending toward the outer edge of the bog, are indicated on the map. The area about the Stations 9 and 10 was the shallowest, while that at Station 1 was the deepest. Rather firm uniform peat was found at an average depth of seven feet at the margin of the lake. Beneath the peat, blue clay was present and beneath that, sand. In the blue clay shells were found.

SUMMARY

The vegetation on the mat of Mud Lake is that characteristic of bogs; *Carex filiformis, Chamaedaphne calyculata, Nemopanthus mucronata* and *Alnus incana* are among the most common forms.

Several species of Sphagnum are present.

The forest which surrounds the bog is of the lowland Thuja-Picea-Larix type.

Fires have burned through a number of times so that retrogression has taken place and the natural successions have been more or less disturbed and the associations intermingled.

There is very little living vegetation in the lake. A false bottom occurs a short distance below its surface. Below the false bottom peat in various stages is found. Below the peat, blue clay is present, and below it, sand.

The greatest depth of the lake is twenty-two feet at Station 1. The shallowest portion of the lake was nine feet in depth.

Eventually the entire Mud Lake bog may become a bog forest, but at the present time it is in a comparatively young stage with open water, mat and bog forest all present.

PEAT READINGS

STATION 1:
- 9 ft., gelatinous peat
- 11 ft., gelatinous peat with clay and shells
- 13 ft., clay and peat
- 15 ft., clay with some plant fibers
- 17 ft., pure blue clay
- 19 ft., pure blue clay
- 21 ft., clay and sand mixed
- 22 ft., pure sand

STATION 2:
- 9 ft., gelatinous peat
- 10 ft., gelatinous peat with clay
- 11 ft., soft blue clay
- 13 ft., blue clay
- 13 ft. +, sand, pure

STATION 3:
- 9 ft., gelatinous peat
- 10 ft., gelatinous peat with clay
- 11 ft., blue clay, many shells
- 12 ft., pure sand

STATION 4:
- 8 ft., gelatinous peat
- 9 ft., peat and blue clay
- 9 ft., 6 in., pure sand

STATION 5:
- 8 ft., peat with plant remains
- 9 ft., blue clay and sand
- 9 ft. 6 in., pure sand

STATION 6:
- 8 ft., peat and plant remains
- 9 ft., clay and sand
- 10 ft., pure sand

STATION 7:
- 9 ft., pure peat
- 10 ft., clay and sand
- 11 ft., sand and gravel

STATION 8:
- 5 ft., liquid
- 8 ft., gelatinous peat, remains of plants
- 10 ft., peat with plant remains and shells
- 11 ft., clay with snail shells
- 12 ft., pure blue clay

STATION 9:
- 7 ft., peat with plant remains
- 9 ft., blue clay
- 11 ft., coarse gravel

STATION 10:
- 7 ft., soft peat
- 9 ft., blue clay
- 9 ft. 6 in., very hard clay
- 10 ft., sand

STATION 11:
- 7 ft., peat
- 8 ft., peat, clay and sand mixed
- 8 ft. 6 in., pure sand

STATION 12:
- 7 ft., gelatinous peat
- 7 ft. 6 in., gelatinous peat becoming solid
- 8 ft., sand and peat mixed

STATION 13:
- 5 ft., very liquid
- 6 ft., pure peat
- 10 ft., blue clay
- 11 ft., pure sand

Between STATIONS 2 AND 4:
Readings taken on the mat

1. On shore at Station 2:
   - 2 ft., mostly water, some undecayed plant remains
   - 4 ft., watery peat
   - 6 ft., impure peat, few snail shells
   - 8 ft., fine peat
   - 10 ft., clay and shells
   - 13 ft., pure sand
2. 10 ft. from shore:
   - 13 ft., sand and clay, mostly sticky clay
3. 50 ft. from margin:
   - 2 ft., undecayed plant remains. Very liquid
   - 4 ft., gelatinous peat

8 ft., peat with some plant remains
10 ft., blue clay
12 ft., sand and clay mixed

4. 100 ft. from margin:
2 ft., plant remains undecayed
4 ft., plant remains partially decayed
6 ft., peat with plant remains
8 ft., pure homogenous peat
10 ft., blue clay
12 ft., sand

STATION 7. — *From margin of lake through aspen association*

1. At margin:
2 ft., gas; very soft peat with partially decayed plant remains
4 ft., very soft gelatinous peat
6 ft., mostly peat, some blue clay and very little sand
7 ft., very coarse gravel
2. 20 ft. from margin:
2 ft., liquid
4 ft., fairly uniform peat, few plant fiber remains
5 ft., sand
3. 45 ft. from margin:
4 ft., sand
4. 60 ft. from margin:
3 ft., soft peat
4 ft., peat, blue clay and sand
5. 75 ft. from margin:
4 ft., sand
6. 135 ft. from margin:
2 ft., little peat, blue clay and sand
7. 150 ft. from margin:
2 ft., gelatinous peat with decayed vegetation. No farther
8. 180 ft. from margin:
1 ft. 3 in., blue clay and sand
9. 183 ft. from margin:
1 ft. 3 in., blue clay and sand
10. 210 ft. from margin:
1 ft., sand

STATION 5. — *Trail from margin through aspen association*

1. At margin:
2 ft., liquid
4 ft., very soft peat
6 ft., firm peat
8 ft., peat and blue clay
8 ft. 3 in., sand
2. 50 ft. from margin:
4 ft., peat with partially decayed plant remains
6 ft., pure peat
7 ft., blue clay
7 ft. 6 in., pure sand
3. 75 ft. from margin:
7 ft., sand and coarse gravel
4. 90 ft. from margin:
5 ft., blue clay
5 ft. 2 in., sand
5. 100 ft. from margin:
2 ft., very soft peat with plant remains
3 ft., peat
4 ft., peat and blue clay
4 ft. 3 in., sand
6. 115 ft. from margin:
4 ft., peat, blue clay, and sand
7. 130 ft. from margin:
2 ft. 6 in., very soft peat with undecayed plant remains
3 ft., coarse sand
8. 155 ft. from margin:
1 ft. 6 in., very soft peat
1 ft. 9 in., coarse sand
9. 180 ft. Aspen association starts:
1 ft., very soft peat and sand
10. 205 ft. from margin:
6 in., peat and sand

STATION 3. — *From margin through Chamaedaphne association*

1. At margin:
2 ft., liquid brownish peat
4 ft., gelatinous peat, rather black
6 ft., same as 4 ft. record
8 ft., same as 4 ft. record
10 ft., peat and blue clay, shells present

10 ft. 1 in., blue clay and sand, very hard

2. 100 ft. from margin:
   2 ft., liquid
   4 ft., extremely gelatinous peat, much decaying vegetation
   6 ft., fairly uniform gelatinous peat
   8 ft., much the same as at 4 and 6
   9 ft. 6 in., soft brownish peat
   10 ft., sand
3. 200 ft. from margin:
   2 ft., gas
   4 ft., gas
   6 ft., rather solid peat; tangled mass of plant remains
   8 ft., rather firm peat; great many shells and plant fibers
   10 ft., fairly firm peat, some plant fibers
   10 ft. 6 in., blue clay
   10 ft. 9 in., whitish clay mixed with coarse sand
4. 300 ft. from margin:
   2 ft., liquid
   4 ft., liquid
   6 ft., liquid
   8 ft., gelatinous peat, few shells
   10 ft., peat and blue clay, plant fibers
   11 ft., sand
5. 400 ft. from margin:
   2 ft., liquid
   4 ft., liquid; gas
   6 ft., soft peat with undecayed plant remains
   8 ft., rather firm peat; partially decayed plant remains
   10 ft., peat, slight mixture blue clay; plant remains
   11 ft., sand
6. 500 ft. from margin:
   2 ft., liquid
   4 ft., liquid; gas
   6 ft., partially decayed plant fibers
   8 ft., firm peat with few plant fibers
   10 ft., mostly peat, little blue clay; and partially decayed plant fibers
   11 ft., mixture of blue clay and sand
   12 ft., sand
7. 600 ft. from margin:
   2 ft., liquid
   4 ft., liquid
   6 ft., partially decayed plant fibers; soft peat
   8 ft., firm peat partially decayed plant fibers
   10 ft., sand

Station 4. — *At inlet, 50 ft. from margin*:

1. In water of inlet:
   7 ft., liquid peat with plant remains
   8 ft., sand

Station 13:

1. At margin of lake:
   2 ft., gas; liquid
   4 ft., gas; liquid peat
   6 ft., homogenous peat
   7 ft. 6 in., coarse sand
2. 25 ft. from margin:
   4 ft., gas; soft peat
   6 ft., peat; some plant remains
   8 ft., sand
3. 50 ft. from margin:
   4 ft., soft brown peat with plant remains
   6 ft., homogenous peat
   7 ft., sand
4. 75 ft. from margin:
   4 ft., soft peat
   6 ft., homogenous peat
   6 ft. 6 in., sand
5. 100 ft. from margin:
   6 ft., peat
   6 ft. 2 in., sand

List of Plants Found Growing in the Mud Lake Bog

Abies balsamea
Acer pennsylvanicum
Acer rubrum
Acer saccharum
Acer spicatum
Agrimonia gryposepala
Alnus incana
Andromeda glaucophylla
Apocynum androsaemifolium
Aralia nudicaulis
Aralia racemosa
Arceuthobium pusillum
Arethusa bulbosa
Asclepias syriaca
Aspidium spinulosum
Aspidium thelypteris
Aster junceus
Aster novae-angliae
Aster spp.
Betula alba papyrifera
Betula glandulosa
Betula lutea
Bidens comosa
Boehmeria cylindrica
Botrychium virginianum
Calla palustris
Calopogon pulchellus
Caltha palustris
Campanula aparinoides
Cardamine pratensis
Carex bebbii
Carex comosa
Carex crinita
Carex diandra
Carex filiformis (= C. lasiocarpa)
Carex hystericina
Carex intumescens
Carex leptalea
Carex leptonervia
Carex limosa
Carex oligosperma
Carex paupercula
Carex pauciflora
Carex scirpoides
Carex stricta
Carex substricta
Carex tenella
Carex trisperma
Carex spp.
Castalia odorata
Chamaedaphne calyculata
Cicuta bulbifera
Circaea alpina
Clintonia borealis
Coptis trifolia
Corallorrhiza odontorhiza
Cornus canadensis
Cypripedium hirsutum
Diervilla lonicera
Drosera longifolia
Drosera rotundifolia
Eleocharis acuminata
Eleocharis olivacea
Epilobium angustifolium
Epilobium molle
Epipactis decipiens
Eriophorum callithrix
Eriophorum virginicum
Eriophorum viridi-carinatum
Eupatorium purpureum
Fagus grandifolia
Fragaria virginiana
Galium labradoricum
Galium tinctorium
Galium trifidum
Geum strictum
Glyceria nervata
Habenaria blephariglottis
Habenaria hyperborea
Habenaria leucophaea
Habenaria psychodes
Ilex verticillata
Iris versicolor
Kalmia polifolia
Larix laricina
Ledum groenlandicum
Lemna minor
Linnaea borealis americana
Liparis liliifolia
Lonicera oblongifolia
Lycopus americanus
Lycopodium clavatum
Lysimachia terrestris
Maianthemum canadensis

List of Plants Found Growing in the Mud Lake Bog

Melampyrum lineare
Menyanthes trifolia
Mitchella repens
Mitella nuda
Mosses:
  Drepanocladus vernicosus
  Dicranum bergerii
  Hylocomium sp.
  Mnium sp.
  Meesia triquetra
  Polytrichum juniperinum
  Sphagnum capillaceum tenellum
  Sphagnum cuspidatum
  Sphagnum dusenii
  Sphagnum girgensohnii
  Sphagnum megellanicum
  Sphagnum palustre
  Sphagnum papillosum
  Sphagnum wulfianum
  Thuidium sp.
Muhlenbergia racemosa
Myriophyllum spicatum
Nemopanthus mucronata
Nymphaea advena
Oenothera biennis
Onoclea sensibilis
Onoclea struthiopteris
Osmunda cinnamomea
Osmunda regalis
Ostrya virginiana
Phegopteris dryopteris
Picea canadensis
Picea mariana and its bog modification
Pilea pumila
Poa compressa
Poa pratensis
Pogonia ophioglossoides
Populus grandidentata
Populus tremuloides
Potentilla palustris
Potamogeton spp.
Prunus pennsylvanica
Pteris aquilina
Pyrus americana
Pyrus arbutifolia
Rhamnus alnifolia
Ribes glandulosum
Ribes triste albinervium
Rubus triflorus
Rynchospora alba
Sarracenia purpurea
Scheuchzeria palustris
Scirpus hudsonianus
Solidago rugosa
Solidago uliginosa
Spiranthes cernua
Spiranthes romanzoffiana
Taxus canadensis
Thuja occidentalis
Trientalis americana
Triglochin maritima
Tsuga canadensis
Typha latifolia
Ulmus americana
Utricularia intermedia
Vaccinium canadense
Vaccinium macrocarpon
Vaccinium pennsylvanicum nigrum
Vaccinium oxycoccos
Viburnum cassinoides
Viola pallens
Viola spp.

TABLE OF TYPICAL HYDROGEN ION READINGS TAKEN BY DR. MINNA JEWELL IN 1922

DATE	LOCATION	pH
July 31	Station 7, connected with lake	6.7
31	15 ft. inland	7.0
31	50 ft. inland, under Thuja	7.1
Aug. 3	Between Stations 6 and 7, 25 ft. from lake, border of Thuja and mat	6.8
9	Station 13, in lake	7.4
9	8 ft. from lake, Sphagnum mat	3.6
9	100 ft. from lake, Sphagnum mat with several dead conifers.	3.4
9	Lagoon from lake between Stations 13 and 1. Mouth narrow, hence little interchange of water with lake	5.6
9	75 ft. back from lagoon	3.3
9	25 ft. inland from Station 1, small Spruce	3.35
9	Carex-Sphagnum mat between Stations 1 and 2	3.25
9	Inlet near trail	6.2
9	Lagoon from inlet near edge of woods	5.7
10	Upper waters of inlet among Thuja	6.5 to 6.6
10	Lake near outlet	7.2
10	Outlet, 8 ft. from lake	7.8 to 8.0
10	Outlet, 15 ft. from lake in Carex	8.0
10	Sphagnum mat between Station 13 and 1	3.6
10	Same location, among water lilies (6 readings)	3.4 to 3.7
11	Carex-Aspidium mat near Station 5. 10 ft. from lake	6.2
11	Same, 15 ft. from lake	6.9
11	Same, farther back between small Larix, Alnus and first Thuja	6.8
11	Same, under first Thuja	6.6
11	Same, among Typha 6 ft. from lake	5.8
11	Same, among Typha 10 ft. from lake	6.2
11	Same, beyond Typha some 12 ft. from lake	6.2

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN BIOLOGICAL STATION
CHEBOYGAN, MICHIGAN

THE GENUS LEPIOTA IN THE UNITED STATES *

C. H. KAUFFMAN

A CAREFUL business man takes an inventory of stock on hand at certain intervals in the development of his business. It would appear that this common-sense procedure could be applied equally to systematic mycology, and that if the knowledge on hand were put together in compact form, and the species no longer known or names no longer tenable could be thrown on the rubbish heap, a large amount of confusion and error in our accounts of existing plants would be eliminated. It is with the hope of bringing about some such result that the present paper has been prepared. Various sections of the United States have been visited during the last ten years, and although comparatively few new species were discovered and not nearly all of the supposedly native or described species were collected, yet a sufficient number of studies have been made to make a review of the genus possible.

The genus Lepiota comprises many species, and the monographic accounts that have appeared from time to time indicate that the genus has special attractions for the mycologist. Dr. Peck, in the *35th Report of the New York State Museum*, as long ago as 1884, gave a detailed account of eighteen species then known to him from that state. C. G. Lloyd in one of his first numbers of *Mycological Notes*, published in 1898, gives an account of seven of the larger species. Since Mr. Lloyd knows how to photograph fungi, it is to be regretted that he did not follow up his first output of agaric pictures. Then came A. P. Morgan's monograph of the genus, appearing in Volumes 12 and

* Paper from the Department of Botany of the University of Michigan, No. 216.

13 of the *Journal of Mycology*, 1906–1907. I doubt whether mycologists have studied Mr. Morgan's arrangement of species as carefully as it deserves. We have here an effort to lay a firm foundation for the American species within this genus, and Mr. Morgan, by careful choosing of terms, tried to bring all related species together under headings which would indicate their morphological development. Finally, a comprehensive account of all the known North American species appeared in 1914, in the *North American Flora*, Vol. 10, Part I. Here Dr. Murrill recognises ninety-seven species, of which nine are segregated and placed in the genus Limacella, proposed in 1909 by F. S. Earle.

Since Peck's first list, the number of species recognized in the United States has increased fivefold. Peck himself described a large number, and Professor Atkinson added some from time to time; Morgan himself named fifteen of those enumerated in his monograph, while Dr. Murrill added a goodly number, especially from the poorly explored regions of the West and South.

Many of the ninety odd species now on record for the United States are too incompletely known and described. The difficulty which Morgan encountered in properly placing species can be easily read between his lines. Those which he himself collected and studied, he had no difficulty in placing under the appropriate section to which, by their structure and development, they naturally belonged; but when he was compelled to place a species described by someone else, he frequently had to guess at the possible structure of such plants, and sometimes he vacillated as regards the section into which the plant should be placed. The present writer has experienced these same difficulties, and some of the points involved will be discussed under "Comments" later in the paper.

The name Lepiota was used for the first time by Persoon. He applied it to those white-spored Agarics with an annulus on the stem and with innate scales on the pileus. Lange (9) in transferring *Armillaria mellea* to the genus Lepiota seems to have gone back to Persoon's broad characterization of the group. Lange, however, uses other arguments to support his attitude.

Fries (4) limited the group, as a tribe under Agaricus, much as we have it at present. Quélet (11) raised it to generic rank. The important European works dealing with the genus Lepiota since the time of Fries and Quélet are those by Quélet and Battaille (12), Ricken (14), Lange (9) and Rea (13). Further discussion of the views of European authors will be limited to the sections below under "Comments."

The genus Lepiota is here kept intact except for the removal of those species of the old group "granulosae," which have adnate or adnexed gills, and which are therefore more properly Armillarias (8). A list of these is given below. The genus has been divided into sections by various authors in different ways. That these sections do not remain static in their content, merely shows once more the need of more accurate and complete knowledge of the species already described, and more care in describing new ones. In this paper the species are grouped in seven sections: Lubricae, Viscidae, Pruinosae, Subclypeolariae, Clypeolariae, Asperae, Procerae-annulosae.

If the morphological development from the initial button stage were already worked out for most of the species, then the grouping within these sections could be made permanent. Only a few species, however, have been studied from this point of view. Atkinson (1, 3) published an account of *Lepiota clypeolaria*, *Lepiota cristata* and *Lepiota seminuda*. From his studies on these and other species of agarics which possess partial veils or universal veils, he was able to point out the essential nature of these veils (2). In these papers he shows that a differentiated universal veil can be detected around the young buttons of certain species. This enveloping zone Atkinson calls the *blematogen* and it may take one of two possible courses during the further development of the button or fruit-body; in the one case, the developing veil becomes intergrown with the primary tissue of the pileus, and is therefore at length concrete with it, as in *Lepiota clypeolaria;* in the other case, there is a gelatinizing of an inner layer of hyphae of this outer enveloping zone of tissue in such a way that it causes a loosening of the outer portion to form the volva; the latter then separates at maturity as in Amanita

or Amanitopsis. This differentiated tissue, which forms a true volva, Atkinson called the *teleoblema*. The genus Lepiota is, then, definitely and generically distinct from Amanita and Amanitopsis, without reference to the other differences in development. The variations in the character of the cap-covering, in different species of Lepiota, is doubtless due to the amount and texture of the tissue derived originally from the blematogen.

If we turn now to the stem characters, we find that the facts concerning the development of the annulus and stem-covering are not as clearly worked out as those of the pileus. In separating the genus into sections, the characters of the annulus and stem-covering play a rather important part. These characters also are generally poorly studied or recorded by those who describe new species, and it is here that difficulties arise when monographic arrangements of the species are attempted. Atkinson has given us a clear picture of the layers of tissue of the stem-covering in *Lepiota clypeolaria*. Here the rather dense tissue in the gill cavity — later to become the partial veil and annulus — extends downward thinly to the base of the stem. Enveloping this thin layer is the tissue of the universal veil, which is concrete with the inner layer and which breaks up into cottony scales. It may be said, in passing, that these parts can be made out in the field with a good hand lens, and it is essential that all species collected and described should be studied in this way when collected. *L. clypeolaria* is an example of the kind of species which should go into the section Clypeolariae as given below.

Atkinson gave some attention to the details of development of annulus and stem-covering in *Lepiota cristata*. The blematogen on the stem is composed of hyphae parallel to the stem and is poorly developed, i.e., there is so little of it that the thin, almost unnoticeable, peronate sheath which terminates in the annulus when the plant is partly grown or expanded, cannot be accounted for by this layer. Atkinson pointed out, however, that the thin, descending tissue connected with the tissue of the gill cavity later becomes much thicker. In the section Subclypeolariae, given below, there is probably this type of development through-

out the section, at least it may be assumed that only this type of species should be included in this section. As constituted in the present paper, it will be seen that the presence of a definite annulus of the truly membranous type is the fundamental basis of the section referred to.

The species which come under the section Pruinosae, as limited in this paper, should have a pulverulent, flocculose or obsolete covering on the surface of the pileus and on the stem, and this covering is assumed to be derived from the blematogen. In addition, the annulus is not truly membranous, or at least it is delicate and poorly developed. Here again, one can not at present be consistent, because of the incomplete data for quite a number of species. Atkinson studied the development of *Lepiota seminuda*, as a representative of this group. He found the mealiness due to the breaking down of the blematogen tissue, its hyphal cells separating into turgid cells. Of course, not all the species included below in this section have this type of cap- and stem-covering, and doubtless a number of groupings can be made when more developmental studies give us the details. There is, however, a reasonable limit to the subdividing that may be done, and relations will have to be worked out with some degree of conservatism.

No studies of any consequence have yet been made of the development from the early stages, for the species belonging to our other sections. In the Lubricae, with a gelatinizing and therefore viscid or glutinous outer layer on both pileus and stem, it seems clear that a universal veil of the blematogen type is present. There is reason to suspect that such a layer is well developed in the sections Asperae and most of the Proceraeannulosae. The last group has usually been placed under two sections, but the structures, during development, in spite of the size of the plants, have not been sufficiently studied in many cases, so that no acceptable line of separation seems possible at present.

Many of the species of Lepiota are quite peculiar in their fruiting habits. There are, in a broad sense, two types with reference to habitat; those which appear on cultivated land,

among grass or in ploughed fields, or on similar ground; and those which grow in forests, thickets or other shady and moist places. Many, if not most of them, fruit under much drier conditions than other agarics. When collecting is good for many genera, i.e., during continuous wet weather, the fruit-bodies of Lepiota are apt to be rare or scattered; after the wet weather ceases, and other forms no longer appear, then it is frequently possible to find Lepiotas, often an unusual number of the smaller species.

In the following synopsis of species it has seemed best to eliminate in the beginning those species reported from the tropics or scarcely extending into our southern states, as well as those which have apparently been introduced from the tropics and appear sporadically in hothouses or conservatories. These two sets of species will be merely listed, except for brief comments on a few of them given elsewhere.

List of Lepiotas Recently Described from the Tropics or Subtropics

Lepiota abruptibulba Murrill; Cuba
agricola Murrill (as Limacella); Jamaica
aspratella Murrill; Jamaica
Broadwayi Murrill; West Indies, Granada
candida Copeland (non Morgan); Philippines
chlorospora Copeland; Philippines
colimensis Murrill; Mexico
dryophila Murrill; Louisiana (New Orleans)
elata Copeland; Philippines
ferruginea Bres.; Africa
flavodisca Murrill; Cuba
hemisclara (B. & C.) Sacc.; Cuba
jamaicensis Murrill; Cuba
lactea Murrill; Cuba
longistriata Pk.; Cuba, Jamaica, Alabama
manilensis Copeland; Philippines
mississippiensis Murrill; Mississippi
rimosa Murrill; Cuba
subclypeolaria (B. & C.) Sacc.; Cuba
subgrisea Murrill; Jamaica
subcristata Murrill; Jamaica
subflavescens Murrill; Louisiana
subgranulosa Murrill; Mexico
subrivelata Murrill; Louisiana

subphopenita Graff; Philippines
tepeitensis Murrill; Mexico
testacea Murrill; Mexico
xylophilus Pk.; Hawaii

List of Lepiotas Occurring in Hothouses, etc., Apparently Introduced from the Tropics

Lepiota Allenae Pk. (Massachusetts; greenhouses)
amantiformis Murrill (New York City; conservatories)
avellanea Clements (Nebraska; greenhouses)
biornata B. & Br. (England; melon and cucumber frames)
cepaestipes Fr. (Europe and North America; also native)
denudata Fr. (Europe; in tanneries, flowerbeds; also native?)
farinosa Pk. (Massachusetts; mushroom bed in hothouse)
Georginae W. J. Smith (England; fern houses)
licmophora B. & Br. (England; greenhouses)
lilacina-granulosa P. Hennings (Europe; greenhouses)
lutea (Bolt.) Quél. (Syn. *L. citrina* Pass. per Bres.) (Europe; hothouses)
magnusiana P. Hennings (Germany; hothouses)
martialis Cke. & Massee (England; on trunk of tree fern, greenhouse)
medioflava Boudier-Rea (Europe; hothouses)
meleagris Fr. (Europe and America; hothouses, etc.; also native)
micropholis B. & Br. — Lange (Europe; hothouses)
pseudolicmophora Rea (England; greenhouses)
spectabilis Clements (Nebraska; greenhouse)

List of Species of Lepiota Transferred to the Genus Armillaria

Lepiota constricta (Fr.) Quél. = Rea = Armillaria constricta Fr.
adnatifolia Pk. = Armillaria adnatifolia (Pk.) Kauff. (8)
amianthina Fr. = Armillaria amianthina (Fr.) Kauff. (8)
carcharia Fr. = Armillaria carcharia (Fr.), comb. nov.
cinnabarina Fr. = Armillaria cinnabarina (Fr.) Kauff. (8)
granosa Morg. = Armillaria granosa (Morg.) Kauff. (8)
granulosa S. E. Gray = Fr. = Armillaria granulosa (Fr.) Kauff. (8)
pulveracea Pk. = Armillaria pulveracea (Pk.), comb. nov.
rhombospora Atk. = Armillaria rhombospora (Atk.), comb. nov.
haematites Berk. = Bres. = Armillaria haematites (Bres.), comb. nov.

Synopsis of the Species of Lepiota of the North Temperate Regions of Europe and America

(Compiled in part from the literature)*

Young plant enclosed in a glutinous universal veil ..... I. LUBRICAE

Surface of pileus viscid, because of a gelatinizing, more or less separable pellicle; stem dry ..... II. VISCIDAE

Pileus and stem covered when in good growing condition, by mealy, flocculose or granular particles; sometimes subscaly; veil and annulus delicate, of the same texture or substance as the covering on the pileus; hence the annulus is evanescent. ..... III. PRUINOSAE

Annulus membranous, thin but distinct, often persistent, frequently terminating a thin, smooth, peronate (i.e. external) layer of the stem, or stem entirely naked; cuticle of the pileus at first continuous, then diffracted-scaly except on disk ..... IV. SUBCLYPEOLARIAE

Universal veil well developed, but concrete, breaking up into colored fibrillose or floccose-fibrillose scales or masses on the pileus and stem; on the latter, terminating the sheath in the form of a floccose or fibrillose, soon evanescent annulus ..... V. CLYPEOLARIAE

Universal veil composed of a thick loose fibrillose layer covering the pileus and stem from the first; when drawn apart by the expansion of the pileus or by the elongation of the stem, its fibers converge into conspicuous erect, or squarrose scales; the partial veil tends to be fine-fibrillose or subarachnoid, often copious ..... VI. ASPERAE

Plants mostly rather large; annulus well developed, membranous, sometimes thick and appearing double, sometimes mobile on the stem. Pileus diffracted-scaly, sometimes fibrillose, rarely glabrous

VII. PROCERAE-ANNULOSAE

I. LUBRICAE

1. Taste of pellicle not bitter 2
1. Taste of pellicle very bitter; plant white. (See description) (*L. candida* Morgan) .... *L. pulcherrima Graff*
2. Spores ovoid-ellipsoid 3
2. Spores globose or subglobose 5
3. Pileus 5–8 cm. broad 4
3. Pileus 2–5 cm. broad, white with fulvous umbo; gills narrow; stem long, slender, hollow, abruptly bulbous; spores 7.5–10 × 4–5 μ; annulus membranous; in woods ..... *L. fulvodisca* Pk.

* The microscopic characters, e.g. size and shape of spores, have been reported for the older species by various students of Agarics. In order to show whose account of these characters is followed in the ensuing synopsis, the names of such authors are added, where necessary, after the older author's name.

4. Spores 9–11 × 5–6 μ; pileus whitish to pale alutaceous; gills narrow; stem rather stout, stuffed, subbulbous.....*L. bentista* Morgan
4. Spores 5–6 × 3–4 μ; pileus alutaceous to subfulvous, with darker umbo; stem equal or subequal, hollow or stuffed, floccose below *L. oblita* Pk.
5. Viscid layer of pileus and stem hyaline..... 6
5. Viscid layer thick, brown; pileus 3–4 cm. obtuse; stem 4–6 cm. × 3–4 mm, solid, tapering upward; gills broad; spores 4–5 μ diameter.....*L. glischra* Morgan
6. Pileus cream-color, tinged rosy, 6 cm. broad, with broad umbo; stem 5–10 cm. × 8–12 mm, solid, enlarged at base; odor farinaceous; spores unknown.....*L. roseicrema* Murrill
6. Pileus white, 4–7 cm. broad, glutinous; gills soft, subvenose-connected; stem 5–8 cm. × 4–6 mm., equal, soon hollow, glabrous; spores 4–6 μ diameter.....*L. illinita* Fr.

II. VISCIDAE

1. Pileus rather large, 5–10 (14) cm. broad; annulus ample, membranous, pendant. (Transition to *Amanita*)..... 2
1. Pileus smaller; annulus usually narrow, median or superior..... 4
2. Taste distinctly farinaceous; apex of stem dotted with dark green drops when developing; pileus 7–10 cm. broad, pinkish-tan; stem spongy-soft, more or less scaly; spores globose, 5–6 μ (Ricken). (*L. guttata* (Pers.) Quél.) (*Amanita lenticularis* Fr.) *L. lenticularis* Lasch-Ricken.
2. Taste not farinaceous; apex of stem without green watery drops.... 3
3. Pileus 8–14 cm. broad, whitish with brownish disk, thick and firm, glabrous; gills white; stem equal, 8–15 cm. × 15–25 mm, solid; odor none; spores unknown.....*L. Persoonii* Fr.-Ricken
3. Pileus 4–9 cm. broad, white to pale alutaceous, rather soft, glabrous; gills crowded, white, edge entire; stem 4–10 cm. × 4–10 mm., subbulbous; odor becoming strong and disagreeable; spores oval 3–4 × 2–3 μ.....*L. Fischeri* Kauff.
4. Odor of radish; pileus, etc., white, 3–6 cm., umbonate; flesh soft, watery; stem hollow; annulus lacerate, usually appendiculate on edge of pileus; spores unknown.....*L. medullata* Fr.
4. Odor not of radish..... 5
5. Spores globose or subglobose..... 6
5. Spores elliptical; stem stuffed or hollow..... 8
6. Taste not farinaceous; pileus yellowish, 2.5–5 cm., covered like the stem with dew-like transparent drops; stem white above, with yellow or brownish squamules below; spores 4–5 μ diam.; in pastures.....*L. irrorata* Quél.-Rea
6. Taste farinaceous; pileus 2–5 cm., convex, glabrous, even; gills ventricose, close, white; stem 4–7 cm. × 4–10 mm., solid; spores globose, 4–5 μ..... 7
7. Pileus "burnt sienna" to "mars-orange" (Ridg.), fading; stem with reddish, floccose scales up to the slight annulus..*L. gloioderma* Fr.

7. Pileus pinkish-cream color; stem subglabrous; annulus ample, superior, persistent ..... *L. McMurphyi* Murrill
8. Pileus, etc., white, 1–3.5 cm. subumbonate, glabrous, even; gills crowded, narrow; stem slender, 5–8 cm. × 3–5 mm; annulus apical, membranous, at first erect; spores short-ellipsoid 5–7.5 × 3–3.5 μ (*L. candida* Morg.) (*L. albissima* Murrill) ... *L. pulcherrima* Graff
8. Pileus not white 9
9. Pileus delicately pink, 2–4 cm. subviscid, even; gills narrow; flesh white, unchanged; stem 5–9 cm. × 3–5 mm., glabrous, soft, stuffed, annulus median; spores subacute at ends, ellipsoid, 5–6 × 3–4 μ (*L. delicata* var. Kauff., *Agar. Mich.*, I. 631) ..... *L. rubida*, sp. nov.
9. Pileus ochraceous-fulvous, 4–5 cm., radiate-wrinkled; gills broad; flesh whitish, blackening at base of stem; stem equal, 8 cm. × 5–7 mm.; annulus oblique, black-scaly; blackish fibrils appendiculate on margin of pileus; spores 5–6 × 3–4 μ .. *L. demisannula* Secr.-Ricken

III. PRUINOSAE

1. Spores averaging 9 μ or more in length 2
1. Spores averaging less than 8 μ, often minute 9
2. Spores subfusiform, 12 μ or more in length 3
2. Spores elliptical, oblong or oval 5
3. Pileus 1.5–2.5 (3) cm. broad 4
3. Pileus 6–12 mm. broad, with minute, whitish or cinereous, granular scales, substriate; gills broad, distant; stem 1.5–2.5 cm. long, slender, glabrous, whitish; spores 12–15 × 5–6 μ ..... *L. arenicola* Pk.
4. Gills white, becoming fumose on drying, broad; pileus 2–3 cm., with isabelline, powdery scales; stem 5–6 cm. × 4–6 mm., furfuraceous, pale drab below; spores 12 × 7 μ ..... *L. fumosifolia* Murrill
4. Gills white with gilvous tint; pileus 1.5–2.5 cm., gilvous or fulvous-ochraceous on disk, margin pale; stem about 3 cm. × 3 mm., with floccose scales; spores 11.5–13.5 × 4.5 μ (*L. gracilis* Quél. var. *laevigata* Lange) ..... *L. laevigata* Lange, comb. nov.
5. Pileus not over 3.5 cm. broad 6
5. Pileus rather large, 4–8 (10) cm., striate-plicate on margin, densely flocculose-scaly, yellowish-brown, brown on disk; stem subventricose or tapering upward, 4–12 (15) cm. × 4–6 mm. at apex, up to 15 mm. at thickest part, subglabrous; annulus subpersistent; spores 9–10 × 5–7 μ, oval-elliptical ..... *L. cepaestipes* Fr.
6. Pileus with lilac or purple color present 7
6. Pileus white, disk changing to brown on drying, 2–3.5 cm., disk subscabrous; stem 2–3 cm. × 2–4 mm.; spores 8–10 × 5–6 μ *L. mutata* Pk.
7. Pileus or flocculose scales lavender or lilac-tinged 8
7. Pileus and stem covered with a heliotrope-purple pulverulence, 1–2 cm.; flesh white tinged-yellow; gills broad, rather distant; spores 8–10 × 3–4 μ ..... *L. purpureoconia* Atk.
8. Odor fetid; gills rather narrow; pileus 1–2 cm. minutely scaly; stem toughish, dark brown to blackish below, 4–5 cm. × 2–2.5 mm.; spores 9–11 × 2–2.5 μ ..... *L. ecitidora* Atk.

8. Odor none; gills broad, subdistant; pileus 1.5–2.5 cm., floccose-scaly, brownish, tinged with lilac; stem concolor below, 1.5–2.5 cm. × 2–4 mm.; spores 10 × 5 μ ..... *L. sublilacea* Pk.
9. Spores minute, scarcely reaching 5 μ in length 10
9. Spores 6 μ or more in length 16
10. Stem rufous-tinted, rufescent or rosy-tinted beneath the superficial fibrils or pulverulence 11
10. Stem whitish, 2–3 cm. long, 1 mm. thick, glabrous; pileus oval to convex, obtuse, pink-tinged when young, granular-mealy; gills subdistant; spores 4–5 × 3 μ ..... *L. cristatatella* Pk.
11. Pileus 2–3.5 cm. broad 12
11. Pileus averaging less than 2 cm 13
12. Pileus white, disk rufescent, very minutely flocculose; gills rather broad; stem 4–6 cm. × 2–3 mm.; spores ovoid-oblong, 3.5–4.5 × 3 μ ..... *L. noscitata* Britz-Morgan
12. Pileus bright rose color, densely granular, convex; gills at length ochraceous; flesh rufescent; stem 5–6 cm. × 3–5 mm.; spores 5 × 3 μ, elliptical ..... *L. rosea* Rea
13. Pileus and stem covered with mealy, white particles 14
13. Pileus and stem glabrous; pileus 8–10 mm., white; stem 2–3 cm. × 1–2 mm., rufescent; gills broad; spores oblong, 4–5 × 2–3 μ *L. rufipes* Morgan
14. Pileus umbonate, 8–20 mm. broad; gills broad 15
14. Pileus convex, obtuse, white or nearly so, 4–8 mm. broad; gills broad; spores elliptic-oblong, 4–5 × 2.5–3 μ ..... *L. pusillomyces* Pk.
15. Pileus milk-white; spores 4 × 2 μ ..... *L. hemisphaerica* Murrill
15. Pileus whitish, tinged flesh-color; spores 4 × 2 μ (Rea); 4 × 2.5 μ (Lange); 5 μ long (Quél.) ..... *L. seminuda* (Lasch) Quél.
16. Spores subglobose 17
16. Spores ellipsoid; pileus between 1.5 cm. and 3 cm. broad 18
17. Pileus incarnate-ochraceous, umbonate, with minute granular scales; stem granular, 2–3 cm. × 1–1.5 mm., equal; spores 5–7 μ diameter ..... *L. repanda* (Clements) Sacc.
17. Pileus incarnate-ochraceous, with zone of blue on margin, umbonate, subfibrillose; stem scaly downwards, equal; spores 6–8 μ diameter ..... *L. cyanozonata* Longyear
18. Gills white or whitish 19
18. Gills lemon-yellow, edge serratulate; pileus lemon-yellow, with rufous scales, 1.5–2 cm.; stem concolor, 2–4 cm. × 2–4 mm., scaly; spores 7–8 × 4 μ ..... *L. citrophylla* B. & Br.-Boudier
19. Pileus or scales becoming tinged with vinaceous, or with lilac, rosy or rufous colors 20
19. Pileus or scales becoming tinged with yellowish or brown colors 24
20. Odor none or slight 21
20. Odor strong, of coal tar; pileus white becoming lilac-tinted, minutely mealy; stem 5–7 cm. × 3–5 mm. changing to deep lilac when bruised; spores boat-shaped, 7–8 × 3 μ ..... *L. Bucknallii* B. & Br.-Rea
21. Gills broad to very broad 22
21. Gills narrow; stem tapering upward 23

22. Spores 8–9 × 3.5 μ, oblong-ellipsoid; pileus umbonate, umbo reddish-tan, with few delicate floccose scales, 2.5–3.5 cm.; stem equal, 7–9 cm. × 2–4 mm. ..... *L. amplifolia* Murrill
22. Spores 6 × 3 μ, oblong (Kauff); pileus umbonate, vinaceous-buff, 1.5–2.5 cm., umbo obtusely conic, densely flocculose; stem 2–5 (6) cm. × 1.5–3 mm. (Spores 3.5 × 2 μ Murrill) .. *L. petasiformis* Murrill
23. Gills crowded; stem clavate, 8 mm. thick below, fibrillose, up to 7 cm. long; pileus 3 cm. broad, white with rosy tint, subumbonate; spores 6–7 × 4 μ ..... *L. roseicinerea* Murrill
23. Gills not crowded; stem slender, 2–4 mm. thick, 5–9 cm. long; pileus 1.5–3 cm., umbonate, snow-white or rose-tinted; spores 7–8 × 3.5 μ ..... *L. subnivosa* Murrill
24. Stem 2–3 mm. thick; pileus yellow-tinged 25
24. Stem very slender, scarcely 1 mm. thick, 2–4 cm. long, brownish below; pileus 1–2 cm., umbonate, minutely brownish-scaly, umbo dark brown; spores 5–6 × 3–4 μ ..... *L. nudipes* Pk.
25. Spores 6–8 × 4 μ 26
25. Spores 4–5 × 3 μ, elliptical; pileus 1–2 cm., white, becoming yellowish when dry, pruinose; stem 1–2 cm. × 2–3 mm., equal, fibrillose below the median annulus; on mosses and among grass in woods *L. parvannulata* Lasch-Rea
26. Pileus pubescent-glabrescent, whitish or tinged yellowish-incarnate, umbo deeper yellowish; 1.5–2.5 cm.; stem 5–7.5 cm. long; subequal; annulus superior ..... *L. mesomorpha* Fr.-Rea
26. Pileus at length with minute, pale yellow scales, not umbonate, 1.5–2.5 cm.; stem 3–5 cm. long, base slightly enlarged; annulus median. (In drying the whole plant assumes a rich yellow hue.) *L. alluviina* Pk.

IV. SUBCLYPEOLARIAE

1. Spores fusiform or subtruncate-cuneate 2
1. Spores oblong, elliptical or ovoid 5
2. Taste slight or none 3
2. Taste strong of radish; pileus 3–6 cm., disk pale-yellowish, margin whitish and lacerate-scaly; stem 4–8 cm. × 3–6 mm., bulb thicker; annulus at length lacerate and fugacious; spores fusiform 15–19 × 5–6 μ; among grass in fields ..... *L. erminea* Fr.-Ricken
3. Spores not up to 12 μ long, subtruncate-cuneate 4
3. Spores 12–15 × 5–6 μ, subtruncate at one end; pileus small, 10–15 mm. broad, scales chestnut-brown; stem 3–4 cm × 2–2.5 mm., clothed with chestnut-brown scales up to the annulus; flesh turning to brown when bruised; in woods ..... *L. geniculospora* Atk.
4. Odor somewhat disagreeable; pileus 1–3 cm., scales reddish-brown; stem 4–5 cm. × 2–4 mm., cortex tinged pinkish; spores 6–8 × 3–4 μ ..... *L. cristata* Fr.
4. Odor none; pileus 3–5 cm., scales dark tawny; gills becoming ochraceous at maturity; stem 3-6 cm. × 3-6 mm., equal, concolor; spores 9–10 × 3.5–4 μ ..... *L. fulvella* Rea
5. Flesh or surface of plant changing color when bruised or in age 6

5. Flesh white, unchanging 15
6. Stem distinctly clavate or subbulbous 7
6. Stem equal, or tapering gently upward 10
7. Plant showing red, green and blue tints when handled; pileus 1–3 cm; at first rufous-umber, then with minute, reflexed scales; at length rimose; stem 3–5 cm. long, at first white; gills broad, subdistant, spores 7–9 × 4–5 μ ..... *L. virescens* Morgan
7. Plant not exhibiting this reaction 8
8. Plant when young vinaceous-drab; scales of pileus, the stem and the edge of gills becoming blackish-brown in age. (See emended description.) ..... *L. brunnescens* Pk.
8. Plant at first whitish, or brownish only on the disk of the pileus, becoming reddish-brown when handled, or blackish-brown when dried 9
9. Spores 8–9 × 6–7 μ; pileus 2.5–4 cm., with numerous, minute, scales; stem 3–5 cm. long, 2–3 mm. thick at apex, subbulbous *L. multicolor* Murrill
9. Spores 6–8 × 4-5 μ; pileus 3–5 cm., cuticle not soon broken into scales; stem 5–7 cm. long, 4–6 mm. thick at apex, clavate (*L. rufescens* Morgan) *L. brunnescens* Pk.
10. Spores not more than 9 μ long 11
10. Spores 9–12 × 5–6 μ, pointed at the ends; pileus 1–2 cm., yellowish rubescent, minutely, densely scaly; stem 3–5 cm. × 2–3 mm.; all parts becoming red or reddish in age ..... *L. maculans* Pk.
11. Pileus even, or at most short substriate 12
11. Pileus sulcate on margin, scales at first pale yellow, umbo fulvescent, 2–4 cm.; gills narrow, subdistant; stem 3–5 cm. × 2–4 mm., rufescent; spores 5–6 × 3–4 μ ..... *L. flavescens* Morgan
12. Stem up to 17 cm. long, drab color; in forest of Sequoia, California; pileus 3–4 cm.; chestnut-brown, rufescent, glabrous to fibrillose; gills white, becoming rose-colored when bruised ... *L. roseifolia* Murrill
12. Stem much shorter 13
13. Plant in all parts assuming blue tints when bruised or on drying; pileus 1–2 cm., scales brownish; stem 3–5 cm. × 1.5–2 mm.; annulus persistent; spores 7 × 5 μ, elliptic ..... *L. caerulescens* Pk.
13. Plant not assuming blue tints 14
14. Fibrillose covering of pileus and stem changing very quickly, in the fresh plant, to flame-scarlet, when the plant is touched or disturbed; flesh and gills white, unchanging (See description.) (*L. subfelina*?) ..... *L. flammeotincta*, sp. nov.
14. Fibrillose scales, etc., of the pileus and stem, as well as the flesh, changing to reddish-brown then brown 12–24 hours after bruising; pileus 2–3 cm., granular or scaly; stem 3–5 cm. × 4–5 mm.; annulus median; spores 6–8 × 4–5 μ ..... *L. brunnescens* Pk.
15. Stem peronately appressed-fibrillose or fibrillose-subscaly below the membranous annulus 16
15. Stem glabrous below the annulus 21
16. Pileus 3–6 cm. broad; stem 4–6 (7) cm long 17
16. Pileus 2–3 cm. broad, or smaller; stem 2–4 cm. long 19

17. Edge of gills dark umber; scales of pileus small, umber-colored; stem peronate up to the annulus, median; gills narrow; spores 6–7 × 4 μ; among grass ..... *L. nigromarginata* Massee
17. Edge of gills concolor 18
18. Gills flavescent at maturity; pileus mouse-gray at first, scales bistre-colored; annulus superior; stem with appressed, white scales, later becoming bistre-colored; spores 6–7 × 3–4 μ *L. scabinella* Fr.-Rea
18. Gills remaining white; pileus varying brown, purplish-brown to blackish-brown, at length squarrose-scaly; annulus large; stem fibrillose, thickened at base, 2–5 (6) mm. thick; spores 6–7.5 × 4–5 μ ..... *L. felinoides* Pk.
19. Pileus very small, scales blackish-brown, 5–10 mm. broad; stem 1 mm. thick, floccose-fibrillose; annulus conspicuous, under surface blackish-brown; spores 6–7 × 4 μ; in woods ..... *L. gracilis* Pk.
19. Pileus 2–3 cm. broad 20
20. Pileus when young purplish-lilac, scales at length fuscous; annulus median; stem 2.5–3 mm. thick, its cortex rubellus; spores 4–5 × 2–2.5 μ ..... *L. lilacea* Bres.
20. Pileus with continuous cuticle, rarely subscaly, pale umber to dark brown; gills broad; all parts tough; spores 4–5 × 3 μ *L. neophana* Morgan
21. Pileus quite small, 5–20 (25) mm. broad 22
21. Pileus 2–4 (5) cm. broad 24
22. Stem solid, growing from wood; pileus 10–15 mm. broad; with minute blackish scales; gills remote; annulus persistent; spores 5–6 × 3–3.5 μ ..... *L. phaeosticta* Morgan
22. Stem hollow; not on wood 23
23. Stem clavate, 5–7.5 cm. long, 3–6 mm. thick; pileus 1–2.5 cm. broad, whitish, tinged isabelline, fibrillose-pubescent; spores 6–7 × 4 μ; in woods ..... *L. juniperina* Murrill
23. Stem equal, 2.5 cm. long, 2 mm. thick; pileus 1–2 cm. broad, whitish, becoming rugulose, striate; gills narrow; spores 6–8 × 4–5 μ (Morgan) ..... *L. rugulosa* Pk.
24. Spores 5–6 (7) × 3 μ 25
24. Spores 6–8 × 4–5 μ; pileus subrimose, not scaly, gray or grayish-brown, disk purple-tinged; stem 4–5 cm. × 2–4 mm. subequal *L. Glatfelteri* Pk.
25. Umbo of pileus conspicuous, black, scales deep flesh-color, margin striate; gills subdistant; stem 3–6 cm. × 2–5 mm., equal *L. incarnata* (Clements) Sacc.
25. Umbo whitish, brownish or chestnut color 26
26. Pileus white, rarely brownish on umbo, fibrillose-subscaly; stem slender, 2–4 mm. thick; annulus median ..... *L. miamensis* Morgan
26. Pileus covered with small, avellaneous to chestnut-colored scales; stem 3–10 mm. thick, brown-tinted; annulus superior *L. castaneidisca* Murrill

V. CLYPEOLARIAE

1. Spores fusiform or subfusiform 2
1. Spores not fusiform 6
2. Pileus (2) 3–5 cm. broad 3
2. Pileus 1–2 (3) cm. broad 5
3. Spores 21–26 (30) × 5–6 (7) μ; gills narrow; pileus or scales cinnamon-brown (See description.) ..... *L. fusispora*, sp. nov.
3. Spores rarely 20 μ long 4
4. Pileus subglobose, yellowish-tawny; stem stout, 6–10 mm. thick, yellowish, densely clothed with erect white flocci up to the floccose annulus; spores 12–14 × 4–5 μ ..... *L. pratensis* Fr.-Rea
4. Pileus floccose-scaly, creamy-yellowish; stem 3–6 mm. thick, sheathed with a dense floccose tomentum up to the floccose annulus; spores 10–16 (18) × 4–6 μ ..... *L. clypeolaria* Fr.-Kauff.
5. Pileus brownish, floccose-scaly, 1–2 cm.; gills broad, rather distant; stem 1 mm. thick; spores 11–13 × 4–5 μ *L. floralis* Berk. & Rav.- Beardslee
5. Pileus or scales black, 2–3 cm.; spores 8–10 × 3–4 μ; in conifer forest ..... *L. felina* Pers.-Ricken
6. Spores projectile-shaped (i.e., rounded-enlarged at one end, narrowed and pointed at the other) 7
6. Spores not projectile-shaped 9
7. Pileus 5–8 cm. broad, silky, glabrescent; whole plant white; gills broad; stem 6–8 mm. thick; annulus submedian, floccose-membranous, reflexed, striate above; spores 12–14 × 6–7 μ, apiculus recurved ..... *L. alba* (Bres.) Sacc.
7. Pileus 1–2 (3) cm. broad 8
8. Spores 9–11.5 (13) × 4–5 μ; gills or flesh turning brownish-red with age; pileus subglabrous to somewhat felty, 1–2 cm., brown to reddish-brown ..... *L. castanea* Quél.-Lange
8. Spores 7–8 × 3–4 μ; pileus and stem white to rose-tinted, changing to chestnut-brown on drying; stem 2–5 mm. thick; collected in Washington state ..... *L. castanescens* Murrill
9. Spores truncate at one end 10
9. Spores ellipsoid to oblong 13
10. Spores truncate at apiculate end, so as to be minutely bicornate, 8–9 μ long 11
10. Spores truncate at broader end, narrowed to subcuneate at the other end 12
11. Edge of gills purple-pruinate; pileus 3–4 cm., fawn-color, densely and minutely scaly; annulus cottony; in conifer forests; subcaespitose ..... *L. Boudieri* Bres.
11. Edge of gills concolor; pileus 1–2 cm., mammillate, finely tomentose or with fine reddish-brown scales; odor of balsam *L. castanea* Quél.-Bres.
12. Spores 8–11 × 3–4 μ; pileus 1–2.5 cm., cinnamon-rufous to tawny. See ("Comments.") ..... *L. acerina* Pk.
12. Spores 6–8 × 2.5–3 μ; pileus 4–8 cm., brown to tawny-olive, dif-

fracted-scaly; gills rather broad; stem 4–6 cm. × 5–8 mm., equal, subbulbous, scales concolor.....*L. caloceps* Atk.
13. Pileus 3–5 cm. broad..... 14
13. Pileus usually less or up to 3 cm. broad..... 15
14. Spores 8–11 × 5 μ; pileus alutaceous to brown; stem 4–6 cm. × 5–8 mm.; annulus lacerate and appendiculate.....*L. spanista* Morgan
14. Spores 6–8 × 3–4 μ; pileus covered with small reddish brown scales and fibrils; stem 7–10 cm. × 4–8 mm.; annulus narrow, distant *L. clypeolarioides* Rea
15. Spores 8–10 μ long..... 16
15. Spores 5–6 or 7–8 μ long..... 17
16. Stem about 1 mm. thick; pileus flame-red, conic-campanulate, 1–1.5 cm., subscaly-fibrillose; annulus subcortinate; spores 8–10 × 4.5–5 μ.....*L. ignicolor* Bres.
16. Stem 3–4 mm. thick; pileus flesh-color, scaly, convex, subumbonate, 1.5–3 cm.; annulus inferior, fugacious.....*L. helveola* Bres.
17. Pileus or scales black, striate-sulcate on margin, 2–3 cm.; stem slender, farinaceous-scaly; annulus median, band-like; spores oblong, 5 × ?.....*L. noctiphila* (Ell.) Sacc.
17. Pileus not black..... 18
18. In conifer forests; pileus 2–3 cm., covered with small, squarrose, rusty-brown scales; stem equal, 2–3.5 cm. × 3–4 mm., floccose up to the floccose annulus; spores 7–8 × 3–4 μ *L. forquignoni* Quél.-Ricken
18. In frondose woods; pileus 1.5–2.5 cm., tawny-brown; stem 4–5 cm. × 2–4 mm., with mycelial bulb, floccose-fibrillose, rufescent; annulus flocculose-subappendiculate; spores 5–6 × 3 μ *L. umbrosa* Morgan

VI. ASPERAE

1. Spores minute, 4–5 (6) × 2.5–3 μ..... 2
1. Spores longer, 6–8 (9) × 2.5–3.5 μ..... 6
2. Stem bulbous, or tapering upward, 4–6 (10) mm. thick..... 3
2. Stem equal, slender, 2–3 mm. thick..... 5
3. Pileus or warty scales white, faintly dusky in age, 2–4 cm.; gills broad; stem tapering upward, 3–5 cm. × 3–5 mm., flocculose-scaly, white; veil appendiculate.....*L. gemmata* Morgan
3. Pileus or scales brown, fuscous or umber..... 4
4. Pileus 5–7 cm. broad, tomentose then torn into papillate scales, which may disappear; gills reaching stem, forming a prominent collar, not forked; stem 5–7 cm. × 6–10 mm., densely wooly-scaly, fuscous; odor of radish; in frondose woods. Spores oval, 5–6 × 2.5–3 μ.....*L. hispida* Lasch-Lange
4. Pileus 2–4 cm. broad, hair-brown to olive-brown, with small, erect, pointed scales; gills narrow, sometimes bifurcate at stem; stem concolor, bulbous; spores 4–5 × 2–3 μ.....*L. asperula* Atk.
5. Odor of radish; pileus campanulate, mammillate, bay-brown, 1.5–2 cm., at length with fine hairy erect scales; flesh rosy-colored; veil silky-cobwebby; spores 4–5 × 2.5–2.8 μ (Lange); 6–7 × 3–3.5 μ (Quélet & Bernard).....*L. echinella* Quél. & Bern.

5. Odor not of radish; gills narrow; pileus convex-plane, dark brown, covered by a copious brown tomentum and then by very dense and wooly, pointed scales, 1.5–2.5 cm.; stem very tomentose, brown; spores 4 × 2–2.5 μ ..... *L. eriophora* Pk.
6. Stem glabrous or nearly so; veil arachnoid, very fugacious; pileus 5–7.5 cm. broad, pale crust-brown, soon cracked into minute scales; spores subtruncate-oblong, 8 × 3.5 μ
L. Cortinarius Lange
6. Stem adorned downwards by fibrils of veil and scattered dark, floccose scales 7
7. Pileus 6–12 (15) cm. broad, covered with brown or rufous-brown, erect, pyramidal soft warts or scales 8
7. Pileus 2–5 cm. broad, its cuticle breaking up into small, pointed, blackish-brown scales; gills ventricose-broad, simple, crowded; spores 6–8.5 × 3.5–4 μ ..... *L. fuscosquamea* Pk.
8. Gills forked, rather narrow; spores 6–9 × 2 μ ..... *L. Friesii* Lasch
8. Gills not forked, crowded; spores 6–9 × 2.5–3 μ ... *L. acutaesquamosa* Fr.

VII. PROCERAE-ANNULOSAE

1. Spores large, (12) 14–18 μ or more in length 2
1. Spores not reaching 14 μ in length 9
2. Flesh white, unchanging 3
2. Flesh becoming pink or reddish when bruised; annulus erect-flaring, externally brown at margin, probably fixed; pileus 5–7.5 cm., dark-brown, diffracted-scaly; stem 7.5 cm. × 10–15 mm., subequal, not bulbous; spores 18–20 × 10–12 μ
L. emplastrum Cke. & Massee
3. Stem markedly bulbous at base; annulus mobile 4
3. Stem tapering upward, scarcely subbulbous; annulus thin, erect-flaring, narrow; pileus pallid brown, disk reddish-brown, 8–15 cm., abruptly umbonate; spores 14–18 × 9–10 μ .. *L. gracilienta* Fr.-Ricken
4. Pileus quite large, between 8–18 (20) cm.; cuticle diffracted into large, irregular scales 5
4. Pileus averaging smaller 7
5. Cuticle of pileus brown to tawny-brown 6
5. Cuticle of pileus whitish or tinged alutaceous; stem 20–30 cm. long, bulb 3–4 cm. thick; spores 12–16 × 9–10 μ ... *L. porrigens* Viv.-Morgan
6. Pileus not umbonate, brown, scales shaggy-imbricate, 15–20 cm.; stem 20–30 cm. long; gills whitish; spores 12–17 × 8–10 μ
L. rachodioides P. Henn.-Morgan
6. Pileus umbonate, rufous-brown to tawny-brown, 8–12 (15) cm. broad; annulus thick, firm, its underside brown-scaly; stem with furfuraceous or small brown scales, 15–25 cm. long; spores 14–18 (20) × 9–12 μ ..... *L. procera* Fr.
7. Pileus obtuse or obtusely subumbonate 8
7. Pileus acutely umbonate, fuscous, diffracted-scaly, 3–6 cm.; gills very remote; stem 7–10 cm. × 3–4 mm., obsoletely scaly; spores 15 × 9–10 μ ..... *L. mastoidea* Fr.-Rea
8. Pileus glabrous or minutely floccose, margin excoriate, whitish with

brown disk, 7–10 cm.; annulus fringed on margin, flaring; stem 8–12 cm. × 6–12 mm., mealy-floccose; spores 12–16 × 8–10 (11) μ
L. excoriata Fr.-Lange

8. Pileus delicately floccose-scaly, white with ochraceous disk, 5–8 cm., annulus narrow, entire; spores 12–18 × 7–8 μ.....*L. puellaris* Fr.-Rea
9. Flesh changing color when bruised, usually to reddish or yellowish; annulus fixed..... 10
9. Flesh white, unchanging..... 17
10. Stem ventricose-fusiform, varying to bulbous with short pointed base 11
10. Stem either truly bulbous at base or tapering upward from base.... 13
11. Cuticle of pileus diffracted into rather large concentric scales, fuscous to brown with rufous tints which become more pronounced in age; gills flavescent, or tinged rufous; annulus apical, membranous, erect-flaring, then collapsing..... 12
11. Cuticle of pileus fawn-color, with minute blackish scales; gills becoming rose-color, rarely lemon-color, rubescent when bruised; annulus lacerate, very fugacious, with blackish scales on its lower surface; pileus 2–5 cm.; spores elliptical, 6–7 × 4 μ (Massee)
L. meleagris Fr.-Rea (non Ricken)
12. Pileus 5–20 cm. broad; spores 8–11 × 6–8 μ, *straw-colored to reddish* or purplish.....*L. haematosperma* Bres.
12. Pileus 4–8 (10) cm. broad; spores 8–10 (10.5) × 5–7 (7.5) μ, white
L. americana Pk.
13. Spores elliptical..... 14
13. Spores subglobose, 6–7 (10) μ in diameter; pileus and concentric squarrulose scales white, 3–10 cm., disk ochraceous; gills white, connected at inner end by a cartilaginous collar; flesh becoming pinkish under cuticle and at base of stem; stem attenuate upward from bulbous base.....*L. nympharum* Kalchbr.-Rea
14. Pileus robust, hemispherical, diffracted-scaly; scales large, shaggy, often revolute, gray-brown or bay-brown, 10–15 cm.; gills very remote; annulus with lacerate margin, adhering for a long time to margin of pileus; stem 10–15 mm. thick, bulb large; spores 9–11 (12) × 6–7 μ.....*L. rachodes* Fr.-Lange
14. Pileus thinner, scales minute..... 15
15. Spores small, 6–7 × 3–4 μ..... 16
15. Spores 10–12.5 × 6–7.5 μ; pileus 5–7.5 cm., umbonate, with minute scurfy, brown scales, striate on margin; stem tapering upward from enlarged base, 5–7.5 × 4–6 mm.....*L. Earlei* Pk.
16. Flesh or surface of pileus and stem becoming fuliginous on drying; pileus 8 cm., white with rosy tints, finely floccose scaly; stem long, twisted, tapering upward; gills distant.....*L. fuliginescens* Murrill
16. Flesh turning saffron-red, finally black; pileus 5–12 cm., minutely scaly or hispid; stem bulbous; annulus sometimes submobile; spores straw-colored.....*L. Badhami* B. & Br.-Rea
17. Spores white in mass..... 18
17. Spores green in mass; annulus mobile; pileus white, buff or brown, 10–20 cm. broad, scaly, subexcoriate; stem hard, clavate below, 2–4 cm. thick; spores 9–12 × 6–8 μ.....*L. Morgani* Pk.

18. Stem solid; pileus 6–10 cm. broad 19
18. Stem stuffed with fibrils or hollow 21
19. Pileus pallid clay-color; *annulus ample* 20
19. Pileus white, glabrous, margin even; stem subequal or subbulbous, 5–10 cm. × 8–12 mm.; taste and odor farinaceous, annulus large then subevanescent, spores globose, 4–5 μ ..... *L. solidipes* Pk.
20. Pileus diffracted-scaly, scales rather large; stem 5–7 cm. × 7–10 mm.; spores 8–9 × 6–7 μ; in cultivated gardens; southern states *L. hortensis* Murrill
20. Pileus floccose-silky, glabrescent; stem 5–10 cm. × 10–12 mm., bulbous; spores 7–8 × 4–5 μ; in frondose woods *L. holosericea* Fr.-Ricken
21. Pileus colored rosy, pink, red or olive 22
21. Pileus white or slightly isabelline on disk 25
22. Pileus 4–7 cm. or 6–12 cm. broad 23
22. Pileus 2–4 cm. broad, rose-lilac, livid on disk, minutely fibrillose-scaly; gills narrow; annulus sometimes mobile, ample; stem 7–10 cm. × 2.5 mm., slender; spores 8–9 × 4–5 μ *L. roseilivida* Murrill
23. Pileus olive; spores 5–6 × 3–3.5 μ (See description.) *L. olivacea*, sp. nov.
23. Pileus pinkish to red, subglabrous, *radially rimose*, annulus ample; fixed, membranous; stem equal or attenuate upward 24
24. Spores 8–10 × 4–5 μ; stem 4–9 cm. × 4–6 (8) mm. ..... *L. rubrotincta* Pk.
24. Spores 7 × 3.5 μ; stem 10–15 cm. × 5–10 mm. ..... *L. rubrotinctoides* Murrill
24. Spores 5–7.5 × 3–4.5 μ; pileus 6–12 cm. broad; stem peronate by a red, glabrous sheath up to the ample, flaring, thickish annulus. (*L. pulcherrima* Zeller) ... *L. decorata* Zeller (non *L. pulcherrima* Graff)
25. Pileus 4–8 (9) cm. broad 26
25. Pileus 2–4 cm. broad, finely fibrillose-scaly; gills narrow; stem 5–10 cm. long, 3–5 mm. thick; annulus persistent; spores 7–9 × 3.5–4 μ ..... *L. Sequoiarum* Murrill
26. Pileus abruptly umbonate, plicate-sulcate on margin; gills narrow, remote; stem 7–10 cm. long, tapering upward from a bulbous base, 5–8 mm. at base; annulus thin, spores 7–9 × 5–6 μ *L. "mastoidea"* Morgan
26. Pileus convex, not umbonate, white, glabrous; gills changing slowly to dingy pinkish at maturity; stem 5–10 cm. × 6–12 mm., tapering upwards from a thickened base; annulus in form of a rounded collar; spores 7–9 × 5–6 μ ..... *L. naucina* Fr.

New and Emended Species of Lepiota *

Lepiota olivacea, sp. nov. (Plate XV)

Pileus fleshy, fragile, 4–7 cm. broad, campanulate-expanded, soon plane or depressed, sometimes subumbonate, dry, cuticle

* The type specimens are deposited in the Herbarium of the University of Michigan.

innately and radially fibrillose, subpulverulent, even, "light grayish-olive" to "olive-gray" (Ridg.), "dark olive" on disk, opaque; flesh thin, soft, white, unchanging; gills free, becoming remote, ventricose, 5–6 (7) mm. broad, edge obscurely fimbriate, stem 5–6 (7) cm. long, 3–5 mm. thick at apex, equal or tapering slightly upwards, scarcely subbulbous, up to 10 mm. thick at base, silky-stuffed then hollow, glabrous, even, white, silky-shining upwards; annulus median, terminating a thin evanescent sheath, membranous, at first erect-flaring; odor and taste none or slight; spores 5–6 × 3–3.5 μ. elliptic-ovate, acute at one end, smooth, subhyaline and with a delicate incarnate tint under the microscope, uniguttate; basidia short, stout, 4-spored, 25–27 × 8 μ; cystidia none; sterile cells on edge of gills, ventricose above, 27–30 × 7–10 μ, often crystallate at apex.

Growing scattered on low, alluvial soil under thickets of Sambucus and Impatiens. Ann Arbor, Michigan. August 14, 1921. Collected by C. H. Kauffman.

Green or olive Lepiotas are rarely mentioned in the literature; *L. virescens* Morgan and *L. caerulescens* Pk. are entirely different both by their color and spores. Although I have received reports that *L. Morgani* Pk. is sometimes entirely green, that species is far removed from the one here described.

Lepiota fusispora, sp. nov. (Plate XVI)

Pileus fleshy, 2–5 (7) cm. broad, subcampanulate-expanded, subumbonate, at length plane or depressed around the umbo, dry, at first with a rather thick, soft, fibrillose, "cinnamon-brown" (Ridg.) cuticle, which becomes broken into numerous, floccose, erect or recurved scales, arranged concentrically and showing the pale buff flesh between, not striate on the margin which is lacerate-floccose; flesh rather thin, soft, "warm-buff" towards surface, whitish near gills; gills free, reaching the stem by a point, rather narrow, 3–4 mm. broad, subventricose, close, thin, white or with creamy tint, edge entire or nearly so; stem 4–6 cm. long, 5–6 mm. thick at apex, equal or incrassate downwards, up to 12 mm. thick below, stuffed, cortex rather rigid and

hard, covered at first up to the annulus by the thick, floccose-fibrillose cinnamon-brown universal veil, which is then broken into thick, wedge-shaped scaly masses, which often disappear in part; annulus at first manifest, recurved, thick, plicate-striate from the gill-pressure, becoming evanescent; odor and taste none or slight; spores long, fusiform, acuminate-pointed at both ends, 18–25 (30) × 5–6 (7) μ, smooth, hyaline; cystidia none; basidia clavate, 4-spored, 55–60 × 10–12 μ; sterile cells on edge of gills indistinct, saccate.

On very decayed wood or debris. Type collected by Prof. F. C. Stewart at Seventh Lake, Adirondack Mts., New York, September 1, 1921. Also in the Medicine Bow Mts., near Centennial, Wyoming, September 5, 1923. Collected by C. H. Kauffman.

This is apparently a rare species, or perhaps usually confused with related ones. The spores are surprisingly large, and are unique; one end is often drawn out to a needle-like prolongation. It probably occurs in mountainous regions throughout the northern part of our country.

Lepiota flammeatincta, sp. nov.

Pileus fleshy, 2–3 cm. broad, campanulate-expanded, at length almost plane, obtuse or obsoletely umbonate, dry or nearly so, cuticle at first continuous and "tawny" (Ridg.) or disk chestnut color, soon breaking up into numerous, small, appressed, fibrillose, tawny scales, sometimes subexcoriate, margin not striate, cuticle changing quickly to "flame-scarlet" when plant is picked or touched; flesh thin, about 1.5 mm., submembranous on margin, white, unchanging, except adjacent to cuticle; gills free, subremote, narrow, crowded, white, unchanging; stem 6–8 (10) cm. long, 2.5 5 mm. thick, tapering gently upwards, peronate at first by a somewhat tawny, fibrillose, often reticulate sheath, up to the annulus, fibrillose covering changing quickly to "flame-scarlet" (Ridg.) when handled, whitish within, delicately stuffed by white fibrils then hollow, apex white and naked and unchanging; annulus membranous,

narrow, at first flaring then collapsing, tawny below, whitish above, tinged flame-scarlet when disturbed; odor none; taste slightly bitterish; spores 8–9 × 4–4.5 μ, subellipsoid-oblong, smooth, hyaline; cystidia none; basidia clavate, about 30 × 6–7 μ; sterile cells on edge of gills saccate.

Oregon National Forest, Mt. Hood, near Welch's, Oregon. October 5, 1922. Collected by C. H. Kauffman.

Whether this is *L. subfelina* Murrill can not be definitely known. After picking, the plants were laid exposed on a table, when the flame-scarlet tints disappeared and the tawny colors became again noticeable. The flesh and gills do not possess the substance causing the change to red; only the cuticular covering (i.e., the universal veil) of the cap and stem seem to possess this property.

Lepiota cuneatospora, sp. nov.

Pileus 1.5–3 cm. broad, dry, at first obtusely oval, even and uniformly flesh-pink, at length campanulate-expanded, broadly mammillate, umbo pinkish, elsewhere paler to dull cream color, the cuticle glabrous, even or becoming rimulose, sometimes excoriate on margin; flesh white, thin, thickened at umbo, unchanging; gills free, approximate, somewhat truncate-rounded behind, rather narrow or of medium width, crowded, thin, whitish; stem 4–5 (6) cm. long, 2–4 mm. thick, equal, glabrous above and below the annulus, even, hollow, silky-shining, white, flesh-tinted or white within; annulus membranous, erect-flaring, superior or at least above middle of stem, distinct and often with thick edge, white or tinged pink on lower side, fixed or submobile; odor and taste slight or none; spores 7–9 × 3 μ, narrowly wedge-shaped, subtruncate at broad end, with scattered, obscure papillae, hyaline; cystidia none; sterile cells on edge of gills obscure; basidia clavate, about 28 × 6 μ. Gregarious, or forming loose arcs like parts of fairy rings; on grassy ground in a grove of pine. Takoma Park, Maryland. July 22, 1919. Collected by C. H. Kauffman.

The annulus at the time of its formation is continuous below with a very thin evanescent outer layer on the stem. The non-

scaly cap and stem, the peculiar spores, and the distinct but delicate annulus are some of the distinguishing characters. It is related to *L. Boudieri* Bres. and *L. castanea* Quél. Both of these have a scaly cap and stem; the first has a cottony annulus, the latter emits a fragrance of balsam. From *L. fulvella* Rea it differs in stature, color and its smaller spores.

Lepiota brunnescens Pk. (Emended)

Torrey Club Bull., 31: 177. 1904.
Syn. *Lepiota rufescens* Morgan. Journ. Myc., 12: 246. 1906.

Pileus 2–4 cm. broad, fleshy, thin, campanulate-expanded, nearly plane, subumbonate, cuticle at first "pallid vinaceous drab" (Ridg.), soon breaking into concentrically arranged, vinaceous drab, subsquarrose, small, fibrillose scales, which soon become "blackish-brown" (Ridg.), and alternate with the slightly colored flesh between, disk remaining even, glabrous and becoming blackish-brown, margin not striate; flesh thin, soft, whitish or tinged vinaceous, becoming blackened towards the margin of pileus; gills free, thin, crowded, "pallid-vinaceous drab," rather broad, ventricose, edge white-fimbriate but becoming blackish-brown, or stained blackish; stem 4–6 (7) cm. long, 4–5 mm. thick above, tapering upward from a subclavate base up to 9 mm. thick, stuffed then hollow, cortex rather soft in texture, surface silky, "pallid-vinaceous drab" becoming blackish-stained in age or from handling; annulus median, membranous, at first erect-flaring, subpersistent, concolor, blackening in age; odor fungoid; spores 6-8 × 3.5 4.5 μ ellipsoid, subacute at one end, smooth, hyaline; cystidia none; sterile cells on edge of gills slender, sublanceolate.

On leaf-mold in swamps and grassy woods, Great Falls of the Potomac, Virginia. August 20, 1918.

Originally described from St. Louis, Missouri. *L. rufescens* Morgan, from Ohio, is referred to it by Murrill as a synonym, and this is undoubtedly correct. Murrill reports it also from New York, New Jersey, and California. To quote Dr. Peck, "This singular species when fresh resembles *Lepiota cristata*, but

on drying the whole plant changes color." Since the colors and their changes have not been very accurately described, it seemed best to give a revised description here.

Lepiota pulcherrima Graff (Emended) (Plate XVII)

Philippine Basidiomycetes II. Philip. Journ. Sci. Bot., 9: ——. 1914.
Syn: *Lepiota candida* Morgan (non Copeland). Journ. Myc., 12: 202. 1906.
Limacella albissima Murrill, North Amer. Flora, 10: 40. 1914.

Entire plant white. Pileus fleshy, 1–4 cm. broad, at first subconic-campanulate, expanded-plane, obtuse, subviscid, pellicle thin and very bitter to taste, cuticle on drying sometimes becoming fine silky-scaly or minutely diffracted-scaly, margin not striate; flesh thin, white, unchanging; gills free, approximate, narrow, crowded, edge concolor and entire; stem 5–8 cm. long, tapering gently upward, slightly subfusiform or subclavate, 2–4 mm. thick at apex, 4–8 mm. below, innately silky or fibrillose-scurfy below annulus, pruinose to glabrous at apex, stuffed with silky fibrils then hollow; annulus membranous, erect-flaring, narrow, superior, subpersistent, terminating a thin, evanescent sheath which is subviscid and bitter to the taste; odor none; spores small, 5–6 (7.5) × 3–3.5 μ, oval-elliptical, smooth, hyaline, often uniguttate; cystidia none; basidia clavate, 30 × 5–6 μ; hymenium sharply differentiated from gill-trama.

Among forest debris on the ground, under mixed trees of maple, alder and conifers, Oregon National Forest, Mt. Hood, near Welch's, Oregon. September and October. Collected by C. H. Kauffman and L. E. Wehmeyer.

These plants had the color and other characters of *L. pulcherrima* Graff (= *L. candida* Morg). The very bitter taste of the surface of the pileus and stem in the growing condition, is, however, not known to be present in that species and I have omitted testing for it in collecting *L. pulcherrima* at Ann Arbor. The slightly shorter spores of the Oregon form is the only other difference I know of; those measure 5–6 μ long, while the spores of the Ann Arbor collection are up to 7.5 μ long. It is, however, too close to the latter, and future observations may show that

the eastern plant is also provided with a bitter pellicle. It is known to me from Ohio, Michigan and Oregon.

The naming of this plant has become a slightly involved matter. Morgan found it in Ohio and published it in 1906 as *L. candida*. Meanwhile Copeland had already used this name for a Philippine species in 1905. In the *North American Flora*, Murrill segregated it under *Limacella albissima* in 1914. Finally, the same year, Graff, in his account of Philippine fungi, renamed the plant, calling it *L. pulcherrima*. Since then, Zeller has named a red-capped Lepiota from Oregon *L. pulcherrima*, but discovering the error, now suggests *Lepiota decorata* for his plant.

Volvaria avellanea (Clem.), comb. nov. (Emended)

Syn: *Lepiota avellanea* Clem., Bot. Surv. Nebr., 2: 41. 1893.
Volvaria concinna Clem., Bot. Surv. Nebr., 5: 91. 1901.
Volvariopsis cincinna (Clem.) Murrill, North Amer. Flora, 10: 142. 1917.

Pileus thin, fleshy, 1–3 (5) cm. broad, at first oval to obtusely subconic and then uniformly "vinaceous-brown" (Ridg.), minutely flocculose-fibrillose, with incurved margin, at length broadly campanulate, subumbonate, dry, with long subdistant striae on margin, the thin cuticle broken into numerous, radiating, appressed, delicate scales, "vinaceous-brown" on disk, scales concolor or paler; flesh white, submembranous, unchanging; gills free, rather broad, subdistant, white, becoming crisped on drying, edge minutely white-flocculose; stem 2–4 cm. long, 1–3 (5) mm. thick, at first conic then tapering slightly upward or equal, stuffed then hollow, slightly mealy or glabrous at apex, white above the inferior, sheathing, thinly membranous and closely appressed, "vinaceous-brown" volva, which frequently disappears early leaving its upper portion on the stem as a low-hung narrow annulus; odor none; spores oval or elliptic-oval, 9–11 (12) × 5–6 (7) μ, smooth, with rosy tints; cystidia none; sterile cells on edge of gills broadly saccate, obtuse, about 45 × 12 μ.

In warm greenhouse, Washington, D. C., growing on cocoanut fiber used as soil, or on soil itself; as *V. concinna*, collected

on moist soil along a river in Nebraska; as *Lepiota avellanea*, on soil in a greenhouse in Nebraska.

This plant, as it appears from time to time in a hothouse, is quite variable. Sometimes the veil is more delicate and the lower part of the volva is not seen and only a slight, vinaceous-tinged annulus occurs. The volva when present is long, cylindrical and sheathes the stem closely, and is easily overlooked; it is a unique volva. The rosy tint of the spores is also easily overlooked. The size of the plant varies quite a little under different conditions for its development. I do not doubt that both the plants described by Prof. Clements belong to the same species. I frequently observed and studied it at Washington. An error in the citation of the date of publication of *Lepiota avellanea*, as given in the *North American Flora*, Vol. 10, page 58, would lead one to the wrong specific name to be applied.

Comments on Certain Species of the Synopsis

Lepiota acerina Pk. (Plate XVIII). — The slender habit of this plant is well shown in the photograph. The veil covering is floccose; on the pileus it breaks into minute, soft scales which are "cinnamon-rufous" to "tawny" (Ridg.); the stem is more or less reticulate from the veil, the minute flocculose scales occupying the connecting points of the reticulum. The photograph was made from plants collected at Ann Arbor, August 14, 1921.

Lepiota americana, L. Badhami, L. haematosperma and L. meleagris. — The general confusion concerning the identities of these four species seems to be promoted by each successive writer. Bresadola (*Fung. Trid.*, 2: 83.) combined the first three species. It now appears that *L. americana* is distinguishable from *L. haematosperma* by its white spores and smaller size. If Rea's description of *L. Badhami* is conclusive, then that species is mainly separable from *L. haematosperma* by the flesh at length becoming black, by its truly bulbous instead of ventricose stem, and by its smaller size. It is to be noted that *L. haematosperma* Bull.-Bres. appears under the name *L. meleagris* in Ricken's book; *L. Badhami* is considered a synonym. But

L. meleagris, the specific name of which was applied by Sowerby, ought to be known in England, if anywhere. Rea's account (13) of the plant therefore deserves attention. It appears to be relatively a much smaller plant than any of the others; the scales on the cap are minute and black, and the annulus is "very fugacious." It has no relationship to such species as *L. brunnescens* Pk. or *Psalliota echinata* Fr.

LEPIOTA ACUTAESQUAMOSA, L. ASPERA, L. FRIESII and L. HISPIDA. — What one is to believe among the conflicting opinions concerning the identity of these four species, is difficult to decide. Fries gives his mature opinion in *Hymen. Europ.*, 1874, where he recognizes the specific distinction of *L. acutaesquamosa* Weinm., *L. hispida* Lasch and *L. Friesii* Lasch. In a note under *Amanita aspera*, he refers to the Persoon species "*Agaricus asper*" as one involved in confusion. In *Monographia*, Vol. I (1857), p. 23, he says *L. Friesii* has not yet been collected in Sweden. Quélet and Battaille (12), on the other hand, recognize *Lepiota aspera* of Persoon, and practically make *L. acutaesquamosa* Weinm.-Fr. a synonym of it. They also recognize *L. hispida* Lasch, but do not mention *L. Friesii*. According to their descriptions, *L. aspera* has forked gills, while the gills of *L. hispida* are simple. Gillet, in *Champignons de France*, 1874, includes *L. acutaesquamosa* Weinm. and *L. hispida* Lasch and assigns to them simple gills, recognizing *L. Friesii* Lasch as a species with forked gills. Ricken (14) considers *L. acutaesquamosa* Weinm. as a synonym of *L. Friesii* Lasch, including only the latter and *L. hispida*. He gently brushes away certain difficulties by including in the description of each of these species the words "bisweilen gabelig." C. G. Lloyd (*l. c.*) also combines *L. Friesii* and *L. acutaesquamosa* by the use of the magic words: "sometimes gills are not forked, sometimes few forked, and often many forked." Morgan (*l. c.*) recognizes Persoon's name, *L. aspera*, and reduces *L. acutaesquamosa* and *L. Friesii* to synonomy. Morgan's method of side-stepping the gill-character in question is to omit stating whether they are simple, forked or either. Rea (13) italicizes the word "branched" in describing the gills of *L. acutaesquamosa* and omits italics for it in *L. Friesii*.

In the account of *L. hispida* no mention is made of the matter. Finally, Murrill, in the *North American Flora,* tries to solve the puzzle by including all these names except *L. hispida* in the doubtful species of Persoon, viz., *L. aspera.* The gills are said by him to be "sometimes forked."

What would you! I have selected this detail out of the history of systematic mycology in order to illustrate the psychology of the taxonomist when he is confronted with the question of the identity of some of the older species. I must admit that I have no final answer to the questions involved above. However, certain points stand out from the summary.

Apparently *L. hispida* is unknown in the United States. There seems to be no question that the gills are always simple in this case. It is known, if at all, to the French mycologists and those of southern Europe. It is, therefore, to be looked for in the southern half of our country. Lange (9) suggests that *L. fuscosquamea* Pk. corresponds to it, but see remarks on that species below.

As to *L. aspera* Pers., it would seem that the conclusion of Fries, mentioned before, is the only tenable one. The name should be deleted.

With regard to the gill-forking of the two species, *L. acutaesquamosa* and *L. Friesii,* I can only cite my own observations, namely, that collections show gills either abundantly branched or that they show no branching except very scantily, and not at all in the normal manner. Whichever name may be selected for the forked-gill type of plant, I feel convinced that this is a genetic characteristic that holds, and that we have these two species in this country.

Lepiota arenicola Pk. — This name is given in Quélet & Battaille's monograph as *L. arenicola* Mén., but I have been unable to locate the original description or its authorship.

Lepiota asperula Atk. and L. eriophora Pk. — The former was described in 1901, the latter in 1903. Morgan in 1906 reduced *L. eriophora* to synonymy under Atkinson's species. Peck (*N.Y . State Mus. Bull.,* 116: 25, 1907) objects to the procedure of Morgan by pointing out the differences between the two spe-

cies. He says *L. eriophora* "differs from *L. asperula* Atk., by its smaller size, darker brown color, the denser crowded scales of the pileus and especially by the copious brown tomentum of cap and stem, a character suggestive of the specific name." The spores of both are minute and measure about 4–5 × 2–3 μ. Murrill has reduced both species to synonymy under *L. aspera*, which includes *L. acutaesquamosa*, an opinion which in my judgment is unsupportable. The spore sizes of these two species make any such synonymy untenable.

Lepiota caerulescens Pk. — *L. Bucknallii* differs from this chiefly by the fugacious annulus, strong odor of gas tar and perhaps more narrow spores. Morgan puts it under *L. virescens* Speg.

Lepiota clypeolaria Fr. — The supposed variability of this species is still a complex problem. Some have lumped all the forms described into one species, while others have just as assiduously segregated the group into many species. The present tendency is conservative, and the elimination of *L. metulaespora* B. & Br., an Indian species, will save much speculation.

Lepiota erminea Fr. — According to Bresadola (*Fung. Trid.*, I: 15.) this species has been largely misunderstood in Europe, and he points out that the figures hitherto referred to *L. erminea* Fr. belong to *L. clypeolaria* var. *alba* Bres. (in this paper given as *L. alba* (Bres.) Sacc.) and that the genuine *L. erminea* Fr. can be known easily by its very campanulate pileus and pungent radishy taste.

Lepiota felina Pers.-Ricken. — The erroneous idea which many American students have had, that this species is about the same size as *L. clypeolaria*, *L. fuscosquamea*, etc., is probably responsible for the fact that it is practically unknown in this country. It has been reported frequently but as Murrill suggests (10), such reports likely had to do with *L. fuscosquamea* or other species. That it is even poorly known in Europe is shown by the conflicting accounts of spore size and shape given by different authors. The account given by Ricken (14) appears to fit Persoon's plant the best of any of them. The scales of the cap are appressed, minute, and black, and its spores are fusiform.

LEPIOTA FUSCOSQUAMEA (Pk.) Sacc. — In *Agaricaceae of Michigan*, p. 633., I reported a plant collected in northern Michigan, as *L. felina* Fr. This I now consider to be *L. fuscosquamea* Pk. I have since collected the latter species in the Adirondack Mountains, and am convinced that the spore size given by Peck is misleading, and should be 6–8.5 × 3.5–4 μ. In the *North American Flora*, Murrill assigns spores to it, smaller even than the size given by Peck. Lange (9) tried to unite this species with one he collected in Europe and which he considered to be *L. hispida* Lasch. The spore size of Lange's plant is given as 5–6 × 2.75–3 μ, and the shape oval, hence the two species cannot be combined. Although it may be thought a fine distinction, it may be worth while to point out that the spores of *L. acutaesquamosa* and *L. Friesii* in this country, are constantly at least one micron less in width than in *L. fuscosquamea*. Its gills are simple. The floccose covering on the stem is dense and breaks up into erect, conical, blackish scales. This blackish color is distinguishing.

LEPIOTA GRACILIS Pk. and "LEPIOTA GRACILIS" Quél. — Peck's name apparently antedates the use of the name by Quélet for his variety of *L. clypeolaria*. Both Lange (9) and Rea (13) seem to have missed this use as a varietal name, since they have raised Quélet's variety to the rank of a species, crediting Quélet with it. (See *Flore Monographique des Amanites et des Lépiotes*, p. 66.) Peck's species is remarkable for the small size of the plant which is said to have a conspicuous, persistent, membranous annulus. Lange (9, p. 24) has described a plant which he calls *L. gracilis* Quél. var. *laevigata*. As indicated in the synopsis earlier in this paper, this deserves specific rank and is therefore renamed **L. laevigata** Lange, comb. nov.

LEPIOTA MASTOIDEA Fr. — This is another Fresien species not very well understood in Europe. Since Rea gives the spore characters of the plant which he places here, we can look for it more confidently. The plant described by Morgan (*Jour. Myc.*, 13: 2, 1907) is at least not that of Rea, and probably is a distinct American species. Bresadola (*Ann. Myc.*, 18: 65. 1920) considers *L. porrigens* Viv. a synonym of it. Ricken (14) in-

timates that *L. mastoidea* may be only a small form of *L. gracilienta*. The fact of the matter is, that various European writers pass along suggestions about a number of species of the Procerae group, but rarely make an exhaustive study of any of them.

Lepiota parvannulata (Lasch) Fr. — A species scarcely if at all understood in this country. According to Fries, "The only species with which it can be confused is *L. erminea*, which agrees in color and is found in similar places (i.e. in grassy fields), but which is much larger and differs in the superior, torn annulus, the glabrous pileus and its odor of radish."

Lepiota seminuda (Lasch) Quél. — This is hardly ever referred to by modern American collectors. Bresadola makes the suggestion (*Ann. Myc.*, 18: 64. 1920) that *L. cristatatella* Pk. is identical. By letter, he had given this opinion to Americans a long while before. Atkinson (3) reproduces excellent photographs of it, from both French and American collections. Murrill (*North American Flora*, 10: 48) includes it. In my opinion, it is nevertheless probable that two distinct forms occur. In Michigan we have the typical form described by Peck, but farther south, especially around Washington, D. C., I have collected a somewhat larger plant which fits the description and figures of *L. seminuda* much better than it does that of the little *L. cristatatella*.

Comments on Excluded or Doubtful Species*

Lepiota albo-sericea P. Henn. — This name is used by Lange for a plant of which he gives a description. He says it is likely that it is the same species as *L. serena* Fr. and is identical with the larger form of *L. parvannulata* Fr.

Lepiota angustata Britz.-Morg. — This is too close to *L. cristata* Fr.

Lepiota asprata Berk. — Fries, in *Hymen. Europ.*, refers this to *Pholiota muricata* Fr.

* No complete list of possible synonyms or exclusions among the older names, such as are mentioned by Saccardo, can be given here. However, an attempt is made to include most of the names that have been used for discarded species in this country, as well as certain ones from Europe.

Lepiota arida (Fr.) Gill. is *Amanita arida* of the *Icones* of Fries. Rea includes it among the Lepiotas, but it is surely a better Amanita.

Lepiota atrocrocea W. G. Smith. — No microscopic characters are reported for this species.

Lepiota concentrica Murrill. — Referred to *L. fuscosquamea* Pk. as a synonym by Murrill himself.

Lepiota cultorum B. & C. — This species was named in 1853 from South Carolina, but has remained unknown to mycologists since that time.

Lepiota daucipes (B. & M.) Morg. is more likely an Amanita.

Lepiota delicata Fr. was referred to the genus Armillaria by Boudier. Rea reports it as having globose spores, 5–6 μ in diameter. Schweinitz and Morgan reported the species from the United States.

Lepiota drymonia Morg. — No specimens are in existence and its spore characters are unknown.

Lepiota echinata (Roth.) Quél. — This little species, with red-tinted spores, I have kept in the genus Psalliota. (See *Agaricaceae of Michigan*, I. 245.)

Lepiota fragillissima (B. & Rav.) Morg. — It was originally described in the genus Hiatula. The spore characters are unknown.

Lepiota fulvastra (B. & C.) Sacc. — This species is too poorly known to be retained.

Lepiota haematosperma (Bull.) Boud. is another name for *Psalliota echinata* Fr.

Lepiota janthina Cke. — Ricken considers this to be the same as *L. castanea* Quél.

Lepiota magnispora Murrill. — This was described by Murrill from the Northwest, in 1912; later he published it as a synonym of *L. clypeolaria*. Its spores were given as 15–18 $\times$ 4–5 μ in size, oblong-fusiform in shape

Lepiota mammaeformis Underw. — The type collection of this came from Alabama. It is made a synonym of *L. cepaestipes* by Murrill.

LEPIOTA METULAESPORA B. & Br. — A species described long ago from India. European and early American mycologists referred certain of their collections to it, and the name has persisted in the literature up to within a few years. It is now generally agreed that the name and the species have no place in the floras of Europe and North America. It is therefore surprising to see it emerge once more in Lange's recent paper on the genus.

LEPIOTA NARDOSMIOIDES Murrill. — This is an anomaly in the group. The umber tint to the spores indicates that it needs further study. It was found in a redwood forest in California.

LEPIOTA PELIDNA (B. & Mont.) Sacc. — This is not sufficiently understood. The original plants grew on fallen trunks. In spite of its habitat, it is very likely an Amanita.

LEPIOTA PERMIXTA Barla. — Rea who includes this in his book, gives its spore-size as 12-20 × 8-12 μ. This spore-size is also given in Saccardo's *Sylloge*. The original description of the spores suggests that it is probably not white-spored. It is described from southern France.

LEPIOTA PINGUIS Fr. — The spore characters are unknown. It was probably introduced into Sweden, since Fries collected it from pine wood not native to that country.

LEPIOTA POLYPYRAMIS (B. & C.) Morg. — Presumably an Amanita.

LEPIOTA POLYSTICTA Berk. — The minute globose spores, along with some other characters, suggest a different genus.

LEPIOTA PROMINENS F. — Morgan and others consider this a synonym of *L. porrigens*.

LEPIOTA PYRENAEA Quél. is *Pholiota aurea* Fr., according to Maire.

LEPIOTA RADICATA (Pk.) Morg. is *Amanita radicata* Pk.

LEPIOTA SERENA Fr. — This is one of the Fresian species about which little has become known. Boudier suggests that it is *Armillaria subcava* Schum. Bresadola makes *L. brebissonii* Godey a synonym of *L. serena*.

LEPIOTA SISTRATA Fr. — Not recognized as a rule by modern mycologists.

Lepiota sordescens B. & C. (as Agaricus). — Referred to *L. cepaestipes* by Murrill.

Lepiota subremota B. & C. (as Agaricus). — This has apparently not been recognized since it was named. Murrill refers it to *L. cepaestipes*, while Morgan makes it a synonym of *L. mastoidea* Fr.

Lepiota sulphurina (Clements) Sacc. — This seems to me, from its description, to have the characters of an Amanita with pulverulent volva.

Lepiota Vittadinii Fr. — Intermediate between the genera Lepiota and Amanita, verging toward the latter.

Lepiota xylogenus Mont. — As shown by Murrill (*Mycologia*, 6: 151. 1914), there is no dependence to be placed on the meaning of the specific name in this case It was collected in Hawaii.

University of Michigan

LITERATURE CITED

1. Atkinson, G. F. 1914. The Development of Lepiota clypeolaria. Ann. Myc., 12: 346–356.
2. —— 1914. Homology of the "Universal Veil" in Agaricus. Mycologisch. Centrallbl., 5: 13–19.
3. —— 1916. The Development of Lepiota cristata and L. seminuda. Mem. N. Y. Bot. Gard., 6: 209–228.
4. Fries, Elias Magnus. 1821. Syst. Myc., I: 19.
5. —— 1857. Monographia, I: 17.
6. —— 1874. Hymen. Europ., p. 29.
7. Kauffman, C. H. 1918. Agaricaceae of Michigan, I: 625.
8. —— 1922. The Genus Armillaria in the United States and its Relationships. Papers Mich. Acad. Sci. Arts and Letters, II: 53–67.
9. Lange, Jakob E. 1915. Studies in the Agarics of Denmark, Part II. Dansk Botanisk Arkiv., 2: 13.
10. Murrill, W. A. 1914. North American Flora, 10: 40–64.
11. Quélet, Lucien. 1886. Ench. Fung., p. 5.
12. Quélet, Lucien, et Battaille, Frédéric. 1902. Flore Monographique des Amanites et des Lépiotes, p. 44.
13. Rea, Carlton. 1922. British Basidiomycetes, p. 64.
14. Ricken, A. 1914. Die Blätterpilze Deutschlands, I: 314.

PLATE XV

LEPIOTA OLIVACEA, sp. nov.

PLATE XVI

LEPIOTA FUSISPORA, sp. nov.

PLATE XVII

LEPIOTA PULCHERRIMA

PLATE XVIII

LEPIOTA ACERINA

AN INJURIOUS FACTOR AFFECTING THE SEEDS OF *PHASEOLUS VULGARIS* SOAKED IN WATER

PAUL TILFORD, C. F. ABEL AND R. P. HIBBARD

INTRODUCTION

It is generally conceded that by soaking seeds one may hasten their germination, provided the period of soaking is not too long. Thus an optimum period of soaking has been suggested for a number of different kinds of seeds.[1] It has been shown that deleterious effects follow if seeds are soaked for longer periods than that which is the optimum. Kidd and West[2] have reported that, in the first place, the percentage of germination, when the soaking was too long, was considerably below that of seeds not soaked. Secondly, not only was the germination reduced, but the subsequent growth of the plant was affected. The dry weight of month-old plants that had been subjected to prolonged soaking was considerably less than that of seeds planted dry. Lastly, the nature of the effect was strongly specific, since different results were obtained by similar treatments on closely allied plants.

These claims were made from a series of experiments with dwarf bean, broad bean, mustard, oat, lupin, wheat, sunflower and pea. The seeds were soaked in water for periods of time varying from 6 to 72 hours (6, 24, 48, 72). They were removed from

[1] Ganong, W. F. 1908. *A Laboratory Course in Plant Physiology*, p. 211. Henry Holt and Co.

[2] Kidd, Franklin, and Cyril West. 1918. *Physiological Predetermination: The Influence of the Physiological Condition of the Seed upon the Course of Subsequent Growth and upon the Yield: I. The Effect of Soaking Seeds in Water. Ann. Appl. Biol.*, 5: 1–10.

the water at the periods indicated and placed on damp sand in porous pots covered above with glass, to germinate.

Working with a great many kinds of seeds, such as pea (garden and field), dwarf bean, alfalfa, flax, sunflower, wheat, oats, rye, barley, clover, corn, mustard, radish and buckwheat, we have also obtained deleterious effects on prolonged soaking in tap water. The effect has not been the same on the different kinds of seeds. The experiments have shown that proteinaceous seeds as a class are more quickly injured than seeds that are predominantly starchy or fatty. It is true also that different results are obtained by similar treatments on closely allied plants. A short period of soaking (eight hours) injures the seed of the common navy bean (*Phaseolus vulgaris*) in our experiment as in those of Kidd and West.[3]

Just what causes the breakdown in the seeds, the navy bean for example, is of course the interesting feature. Although they have done no experiments in this direction, Kidd and West,[3] in a review of the literature, enumerate what others have so far given as reasons. The suggestions fall into two classes. There is either an accumulation of CO_2 with a consequent reduction of free oxygen, or an exosmosis or leaching of soluble food materials. The former may be taken as an example of impaired respiration, leading to suffocation, while the latter may be called the starvation theory.

When bean seeds are allowed to soak in a dish of water, the water soon loses its transparency and not very long afterward a very offensive odor is given off. This odor is suggestive of bacterial action. As bacteria are known to cause decomposition, it is natural to infer that the breakdown of seeds soaking in water is really attributable to bacterial activity. A series of experiments was therefore outlined in an attempt to prove this. These experiments are detailed below.

[3] Kidd, Franklin, and Cyril West. 1918. *Physiological Predetermination: The Influence of the Physiological Condition of the Seed upon the Course of Subsequent Growth and upon Yield. IV. Review of Literature.* Chap. III. *Ann. Appl. Biol.*, 5: 220–251.

EXPERIMENTATION

Experiment I

To establish the time when the seeds were injuriously affected by soaking in water, the following experiment was set up. Approximately eleven hundred bean seeds were placed in a two-quart Mason jar, which was then filled with tap water. After six hours, and after each subsequent six-hour period up to seventy-eight hours, one hundred seeds were taken out and placed in proper conditions for germination. The temperature of the water was that of the room, about 20 degrees Centigrade. The following table shows the germination obtained.

TABLE I

GERMINATION PERCENTAGES AT DIFFERENT TIME-PERIODS IN STAGNANT WATER FOR PHASEOLUS VULGARIS

Time in hours in stagnant water.....	0	6	12	18	24	30	48	72	78
Germination percentage....	98	95	80	50	20	15	10	0	0

From the table it may be observed that some lowering of germination took place even earlier than six hours and that a very decided drop took place between the sixth and twelfth hours. Finally at the end of forty-eight hours the germination fell to 10 per cent. After the beans were soaked for two days, the resulting liquid gave off an odor, which at the end of three days was still more offensive. The liquid was opaque and only the seeds in a layer near the sides of the jar were visible. The conditions in this jar focused attention on the bacterial factor.

A uniform method for germinating the seeds was adopted and consisted in placing them between two or three folds of wet paper toweling, packed on wet quartz sand in shallow wooden trays. These were placed in the greenhouse where the temperature varied from 18° C. to 24° C. The bean seeds were from a disease-free stock (Robust) raised on the College farm and

showed a high percentage of germination, varying with different samples from 97 per cent to 100 per cent.

Experiment II

The next experiment was planned in an attempt to minimize the bacterial factor. About fifteen hundred seeds were placed in the Mason jar, the mouth of which was covered by a piece of cheese-cloth securely fastened by a string. This cloth served to retain the seeds, but allowed the water to flow freely. A long-stemmed thistle tube was thrust through a hole in the cheese-cloth and pushed to the bottom of the jar; when this was placed under the spigot and the water turned on, fresh water was added to the bottom, while the old water flowed over the top of the jar. In this way, the seeds were soaking in running water. As in the previous experiment, one hundred seeds were taken out at definite periods and set out to germinate. The percentage of germination is shown in the following table.

TABLE II

GERMINATION PERCENTAGES OF PHASEOLUS VULGARIS AT DIFFERENT TIME-PERIODS IN RUNNING WATER

Time in hours in running water	0	6	12	18	24	30	48	72	78	98	117	126	132	144
Germination percentage	100	98	100	100	98	94	93	87	81	82	52	44	37	20

In this particular test, provision had to be made to maintain the temperature of the running water at the same point as that of the room, for running water is about 10° C. lower. This was done by heating a long twisted coil of metal tubing through which the water passed, in a gas flame.

It will be noted from this table that the percentage of germination does not fall as rapidly, nor does loss of viability appear as early, as in seeds soaked in stagnant water. It may be concluded, however, that the loss of viability takes place, but

after a longer period of soaking than in the first test. In this method the beneficial effect may have come from the removal of the CO_2 and other by-products and the renewal of free oxygen.

Experiment III

The previous experiments have minimized the bacterial factor, but the question may now be asked, How will the percentage of germination be affected if bacteria are entirely eliminated? Disinfected seeds were soaked in sterile water under sterile conditions for varying periods of time. Hand-picked seeds from disease-free samples of Robust beans were disinfected as follows. The seeds were first treated with alcohol for a few minutes and then with 1:1000 $HgCl_2$ for twenty minutes. These seeds, in lots of 100 each, were transferred, in a culture room and under the customary conditions, to flasks of sterile water (sterilized in the autoclave at fifteen pounds pressure for one hour). At no time during the course of the experiment did the liquid in the flask become cloudy, nor did several attempts at plating samples from each of the flasks at the termination of the experiment show any bacterial or fungous colonies. The results are indicated in Table III.

TABLE III

GERMINATION PERCENTAGES FOR PHASEOLUS VULGARIS AT DIFFERENT TIME-PERIODS IN STERILE WATER

Time in hours in sterile water	0	50	72	96	126
Germination percentage	97	54	30	25	15

Under the conditions of the experiment, the percentage of fermination finally falls to a low point, although it is better at the end of one hundred and twenty-six hours in this non-agitated sterile water than in stagnant water. This decline in viability is no doubt due to an accumulation of CO_2 and to an absence of sufficient oxygen to provide for the life-processes within the seed.

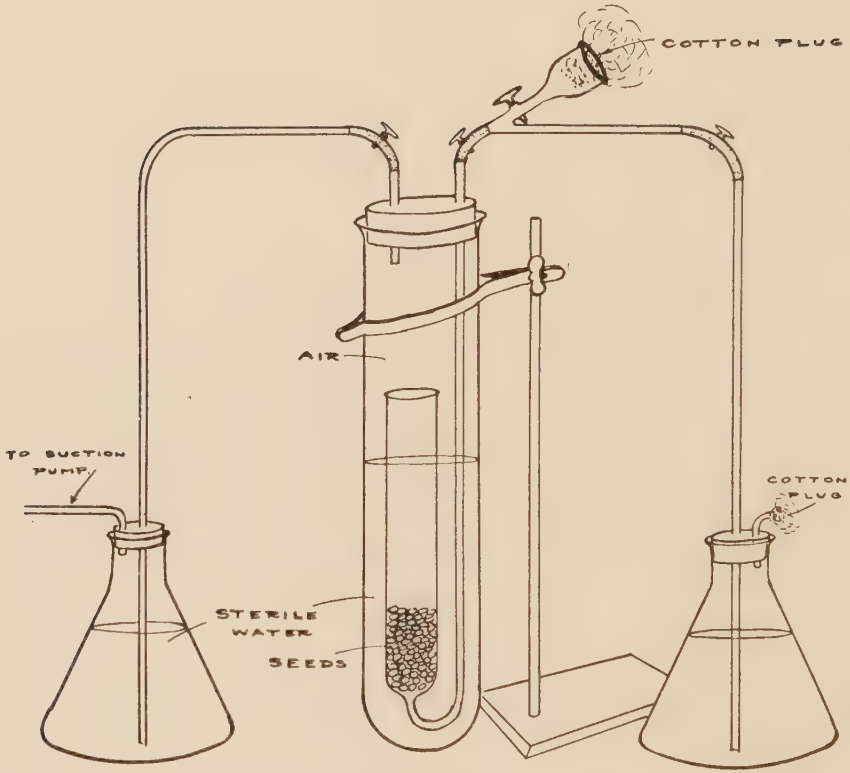


FIG. 8. Apparatus for Soaking and Aërating Beans under Sterile Conditions

Experiment IV

It follows from the results of the experiments mentioned above that the next logical step in the study should provide for a renewal of oxygen (air) and a removal of CO_2 under sterile conditions. With the set-up, as shown in the accompanying diagram, Figure 8, the conditions of the experiment were met. The seeds were selected and disinfected according to the method already outlined. The final step in the process, the disinfection with $HgCl_2$, was carried on within the apparatus previously sterilized in the autoclave at 15 pounds pressure for half an hour. The disinfectant was washed out with sterile water by suction, and then a fresh supply of sterile water in which the seeds might soak was introduced. To provide for aëration, the apparatus was attached to the suction pump and air was sucked through for three to five days as the case might be. To show that the air entering the apparatus contained no bacteria, a similar set-up was attached to the suction pump. Instead of seeds soaking in water, this time, the larger test tube held some beef agar at the bottom. At no time during the five-day period of exposure did a bacterial or fungus colony show on the agar slant. As a control for the original experiment, a similar number of seeds were soaked in tap water in an open test tube like the one shown in the diagram. Of course, this was not aërated. Accordingly, another large test tube was set up containing water and seeds and attached to the suction pump. The air inlet on this apparatus was not plugged with cotton and the sources of bacterial contamination were within and without the apparatus. The results of the germination test under the three treatments indicated are found in Table IV.

TABLE IV

GERMINATION PERCENTAGES OF PHASEOLUS VULGARIS UNDER THREE DIFFERENT METHODS OF TREATMENT

Treatments	Germination percentages at end of 72 hours		
	1st test	2d test	3d test
Sterile aërated.....	60–72 *	97–100 *	50–88 *
Non-sterile aërated..	14–0	37–40 *	23–27 *
Non-sterile stagnant	20–0	0–0 *	0–0 *

From this experiment the conclusion that bacterial activity is a large factor in the breakdown of bean seeds is inevitable. The mention of a few observations during the course of the experiment may not be out of place here. In about six hours the two aërated cultures had produced a foam or frothy mass at the top of the liquid. This frothy mass seemed to occur sooner in the non-sterile aërated culture than in the sterile aërated one and also seemed to be more abundant. Furthermore, the water became cloudy sooner in the non-sterile aërated culture than in the sterile aërated one. Just what caused this difference is not known, but it might be suggested that more CO_2 was being formed there. It is very likely that more bacteria or fungi were present than at first. Whether they entered from without or became more numerous because of the aëration is not known, but either alternative might be a possible explanation. In order to determine whether or not CO_2 was present and a factor, the CO_2 content by volume was ascertained for each of the three liquids. At the same time an H ion concentration determination was made for each solution. The pH values were determined electro-titrometrically by means of the Bartell potentiometer. The CO_2 content by volume was gained by the use of

* After the percentage of germination under water had been determined, the seeds were removed and placed under good conditions for germination to determine how many more would germinate. The numbers starred give the final germination scores.

the Van Slyke apparatus for the determination of CO_2. The results are found in Table V.

TABLE V

CO_2 AND H ION CONCENTRATION VALUES FOR THE THREE LIQUIDS OBTAINED IN THE FOREGOING EXPERIMENT

TEST NO.	Sterile aërated		Non-sterile aërated		Non-sterile non-aërated	
	pH	CO_2	pH	CO_2	pH	CO_2
1	6.0	3.4	4.6	31.7	4.6	20.6
2	6.4	6.1	7.07	7.90	4.3	13.28
3	6.3	3.4	7.20	12.36	6.9	19.53

It is evident from the table that CO_2 increases progressively. Slight amounts are found in the sterile aërated culture, more in the non-sterile aërated, and most in the non-sterile, non-aërated culture. In the non-sterile aërated culture,[4] the first test shows a high CO_2 content. This is evidently too high a value and all out of proportion to the other two (tests 2 and 3). Except for a few discrepancies the table shows that CO_2 is an important factor and that where the cultures are neither aërated nor sterile, there is the greatest accumulation of CO_2.

DISCUSSION OF RESULTS

If bean seeds are allowed to soak for three days in a large volume of water which is at rest in a dish, an offensive odor develops. The condition is indicative of bacterial action. This is what causes the breakdown and the loss of germination and not the soaking process *per se*. As a result of bacterial activity the bean seeds rot before they germinate, that is, bacterial products kill or weaken the embryo. The problem that Kidd and West dealt with is, therefore, connected with bacterial decom-

[4] These tests and determinations were made by Dr. C. S. Robinson, associate chemist of the Experiment Station.

position, suffocation or CO_2 poisoning brought about by their technique of experimentation. Bean seeds under water are not injured by the soaking, but can be made to germinate as well as in soil.

If the bean seeds are soaked in running water, either at room temperature or at the temperature of the running water, the bacterial factor is minimized. No odor is present at any time up to the end of the experiment (seven days), nor are the seeds soft and mushy as in stagnant water. Germination persists at a high level for a longer period. This effect, obtained in running water, is no doubt due to the constant renewal of oxygen and the withdrawal of CO_2 and other by-products.

It may be shown, possibly, in both the foregoing cases, the one where the seeds were soaked in a large volume of water at rest, and the other where the seeds were soaked in running water, that the final loss in viability may come, in part, from a leaching or an exosmosis of soluble foods from the seeds. The writers are at present unable to show that leaching is not a factor. They are emphasizing the bacterial factor because of its greater significance.

The greater benefit obtained in the running water and in the cases where there is volume per volume of seeds and water, over that of seeds soaking in larger volumes of water is very likely due, as various authors have suggested, to the renewal of oxygen and the removal of CO_2. This does not, however, remove the possible influence of the exosmosis of soluble foods.

Now if disinfected seeds, free from disease, are soaked under sterile conditions, germination takes place after a longer period than when they are soaked in stagnant water. For example, in stagnant water, samples of beans from the general stock germinate at the rate of 10 per cent in forty-eight hours. In seventy-two hours there was no germination at all. In sterile water, disinfected clean beans germinated at the rate of 54 per cent at the end of fifty hours and still were better than 10 per cent at the end of the experiment or one hundred and twenty-six hours. This clearly shows the part played by bacteria.

In this particular experiment no special provision was made

for removing the products of respiration, nor for establishing the proper environmental conditions for the life-processes of the seeds. When, by the simple method of aëration, proper conditions can be provided, it is possible to bring about 97 per cent germination after a period of three days under water. If seeds soaking in water could always obtain sufficient oxygen to carry on respiration, if all the CO_2, and other by-products could be efficiently disposed of, and if bacteria were absent, then we might reasonably expect, other things being equal, that germination would depend only on the capacity of the seeds to germinate. Under these conditions, germination under water would be as good as in the soil.

When we observe the high percentage of germination at the end of three days of soaking under aërated sterile conditions and when we note further that only after several days in running water, does the germination rapidly fall, the foregoing conclusion must be very probable to say the least.

CONCLUSIONS

The experiments detailed above lead to the following conclusions:

1. *Phaseolus vulgaris* seeds under certain conditions (soaking in stagnant water) will rot before they will germinate, that is, bacterial products will kill or weaken the embryo. The injurious effect is not due to the soaking *per se*.

2. Disinfected beans free from organisms can be made to germinate as high as 87 per cent after even a prolonged period of soaking in running water at 20° C.

3. When disinfected clean seeds are soaked in sterile water under sterile conditions, germination can be as high as 54 per cent at the end of forty-eight hours and still be capable of germination at the end of one hundred and twenty-six hours.

4. When disinfected clean seeds are soaked in sterile distilled water under sterile condition and vigorously aërated by means of a suction pump, germination can be as high as 97 per cent even after three days under water.

5. One may reasonably expect bean seeds to germinate equally well under water as in the soil, provided there are sufficient oxygen for respiration, an efficient means of disposing of CO_2 and other by-products, and a complete absence of decomposing bacteria.

Michigan Agricultural College
Experiment Station
East Lansing, Michigan

GENETIC STUDIES IN LYCOPERSICUM

I. The Heredity of Fruit Shape in the Garden Tomato *

PAUL ALANSON WARREN

Introduction

This paper presents field observations bearing upon the heredity of fruit shape in the common garden tomato, *Lycopersicum esculentum* Mill., together with a simple Mendelian hypothesis which explains the heredity of several fruit types, and an analysis of data recorded by previous investigators in the light of the hypothesis suggested.

Previous Mendelian Studies in the Genus Lycopersicum

Previous Mendelian studies in the genus *Lycopersicum* account for the heredity of nine characters on a monohybrid basis. In a list (See Table I) revised from the data of Halsted (1905) and Price and Drinkard (1908), Jones (1917) gives eleven such characters involving various parts of the plant, and including two fruit shape characters, but with certain reservations as to the validity of the assumption that fruit shape is determined in any case by a single pair of factors. The original data of Price and Drinkard are meager and are not considered by the authors themselves as conclusive proof of the monohybrid nature of the types recorded. Groth (1912, 1915) and Crane (1915) find difficulty in classifying the various shapes which segregate in F_2 progenies of crosses between varieties differing in fruit shape, and assume that several factors are involved. Groth (1915),

* Paper from the Department of Botany of the University of Michigan, No. 217.

in fact, arrives at no particular conclusions as to the interpretation of his own data, except that Mendelism is inadequate to account for the behavior of thousands of plants in his gardens, and that a stimulus imparted to the soma by the germ plasm must be invoked to explain the "Golden Mean" in F_1 and the chaos in F_2. Emerson (1917) has shown that the phenomena observed by Groth may be explained by the theory of multiple factors.

Preliminary observations upon the character of fruit produced in 1919 by homozygous strains of ten garden varieties indicated (1) that each variety produces a fruit of definite shape and size; (2) that the fruits of some varieties are deep, those of other varieties shallow; (3) that the fruits of certain varieties are fasciated, i.e., they represent a fusion of two or more ovaries, those of other varieties non-fasciated; and (4) that each fruit shape represents a separate combination of the unit characters, deep and shallow, fasciated and non-fasciated. These observations have since been confirmed by field records and quantitative data upon the progeny of all parent strains and many crosses.

Deep fruits are easily distinguished from shallow fruits without resorting to the caliper. Fasciated fruits are distinguished from non-fasciated fruits either by their shape or, more accurately, by the nature of the flower scar. Appropriate crosses have been made and fruit shape records of more than seven thousand plants are here presented, which seem to indicate that deep and shallow, fasciated and non-fasciated hitherto unrecognized as unit characters, are indeed such. Furthermore, it has been possible to identify the factors which determine them. Deep fruits are produced by the complementary factors *A* and *B*, non-fasciated fruits by the complementary factors *F* and *E*.

If this hypothesis be accepted, it is no longer possible to assume, with Price and Drinkard, that any fruit shape (e.g., roundish-conic) is a unit character. The data here presented are not in accord with any multiple factor hypothesis, since there is always distinct segregation in the F_2.

Material and Methods

Origin and description of the varieties investigated

Ten strains of tomato, representative of all fruit shapes found among garden varieties, were selected and crossed. Progeny of the parent strains and the F_1 and F_2 generations from crosses were grown in 1920 and 1921. In Table II are shown the pedigrees of all parents and crosses.

All of the strains were obtained from the Jerome B. Rice Seed Co. through the kindness of Mr. Wilber Brotherton, manager of the Detroit branch, to whom the writer is greatly indebted for coöperation in many ways. With the exception of Bolgiano and Discovery, these strains have been under observation for years by Mr. George Starr, plant breeder for the Company, at the Grass Lake Stock Seed Farm. To him the writer is under obligation for supplying strains of known history and great uniformity. These with the exception of Discovery have proved homozygous for all characters. Although Mr. Starr does not practice artificial pollination, his method of selection involves sufficient isolation to preclude the possibility of the accidental introduction of pollen foreign to the variety. Artificial self-pollination of each strain, in some cases to the fourth generation, has failed to reveal a single segregating character in all but the single variety mentioned.

A brief detailed description of each variety follows. The classification is in accord with the depth-fasciation hypothesis and the genotypic formula is supplied here for later reference.

I. Varieties with deep, non-fasciated fruits

1. Early Detroit, *AABBFFEE*

A homozygous strain of this variety has been under observation for four generations. The fruit is pink, deep (Globe type) and always non-fasciated. The name of the variety is misleading. The plants produce fruit very late in the season.

2. Discovery. It is impossible to assign a formula to this

variety. The plant used in the original cross was of the formula *AaBbFfEe.*

Of all varieties, Discovery is the most irregular. Except for stature, leaf margin and fruit color, the strain was heterozygous when received. The behavior in heredity of the variety indicates that it may have resulted from a recent cross between a Globe type and a member of the Earliana, Bolgiano, June Pink group. Seed was sent to Mr. Brotherton by Lottentot and Huber, seedsmen, and large cultures have been grown at Ann Arbor and at Grass Lake with the same result, a splitting into two or more types in each generation. The typical Discovery fruit is deep, non-fasciated.

II. Varieties with deep, fasciated fruits

1. Ponderosa, *AABBffee*

Ponderosa is a well known late variety with deep, much fasciated, pink fruit. The plants are exceptionally large, a characteristic which is usually associated with late fruit production.

2. John Baer, *AABBFFee*

John Baer is especially prolific and early. The fruits are red, deep, usually fasciated, but never of the tremendous size of those in Ponderosa.

3. Imperial, *AABBFFee*

Imperial is a very late variety, erect in habit, very vigorous in growth, producing deep, pink fruits, similar to those of John Baer, but of better quality.

III. Varieties with shallow, non-fasciated fruits

1. Dwarf Stone, *aabbFFEE*

A very late variety, Dwarf Stone produces rather small red fruits on erect, vigorous plants.

IV. Varieties with shallow, fasciated fruits

1. Bolgiano, *aabbffEE*

A potato-leaf red-fruited variety, lauded by its discoverer,

Bolgiano, for its extreme earliness, was sent to Mr. Brotherton in 1919 with permission to employ it for breeding purposes. Several plants were furnished to the writer in the spring of 1920. It proved to be as early as the Rice Company's best strain, Earliana. As in all early varieties, the habit of the plant is low and sprawling, the leaves are small and the fruits much smaller and more inclined to sun-cracking than those of the later, more vigorous types. Each plant produces a preponderance of shallow, non-fasciated fruits, but always a number of shallow, fasciated fruits.

2. Earliana, *aabbffEE*

A homozygous strain, selected for the shape, texture and color of fruit as well as for earliness, Earliana is very similar to Bolgiano, differing only in that the leaves have serrate margins.

3. June Pink, *aaBBffee*

June Pink owes its name to the combination of earliness and pink (i.e., red endocarp and colorless epicarp) fruit color. The habit is low and sprawling. That there is a certain relationship between this variety and the large-fruited variety Ponderosa is evidenced by two facts, (1) the leaves of both varieties are crinkly at the edges and (2) a plant producing fruit identical with that of Ponderosa appeared in the cultures in the summer of 1921 as a mutation. The fruits are shallow, but much fasciated.

4. Dwarf Champion, *aabbffee*

The strain under observation is extremely uniform. Unlike the other varieties it produces ripe fruit in the middle of the season. The fruits are pink, very shallow and fasciated in about the same percentage as in Bolgiano. The plants are of dwarf stature, grow rapidly, and soon lop over to the ground.

METHOD OF POLLINATION

The methods of pollinating the flowers and of growing the cultures may be outlined briefly. The tomato flower, normally self-fertilized, is easily emasculated and pollinated. The young

peduncle is very fragile, however, and it has been found convenient to depart from the usual custom of protecting the pollinated flower with paper bags and to resort to the use of two-inch squares of heavy tissue paper. The paper is formed into a cap, securely wired over the pollinated flower, and allowed to remain until the style has fallen, usually about four days. Emasculation and pollination are accomplished at the same time. A young flower is selected from the pollen parent, the pollen extracted and applied with a pollinating knife immediately after the flower of the staminate parent has been emasculated.

METHOD OF HARVESTING SEED

Seed are harvested from the ripe fruits as follows. After the desired measurements are made, the fruit is cut transversely through the center and a record taken of the number of locules. The pulp is squeezed out into water in a battery jar and the mass mixed thoroughly. A bit of inoculum from a jar containing fruit pulp which has been allowed to ferment in water for several days is added. After a day the fermented mass is washed with a stream of water in a piece of cloth suspended over a cylinder of wire screen and the seed spread out on paper towels to dry.

WINTER AND SUMMER CULTURES

Since it is desirable to have the cultures of all generations of a series in the gardens at the same time, winter cultures in the greenhouse are grown merely to produce seed. Crosses are usually made in the garden. Progeny from the parents and a few F_1 plants are grown in the greenhouse for self-pollination. In the spring the seed from the parents, the seed remaining from the original crosses and the seed obtained from the F_1 plants, are planted for the field cultures. In this way it has been possible to study an extra generation on a large scale each year and to base all conclusions on plants grown in the garden.

In order to grow plants in the winter in the latitude of Ann Arbor with the assurance of ripe seed in time for the spring planting, it is necessary to resort to extreme forcing methods.

The plants are grown in a mixture of one part sand and two parts loam to prevent an excess of vegetative growth. Each plant is watched closely for the appearance of the first flower cluster, and the necessary pollinations are made at once. The energy of the plant is now directed to the rapid development of ripe fruit by the frequent removal of new clusters and vegetative growth which may appear.

Cultures in the greenhouse are limited to about four plants each. Field cultures are much larger. More than seven thousand plants were grown in the gardens in 1921. The ideal series of cultures for each cross consists of (1) each parent, A and B, one hundred plants, (2) F_1 pedigrees to include the reciprocal crosses, $A \times B$ and $B \times A$, each fifty plants, (3) F_2 pedigrees, $A \times B$, self-pollinated and $B \times A$, self-pollinated, each seventy-five plants and (4) back-crosses, each one hundred and twenty-five plants. Such a series of cultures has not always been grown for each of the crosses, in some cases because of lack of time to make thorough observations. More important series are always given precedence.

ALTERNATIVE METHODS OF INVESTIGATION

Two avenues of approach are open to an investigator of the heredity of size and shape in the higher plants. If the material be favorable, a direct classification of the parents, F_1 and F_2 segregates, may be made; if unfavorable for such a classification, large series of measurements are necessary. In the former case the validity of the interpretation of the results is dependent upon the magnitude of the observable differences between the classes. In the latter case, since there are no distinct classes, the data must be analyzed biometrically, and the value of the interpretation, speculative in great measure, depends upon the individual skill of the investigator in the treatment of the observed adherence to or departure from the Gaussian distribution, as an index to the behavior of the unit characters.

Ample proof of the truth of these generalities is presented in previous papers upon the heredity of size and shape in the

tomato. Price and Drinkard (1908) have arrived at certain conclusions as to fruit shape by the method of direct classification. Groth's statistical methods have led him to conclusions which have brought severe criticism (Emerson, 1917). The earlier writers observe the types of fruit, and conclude that there is a definite Mendelian interpretation to be placed upon the observed segregations; the later writer becomes involved in a labyrinth of frequency distributions derived from individual fruit measurements, and comes to the conclusion that none of the neoteric developments of Mendelism are of avail in the explanation of the observed phenomena.

In the present investigation both methods have been employed. Many plants have been classified as to the depth and fasciation of their fruits by direct observation. In certain cultures the weight and size of the fruits have been determined. These quantitative data confirm the accuracy of the former method in every case. Only such constants derived from them as are needed for the purpose of definition will be presented here. It is proposed to publish these data in full in papers devoted entirely to discussions of the quantitative measurement of fruit size in relation to the depth-fasciation hypothesis, to hybrid vigor and allied phenomena.

The Results of Hybrid Segregation

Ratios among the F_2 segregates from crosses between the several varieties do not conform to a monohybrid hypothesis. Attempts to explain the observed ratios on a dihybrid or polyhybrid basis, involving dominance, have also failed. If the following pairs of complementary factors are assumed to be operative in the determination of the types of fruit observed in F_1 and in the F_2, it is possible to explain every phenomenon which has thus far been observed in the crosses.

FACTORS FOR DEPTH AND FASCIATION

A, a factor which alone produces shallow fruits, but which in the presence of *B* produces deep fruits.

a, the normal allelomorph of *A*; produces fruits slightly more shallow than *A*.

B, a factor which alone produces shallow fruits, but in the presence of *A*, deep fruits.

b, the normal allelomorph of *B*; behaves as *a*.

F, a factor which alone produces fasciated fruits, but in the presence of *E*, non-fasciated fruits.

f, the normal allelomorph of *F*; alone produces much fasciated fruits.

E, a factor which alone produces fasciated fruits, but in the presence of *F*, non-fasciated fruits.

e, the normal allelomorph of *E*; behaves as *f*.

Combinations of the factors suggested determine the shape of the fruit as follows:

Group	Genotype	Phenotype	Shape
1.	*ABFE*	Deep, non-fasciated	Deep-round
2.	*ABFe*, *ABfE*, or *ABfe*	Deep, fasciated	Deep-round or Deep-oval
3.	*AbFE*, *aBFE*, or *abFE*	Shallow, non-fasciated	Shallow-round
4.	*AbFe*, *abFe*, *abfe*, *AbfE*, *abfE*, *aBfE*, *aBFe*	Shallow, fasciated	Shallow-round or Shallow-oval

As a result of the behavior of each of the ten varieties in crosses, it has been possible to assign to each the complete genotypic formula given with the variety descriptions.

The factors for non-fasciation behave in a manner which has not yet been suggested. *F* in the presence of *E* always produces a non-fasciated fruit. Either of these factors, however, in the homozygous condition (*FF* or *EE*) inhibits fasciation to a slight degree. For example, in Bolgiano, Imperial and John Baer the presence of *EE*, *FF* and *FF* respectively inhibits the complete fasciation found in June Pink and Ponderosa. The factors *A* and *B* may behave in a similar manner.

In Table III are given all of the possible combinations of the four pairs of factors *A*, *a*; *B*, *b*; *F*, *f*; and *E*, *e*, with the progeny to be expected from self-fertilized plants of each genotypic constitution. All of the varieties fall into the first four groups of Table III and breed true for their individual types ex-

cept the variety Discovery. This variety gives progeny which may fall into any of the sixteen groups. An individual plant of this variety which was used in certain crosses was of the formula *AaBbFfEe*. Upon self-pollination it gave a close approach to the ratio 81 deep, non-fasciated: 112 shallow, non-fasciated and fasciated: 63 deep, fasciated.

The actual ratio is 90.1:97.3:68.5.
The deviation is 9.1:14.6: 5.5.
The probable error is 9.5: 9.0: 8.8.
The Dev./ P. E. is 1.0: 1.6: 0.6.
By the χ^2 method, χ^2 = .951 and P = .799331.

CLASSIFICATION OF CROSSES

The crosses which were used to test the foregoing hypothesis fall into the following groups, arranged in accordance with the order of Table III.

1. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into one of the first four groups of Table III and in which there is no segregation for fruit shape in F_2 (Crosses I–VI).

I. Bolgiano × June Pink
II. Bolgiano × Earliana
III. Earliana × June Pink
IV. Dwarf Champion × Bolgiano
V. Dwarf Champion × June Pink
VI. Ponderosa × John Baer

2. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into Group 5 of Table III, namely, those in which the F_2 segregation is 3 deep, fasciated: 1 shallow, fasciated (Cross VII).

VII. June Pink × Ponderosa

3. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into Group 8 of Table III, namely, those in which the F_2 segregation is 3 shallow, non-fasciated: 1 shallow, fasciated (Cross VIII).

VIII. Bolgiano × Dwarf Stone

4. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into Group 9 of Table III,

namely, those in which the F_2 segregation is 9 deep, non-fasciated: 7 deep, fasciated (Cross IX).

IX. Ponderosa × Early Detroit

5. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into Group 10 of Table III, namely, those in which the F_2 segregation is 9 deep, fasciated: 7 shallow, fasciated (Cross X).

X. Bolgiano × Ponderosa

6. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into Group 14 of Table III, namely, those in which the F_2 segregation is 27 deep, non-fasciated: 21 deep, fasciated: 9 shallow, non-fasciated: 7 shallow, fasciated (Cross XI).

XI. Early Detroit × June Pink

7. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into Group 15 of Table III, namely, those in which the F_2 segregation is 27 deep, non-fasciated: 21 shallow, non-fasciated: 9 deep, fasciated: 7 shallow, fasciated (Crosses XII–XIII).

XII. Bolgiano × Early Detroit
XIII. John Baer × Dwarf Stone

8. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into Group 16 of Table III, namely, those in which the F_2 segregation is 81 deep, non-fasciated: 63 shallow, non-fasciated: 63 deep, fasciated: 49 shallow, fasciated (Crosses XIV–XVII).

XIV. Early Detroit × Dwarf Champion
XV. Bolgiano × John Baer
XVI. Ponderosa × Dwarf Stone
XVII. Imperial × Bolgiano

9. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into several groups because of the heterozygosis of one of the parents and in which the segregation in the F_2 depends upon the genotypic constitution of the self-pollinated F_1 individual (Crosses XVIII–XXI).

XVIII. Discovery × Ponderosa
XIX. Discovery × Bolgiano
XX. Discovery × Earliana
XXI. Discovery × June Pink

The F_2 ratios from all of these crosses are presented in Table V. The genotypic formulae of many varieties have been determined by several crosses. A record of all genotypes investigated is presented in Table IV. It is evident from the situation which obtains in the first group above, that the genotypic constitution of Bolgiano, June Pink, Earliana and Dwarf Champion could not be discovered by any series of crosses within the group. Crosses between these varieties and the six remaining varieties under observation have brought forth the interesting segregation phenomena observed in the last nine groups.

TESTS FOR GOODNESS OF FIT

Before each cross is discussed in detail, a word must be said as to the tests applied for goodness of fit of the Mendelian ratios of Table V. In all cases the probable errors have been calculated by the orthodox modification of the $\sqrt{npq}$ formula for the standard deviation(σ). In this method the

$$\text{P E} = \pm\, 0.67449 \sqrt{\frac{\text{N(K–N)}}{n}}$$

where P E is the probable error, N a particular term of a Mendelian ratio, K the sum of all the terms of such a ratio, and n the total number of individuals involved in the classification. Such a procedure involves the assumption that the standard deviation of a ratio is equal to $\pm \sqrt{\text{N (K–N)}}$, a sufficiently valid assumption in any case, provided the number of observed individuals is large, certainly of value in the consideration of such ratios as 1: 1 and 9: 7, even though the number of individuals be comparatively small. Wherever possible, i.e., in such ratios as 48: 9: 7 and 144: 63: 49, in which more than two terms are involved, the probability (P) of the occurrence of such a ratio as a result of random sampling has been calculated by the χ^2 method of Pearson in which

$$\chi^2 = \Sigma \left(\frac{(\text{m} - \text{m}_1)^2}{\text{m}} \right),$$

where the expression $\Sigma \left(\frac{(\text{m} - \text{m}^1)^2}{\text{m}} \right)$ signifies the sum of all such terms as the square of the difference between the observed fre-

quency and the theoretical frequency, divided by the theoretical frequency. The probability integral (P) is calculated from Elderton's *Tables for Goodness of Fit.* (Pearson, 1914.) Constants derived by this method are given in the text in the discussion of the crosses.

Discussion of Crosses

1. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into Groups 1–4 of Table III and no segregation takes place in the F_2 generation.

I. Bolgiano, *aabbffEE* × June Pink, *aaBBffee*

F_1 = *aaBbffEe*

The parents as well as the F_1 and F_2 generations in this cross produce shallow fasciated fruits. June Pink has deeper fruits than Bolgiano because of the presence of the factor *B* in the homozygous condition; more completely fasciated, consequently heavier fruits than Bolgiano because of the absence of the inhibiting factors *EE*. The F_1 fruits are intermediate in both depth and fasciation. These differences have been measured and found significant. It is impossible by direct observation to record the small differences in depth and fasciation brought about by the factors *B* and *E* alone. These must be treated in another paper devoted to the presentation of quantitative data.

II. Bolgiano, *aabbffEE* × Earliana, *aabbffEE*

F_1 and F_2, *aabbffEE*

The genotypic formulae here given have been determined from other crosses. The varieties Bolgiano and Earliana bear identical types of fruit. No differences possible of record by direct observation have been found in the fruits of the parents, the F_1 or the F_2 in this cross.

More than three thousand fruits have been measured in this series in a separate investigation of hybrid vigor and these data will be presented elsewhere.

III. Earliana, *aabbffEE* × June Pink, *aaBBffee*

F_1, *aaBbffEe*

Obviously this cross involves the same genetic possibilities as the cross Bolgiano × June Pink. The result is the same. No segregation occurred in the F_2. The quantitative data are strictly comparable to those in the former cross.

IV. Dwarf Champion, *aabbffee* × Bolgiano, *aabbffEE*
F_1, *aabbffEe*

Forty-six plants of the F_1 and 151 plants of the F_2 were grown, mainly for the purpose of testing linkage between the potato-leaf and dwarf characters, a matter which will be discussed in another paper.

None of the fruits were measured. The parents, the F_1 and the F_2, are all shallow and more or less fasciated.

V. Dwarf Champion, *aabbffee* × June Pink, *aaBBffee*
F_1, *aaBbffee*

The F_1 generation with 64 plants, the F_2 with 148 plants, the back-cross June Pink × (June Pink × Dwarf Champion) with 124 plants and the back-cross Dwarf Champion × (June Pink × Dwarf Champion) with 124 plants have all failed to produce any fruits not to be expected from the foregoing formulae. The fruits vary somewhat in size but are all fasciated and are all shallow. In the F_2 generation it was possible to make a rough classification into 106 bearing slightly deeper and 42 bearing slightly shallower fruits. The ratio is 2.9: 1.1, a close correspondence to the 3 : 1 ratio expected from the segregation of *Bb* in the F_1. No such classification was attempted in the back-crosses.

VI. Ponderosa, *AABBffee* × John Baer, *AABBFFee*
F_1, *AABBFfee*

Ponderosa is a deep-fruited variety in which every fruit is fasciated, generally to the extent of producing exceedingly large misshapen fruits. John Baer is also deep-fruited and the fruits are somewhat fasciated, but never to the degree observed in Ponderosa, a fact which is accounted for by the presence in John Baer of the *F* factor in the homozygous condition. Eight

plants of the F_1 produced fruits which were also deep, but intermediate between the parents in fasciation, as would be expected in the heterozygous (*Ff*) type.

In F_2 it should be possible to make a rough classification on the basis of fasciation alone. All plants bear fasciated fruits. The difference is one of degree, as would be expected by the presence in this generation of plants 25 per cent of which are homozygous for *F*, 50 per cent in the *Ff* condition and 25 per cent in the *ff* condition. It has not been possible to differentiate two of these classes. The *ff* class, however, is fairly distinct from the others and the field records show 24 such plants to 75 of the *Ff* and *FF* plants, a ratio of 0.97: 3.03. The difference is 0.26 times the error and insignificant (See Table V).

In the back-cross Ponderosa × (June Pink × Ponderosa), which should give by the same classification a ratio of 1: 1 between the plants which bear more fasciated and those which bear less fasciated fruits, the ratio 61: 49 or 1.11: 0.89 was found. In this case the difference is 1.70 times the error and likewise insignificant (See Table V).

In the back-cross John Baer × (John Baer × Ponderosa), all of the individuals ought to fall into the less fasciated class of the foregoing classification, as they were indeed found to do in a record of 186 plants.

It is rarely possible to observe the small differences recorded in this cross between offspring from plants of the formula *Ff* or *Ee*. As will be seen directly, the F_2 segregation is dependent mainly upon interaction of the factors *F* and *E* to prevent fasciation and of the factors *A* and *B* to produce deep fruits. It may be objected that, after all, the hypothesis suggested to account for the heredity of depth and fasciation is little more than a manipulation of a series of factors which have only a cumulative effect. That such an objection is not a valid one, and that, although the factors *A*, *B*, *F* and *E* may exhibit a cumulative effect to a certain degree, such an effect cannot account for the profound differences observed when the pairs *A* and *B*, *F* and *E* meet in a zygote, will be seen in the crosses about to be discussed.

2. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into Group 5 of Table III, namely, those in which the F_2 segregation is 3 deep, fasciated: 1 shallow, fasciated (Cross VII).

VII. June Pink, *aaBBffee* × Ponderosa, *AABBffee*

F_1, *AaBBffee*

The genotypic formulae in this series indicate that all of the individuals should bear fasciated fruits, and, since no *F* nor *E* factor is present, very much fasciated fruits. In all, 128 plants of the parent Ponderosa, 118 of June Pink, 95 of the F_1, 132 of the F_2, 129 of the back-crosses to Ponderosa, and 436 of the back-crosses to June Pink, a total of 1038 plants, has been grown. All of these plants have produced fasciated fruits. The reason for such an extensive series of cultures may be briefly outlined. In the opinion of the seedsmen June Pink and Ponderosa are closely allied varieties. The former is an early variety and produces smaller fruits, the latter a mid-season, sometimes considered a late variety, which produces the largest tomatoes known. Both varieties have crinkly leaves. A type similar to Ponderosa has appeared by mutation from June Pink. It would seem of particular interest to determine whether such a relationship could be assumed to bear upon the general shape and size of the fruits.

The first cross was made in 1919. The F_1 and F_2 cultures from this cross were grown in the 1920 garden. The series presented what appeared at first to be a case of blending inheritance. The cross was repeated and a second series including duplicates of the first series and in addition three F_3 cultures from the original cross were grown in the 1921 garden. Again the F_1 and F_2 cultures seemed to be so nearly alike that no attempt was made to classify the F_2 plants as to fruit shape and the fruits were recorded as intermediate. The importance of such a classification was not realized, in fact, until the present hypothesis had been worked out with other crosses and the formulae of June Pink and Ponderosa established.

A second perusal of the 1920 data brings to light several interesting facts which were not before considered important.

Twenty-six plants in the F_2 of that year are recorded as Ponderosa, six plants as June Pink, a ratio of 3.25: 0.75. (See Table V). A 3: 1 ratio is to be expected, since the F_2 falls into four equal classes, three of which have the factors *AABB* or *AaBB*, and one the factors *aaBB*. The three former classes are deep, corresponding to Ponderosa, the latter class shallow, as in June Pink.

Three F_3 cultures were grown in 1921 from the foregoing F_2, one from a plant recorded as June Pink (i.e., shallow, fasciated), and two from plants recorded as Ponderosa (i.e., deep, fasciated). The former culture produced fruits which were recorded as intermediate. It is likely that close attention to this culture would have revealed a 3:1 segregation. The last two cultures were undoubtedly from the plants of the formula *AABBffee*, since they contained only large plants which produced typical, deep, fasciated Ponderosa fruits.

The back-crosses, June Pink × (June Pink × Ponderosa) and (June Pink × Ponderosa) × June Pink, grown in 1920, showed a segregation into 142 plants with fruits recorded as Ponderosa or "deep June Pink" to 123 plants with fruits recorded as "true June Pink," a ratio of 1.07: 0.93. (See Table V). From the hypothesis the segregation should be in the ratio 1 deep, fasciated: 1 shallow, fasciated. It is possible that some of the June Pink plants may have been recorded as Ponderosa, thus accounting for the excess of the latter plants in the ratio. A classification with regard to depth in fasciated fruits is sometimes difficult to make without actually measuring the fruits.

The back-crosses, Ponderosa × (June Pink × Ponderosa) and (June Pink × Ponderosa) × Ponderosa, have produced deep, fasciated fruits exclusively, according to expectation.

3. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into Group 8 of Table III, namely, those in which the segregation is 3 shallow, non-fasciated : 1 shallow, fasciated (Cross VIII).

VIII. Bolgiano, *aabbffEE* × Dwarf Stone, *aabbFFEE*
F_1, *aabbFfEE*

The parents, together with the F_1 and F_2 plants of this series

should all produce shallow fruits. Among 110 plants of the Bolgiano parent, 99 plants of the Dwarf Stone parent, 4 plants of the F_1 and 87 plants of the F_2, no deep fruits have been found. Segregation in F_2, independent of factors for depth, depends entirely upon the behavior of the *F* factor in the presence of the *E* factor, and is thus 3 non-fasciated: 1 fasciated. The segregation is 58: 29, a ratio of 2.67: 1.33. The deviation is 2.66 times the probable error and of little significance. (See Table V).

4. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into Group 9 of Table III, namely, those in which the F_2 segregation is 9 deep, non-fasciated: 7 deep, fasciated (Cross IX).

IX. Ponderosa, *AABBffee* × Early Detroit, *AABBFFEE*
F_1, *AABBFfEe*

The cross Ponderosa × Early Detroit offers the first example of a 9: 7 ratio resulting from the interaction of the two factors *F* and *E* to inhibit fasciation completely.

Ponderosa plants all produce much fasciated fruits; Early Detroit and the F_1 cross, non-fasciated fruits. The parents, as well as the F_1 and F_2 plants are all homozygous for the *A* and *B* factors, so that all fruits throughout the series are deep. In F_2 the segregation should be in the ratio 9 deep, non-fasciated: 7 deep, fasciated. A total of 183 plants of this generation was well classified during the summers of 1920 and 1921, 112 of which produced deep fruits with no suggestion of fasciation while 71 produced fruits fasciated in varying degrees. The observed ratio is 9.79: 6.21. The deviation is 2.00 times the probable error and probably insignificant. (See Table V).

No question may be raised as to the accuracy of the classification in the F_2 from this cross. Attention has been called to the difficulty of recording the types of fruit when a segregation involves the *B* factor or the *F* factor alone. No such difficulty is encountered when the *A* and *B* factors or the *F* and *E* factors are both present, or both absent in the F_2.

5. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into Group 10 of Table III, namely, those in which the F_2 segregation is 9 deep, fasciated: 7 shallow, fasciated (Cross X).

X. Bolgiano, *aabbffEE* × Ponderosa, *AABBffee*

F_1, *AaBbffEe*

The Bolgiano parent is less fasciated than Ponderosa because of the presence of *EE*. The F_1 generation comprising 120 plants produced fruits of the general character of Ponderosa in depth, but with less fasciation because of heterozygosis of the *E* factor.

The F_2 plants all produce fasciated fruits according to expectation. A segregation possible of record in the field on the basis of depth alone gives a close approximation to the 9:7 ratio expected from the F_1 formula, *AaBb*. Fruits from 129 plants were recorded as deep, fasciated, from 70 plants as shallow, fasciated, a ratio of 10.37:5.63. The deviation from expectation is 3.62 times the probable error. Such a deviation might be considered a significant one were it not for the fact, mentioned in the discussion of the cross June Pink × Ponderosa, that it is difficult to classify fasciated fruits as to depth. Further mention of the results of measuring many fruits in this series will be made in another paper. It is really remarkable, in view of the difficulty of classification, that such a close approximation to theory was obtained as that recorded.

6. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into Group 14 of Table III, namely, those in which the segregation in F_2 follows the ratio 27 deep, non-fasciated: 21 deep, fasciated: 9 shallow, non-fasciated: 7 shallow, fasciated (Cross XI).

XI. Early Detroit, *AABBFFEE* × June Pink, *aaBBffee*

F_1, *AaBBFfEe*

Early Detroit, 125 plants, produced deep, non-fasciated fruits; June Pink, shallow, much fasciated fruits. All fruits on 21 F_1 plants were deep, non-fasciated.

In the F_2 cultures no attempt was made to distinguish between deep and shallow fruits. Certain plants producing deep, fasciated fruits, the Ponderosa type, were observed. The record shows that 63 plants produced non-fasciated fruits and 69 produced fasciated fruits. The ratio 27:21:9:7 resolves itself into a ratio of 9 non-fasciated: 7 fasciated, if depth of fruit is disre-

garded. The observed ratio is 7.64 to 8.36. The deviation is 2.93 times the probable error.

The F_2 segregation in this cross is very striking. No easier task presents itself in the tomato garden than that of recording fasciated and non-fasciated fruits by direct observation. Further investigation may add numbers of plants to the record, but the present ratio furnishes sufficient proof for the necessity of assuming complementary factors for fasciation in these cultures.

7. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into Group 15 of Table III, namely, those in which the F_2 segregation is 27 deep, non-fasciated: 21 shallow, non-fasciated: 9 deep, fasciated: 7 shallow, fasciated (Crosses XII, XIII).

XII. Bolgiano, *aabbffEE* × Early Detroit, *AABBFFEE*

F_1, *AaBbFfEE*

The parent characters have been discussed (pp. 360–361). The F_1 plants, 45 in number, produced typical Early Detroit fruits, deep and with no fasciation.

No attempt was made to classify the non-fasciated fruits as to depth in the F_2 cultures. Considering fasciation alone the 27: 21: 9: 7 ratio, above, becomes the ratio 48: 16, or 3 non-fasciated: 1 fasciated. In the F_2, 61 plants produced non-fasciated fruits and 34 plants fasciated fruits, a ratio of 2.57: 1.43. It is evident that such a classification should produce the concordant results reported for this cross. The deviation is 3.60 times the error. (See Table V.)

An attempt was made to classify as to depth of fruit the plants which produced fasciated fruits. This classification, as mentioned before, is difficult. The result, however, was not unsatisfactory. With the non-fasciated fruits unclassified and the fasciated fruits classified as to depth the foregoing ratio becomes 48 deep, non-fasciated + shallow, non-fasciated: 9 deep, fasciated: 7 shallow, fasciated. The observed frequencies were 61: 18: 16, a ratio of 41.10: 12.13: 10.78. The goodness of fit of this ratio is shown in Table V. By the χ^2 method, $\chi^2 = 4.193$ and P is .1250578. The differences shown in Table V are not of

great significance when the numbers of individuals and the difficulties in classification are considered.

XIII. John Baer, *AABBFFee* × Dwarf Stone, *aabbFFEE*

F_1, *AaBbFFEe*

The John Baer parent produces deep, somewhat fasciated fruits; the Dwarf Stone parent, shallow, non-fasciated fruits. In F_1, 45 plants produced deep, non-fasciated fruits.

In this case the classification of the fruits as to fasciation in F_2 is complicated by the presence of Dwarf plants upon which fruits fasciated to a marked degree seem never to appear. The plants were consequently classified as to depth of fruit alone. The ratio 27: 21: 9: 7 becomes on this basis the ratio 9 deep, fasciated + deep, non-fasciated: 7 shallow, fasciated + shallow, non-fasciated. The observed frequencies were 72: 66, a ratio of 8. 35: 7.65. The deviation is 2.12 times the error and insignificant. (See Table V.)

8. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into Group 16 of Table III, namely, those in which the F_2 segregation is 81 deep, non-fasciated: 63 shallow, non-fasciated: 63 deep, fasciated: 49 shallow, fasciated (Crosses XIV to XVII).

XIV. Early Detroit, *AABBFFEE* × Dwarf Champion, *aabbffee*

F_1, *AaBbFfEe*

The cross involves two parents homozygous for all factors. The F_1, 25 plants, produced deep, non-fasciated fruits. No F_2 cultures were grown.

XV. Bolgiano, *aabbffEE* × John Baer, *AABBFFee*

F_1, *AaBbFfEe*

The parents have been discussed above (pp. 360–361). The F_1 plants, 81 in number, produced small, deep, non-fasciated fruits. It is unfortunate that time did not permit a large series of fruit measurements in this generation. An opportunity is here presented to study quantitatively a pedigree in which the

A and *B*, and the *F* and *E* factors are all in the heterozygous condition. The fruits were small as indicated above, but just how much the actual size is affected by such a combination of factors is unknown.

The F_2 plants were not classified as to depth. A sharp segregation was observed between the plants producing non-fasciated and those producing fasciated fruits. The record shows 96 of the former and 52 of the latter plants, a ratio of 10.49 to 5.51. (See Table V). As to fasciation alone the ratio 81:63:63:49 becomes 144:112 or 9 non-fasciated:7 fasciated. The deviation is 3.39 times the error.

XVI. Ponderosa, *AABBffee* × Dwarf Stone, *aabbFFEE*

F_1, *AaBbFfEe*

The F_1 plants, 27 in number, produced, as in the preceding crosses, deep, non-fasciated fruits, smaller than the typical Ponderosa fruits.

In the F_2 the segregation was similar to that of the preceding cross (Bolgiano × Dwarf Stone). Plants with non-fasciated fruits numbered 43, those with fasciated fruits 30, a ratio of 9.43:6.58. The deviation from the expected 9:7 ratio, is 0.68 times the error and insignificant. A further classification of the F_2 plants with fasciated fruits shows 22 with deep fruits, i.e., of the Ponderosa type and 8 with shallow fruits. The ratio 81:63:63:49 becomes 144:63:49 on this basis. The close agreement of theory and observation is shown in Table V. By the χ^2 method, $\chi^2 = 3.081$ and P = .2160186.

XVII. Imperial, *AABBFFee* × Bolgiano, *aabbffEE*

F_1, *AaBbFfEe*

Considerable quantitative data upon fruits from all generations of this cross are to be published in another paper.

Fifty F_1 plants produced typical, deep, non-fasciated fruits.

The segregation in F_2 and the close agreement of observation and theory are shown in Table V. The χ^2 test for goodness of fit gives for χ^2 the value .672, for P the value .866441. The fit is much better than would be expected from the classification of

98 plants. This cross is especially important since the whole hypothesis of complementary factors for depth and fasciation of tomato fruits was suggested by the segregation of the F_2 (Imperial × Bolgiano) into four types of fruit, one a typical Ponderosa, the second a typical Bolgiano, the third a typical large Globe type and the fourth a tiny Globe fruit which had not yet been observed by the writer. The first is deep, fasciated; the second, shallow, fasciated; the third, deep, non-fasciated and the fourth shallow, non-fasciated.

9. Crosses in which the F_1 falls into several groups (Table III) because of the heterozygosis of one of the parents. The F_2 segregation depends upon the genotypic constitution of the self-pollinated F_1 individual (Crosses XVIII–XXI).

At this point the consideration of crosses which are of especial importance in establishing the suggested hypothesis ceases. The following crosses illustrate the employment of the hypothesis in the analysis of varieties of unknown constitution. The variety Discovery, as has been mentioned earlier in the paper, was for a long time a most puzzling one. Seed obtained by self-pollination produced plants bearing a motley array of fruit types. Mr. Starr recently informed the writer that he had tried unsuccessfully to "fix" the type. Crosses were made between two plants of Discovery and plants representing five varieties, the genotypic constitutions of which are now known. Both plants, D–1 and D–2, proved to be heterozygous for all factors for depth and fasciation.

XVIII. Discovery, *AaBbFfEe* × Ponderosa, *AABBffee*

F_1

Deep, fasciated (12)		Deep, non-fasciated (4)
AABBFfee	*AABBffee*	*AABBFfEe*
AABBffEe	*AABbffee*	*AABbFfEe*
AABbffEe	*AaBBffee*	*AaBBFfEe*
AaBBffEe	*AaBbffEe*	*AaBbFfEe*
AABbFfee	*AaBbFfee*	
AaBBFfee	*AaBbffee*	

F_1 ratio = 3 deep, fasciated: 1 deep, non-fasciated.

All F_1 individuals produce deep fruits. The ratio should be then 3 fasciated: 1 non-fasciated. Twenty-seven plants were grown, 17 of which bore fasciated fruits and 10 non-fasciated fruits. The ratio is 2.52: 1.48 and the deviation 2.14 times the error.

A paradox of considerable interest obtains in this cross. In F_1 there is a ratio of 3 fasciated: 1 non-fasciated; in the F_2 a ratio of 9 non-fasciated: 7 fasciated. The former ratio is, of course, never possible in F_2 but the illustration shows how very puzzling are some of the phenomena observed in crosses with heterozygous strains.

A single plant of the F_1 which produced deep, non-fasciated fruits was selected for self-pollination. That the genotypic constitution of this plant was *AABBFfEe* is certain. No plants were found in the F_2 which produced shallow fruits as would have been expected had the genotypic formula of the F_1 individual been *AABbFfEe*, *AaBBFfEe* or *AaBbFfEe*. The observed F_2 ratio was 67 deep, non-fasciated: 32 deep, fasciated, or 10.83: 5.17. The deviation from the expected 9:7 ratio is 3.40 times the probable error.

XIX. Discovery, *AaBbFfEe* × Bolgiano, *aabbffEE*

F_1

Deep, non-fasciated (2)	Deep, fasciated (2)
AaBbFfEE	*AaBbffEE*
AaBbFfEe	*AaBbffEe*

Shallow, non-fasciated (6)		Shallow, fasciated (6)	
AabbFfEE	*aaBbFfEe*	*AabbffEE*	*aaBbffEe*
AabbFfEe	*aabbFfEE*	*AabbffEe*	*aabbffEE*
aaBbFfEE	*aabbFfEe*	*aaBbffEE*	*aabbffEe*

F_1 plants were classified as to fasciation but not as to depth of fruit. Of 13 plants 5 bore non-fasciated, and 8 bore fasciated fruits. The ratio is .77: 1.23, a deviation of 0.23 from the theoretical 1: 1 ratio. The frequencies are too few for any theoretical reasoning, but it is significant that among 13 plants the ob-

served ratio should agree so closely with the theoretical expectation. The fruits of the F_1 individual selected for pollination were fasciated. The comparative depth of these fruits is not known since the plant was grown in the greenhouse and but two fruits allowed to develop.

The segregation in F_2 points to the conclusion that the genotypic constitution of the F_1 plant was *AaBbffEE*. The segregation expected from such an individual is 9 deep, fasciated: 7 shallow, fasciated. Of the F_2 plants, 44 produced deep, fasciated fruits, 53 bearing shallow, fasciated fruits. The deviation is 3.20 times the error. This deviation is too large, but attention is again called to the fact that it is always difficult to classify as to depth among fasciated fruits without actually measuring the vertical diameters.

It is difficult to resist the temptation to digress for a moment at this point, in order to comment upon the reaction of certain commercial breeders to the observation of situations such as obtain in this particular cross. The variety Discovery, if indeed it may be termed a variety, is supposed to bear deep, non-fasciated fruits. Such fruits are of the Globe type and very desirable. A plant is selected by the breeder which bears the fruit desired. Among the progeny of this plant are plants producing deep and shallow fruits, fasciated and non-fasciated fruits. The selection process is carried further with the same result year after year and the conclusion is reached that it is impossible to "fix" the type. Discovery is now crossed with Bolgiano, an early, shallow-fruited variety. The F_1 includes large and small Globes, fruits like those of the parent Bolgiano and a new type, the deep, fasciated fruits of Ponderosa. Thus are new varieties "produced." The list of named varieties of tomatoes is a long one.

A single glance at the genotypes in F_1, Discovery × Bolgiano, in which the Discovery individual was heterozygous for all factors will reveal the fact that none of the F_1 plants will breed true for the Globe type, nor Ponderosa type, but that all of the Bolgiano-like plants will forever breed true for the shallow, fasciated characters.

XX. Discovery, *AaBbFfEe* × Earliana, *aabbffEE*

F_1, as in the cross Discovery × Bolgiano.

The present cross is identical in every way with the cross Discovery × Bolgiano and needs no discussion except as to the F_2 segregation. In the F_1, 15 plants produced non-fasciated fruits, 14 plants fasciated fruits, a ratio of 1.03: .97, which deviates from the expected 1: 1 ratio by only .03. This deviation is 0.27 times the error and is insignificant. (See Table V).

In the F_2 a new situation arises. Instead of the 9 deep, fasciated: 7 shallow, fasciated, of the cross Discovery × Bolgiano, the ratio is 3 shallow, non-fasciated: 1 shallow, fasciated. The observed frequencies are 63: 34, a ratio of 2.60: 1.40. Only an F_1 individual of the genotypic constitution *aabbFfEE* could have produced such a ratio. (See Table III.)

XXI. Discovery, *AaBbFfEe* × June Pink, *aaBBffee*

F_1

Deep, non-fasciated (2)
AaBBFfEe
AaBbFfEe

Deep, fasciated (6)
AaBBFfee *AaBbffEe*
AaBbffEe *AaBbFfee*
AaBBffee *AaBbffee*

Shallow, non-fasciated (2)
aaBBFfEe
aaBbFfEe

Shallow, fasciated (6)
aaBBffEe *aaBbFfee*
aaBbFfee *aaBBffee*
aaBbffEe *aaBbffee*

Again, the F_1 segregation was recorded as to fasciation alone. The formulae above indicate an expected ratio of 1 non-fasciated: 3 fasciated. The observed frequencies are 15: 35, a ratio of 1.20: 2.80. The deviation is 2.21 times the error and is insignificant.

In F_2 with the same classification a ratio of 9 non-fasciated: 7 fasciated was approached. The frequencies are 46: 51, a ratio of 7.59: 8.41. The deviation is 2.60 times the error.

The classification made in this pedigree renders it possible that a few of the plants recorded as bearing non-fasciated fruits may have been included among those recorded as fasciated. The

ratio is sufficiently near 9:7, however, to warrant the assumption of *AaBBFfEe* as the genotypic constitution of the F_1 self-fertilized individual. Fruits from this plant were deep, non-fasciated. Record is made of the fact that the depth of fruit varies from plant to plant, although no accurate classification of plants as to depth of fruit was attempted. An F_1 individual of the formula *aaBBFfEe* or *aaBbFfEe* would have produced plants segregating 9:7 for fasciation, but with shallow fruits.

APPLICATION OF HYPOTHESIS TO DATA OF PREVIOUS WRITERS

Price and Drinkard (1908, p. 30) give the ratio obtained in the F_2 generations from a cross between a variety with roundish-conic fruits and one with roundish-compressed fruits. The ratio is 35 conic: 13 compressed or 2.92: 0.08, a very close fit to a 3:1 ratio. The difference (0.08) is but 0.49 times the probable error (0.17) and is insignificant.

This is the only record which has come to the writer's attention of a segregation between the characters discussed in the present paper. The explanation is quite simple. It is only necessary to assume that the two individuals crossed by Price and Drinkard were of the formulae *AABBFFEE* (deep, non-fasciated) and *aaBBFFEE* (shallow, non-fasciated). The F_1 genotype would thus be *AaBBFFEE* (deep, non-fasciated). The F_2 generation would split into 3 deep, non-fasciated (roundish, conic): 1 shallow, non-fasciated (roundish, compressed). The authors do not mention fasciation. With all of the facts in hand the genotypes might prove to be different from those suggested. It is not necessary, however, to go beyond the suggested hypothesis for an explanation of the behavior observed by Price and Drinkard in the foregoing cross.

SUMMARY OF 9:7 RATIOS

The proof of a complementary factor hypothesis must be sought in the familiar 9:7 Mendelian ratio. Collected in Table VI are all of the 9:7 ratios which have been observed in these crosses. Such a segregation for depth is from the genotype

AaBb and for fasciation from the genotype *FfEe*. These genotypes are the same, of course, regardless of their origin. The summation of all segregations for depth and of all segregations for fasciation eliminates the errors of the small sample. The result is a ratio of 9.23: 6: 77 for depth among 603 individuals and a ratio of 9.30: 6.70 for fasciation among 854 individuals. In each instance the deviation is approximately equal to the error. In the light of such results the writer hesitates not at all in suggesting a complementary factor hypothesis for both depth and fasciation.

Summary and Conclusions

1. Crosses have been made among ten varieties of the garden tomato, eight of which produce different types of fruit.

2. Each fruit type is produced as a result of a particular combination of depth and fasciation factors.

3. The complementary factors *A* and *B* determine the depth of the fruits. Genotypes having *A* in the presence of *B* produce deep fruits. Those having *A* or *B* in a homozygous condition produce fruits, but slightly deeper than the shallow fruits produced by genotypes with the factors *a* and *b*.

4. The complementary factors *F* and *E* inhibit fasciation. Genotypes having *F* in the presence of *E* produce non-fasciated fruits. Slightly fasciated fruits which may be considered to be teratological are produced in rare instances by such genotypes. Genotypes having either *F* or *E* (but not both) in the homozygous condition produce fruits in which fasciation is inhibited only to a slight degree. The normal allelomorphs (*f* and *e*) of the factors *F* and *E* determine the production of fasciated fruits.

5. A critical examination of the data upon twenty-one crosses made by the writer and one cross reported by Price and Drinkard, in which the F_2 behavior as to fruit type has been recorded, fails to bring to light a single instance in which the depth-fasciation hypothesis is incapable of accounting for the observed phenomena.

6. It has been possible to explain many curious phenomena observed in the tomato cultures by the use of the working hy-

pothesis suggested. Such phenomena as the appearance of a Ponderosa type among the F_2 progeny of a cross between two varieties (Imperial and Bolgiano) which bear smaller fruits, the appearance of deep, non-fasciated (Globe type) fruits in the F_2 generation of crosses between varieties which bear fasciated fruits (Imperial × Bolgiano), the appearance of tiny non-fasciated fruits among the F_2 plants from a cross between two varieties (Dwarf Stone and Bolgiano) which bear larger fruits, all of these require the assumption of complementary factors for their explanation.

7. The factors here identified have explained certain phenomena which otherwise must have been explained by a hybrid vigor hypothesis. Certain crosses produce F_1 plants with larger fruits than those of the parents (e.g., Earliana × June Pink), but in many more crosses (e.g., June Pink × Ponderosa) the F_1 fruits are smaller. Quantitative data to prove these points are to be presented in another paper, but let it be noted here that these results are to be expected from the depth-fasciation hypothesis and need no further explanation.

8. Measurements of the depth, width, weight and stem depression of many fruits in these cultures have been made. In each of the six crosses which have been investigated in this manner the quantitative data confirm the present hypothesis. These data will be published soon.

College of William and Mary
Williamsburg, Virginia

TABLE I

MENDELIAN CHARACTERS IN THE GARDEN TOMATO
(from Jones, *American Naturalist*, LI. 618)

	Dominant	Recessive
Fruit shape	1 Spherical (non-constricted)	Pyriform (constricted)
Fruit shape	2 Roundish conic	Roundish compressed
Loculation of ovary	3 Bilocular	Plurilocular
Endocarp color	4 Red	Yellow
Epicarp color	5 Yellow	Colorless
Fruit surface	6 Smooth	Pubescent
Vine habit and leaf surface	7 Standard / Smooth	Dwarf / Rugose
Leaf margin	8 Serrate (normal or fine leaf)	Entire ("potato" or coarse leaf)
Leaf type	9 *Pimpinellifolium* type	*Esculentum* type
Foliage color	10 Green	Yellow
Inflorescence type	11 Simple	Compound

TABLE II

PEDIGREE LIST OF ALL PARENTS AND CROSSES WITH THE NUMBER OF MATURE PLANTS RECORDED AMONG THE PROGENY

Varieties are designated in the pedigrees as follows: B, Bolgiano; JP, June Pink; P, Ponderosa; E, Earliana; I, Imperial; JB, John Baer; D, Discovery; ED, Early Detroit; DC, Dwarf Champion; DS, Dwarf Stone.

PARENT STRAINS

Pedigree	Progeny	Pedigree	Progeny	Pedigree	Progeny
B	11	E–3	11	ED	22
B–6	48	E–1	20	ED–2	12
B–7	26	E–3–4–2	50	ED–2–7 op–1	91
B–9	25	E–1–16–2	49		
				DC	20
JP–1	19	I	18	DC–1	25
JP–1–10–2	99	I–5	75	DC–1–1	25
				DC–15–1	25
P–1	9	JB	19		
P–3	19	JB–1–1	98	DS	19
P–3–1	50			DS–5	80
P–3–1–2	50	D	23		
		D–1–1	71		

TABLE II — *Continued*

CROSSES

Cross No.	Generation	No. of Progeny	Pedigree
I	F_1	50	JP–1–10 × B–6
	F_2	51	(B–6 × JP–1–1)–1
		50	(JP–1–10 × B–6)–1
II	F_1	50	B–7 × E–3–4
		50	E–3–4 × B–7
	F_2	75	(B–7 × E–3–4)–1
		74	(E–3–4 × B–7)–1
III	F_1	41	E–1 × JP–1
		13	JP–2 × E–1
	F_2	100	(E–1 × JP–1)–26
		31	(JP–2 × E–1)–1
		100	(JP–2 × E–1)–10
IV	F_1	38	B–6 × DC–15
		8	DC–15 × B–6
	F_2	76	(B–6 × DC–15)–1
		75	(DC–15 × B–6)–1
V	F_1	55	JP–1–10 × DC–1
		9	DC–1 × JP–1–10
	F_2	74	(JP–1–10 × DC–1)–1
		74	(DC–1 × JP–1–10)–1
		124	(DC–1 × JP–1–10)–1 × JP–1–10–2
		124	DC–1–1 × (DC–1 × JP–1–10)–2
VI	F_1	8	JB–1 × P–3–1
	F_2	50	(JB–1 × P–3–1)–1
		49	(JB–1 × P–3–1)–2
		100	P–3–1–1 × (JB–1 × P–3–1)–1
		10	(JB–1 × P–3–1)–2 × P–3–1–1
		97	JB–1–1 × (JB–1 × P–3–1)–1
		89	(JB–1 × P–3–1)–1 × JB–1–2
VII	F_1	71	JP–1 × P–1
		24	P–1 × JP–1
	F_2	63	(JP × P)–2
		18	(JP × P)–6
		51	(JP–1 × P–1)–18
	F_3	51	(JP × P)–6–15
		52	(JP × P)–2–9
		20	(JP × P)–2–11
		35	JP–1–10 × (JP–1 × P–1)–18
		58	(JP–1 × P–1)–18 × JP–1–10
		51	JP–3 × (JP × P)–10
		45	(JP × P)–10 × JP–3
		151	JP–1 × (JP × P)–7

TABLE II — *Concluded*

CROSSES

Cross No.	Generation	No. of Progeny	Pedigree
		96	(JP × P)–7 × JP–1
		74	P–3 × (JP × P)–6
		55	(JP–1 × P–1)–18 × P–1–2
VIII	F_1	2	DS–5 × B–6
	F_2	87	(DS–5 × B–6)–2
IX	F_1	3	P × ED (Greenhouse)
	F_2	90	(P × ED)–1
		74	(P × ED)–2
		19	(ED × P)–1 × (ED × P)–2
X	F_1	45	B–6 × P–3–1
		75	P–3–1 × B–6
	F_2	50	(B–6 × P–3–1)–1
		51	(B–6 × P–3–1)–2
		98	(P–3–1 × B–6)–1
XI	F_1	53	ED–2 × JP–1
	F_2	98	(ED–2 × JP–1)–3
		34	(ED–2 × JP–1)–16
XII	F_1	45	ED–2–7 × B–5
	F_2	95	(ED–2–7 × B–5)–1
XIII	F_1	17	DS–3 × JB–13
		45	JB–13 × DS–3
	F_2	63	(DS–3 × JB–13)–1
		75	(JB–13 × DS–3)–1
XIV	F_1	25	DC–1 × ED–2–12
XV	F_1	75	B–6 × JB–13
		6	JB–13 × B–6
	F_2	75	(B–6 × JB–13)–1
		73	(JB–13 × B–6)–2
XVI	F_1	27	P–3–1 × DS–3
	F_2	73	(P–3–1 × DS–3)–2
XVII	F_1	50	I–5 × B–7
	F_2	98	(I–5 × B–7)–2
XVIII	F_1	27	P–3–1 × D–1
	F_2	99	(P–3–1 × D–1)–1
XIX	F_1	3	B–6 × D–1
		10	D–1 × B–6
	F_2	97	(D–1 × B–6)–1
XX	F_1	29	D–1 × E–3–8
	F_2	97	(D–1 × E–3–8)–1
XXI	F_1	50	JP–1–10 × D–2
	F_2	99	(JP–1–10 × D–2)–1

TABLE III

POSSIBLE GENOTYPES AND THE PHENOTYPIC CONSTITUTION OF THEIR PROGENIES

A in the presence of *B* = Deep Fruit; *F* in the presence of *E* = Non-fasciated Fruit.

GROUP	GENOTYPIC FORMULAE			CHARACTER OF PROGENY
1	*AABBFFEE*	.....	.....	All deep, non-fasciated
2	*AABBFFee*	*AABBffEE*	*AABBffee*	All deep, fasciated
	AABBFfee	*AABBffEe*		
3	*AAbbFFEE*	*aaBBFFEE*	*aabbFFEE*	All shallow, non-fasciated
	AabbFFEE	*aaBbFFEE*		
4	*AAbbffee*	*aaBBffee*	*aabbFFee*	All shallow, fasciated
	aabbffEE	*AAbbFFee*	*AAbbffEE*	
	aaBBFFee	*aaBBffEE*	*aabbffee*	
	Aabbffee	*aaBbffee*	*aabbFfee*	
	aabbffEe	*AAbbFfee*	*AAbbffEe*	
	aaBBFfee	*aaBBffEe*	*AabbFFee*	
	aaBbFFee	*AabbffEE*	*aaBbffEE*	
	AabbFfee	*AabbffEe*	*aaBbFfee*	
	aaBbffEe			
5	*AABbFFee*	*AABbffEE*	*AABbffee*	3 deep, fasc.: 1 shallow, fasc.
	AaBBFFee	*AaBBffEE*	*AaBBffee*	
	AABbFfee	*AABbffEe*	*AaBBffEe*	
	AaBBFfee			
6	*AABBFFEe*	*AABBFfEE*	.....	3 deep, non-f.: 1 deep, fasc.
7	*AABbFFEE*	*AaBBFFEE*	.....	3 deep, non-f.: 1 shallow, non-f.
8	*AAbbFFEe*	*AAbbFfEE*	*aaBBFFEe*	3 shallow, non-f.: 1 shallow, fasc.
	aaBBFfEE	*aabbFFEe*	*aabbFfEE*	
	AabbFFEe	*AabbFfEE*	*aaBbFFEe*	
	aaBbFfEE			
9	*AABBFfEe*	.....	.....	9 deep, non-f.: 7 deep, fasc.
10	*AaBbFFee*	*AaBbffEE*	*AaBbffee*	9 deep, fasc.: 7 shallow, fasc.
	AaBbFfee	*AaBbffEe*		
11	*AAbbFfEe*	*aaBBFfEe*	*aabbFfEe*	9 shallow, non-f.: 7 shallow, fasc.
	AabbFfEe	*aaBbFfEe*		
12	*AaBbFFEE*	.....	.....	9 deep, non-f.: 7 shallow, non-f.
13	*AABbFFEe*	*AABbFfEE*	*AaBBFFEe*	9 deep, non-f.: 3 deep, fasc.: 3 shallow, non-f.: 1 shallow, fasc.
	AaBBFfEE			
14	*AABbFfEe*	*AaBBFfEe*	.....	27 deep, non-f.: 21 deep, fasc.: 9 shallow, non-f.: 7 shallow, fasc.
15	*AaBbFFEe*	*AaBbFfEE*	.....	27 deep, non-f.: 21 shallow, non-f.: 9 deep, fasc.: 7 shallow, fasc.
16	*AaBbFfEe*	.....	.....	81 deep, non-f.: 63 shallow, non-f.: 63 deep, fasc.: 49 shallow, fasc.

TABLE IV

GENOTYPES INVESTIGATED WITH THE PHENOTYPIC CONSTITUTION OF THEIR PROGENIES

D = Deep; S = Shallow; F = Fasciated; N = Non-fasciated

Group	Genotypic Formula	Pheno-type	No. Pl.	Ped.	Gen.	Number of Plants in Progeny								Total
						D–F	D–N	S–F	S–N	D	S	F	N	
1	*AABBFFEE*	D–N	125	ED	P_1									
2	*AABBFFee*	D–F	117	JB	P_1									
	AABBFFee	D–F	93	I	P_1									
	AABBffee	D–F	128	P	P_1									
	AABBFfee	D–F	8	JB × P	F_1	99				99		99		99
3	*aabbFFEE*	S–N	99	DS	P_1									
4	*aaBBffee*	S–F	118	JP	P_1									
	aabbffEE	S–F	130	E	P_1									
	aabbffEE	S–F	110	B	P_1									
	aabbffEE	S–F	100	B × E	F_1			149			149	149		149
	aabbffee	S–F	95	DC	P_1									
	aaBbffEe	S–F	50	B × JP	F_1			101			101	101		101
	aaBbffEe	S–F	54	E × JP	F_1			231			231	231		231
	aabbffEe	S–F	46	B × DC	F_1			151			151	151		151
	aaBbffee	S–F	64	JP × DC	F_1			148			148	148		148
5	*AaBBffee*	D–F	95	JP × P	F_1	26		6		26	6	32		32
				JP × P	F_1							132		132
8	*aabbFfEE*	S–N	2	B × DS	F_1			29	58		87	29	58	87

TABLE IV — *Continued*

	aabbFfEE	S–N	1	D × E	F_1		63	34		63	34	34	63	97
9	*AABBFfEe*	D–N	3	P × ED	F_1	71	112			183		71	112	183
	AABBFfEe	D–N	1	P × D	F_1	32	67			99		32	67	99
10	*AaBbffEe*	D–F	120	B × P	F_1	129		70		129	70	199		199
	AaBbffEE	D–F	1	D × B	F_1	44		53		44	53	97		97
14	*AaBBFfEe*	D–N	53	ED × JP	F_1							69	63	132
	AaBBFfEe	D–N	1	D × JP	F_1							51	46	97
15	*AaBbFfEE*	D–N	45	B × ED	F_1	18		16				34	61	95
	AaBbFFEe	D–N	62	JB × DS	F_1					72	66			138
16	*AaBbFfEe*	D–N	1	D	P_1	19	25			44	27	19	25	71
	AaBbFfEe	D–N	81	B × JB	F_1							52	96	148
	AaBbFfEe	D–N	27	P × DS	F_1	22		8		22	8	30	43	73
	AaBbFfEe	D–N	50	I × B	F_1	25	34	17	22	59	39	42	56	98

CROSSES BETWEEN HOMOZYGOTES AND HETEROZYGOTES

Group	Heterozygote	Homozygote	Pedigree	D-F	D-N	S-F	S-N	D	S	F	N
2	*AABBFfee*	*AABBffee*	(JB × P) × P	110			110		110		110
	AABBFfee	*AABBFFee*	(JB × P) × JB	186			186		186		186
4	*aaBbffee*	*aaBBffee*	(DC × JP) × JP			124		124	124		124
	aaBbffee	*aaBBFFee*	(DC × JP) × DC			124		124	124		124
5	*AaBBffee*	*aaBBffee*	(JP × P) × JP	142		123	142	123	265		265
	AaBBffee	*AABBffee*	(JP × P) × P	129			129		129		129
16	*AaBbFfEe*	*aabbffEE*	D × B						8	5	13
	AaBbFfEe	*aabbffEE*	D × E		15	14	15	14	14	15	29
	AaBbFfEe	*AABBffee*	D × P	10	17		27		10	17	27
		aaBBffee	D × JP						35	15	50

TABLE V

TESTS FOR GOODNESS OF FIT OF MENDELIAN RATIOS FOR DEPTH AND FASCIATION OF FRUIT OBSERVED IN THE F_1, F_2 GENERATIONS AND IN THE BACK-CROSSES

Group in Text	Cross and Generation	Observed Frequency	Observed Ratio	Theoretical Ratio	Deviation	Probable Error	Dev./P. E.
VI	F_2–P × JB	75 Less Fasc.	3.03	3			
		24 More Fasc.	0.97	1	0.03	0.12	0.26
	P × (JB × P)	61 More Fasc.	1.11	1			
		49 Less Fasc.	0.89	1	0.11	0.06	1.70
VII	F_2–JP × P	26 Deep Fasc.	3.25	3			
		6 Shallow Fasc.	0.75	1	0.25	0.65	0.38
	JP × (JP × P)	142 Deep Fasc.	1.07	1			
		123 Shallow Fasc.	0.93	1	0.07	0.04	1.74
VIII	F_2–B × DS	58 Shallow Non-F.	2.67	3			
		29 Shallow Fasc.	1.33	1	0.33	0.13	2.66
IX	F_2–P × ED	112 Deep Non-F.	9.79	9			
		71 Deep Fasc.	6.21	7	0.79	0.40	2.00
X	F_2–B × P	129 Deep Fasc.	10.37	9			
		70 Shallow Fasc.	5.63	7	1.37	0.38	3.62
XI	F_2–ED × JP	63 Non-F.	7.64	9			
		69 Fasc.	8.36	7	1.36	0.47	2.93
XII	F_2–B × ED	61 Non-F.	2.57	3			
		34 Fasc.	1.43	1	0.43	0.12	3.60
		61 Non-F.	41.10	48	6.91	1.92	3.60
		18 Deep Fasc.	12.13	9	3.13	1.54	2.03
		16 Shallow Fasc.	10.78	7	3.78	1.38	2.73
XIII	F_2–JB × DS	72 Deep	8.35	9			
		66 Shallow	7.65	7	0.65	0.31	2.12
XV	F_2–B × JB	96 Non-F.	10.49	9			
		52 Fasc.	5.51	7	1.49	0.44	3.39
XVI	F_2–P × DS	43 Non-F.	9.43	9			
		30 Fasc.	6.58	7	0.43	0.63	0.68
		43 Non-F.	150.80	144	6.80	10.03	0.68
		22 Deep Fasc.	77.15	63	14.15	8.70	1.63
		8 Shallow Fasc.	28.06	49	20.95	7.95	2.64
XVII	F_2–I × B	34 Deep Non-F.	88.82	81	7.82	8.11	0.96
		22 Shallow Non-F.	57.47	63	5.53	7.51	0.74
		25 Deep Fasc.	65.31	63	2.31	7.51	0.31
		17 Shallow Fasc.	44.41	49	4.59	6.86	0.67
XVIII	F_1–D × P	17 Deep Non-F.	2.52	3			
		10 Deep Fasc.	1.48	1	0.48	0.23	2.14
	F_2–D × P	67 Deep Non-F.	10.83	9			
		32 Deep Fasc.	5.17	7	1.83	0.54	3.40

TABLE V — *Concluded*

Group in Text	Cross and Generation	Observed Frequency	Observed Ratio	Theoretical Ratio	Deviation	Probable Error	Dev./P.E.
XIX	F_1–D × B	5 Non-F.	0.77	1			
		8 Fasc.	1.23	1	0.23	0.19	1.24
	F_2–D × B	44 Deep Fasc.	7.26	9			
		53 Shallow Fasc.	8.74	7	1.74	0.54	3.20
XX	F_1–D × E	15 Deep Non-F.	1.03	1			
		14 Shallow Fasc.	0.97	1	0.03	0.13	0.27
	F_2–D × E	63 Shallow Non-F.	2.60	3	0.40	0.12	3.38
		34 Shallow Fasc.	1.40	1			
XXI	F_1–D × JP	35 Fasc.	2.80	3			
		15 Non-F.	1.20	1	0.20	0.17	2.21
	F_2–D × JP	46 Non-F.	7.59	9			
		51 Fasc.	8.41	7	1.41	0.54	2.60

TABLE VI

SUMMARY OF 9:7 RATIOS FOR DEPTH AND FASCIATION

Cross No.	Cross	Number of Plants with		Number of Plants with	
		Deep Fruits	Shallow Fruits	Non-fasciated Fruits	Fasciated Fruits
	D × Self	44	27	25	19
IX	P × ED			112	71
X	B × P	129	70		
XI	ED × JP			63	69
XIII	DS × JB	72	66		
XV	B × JB			96	52
XVI	P × DS			43	30
XVII	I × B	59	39	56	42
XVIII	P × D			67	32
XIX	B × D	44	53		
XXI	JP × D			46	51
Total No. of Plants		348 : 255/603		508 366/874	
Observed Ratio		9.23 : 6.77		9.30 : 6.70	
Theoretical Ratio		9.00 : 7.00		9.00 : 7.00	
Deviation		0.23		0.30	
Probable Error		0.22		0.18	
Dev./P. E.		1.05		1.67	

LITERATURE CITED

Castle, W. E. 1921. An Improved Method of Estimating the Number of Genetic Factors Concerned in Cases of Blending Inheritance. Science, N. S., 54: 223.

Crane, M. B. 1915. Heredity of Types of Inflorescence and Fruits in Tomato. Journ. Gen., 5: 1–11.

Emerson, R. A. 1917. Multiple Factors vs. "Golden Mean" in Size Inheritance. Science, N. S., 40: 57–58.

Groth, B. H. A. 1912. The F_1 Heredity of Size, Shape and Number in Tomato Fruits. New Jersey Agr. Exp. Sta., Bull. 242.

—— 1915. Some Results in Size Inheritance. New Jersey Agr. Exp. Sta., Bull. 278.

Halsted, Byron D. 1905. Report of the Botanist. New Jersey Agr. Exp. Sta., pp. 423–525.

Hayes, H. K., and Jones, D. F. 1917. The Effects of Cross and Self-fertilization in Tomatoes. 1916 Conn. Agr. Exp. Sta. Rept.

Jones, D. F. 1917. Linkage in Lycopersicum. Am. Nat., 51: 608–621.

Pearson, K. 1914. Tables for Statisticians and Biometricians. Cambridge University Press.

Price, H. L., and Drinkard, Jr., A. W. 1908. Inheritance in Tomato Hybrids. Virginia Agr. Exp. Sta., Bull. 177: 18–53.

THE PERFECT STAGE OF THE VALSACEAE IN CULTURE AND THE HYPOTHESIS OF SEXUAL STRAINS IN THIS GROUP *

LEWIS E. WEHMEYER

The whole question of perithecial formation in the higher ascomycetes is as yet in a highly unsettled condition. The question arises as to whether the factors to be considered are factors of nutrition, growth and environmental conditions, or whether they are in the nature of sexual phenomena, or both. The evidence so far is meager and scattered. In the course of culturing a number of stromatic Pyrenomycetes, the perithecial stage was obtained from single spore cultures in three cases. This proof that, in these species at least, a single asco-spore possesses the potentialities of perithecial formation has led to the following consideration of this question from the cultural evidence at present available. Before taking up this discussion, the life-histories of the three species mentioned, *Valsa Kunzei* Fr., *Diaporthe albo-velata* (Schw.) Sacc. and *Diaporthe binoculata* (Ell.) Sacc., will be given below.[1]

Valsa Kunzei Fr.

Specimens of the perithecial stromata of *Valsa Kunzei* Fr. (Fig. 1) were collected on twigs of *Thuja plicata* Don. near Copeland, Idaho, in August, 1922. The stromata on Thuja twigs are

* Paper from the Department of Botany of the University of Michigan, No. 212.

[1] Since this paper was written, perithecia with mature asci and ascospores have been obtained from single spore cultures of *Diaporthe galericulata* (Tul.) Sacc., and perithecial initials with "Woronin hyphae" have been found in developing perithecial stromata in single spore cultures of *Diatrype stigma* (Hoffm.) de Not. and *Eutypella fraxinicola* (Cke. & Pk.) Sacc.

rather widely scattered. They are pustulate, elliptical to fusoid, and measure .8–1.5 × .7–1 mm. They are surmounted by a small, greyish, circular to fusoid disc containing many minute, black, disc-like ostioles. The perithecia are numerous, flattened-oval in shape, and measure 260–300 × 200–225 μ. The walls are membranous, and the necks long and converging. The perithecia are buried in a well differentiated stroma, just beneath the periderm, which is usually outlined beneath by a row of periderm cells and an adjacent darkened area. The asci (Fig. 2) are numerous, clavate, sessile, or short-stipitate, and measure 26–31 × 4–5 μ. The spores (Fig. 3) are biseriate, hyaline, 1-celled, allantoid, and measure 7–8 × 1.5–2 μ.

On March 1, 1923, sprays of ascospores from the twigs mentioned above were made on plates of Leonian's agar. The same methods and media were used as have been mentioned in a former paper (28). Twenty-four hours later these spores had swollen greatly and become oval (Fig. 4). They measured 8 × 6 μ, and each had thrown out a single germ tube, 2 μ in diameter, from one end of the spore. Single germinating spores, and asci in which all of the spores were germinating were isolated from this culture.

On six per cent oat agar there was formed a heavy, cottony, superficial, mycelial growth, which later became greyish and matted, while the surface of the agar often became wrinkled.

On March 13, a sterilized twig of *Thuja occidentalis* L. was inoculated with mycelium from a single ascus culture. On April 10, there was noticed on this twig numerous, minute pustules, .1–.3 mm. in diameter, slightly raising the periderm. These were examined on April 30. At that time they were immature, but seemed to be the beginnings of perithecial stromata. As the culture had dried out to a great extent, it was moistened with sterile water and set aside. On May 9, the culture was again examined, and the fruit bodies were found to be mature perithecial stromata. The perithecia formed in culture, on twigs, constituted an abnormal amount of superficial, greyish, mycelial growth on account of the moisture content of the air in the culture tubes. The stromata appeared as small erumpent tufts,

.3–.6 mm. in diameter. From these tufts there arose 2–4, united, short-cylindrical, black ostioles. The perithecia were spherical to ovoid, 230–270 μ in diameter, and with rather thick, light-colored walls. Three to six perithecia were clustered together just beneath the slightly pustulate periderm. They were imbedded within a stroma, which was increased above to form a stromatic plug, through which the perithecial necks led to the exterior. This stroma was composed of a mixture of interwoven, hyaline hyphae, and dark-colored bark cells. The asci were broad clavate, and measured 26–30 $\times$ 5–6 μ. The spores were biseriate, allantoid, 1-celled, hyaline, and measured 7–8 $\times$ 1.5–2 μ.

As these perithecial stromata arose from an ascus culture, inoculations were subsequently made, from both single ascus and single spore cultures, to test for any indications of sexuality. These inoculations were made on twigs of *Thuja occidentalis* on May 11, 1923, and were kept in a cold room at 0–3° C. until September 15. When they were then examined, both types of these twig cultures showed the perfect stage exclusively.

At the same time that the twig cultures mentioned above were made, single ascus and single spore cultures were also made on six per cent oat agar, and kept at the same temperature. These were brought to room temperature on September 18. When examined on October 10, these cultures showed only the imperfect stage of the fungus, which was not found on the twig cultures. This imperfect stage (Fig. 5) belonged to the genus Cytospora. There were formed superficial, stromatic cushions, irregularly hemispherical in shape, and 1–4 mm. in diameter. The stromata were covered with a greyish weft of hyphae, and were composed within of olive-grey hyphae. They were seated on the darkened layer of tissue on the surface of the agar, and contained numerous labyrinthiform locules, which opened to the exterior by one or more openings. The walls of the locules were more parenchymatous than the rest of the stromatic tissue, and bore a dense hymenium of thin filamentous conidiophores, which in turn bore the hyaline, allantoid pycnospores, which measured 4–6 $\times$ .75–1 μ (Fig. 6).

From the foregoing data it is apparent that, in this species at least, the necessity of two sexual strains for the formation of perithecia is eliminated, since perithecia and ascospores were consistently produced from single spore cultures. On the other hand the type of substratum seems to have a definite influence, as perithecia were formed only on twigs, while pycnidia were formed exclusively on agar.

Diaporthe albo-velata (Schw.) Sacc.

Diaporthe albo-velata (Schw.) Sacc. is found upon the twigs of various species of Rhus and is often parasitic in its habit. The connection of an imperfect stage, *Sporocybe Rhois* (B. & C.) Sacc., with the ascus stage of this fungus was reported in a former paper (28). It was there shown that in both agar and twig cultures, under moist conditions, this fungus forms superficial, irregularly cylindrical stromata, some of which contain masses of elliptical, light-brown spores. On Tilia twigs, under dry conditions, there were formed long cylindrical, hair-like, sporodochia, capped by a spherical, black mass of oval, blackish-hyaline, 1-celled spores, measuring 6–9 × 2.5–3 μ. Since the occurrence of this Sporocybe stage, several other types of fruit bodies have been obtained in culture.

Two cultures of this fungus from single spores, made on six per cent agar on February 10, and March 2, 1923, respectively, were placed in a cold room at 0–3° C. on June 5. These two cultures were removed to room temperature on September 18. Upon examination on October 23, there were found near the margin of the cultures, compounded stromatic masses, rather larger than the normal conidial formations. These had clusters of long thin cylindrical projections resembling the ostioles of the perithecial stage. There were also found small orange-colored spore masses on the surface of these stromata. These proved to be masses of 2-celled, hyaline spores, elliptical to fusoid in shape, constricted at the septum, and measuring 16–23 × 2.5–3.5 μ. Vertical sections of these stromata showed that they were composed of a brown prosenchymatous tissue. They contained two to many

perithecia-like receptacles, with thick, dark-brown, pseudoparenchymatous walls, and more or less well developed necks. The interior of these receptacles was filled with a mass of loose, light-brown, mycelial threads, in which the masses of the spores mentioned above were mixed. The relation between the spores and the mycelium was difficult to determine, but a number of cases were found where the spores were being formed at the tips of the mycelial hyphae. These spores, which resemble strikingly the ascospores, were also occasionally found with the characteristic appendages of the ascospores. These, it seems, were formed in the abstriction of the spores, the spore carrying with it an attenuated protoplasmic thread as it was pinched off from the hyphal tip.

On May 28, 1923, a sterile twig of *Tilia americana* L. was inoculated with mycelium from a single spore culture. This twig was then placed at 0–3° C. for three months. It formed the usual stromatic cushions on the surface of the twig, but some of these threw out several filamentous stalks resembling the sporodochia of the Sporocybe stage. Upon examination on November 27, however, the perfect stage was found in these stromata, as well as in others which had not thrown out such filamentous ostioles, as they proved to be. In the younger stromata, where these ostioles were not yet formed, a second imperfect stage belonging to the genus Phomopsis, but with only the alpha type of spore present, was found above the developing perithecia.

The perithecial stage on Tilia twigs appeared on the surface as brownish, hemispherical, mycelial stromata, from some of which there developed 4–8 long cylindrical ostioles. These were 1–2 mm. long, with a thread-like apex, and often thickened at the base. The spherical perithecia were sunken in the unaltered bark cortex. They were 3–400 μ in diameter, and had long slender necks which terminated above in the fascicle of ostioles. The asci were clavate, and measured 52–62 $\times$ 10–13 μ. The spores were biseriate, 2-celled, hyaline, fusoid, constricted at the septum, and with a short hyaline appendage at each end. They measured 14.5–18 $\times$ 4–5 μ.

The Phomopsis stage on Tilia (Fig. 7) was formed beneath the

surface stromatic cushions, and above the developing perithecia. The spores were developed within a stroma, which developed beneath the periderm, and which it ruptured by its growth. The cavity in this stroma was one-chambered, irregular in shape, and possessed a differentiated wall composed of closely woven hyphae, with orange-brown walls. The cavity wall was surrounded by an indefinite mass of hyphal and host tissues. The spores were constricted from the tips of long, cylindrical, hyaline conidiophores. They were oval to oblong-fusoid, hyaline, one-celled, and light-yellow in mass. They measured 5–8 (10) × 2–3 μ.

This form is normally found on species of Rhus, and is often apparently parasitic upon that host. All three stages of its life-history have been produced saprophytically, however, on twigs of *Tilia americana* in culture. It can therefore be no more than a weak facultative parasite, and is not limited to species of Rhus, although the writer is not aware of its reported occurrence on any other host in nature. We have here also a form showing two distinct types of perfect stages, one a Sporocybe, and the other a Phomopsis. There are formed in culture, as shown in a former paper (28), apparently intergrading forms between these two types.

Whether the curious formation found on agar, as described above, can be considered as an abortive attempt at ascospore formation, is an open question. Klebahn (16) reports sclerotial bodies in the life-histories of *Mycosphaerella hieracii* (Sacc. & Briard) Jaap, and *M. fragariae*, which he seems to consider as abortive perithecia. In *M. hieracii* there are sometimes formed bacteria-like spores within these "sclerotia."

Diaporthe binoculata (Ellis) Sacc.

Perithecial stromata of *Diaporthe binoculata* (Ellis) Sacc. were collected on twigs of *Ilex verticellata* (L.) Gray near Ypsilanti, Michigan, on March 7, 1923. The stromata are scattered, circular in outline, conical pustulate, and .8–1.2 mm. in diameter. The disc is dirty black, containing 4–6 large, hemispherical, papillate ostioles. The perithecia are spherical, 4–500 μ in diam-

eter, with short, stout necks, and membranous walls, some 13 μ thick. The perithecia are buried in an altered, whitened area of the bark cortex, which is bounded by a black dorsal line, which dips to the wood surface, there forming a continuous stratum between bark and wood. The asci (Fig. 13) are long clavate to cylindrical, and measure 115-130 $\times$ 13 μ. The paraphyses are broad filiform, band-like, 5 μ wide, and contain large oily droplets. The spores are obliquely uniseriate, broad-ellipsoid, 2-celled, hyaline, and constricted at the septum. They measure 15–16.5 $\times$ 7–8.5 μ. Each cell of the spore is nearly isodiametric, and contains a large refractive droplet.

On April 23, 1923, a suspension of ascospores from the twigs mentioned above was made in sterile distilled water. Sprays of this suspension on Leonian's agar showed no germination. The twigs were then placed in a damp chamber for three days, and suspensions then made in both distilled water and a weak infusion of Ulmus bark. A spray of the water suspension on Leonian's agar gave no germination, but the spores in the Ulmus infusion germinated after twenty hours. The germinating spores (Fig. 12) did not swell, and threw out one or two germ tubes, 2 μ in diameter. On May 10, spore suspensions were again made in distilled water, Ulmus bark infusion, and Ulmus bark infusion plus a sugar solution. The water suspension gave only a very few germinating spores. A spray of the same on Leonian's agar gave about fifty per cent germination. In both of the Ulmus infusion suspensions the germination approached one hundred per cent.

On May 27, transfers were made to oat agar tubes, and to twigs of *Tilia americana* L. and *Ulmus americana* L. These cultures were placed in a cold room at a temperature of 0–3° C. They were removed to room temperature on September 18. The agar cultures had formed a superficial growth of tufted reddish-brown mycelium, and numerous whitish to tan, hemispherical, mycelial cushions. Upon examination on October 24, there were found, beneath these mycelial masses, black, sclerotia-like bodies imbedded in the agar. They were spherical and composed of darkened pseudo-parenchyma, and only occasionally

showed a slight differentiation into an outer, darker wall, and a lighter-colored central mass.

A twig of *Tilia americana*, inoculated from a single spore culture, showed pycnidial pustules when removed from the cold room on September 18. These were examined on October 29, when they appeared as open pustules (Fig. 10) .5–1.5 mm. in diameter. The spores were formed in irregular cavities within a stroma composed of dark thick-walled hyphae. The cavities had a slightly differentiated wall of smaller and more parenchymatous cells, which were lined within with a hymenium of long cylindrical, hyaline conidiophores, measuring 30–40 × 1–2 μ. The spores varied in size and shape, being merely the abstricted tips of these conidiophores. They were cylindrical to fusoid, or rarely elliptical, 1–celled, hyaline, often somewhat curved, and measured 6–13 × 1–2 μ (Fig. 11). The stroma pushed back the periderm, and its surface was usually exposed. Where rapid growth of this stroma took place, the hymenial layer was often more or less exposed, and the spores were formed in an irregular, exposed cavity. Young perithecia were found imbedded beneath these stromata in some instances.

A twig of *Ulmus americana* L., inoculated from a single spore culture, showed on November 6 a number of fascicles of ostioles which upon examination proved to be stromata of the perfect stage. The stromata appeared as circular or oval pustules, .8–1.8 mm. in diameter, and were composed of a fascicle of 5–15 elongated, stout-cylindrical, black ostioles, about 1 mm. long, surrounded by the collar of the ruptured periderm. The tips of the ostioles were often covered with a greenish-black pubescence. The perithecia were spherical or somewhat flattened, 450–500 μ in diameter, and deeply buried in an irregularly polystichous manner. Their necks were long and sinuous. The stroma was outlined by a narrow, black line which dipped to the wood surface, but the area within the line was not bleached, as was the case on Ilex in nature. The asci were clavate to cylindrical, with a flattened tip containing a refractive ring, and an abruptly narrowed base. The spores were uniseriate in the ascus, fusoid-elliptical, 2-celled, hyaline, constricted at the septum, 15–18 ×

8–10 μ and composed of two isodiametric cells, each with a large central oil drop. The tissues of the perithecial walls and necks were of a greenish-black tint.

Pycnidia were also found on Ulmus, but differed somewhat from those found on Tilia. The cavities were found buried in a lighter-colored stroma just above the forming perithecia (Fig. 8). This stroma formed the disc through which the ostioles penetrated. The spores here were more filiform, and more strongly curved (Fig. 9). They measured 13–16 × 1–1.5 μ. The walls of the cavity were of darker hyphae or often merely an indefinite mixture of host and fungous cells.

The two types of spores found on Tilia and Ulmus respectively may be considered as the alpha and beta types of a Phomopsis. From the foregoing data we see that this species also has the ability of producing perithecia from a single spore. Neither is it limited to Ilex as a host, as it has formed perithecia in culture on both Tilia and Ulmus.

DISCUSSION

From the evidence available it seems apparent that whatever the factors of perithecial formation may be, they are both specific and complex. Each species must be considered separately. Neither must too great emphasis be placed upon any one factor. Certain factors may be more or less generally essential, while other factors will undoubtedly be found to vary from species to species. Each species must have certain favorable conditions of growth before perithecial formation is possible. In addition to these requirements there may be in some species the necessity of the stimulus of the union of two sexual strains.

The data as to the physiological factors for perithecial formation is scattered over such a wide variety of forms that only suggestions can be drawn from it. It has been the writer's experience, with the stromatic forms, that the conditions most favorable for vegetative growth, or production of imperfect fruit bodies, often do not seem favorable for perithecial formation. Most of the culture work with pyrenomycetous fungi seems to

show that the perfect stage is difficult to obtain in culture. Furthermore, where perfect stages are obtained artificially they are much more frequently obtained on the natural substratum than on artificial nutrient media. Klebahn (16), in his work with a number of species of *Mycosphaerella*, obtained the perfect stage by overwintering infected leaves, or subjecting such leaves to alternate moistening and drying. In a few cases he obtained sclerotia-like bodies in agar cultures which he considered undeveloped perithecia, but no mature perithecia were obtained. He encountered the same results with *Didymella lycopersici* Kleb. (17), and other leaf-inhabiting forms. Stone (26) also obtained the perithecia of *Mycosphaerella ontarioensis* Stone, and *M. pinodes* (Berk. & Blox.) Niesl. on infected leaves several months after they had been killed by the fungus, but failed to obtain perithecia of the same species in agar cultures. The writer has found this especially true with the stromatic forms. Out of some twenty to thirty forms, carried both on twig and agar cultures, only four have shown the perfect stage, and all of these have been on twig cultures. Only two abortive attempts at the formation of perithecia on agar have been observed. On the other hand nearly all of these forms carried in culture have produced the imperfect stage on both agar and twig cultures. Incidentally three of the four forms showing the perfect stage have been of the genus *Diaporthe*, and the fourth of the genus *Valsa*. It is interesting in this connection to note that in spite of the enormous amount of work done upon the chestnut blight fungus (*Endothia parasitica* (Murr.) P. J. & H. W. And.), there seems to be no report of the perfect stage obtained in culture. Graves (10), in his work upon *Melanconis juglandis* (E. & E.) Graves, similarly failed to obtain the perfect stage in culture.

On the other hand there seem to be certain groups which form perithecia comparatively easily in agar cultures. Klebahn (16) reports the occurrence of perithecia of a number of species of the genus Gnomonia (*G. rosae, G. gnomon, G. intermedia, G. fragariae, G. setacea and G. melanostyla*) in agar cultures. The work of Miss Stoneman (27), Shear and Wood (22), Edgerton (7, 8), and many others on the Anthracnoses has shown

that the perithecia of these forms are obtained with comparative ease in agar cultures. It might here be mentioned that the forms here given as producing perithecia in culture (Diaporthe & Valsa) can probably be considered as the most closely related stromatic forms to the foregoing genera (Gnomonia and Glomerella).

What, then, are the conditions which bring about the formation of perithecia in nature, which are absent in culture? There are a number of possibilities, depending probably upon the group to be considered. The parasitic forms present a special case. There is a likelihood in these cases of chemical relationships in the host which are absent in synthetic media, or which are destroyed by sterilization in the case of sterilized twigs. Many pyrenomycetes are, however, only weak parasites, and form their perithecia usually after the host is killed in one way or another. The case of *Diaporthe albo-velata*, mentioned above, shows that a form acting as a weak parasite may form perithecia saprophytically.

The existence of a chemical stimulus necessary for perithecial formation, over and above that necessary for normal growth and imperfect reproduction, has also been suggested. Miss Cayley in 1921 (4) stimulated the formation of the perithecia of *Nectria galligena* Bres. by the addition of a one per cent solution of glycerine to certain starchy media. The perithecia failed to develop when the glycerine was omitted. Leonian in 1921 (18), working with *Valsa leucostoma* (Pers.) Fr., found that the addition of NaCl or 2–12% sugar to oatmeal agar stimulated the formation of perithecia. On the other hand perithecia formed on corn meal agar without the addition of sugar; the addition of two per cent sugar here inhibited perithecial production. He also found that if this perithecial stimulus was absent for the first six days of the growth of the culture, the perithecia would not be formed. Rand (21), working with *Mycosphaerella convexula* (Schw.) Rand, obtained mature perithecia upon cooked corn meal, corn meal agar, and potato cylinders, while only immature perithecia were obtained on beef agar and oxalic acid agar.

Investigators who have worked with the forms mentioned above (Glomerella, etc.), which produce perithecia in synthetic cultures, seem to oppose this theory of a nutritional stimulus. Shear and Wood (22) and Shear (24), in their work upon Glomerella, found that the type of culture media, light, temperature, and moisture were factors which had very little effect upon perithecial production. Shear (23) found the same to be true in his work with *Guignardia vaccinii* Shear. Harter (12) attempted to bring about the production of asci from pycnospore strains of *Diaporthe batatatis* by the use of various nutrient media, acids, and alkalies, with only negative results. The evidence in this group tends to show that certain single spore strains will produce only pycnospores, while other strains will have the ability of producing ascospores.

The writer is inclined to believe that the reasons for the failure of perithecial formation in culture are to be sought in other than chemical stimuli. There must be available, to be sure, the necessary nutrient substances for growth and reproduction. These are probably present, however, in both agar and twig culture substrata, since mycelial growth and the formation of the imperfect stage are normal. One of the most difficult factors to control in tube cultures is the distribution of moisture. Under natural conditions in the field, twigs and branches upon which stromatic forms are growing are either periodically thoroughly saturated by rains, or lie in damp situations where the substratum is continually saturated. In either case there is a free play of air currents, which keeps the humidity of the surrounding atmosphere comparatively low. In culture tubes or chambers, on the other hand, outside of the original saturation upon sterilization, it is very difficult to get moisture into the twig or agar, while the humidity of the atmosphere is kept comparatively high by evaporation.

Correspondingly, there is always an abnormal amount of superficial, mycelial growth in tube cultures, and stromatic formations are abnormally developed on the surface. Where perithecia are developed, it is usually under comparatively dry conditions, as on the drier portions of the substratum, or after

the culture has dried out. This is not due either to the greater age of these parts, since twigs inoculated on the lower, moister portion of the culture will develop perithecia on the upper, younger, but drier portions. It seems that a high atmospheric humidity and lack of circulation lead to a superficial growth of mycelium, and the use of the food-supply in the vegetative growth or the formation of the imperfect stage. Leonian (19) in his work on the Sphaeropsidales states that "Mycelial growth and reproduction are parallel within a very wide margin." Perithecial formation apparently depends upon a proper balance of moisture within the substratum, and evaporation from its surface. Since the perithecial stromata of these Fungi are formed beneath the periderm within the bark tissues, the moisture relations within the bark may well be of importance for this type of fructification. We may be dealing here again with transpiration phenomena, which have been shown by Klebs (14) to be a controlling factor in the reproduction of *Sporodinia grandis*. The physical character of the substratum also may have an effect upon perithecial formation. The bark tissues of a twig allow free interchange of gases and water vapour, while in agar this is not possible beneath the surface. The mycelial growth of these forms is accordingly chiefly upon the surface.

Stevens (25), in observing the effect of climatic factors on a large number of artificial infections of *Endothia parasitica*, found that there was a striking correlation between the amount and distribution of rainfall, and perithecial production. During dry seasons perithecia were usually entirely absent, while during wet seasons perithecia were produced in abundance, apparently independently of temperature, or the age of the infection. Klebahn's success in obtaining perfect stages by alternately moistening and drying infected leaves also points to moisture as an important factor in perithecial productions. Matz (20), working with *Botryosphaeria Berengeriana* de Not., found that although this form produced micro- and macro-pycnospores, and ascospores on infected pecan twigs, it remained sterile on various agars and on twig cultures, forming only occasionally

sterile stromata. Suspecting that this was due to a high humidity in the cultures, he coated twigs, which had been infected with the fungus, with paraffin to prevent the moist air from coming in contact with the surface of the twigs. Although no ascospores were formed on twigs treated in this way, mature stromata containing both micro- and macro-pycnospores were obtained. Further investigations of these moisture relations under controlled conditions are highly desirable.

Besides the physiological factors considered above, there is always the possibility of the necessity of the union of two independent sexual strains for ascospore production. If any species possesses two separate sexual strains the necessity of such a stimulus might account for the absence of perithecia, certainly in single spore cultures. Many, however, of the stromatic forms cultured were also carried as single ascus cultures, with no differing results.

The matter of sexuality in the ascomycetes has been under discussion for some time, and has been approached from the cytological and morphological sides in a number of forms. These investigations have resulted in the finding of various degrees of sexuality, as far as the occurrence of fertilization phenomena, and the production of sex organs are concerned. In general the higher types of ascomycetes show a further retrogression in the type of sexuality possessed. It has been shown by Blackman and Welsford (2), in *Polystigma rubrum* DC., and by Brooks (3), for *Gnomonia erythrostoma* Pers., that the ascogenous hyphae in these forms no longer arise from the cells of the archicarp, which soon degenerate. In the Valsaceae we have almost no cytological evidence to judge from. Fuisting (9) found coils of hyphae in the young perithecia of Diatrype and Eutypa, which he considered as "Woronin hyphae," and by analogy supposed them to be degenerate sex organs which now probably serve merely as a stimulus to perithecial formation, without necessarily serving a sexual function. P. J. Anderson (1) found that in *Endothia parasitica* the ascogonial cells degenerated, and that there was very little evidence of the formation of ascogenous branches from the ascogonium. The origin of the ascogenous hyphae

could not be determined. There is at least no morphological evidence in this group of the existence of two separate sexual strains.

The cultural evidence is as yet very limited, especially in the stromatic forms. The existence of two separate sexual strains necessary for the complete formation of sexual fruit bodies was shown by Dodge (6) to exist in the ascomycetes, in *Ascobolus magnificus* Dodge, in 1920. In 1923, Kirby (13) reported two strains of *Ophiobolus cariceti* which together form perithecia on wheat stems or wheat agar, but fail to do so when cultured alone. In 1914, Edgerton (8) reported the occurrence of plus and minus strains in the genus Glomerella. The isolation of the sexual strains here however does not seem to be complete. The plus strain will form perithecia, in local groups, alone. The minus strain produces numerous perithecial initials, but these produce mature asci and spores only under the stimulus of special nutrient media. Edgerton suggests that the plus strain is the antheridial strain and produces oögonia occasionally. When this occurs the local groups of perithecia are found. If on the other hand the minus strain is the oögonial strain, numerous perithecia may be initiated, but because of the lack of antheridia these do not reach maturity. The stimulus of a favorable medium may either cause the maturity of these perithecial initials itself, or stimulate the formation of antheridia and thereby bring the asci to maturity as a result of fertilization. Where the two strains are grown together, a dense line of perithecia is formed along the line of contact. In 1923, Miss Wineland (29), working with mono-spore cultures of *Fusarium moniliforme*, obtained perithecia-like bodies from a certain strain. When this strain was cultured with a second strain, which did not form such bodies, mature perithecia of a species of Giberella were obtained.

A number of authors have also mentioned a difference in ability to form fruiting bodies between conidiospore and pycnospore strains on the one hand and ascospore strains on the other. Klebahn (15), in 1905, found that the mycelium of *Gnomonia veneta* (Sacc. & Speg.) Kleb., derived from the conidia (*Glocospo-*

rium nervisiquum (Fck.) Sacc.), failed to produce perithecia upon sterile leaves of Platanus, while mycelium from ascospores of the same fungus produced perithecia in similar leaf cultures. Leonian (18) also mentions this phenomenon in his work with *Valsa leucostoma.* Miss Cayley in 1923 (5), in a study of aversion between mono-spore strains of *Diaporthe perniciosa* Marchall, also found that mono-ascospore cultures usually gave numerous perithecia, and only comparatively few pycnidia, while pycnospore cultures gave in general only pycnidia. Three pycnospore cultures, one of which was a mono-spore culture, however gave perithecia. No indication of sexual strains was obtained. In 1912, Harter, and Harter and Field (11, 12), reported two strains of *Diaporthe batatatis,* one of which produced perithecia, while the other did not. His re-isolations from the perithecial strain were apparently always made by the isolation of a complete ascus with its germinating spores. Whether or not the perithecial strain, therefore, was in reality a combination of two sexual strains necessary for the production of perithecia, cannot be determined What the interpretation of the foregoing phenomena may be, or whether they are related in any way to the pycnospore and ascospore strains of Glomerella and similar forms, must remain unanswered for the present.

The cultural evidence for sexual strains in the ascomycetes seems to parallel somewhat the cytological evidence for sexuality, in that there seem to be varying degrees of isolation of these sexual strains. In Ascobolus and Ophiobolus, these seem to be sharp and distinct. In the Gibberella obtained by Miss Wineland, there seems to be a tendency to form perithecia by one of the strains. In the Glomerellas worked on by Edgerton this tendency seems to be further developed, the plus strain here being able to mature some perithecia alone. In the other forms as *Diaporthe perniciosa* this separation of strains seems to be complete, some strains forming perithecia and others not. Shear (24) believes this to be the case in Glomerella. In the stromatic forms there seems to be no evidence as yet for the necessity of the union of two sexual strains for the formation of perithecia. Miss Cayley has obtained perithecia of *Diaporthe perniciosa*

from single ascospores and the writer has obtained perithecia from the three forms here described from single ascospores.

In conclusion the writer wishes to thank Dr. C. H. Kauffman for his helpful suggestions throughout this study.

University of Michigan

BIBLIOGRAPHY

1. Anderson, P. J. 1913. The Morphology and Life History of the Chestnut Blight Fungus. Penn. Chest. Blight Comm., Bull. No. 7.
2. Blackman, V. H. and Welsford, E. J. 1912. The Development of the Perithecia of Polystigma rubrum. Ann. Bot., 26: 761.
3. Brooks, F. T. 1910. The Development of Gnomonia erythrostoma Pers. Ann. Bot., 24: 585.
4. Cayley, Dorothy M. 1921. Some Observations of the Life History of Nectria galligena Bres. Ann. Bot., 35: 79.
5. Cayley, Dorothy M. 1923. The Phenomenon of Mutual Aversion between Mono-spore Mycelia of the same Fungus (Diaporthe perniciosa Marchall) with a Discussion of Sex Heterothallism in Fungi. Journ. Genetics, 13: 353.
6. Dodge, B. O. 1920. The Life History of Ascobolus magnificus. Mycologia, 12: 115.
7. Edgerton, C. W. 1908. The Physiology and Development of Some Anthracnoses. Bot. Gaz., 45: 367.
8. Edgerton, C. W. 1914. Plus and Minus Strains in the Genus Glomerella. Journ. Bot., 1: 244.
9. Fuisting, W. 1867. Der Entwickelungsgeschichte der Pyrenomyceten. Bot. Zeit., 25: 177, 185, 193.
10. Graves, A. H. 1923. The Melanconis Disease of the Butternut (Juglans cinerea L.). Phyt., 13: 412.
11. Harter, L. L., and Field, Ethel C. 1912. Diaporthe, the Ascogenous Form of Sweet Potato Dry Rot. Phyt., 2: 121.
12. Harter, L. L. 1913. A Dry Rot of Sweet Potatoes Caused by Diaporthe batatatis. Bur. Plant Ind., U. S. Dep. Agr., Bull. 281.
13. Kirby, R. S. 1923. Heterothallism in Ophiobolus cariceti (*abstract*). Phyt., 13: 35.
14. Klebs, Georg. 1898. Zur Physiologie der Fortpflanzung einiger Pilze. I. Sporodinia grandis. Jahr. f. Wiss. Bot., 32: 1.
15. Klebahn, H. 1905. Untersuchungen über einige Fungi Imperfecti und die zugehorigen Ascomycetenformen. I–II. Jahr. f. Wiss. Bot., 41: 485.
16. Klebahn, H. 1918. Haupt- und Nebenfruchtformen der Ascomyceten.

17. Klebahn, H. 1921. Der Pilz der Tomatenstengelkrankheit und seine Schlauchfruchtform. Zeit. f. Pflanz., 31: 1.

18. Leonian, L. H. 1921. Studies on the Valsa Apple Canker in New Mexico. Phyt., 11: 236.

19. Leonian, L. H. 1924. A Study of the Factors Promoting Pycnidial Formation in Some Sphaeropsidales. Journ. Bot., 11: 19.

20. Matz, J. 1916. A Method to Induce Sporulation in Cultures of Botryosphaeria Berengeriana. Phyt., 6: 387.

21. Rand, F. V. 1911. A Pecan Leaf Blotch. Phyt., 1, 133.

22. Shear, C. L. and Wood, Anna K. 1907. Ascogenous Forms of Gloeosporium and Colletotrichum. Bot. Gaz., 43, 254.

23. Shear, C. L. 1907. Cranberry Diseases. Bur. Plant. Ind., U. S. Dep. Agr., Bull. 110.

24. Shear, C. L. 1913. Studies of Fungous Parasites Belonging to the Genus Glomerella. Bur. Plant. Ind., U. S. Dep. Agr., Bull. 252.

25. Stevens, N. E. 1917. The Influence of Certain Climatic Factors on the Development of Endothia parasitica (Murr.) And. Journ. Bot., 4: 1.

26. Stone, R. E. 1915. Life History of Ascochyta on Some Leguminous Plants. II. Phyt., 5: 4.

27. Stoneman, Bertha A. 1898. A Comparative Study of the Development of Some Anthracnoses. Bot. Gaz., 26: 69.

28. Wehmeyer, L. E. 1923. The Imperfect Stage of Some Higher Pyrenomycetes Obtained in Culture. Papers Mich. Acad. Sci., 3: 245.

29. Wineland, Grace O. 1923. The Production in Culture of the Ascigerous Stage of Fusarium moniliforme (*abstract*). Phyt., 13: 51.

EXPLANATION OF PLATE XIX

FIGS. 1–6. *Valsa Kunzei* Fr.
- Fig. 1. Vertical section of perithecial stroma on *Thuja plicata* Don.
- Fig. 2. Ascus with ascospores.
- Fig. 3. Ascospores.
- Fig. 4. Germinating ascospore.
- Fig. 5. Vertical section of pycnidial stroma on oatmeal agar.
- Fig. 6. Pycnospores.

FIG. 7. Perithecia-like structures of *Diaporthe albo-velata* (Schw.) Sacc. formed in oatmeal agar.

FIGS. 8–13. *Diaporthe binoculata* (Ellis) Sacc.
- Fig. 8. Type of imperfect fruit body formed on *Ulmus americana* L. above groups of young perithecia.
- Fig. 9. Pycnospores from above type of fruit body on Ulmus.
- Fig. 10. Type of imperfect fruit body found on *Tilia americana* L.
- Fig. 11. Pycnospores from above fruit body on Tilia.
- Fig. 12. Germinating ascospore.
- Fig. 13. Ascus with ascospores.

PLATE XIX

OBSERVATIONS ON THE MORPHOLOGY OF THE SEED IN PHYTOLACCA

E. F. WOODCOCK

The writer described in an earlier paper (5) the development of the seed in certain Polygonaceae and showed that all the storage material in the seed is endosperm, rather than perisperm and endosperm as suggested by Johnson (3). Associated with the Polygonaceae, Johnson (p. 368) mentioned the families Chenopodiaceae, Phytolaccaceae and Caryophyllaceae. Johnson was, no doubt, influenced by Harz (2) in his conclusion, since Harz (p. 1102) carefully figures and describes the buckwheat seed, considering the entire storage region as perisperm.

Heimerl writing on the Phytolaccaceae in Engler and Prantl (1) briefly describes the external appearance of the seed and states that the storage region consists of starchy or fatty perisperm.

Harz (p. 1089) considers the storage region in the genus Phytolacca as consisting of two parts, i.e., a large central perisperm containing only starch, and a small cap-like mass of endosperm fitting over the root end of the embryo, the cells of this endosperm portion containing fat and aleuron but no starch.

Johnson (4), working on the Piperaceae, looked upon the very abundant perisperm as the real storage region, it being separated from the embryo by a layer of endosperm, which, instead of acting as a storage region, serves to digest and pass on food material to the embryo from the perisperm. In an earlier paper (3, p. 368) Johnson had already pointed out this restriction of the endosperm in the genus Saururus, formerly placed in the family Piperaceae, and suggests the probability of a similar relation existing in the family Phytolaccaceae.

The fact that the writer did not find the conditions in the

Polygonaceae to be as suggested by Johnson, caused him to make a detailed study of the morphology of the seed of Phytolacca to determine whether the conditions suggested by Johnson were true in a representative species of Phytolaccaceae.

DESCRIPTION AND DISCUSSION OF THE MORPHOLOGY OF THE SEED

The species *Phytolacca americana* was used as a source of material. Microtome sections stained with Delafield's haematoxylon, supplemented with free-hand sections of the later stages, were used for the interpretation of conditions in the developing seed.

The laterally flattened ovules are campylotropous, having a short funiculus with the micropyle turned toward the base (Fig. 8). At about the time that the embryo is in the octant stage, it corresponds quite closely with the typical Bursa embryo. The suspensor of *P. americana*, however, is a short thick structure consisting of only a few irregular cells (Fig. 2), whereas, in Bursa, it consists of a filament of seven or eight cylindrical cells. The embryo sac at this time is a long, narrow, curved structure, occupying a peripheral position in the nucellus, and is separated from the integuments by a layer of nucellus consisting of four or five rows of irregularly arranged cells (Fig. 1). The embryo sac extends about two-thirds of the distance around the ovule and is lined with a layer of cytoplasm in which are inbedded a few endosperm nuclei. At this stage of development there is evident a striking difference in the shape of the cells which make up the outer integument. The cells in the outer layer of the integument appear in side view pillar-like (Fig. 3) and in top view somewhat elongated. The cells have large vacuoles in which are brown granules. The inner layer of the integument is about the thickness of the outer layer, but consists of several rows of irregularly arranged cells. The micropylar portion of the embryo sac is separated from the micropyle by the nucellus (Fig. 2), which is five to eight cells in thickness. At this stage of seed development there appears no stored material in any of the cells of the nucellus.

As development proceeds growth and nuclear division, followed by cell wall formation, occur quite rapidly in the endosperm until at the time the cotyledons of the embryo are as long as the hypocotyl the embryo sac is completely filled with cellular endosperm which surrounds the embryo (Fig. 4). The embryo sac has increased in width and length until it extends almost entirely around the peripheral region of the nucellar tissue. It is separated from the integument by a layer consisting of only a few compressed cells. The endosperm tissue at this time is made up of large, thin-walled, vacuolated parenchyma cells (Fig. 5). None of the cells of the endosperm contain stored material in the form of starch or aleuron; in fact, their extremely thin-walled and vacuolated condition would lead one to conclude that they were not destined for storage purposes. At this time starch grains begin to appear in that portion of the nucellus surrounded by the embryo. The grains are of two sizes and are located near one side of the cell (Fig. 6). The large grains, one or two in number, are compound, spherical structures made up of small parts which are about the size of the numerous small, simple, somewhat spherical grains.

The micropylar portion of the young seed, in a slightly later stage of development, is shown in Fig. 7. The plumule is evident as a rounded outgrowth at the base of the cotyledons. In this, as well as in the previous stage, the cotyledons are semicircular in cross-section with their flat surfaces in contact and placed at right angles to the flat surface of the seed. The cells of the embryo are small and cubical and filled with dense protoplasm and stored material in the form of aleuron. As the embryo has increased in size the number of starch grains has increased only to a slight extent in the nucellus, and the embryo has come to occupy more of the embryo sac thus compressing the endosperm tissue. There is no indication, as yet, of this surrounding layer of endosperm having the digestive function suggested by Johnson, since there is no evidence of the cells becoming adapted for that purpose.

The mature seeds are smooth, oily, and shiny, being black and kidney-shaped (Fig. 8). The micropylar part is short-beaked

extending out over the hilum which occupies a depressed area near one end of the seed. The testa is made up of two very well marked regions. On the outside are the pillar-like epidermal cells, mentioned earlier in the paper, whose walls have now become dark brown. The lateral walls have become somewhat thickened, while the outer walls show a marked increase in thickness, the width of the wall now being equal to about one-fourth the length of the cell (Fig. 9). This layer of cells is very hard and brittle because of the presence of calcium silicate in the cell walls. These cells are dead and have lost all the brown, granular contents which were evident in the young seed. The remainder of the testa consists of several rows of loose, tangentially compressed parenchyma cells whose walls are light brown. The nucellus located between the embryo and the testa is now represented by a thin layer of compressed cell remains. All the cellular endosperm which surrounded the embryo earlier in the process of development has disappeared except the compressed cell remains about the cotyledon portion of the embryo and a cap-like portion about the terminal half of the hypocotyl. This cap-like portion is about six cells in thickness over the end of the embryo, gradually decreasing to one cell in thickness at its margin which clasps the hypocotyl. The cells of the endosperm are thin-walled and distorted, containing neither aleuron grains nor starch. The nucellus which is encircled by the mature embryo is represented by parenchyma cells which are filled with closely packed starch grains (Fig. 10). In the hilum region of the nucellus the starch grains are slightly less abundant.

SUMMARY AND CONCLUSIONS

The ovule is a flattened, campylotropous structure and the embryo sac occupies a curved peripheral position in the nucellus. The endosperm becomes cellular at an early stage in the development of the seed, but shows no indication of becoming a storage or digestive region at any time during its entire development. The early stage of embryo development is quite similar to Bursa. As the seed comes to maturity the cellular endosperm is all di-

gested except a cap-like portion of compressed cells over the micropylar end of the hypocotyl. At the maturity of the seed the testa is represented by a row of brown pillar-like, brittle cells, and an inner layer of light brown, tangentially compressed parenchyma cells. The storage region consists of perisperm in whose cells occur closely packed, large, compound starch grains and also small simple grains.

The absence of the digestive layer of endosperm separating the embryo from the perisperm in the mature seed shows that Johnson's suggestion regarding the Phytolaccaceae does not hold true, at least in the very representative species *Phytolacca americana*.

Michigan Agricultural College
East Lansing, Michigan

LITERATURE CITED

1. Engler, A., and Prantl, K. 1894. Die Naturlichen Pflanzenfamilien. III. Teil, 1. Halfte, Leipzig.
2. Harz, C. O. 1885. Landwirthschaftliche Samenkunde. Berlin.
3. Johnson, D. S. 1900. On the Development of Saururus cernuus L. Bull. Torrey Bot. Club, 27: 365–372.
4. —— 1902. On the Development of Certain Piperaceae. Bot. Gaz. 34: 321–338.
5. Woodcock, E. F. 1914. Observations on the Development and Germination of the Seed in Certain Polygonaceae. Amer. Journ. of Bot., 1: 454–476.

DESCRIPTION OF PLATES

All figures drawn from median longitudinal sections cut parallel to flat surface of seed. The following abbreviations are used: E, embryo; ES, embryo sac; M, micropyle; F, funiculus; N, nucellus; EN, endosperm; S, suspensor; P, plumule; PE, perisperm; T, testa; ER, cap of crushed endosperm; OI, outer integument; INI, inner integument; H, hypocotyl; C, cotyledon.

PLATE XX

FIG. 1. Young ovule, showing embryo sac, spherical embryo, and endosperm in free nuclear condition. × 40.

FIG. 2. Micropylar portion of young ovule shown in Fig. 1. × 207.

FIG. 3. Epidermal cells of outer integument, showing vacuoles filled with large granules. × 730.

FIG. 4. Young seed, showing embryo with cotyledons well developed and embryo sac encircling the nucellus and filled with endosperm cells. × 12.

FIG. 5. Several endosperm cells at stage shown in Fig. 4. Note large vacuoles and absence of starch grains. × 207.

FIG. 6. Cell from nucellus at stage shown in Fig. 4. Several small, simple starch grains and one large, compound grain present. × 207.

PLATE XXI

FIG. 7. Micropylar portion of seed at a stage slightly later than that shown in Fig. 4. The endosperm is compressed and the plumule is evident at the base of the cotyledons. × 40.

FIG. 8. Mature seed, showing the perisperm as storage region and a cap of endosperm cell, remains over the end of the hypocotyl. × 40.

FIG. 9. Section through testa of mature seed. × 207.

FIG. 10. Cell from perisperm of mature seed showing simple and compound starch grains. × 430.

PLATE XX

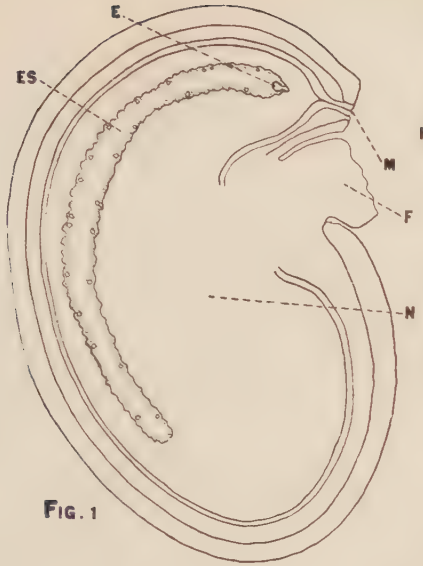


FIG. 1

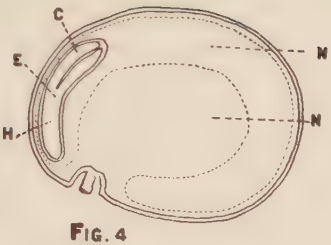


FIG. 4

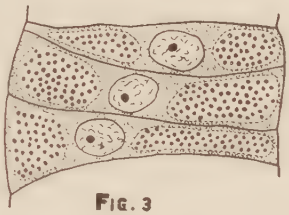


FIG. 3

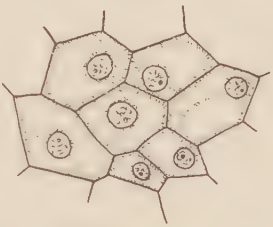


FIG. 5

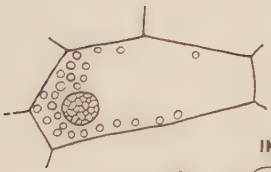


FIG. 6

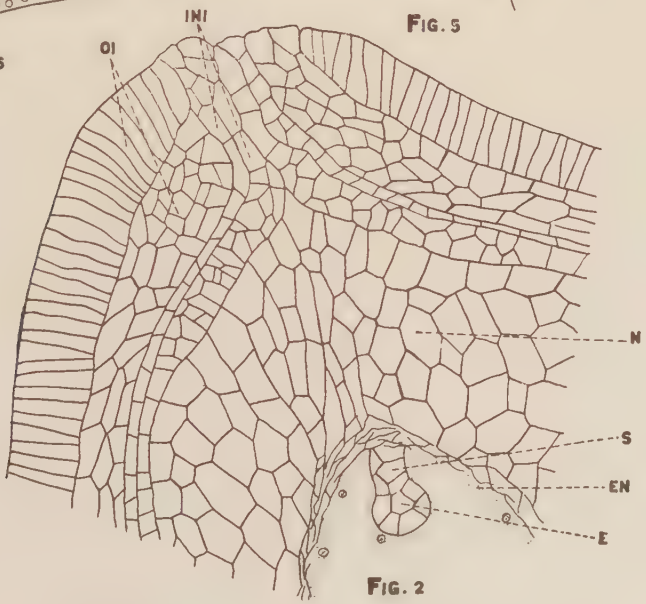


FIG. 2

PLATE XXI

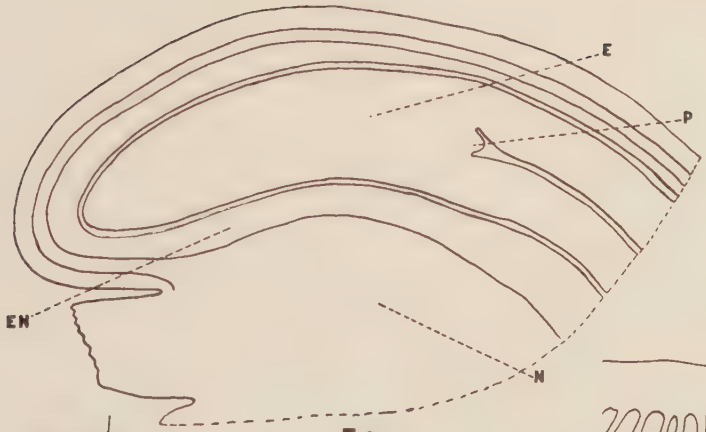


FIG. 7

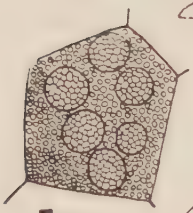


FIG. 10

FIG. 9

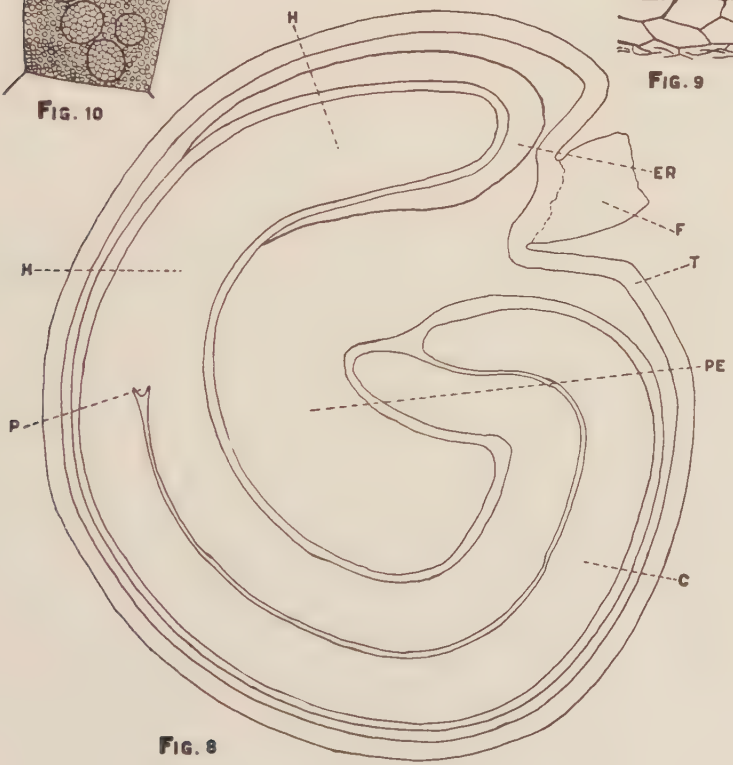


FIG. 8

SOME NEW SPECIMENS OF TRIASSIC VERTEBRATES IN THE MUSEUM OF GEOLOGY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

E. C. CASE

The Museum of Geology of the University of Michigan has recently completed the preparation of several most interesting specimens of Triassic vertebrate fossils, from the Dockum beds of western Texas.

The first of these to be described is the lower jaw of a Phytosaur, No. 8855, referable to *Leptosuchus crosbiensis* (Pl. XXII, Fig. 1). The specimen shows the complete left side and the whole of the right side as far back as the symphasis. Its chief interest lies in the fact that a large number of the teeth are preserved, from the most anterior to the last posterior one of the left side. This permits a thorough understanding of the dentition of the mandible. On the left side there are forty-three teeth and sockets posterior to the three large tusks, or forty-six in all; on the same side there are thirty-one teeth and sockets anterior to the symphasis and on the right side there are thirty teeth and sockets in the same space.

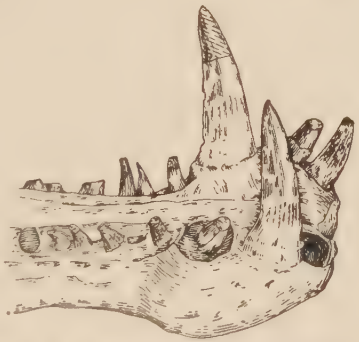


Fig. 9. Anterior end of the mandible of *Leptosuchus crosbiensis*, No. 8855, University of Michigan × ½

The anterior end of the mandible is slightly expanded and has three large tusks or sockets on each side (Text Figure 9). The two posterior tusks on each side are the larger and, as is so common in the primitive reptilia

and amphibia, were replaced alternately. Thus the posterior socket on the left side is occupied by a large functional tusk and the anterior one is occupied by a new one about half-grown; on the right side the anterior socket is occupied by a functionally complete tusk and the posterior one by the apex of one which is just appearing. The most anterior tusks are smaller than the two behind and are represented by a complete tooth on the left side and an empty socket on the right side.

The teeth immediately posterior to the tusks are very small and conical, or slightly curved conical. The reduction in size cannot be in correlation with the tusks of the upper jaw as the latter close in front of the lower tusks. The teeth gradually increase in size toward the back of the jaw, retaining the conical form to a point behind the symphasis, but gradually becoming oval in section at the base, with the longest diameter transverse to the long axis of the jaw; this is very marked in the thirtieth tooth. In the thirty-first and thirty-second teeth the height has begun to diminish and the section of the base becomes decidedly elongate-oval with the reappearance of serrate cutting edges. The thirty-fourth tooth on the left side has the low crown and narrow oval section characteristic of the cheek teeth in all the Phytosauria. The greatest diameter of the tooth is still transverse to the axis of the jaw. Posterior to this there are two complete teeth and the broken root of a third, all showing the greatest diameter parallel to the edge of the jaw.

The anterior tusks are convex externally and more nearly flat internally, near the base, but become more nearly narrow-oval toward the apex. The edge formed by the meeting of the two surfaces is sharp and finely serrate. In Figure 10 is shown

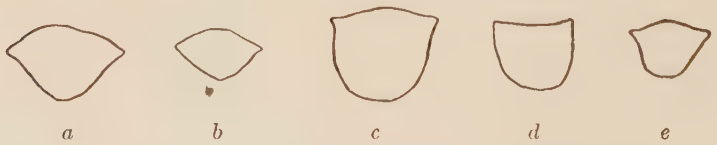


Fig. 10. Cross-sections of various teeth: *a*, base of thirty-fourth tooth of left side; *b*, near top of same; *c*, base of tusk of right side; *d*, near middle of same; *e*, near top of left tusk. All figures × 1.

the section of the two large tusks; *c* and *d* are from near the base and the middle of the tusk of the right side and *e* from near the top of the left tusk. Figures *a* and *b* are sections from the thirty-fourth tooth on the left side, at the base and near the top. The character of the serrations on the cutting edges is shown in Figure 11.

The anterior tooth of the left side is decidedly fluted from the base to the apex; it is more nearly round than the larger tusks, but has distinct cutting edges. The larger tusks show broad flutings, faintly marked but distinct. The smaller conical teeth are fluted from the base to near the apex; the flutings are low but distinct and are continuous, becoming more crowded near the

FIG. 11. Cutting edge of one of the large tusks, showing character of the serrations × 2½.

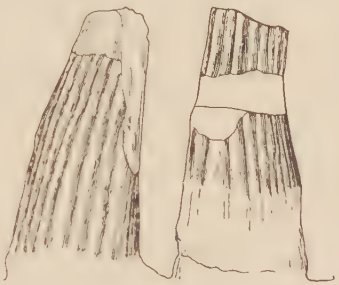


FIG. 12. Seventh and eighth teeth of the right side, showing the character of the fluting × 2½.

tip where they disappear either from wear or naturally. Figure 12 shows the flutings on the seventh and eighth teeth of the right side.

The total length of the lower jaw is 82 cm. and the presymphasial portion is 36.5 cm. These measurements correspond very closely with those of the holotype of *Leptosuchus crosbiensis* No. 7522, University of Michigan.

The second specimen to be mentioned is the skull of *Leptosuchus imperfecta*, No. 7523, University of Michigan. This specimen, Plate XXII, Figure 2, is larger than *Leptosuchus crosbiensis*, having a length of 112.5 cm. It was found as a mass of broken fragments and has required a large amount of time to

restore; fortunately, from one side or the other there is complete continuity from the posterior end to the tip of the snout. The apparently restored portion near the anterior end of the snout is justified by the continuity of the bone on the under side. The chief interest of the specimen lies in the pathological condition of the anterior end of the elevation of the snout. As shown in Plate XXIII, Figure 1, the nares are in the normal position and the upper edge of the elevation of the snout runs forward nearly horizontally for a short distance and then descends rapidly to the level of the upper surface of the low rostrum. At the angle where the snout begins its descent, there is a heavy rugose swelling of the median bones. The rugosities have a roughly radial arrangement from the top downward and outward; the top of the swollen area is occupied by a nearly hemispherical cavity which would just about accommodate a tennis ball. The sides of the cavity are smooth, but the surface is porous or spongy instead of hard and glistening, as in normal bone.

The presence of this cavity seems explainable only as the result of a pathological condition, the seat either of an abscess of the bone or of a deep-seated tumor. In an abscess caused by infection or by injury, the cavity is very irregular and the accompanying exostoses are equally irregular. The presence of such an abscess would accord well with the suggestions of Abel, who believes that the various forms assumed by the rostra of the Phytosauria can best be explained as the result of injuries inflicted in battles between members of the same species, probably during the mating season.[1] Opposed to this suggestion are the symmetrical character of the cavity, the smooth internal wall, and the rather regular radial arrangement of the rugosities on the outer side of the swelling. Doctor A. S. Warthin, of the Department of Pathology in the University Medical School, has suggested that the smooth cavity may have been the seat of a tumor; an explanation that is much more plausible than that of a simple abscess. It is most interesting to note in this connection that even the Phytosauria of the Mystrioscuhus type, with the low, slender rostra, have very frequently a low swelling on the

[1] Abel, O. *Paleontologische Zeitschrift*, Bd. V, Hft. 1, 1922, s. 26.

upper surface; this has been noted by both Von Huene and the author of this paper.

A third specimen of a Phytosaur, No. 8853, University of Michigan, is the posterior end of the lower jaw of an individual nearly a fourth larger than *Leptosuchus imperfecta*; this means a skull nearly four and a half feet long, one of the largest that have been recorded.

The last specimen to be described is the upper portion of the skull of a very large Stegocephalian, No. 8854, University of Michigan, probably specifically identical with the holotype of *Buettneria perfecta*. This skull was found in broken fragments and is in part restored, but the restorations of one side are largely from the preserved parts of the other side; only the tip of the nose is entirely restored and this cannot be wrong by more than a few millimeters, as a part of the rim of the external nares is preserved on both sides. The character of the skull is shown in the photograph, Plate XXIV, and the restored portions are indicated by dotted shading in Plate XXIII, Figure 2. The specimen very closely resembles the skull of *Buettneria perfecta* in the position and relations of the bones and grooves for the canals of the dermal sensory system.[2] The slight differences in the sculpture, the deep grooves accommodating the sutures, in places, and the slight differences in the size and relative position of the orbits may easily be the result of age and growth.

The large size of the skull is the most striking feature; in this it approaches some of the largest specimens which have been collected from the European Trias. The existence of an amphibian of this size has been previously indicated only by the very large interclavicle, No. 7265, University of Michigan, figured by the author of this paper in 1923.[3]

[2] Compare with Figure 1, A and B, *Publication 321*, Carnegie Institution of Washington.

[3] *Publication No. 321*, Carnegie Institution of Washington, Plate 3, Figure *a*.

University of Michigan

EXPLANATION OF PLATES

PLATE XXII

FIG. 1. Left side of lower jaw of *Leptosuchus crosbiensis*, No. 8855, U. of M.

FIG. 2. Left side of skull of *Leptosuchus imperfecta*, No. 7523, U. of M.

PLATE XXIII

FIG. 1. Narial region of the skull of *L. imperfecta* to show the pathological condition.

FIG. 2. Outline of the skull of *Buettneria perfecta*, second specimen, No. 8854, U. of M. To show the sutures, sensory canals and the restored portions (shaded).

PLATE XXIV

Photograph of the skull of *Buettneria perfecta*, second specimen, No. 8854, U. of M. Total length, as restored, 56.5 cm.

PLATE XXII

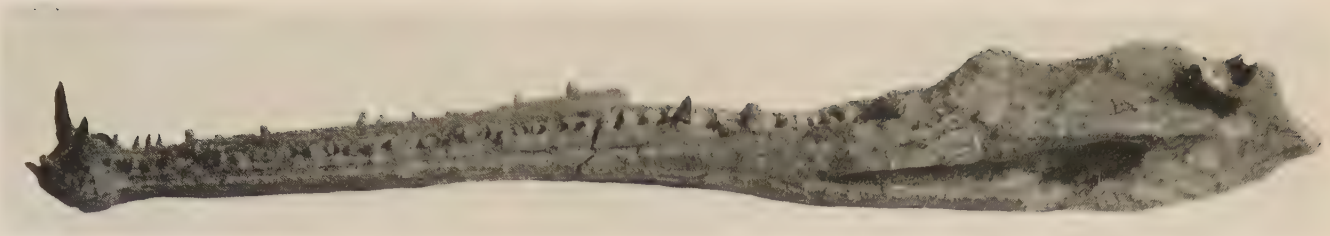


FIG. 1

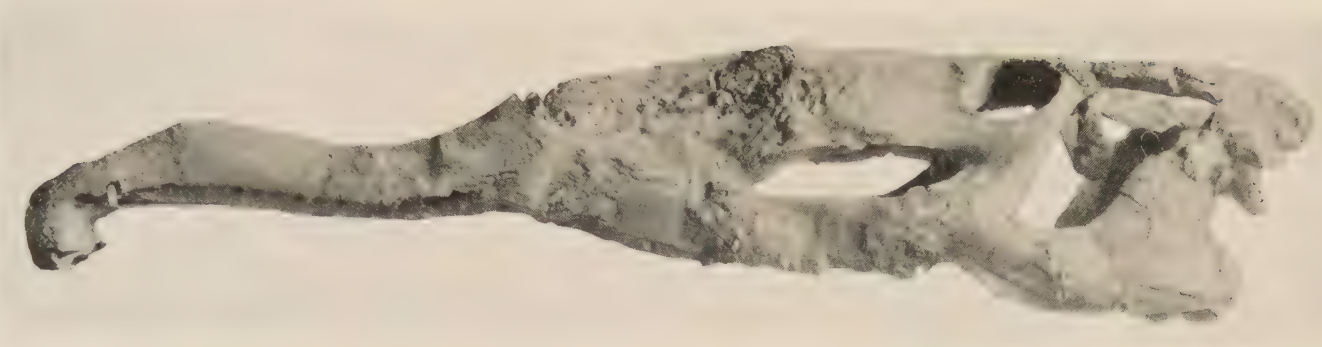


FIG. 2

PLATE XXIII

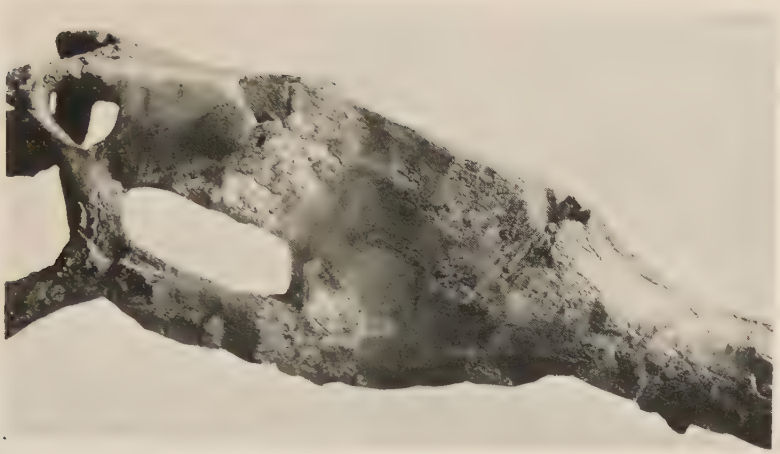


FIG. 1

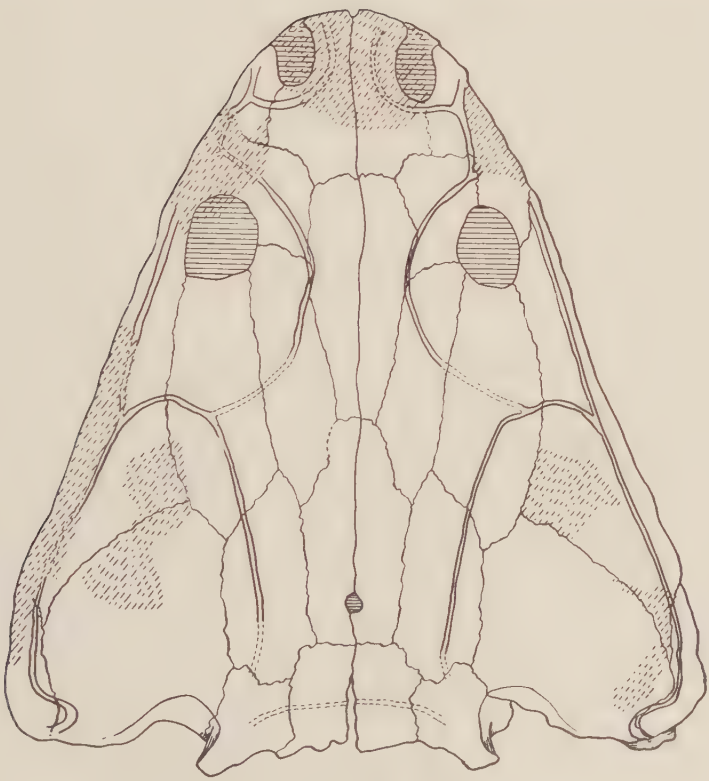


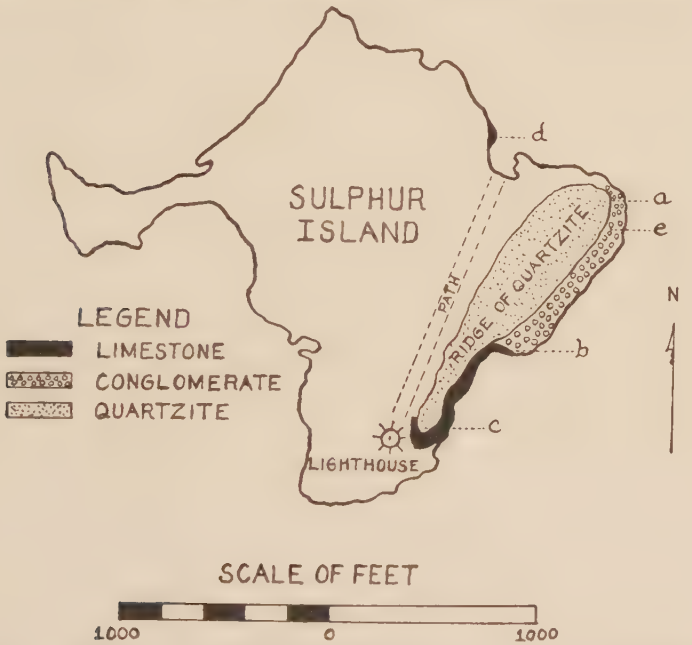
FIG. 2

PLATE XXIV

AN ORDOVICIAN REEF ON SULPHUR ISLAND, LAKE HURON

G. M. EHLERS

The occurrence of an interesting Ordovician reef on Sulphur Island, which is located in the North Passage of Lake Huron about two and three-quarter miles north and nearly one mile east of Poe Point, Drummond Island, Michigan, was briefly described by Dr. Carl Rominger[1] in 1873. Inasmuch as this



Map III. Sketch map of Sulphur Island showing location of quartzite ridge, associated deposits and erosional and depositional features.
(U. S. Lake Survey base with additions)

[1] Dr. Carl Rominger, *Paleozoic Rocks*: *Michigan Geological Survey*, Vol. 1, Pt. 3, p. 68. 1873.

reef and its associated deposits present some unusual features of wave erosion and of sedimentation, a more detailed description accompanied by illustrations may be of interest.

On the east side of Sulphur Island (See Map III) is a ridge of thick-bedded, well-jointed, greenish-gray to brown Pre-Cambrian quartzite, the top of which is fifteen to twenty feet above the level of Lake Huron. The massive nature and jointing of the quartzite is well shown where it is exposed near the northeast corner of the island (See Plate XXV, Fig. 1).

Most of the eastern side of the ridge originally presented a steep face or cliff to a sea, which transgressed over this area in Mid-Ordovician time. The waves of this sea pounded against the cliff and by undercutting and erosion along joints dislodged huge blocks of quartzite. These large blocks and smaller masses of rock, which were either originally torn from the cliff or reduced in size from the larger ones by wave action, came to rest against the cliff in a rather steeply inclined position. In fissures of the cliff, produced by the grinding action of the waves along joints of the quartzite, Dr. Rominger found rounded, water-worn pebbles of granitic rocks. These probably were carried to the cliff by currents in the sea from near-by ledges, which may now be beneath the surface of the lake or be present on the island covered by other deposits. The grinding action of the waves reduced some of the rock of the cliff to a sand, which was carried seaward by the undertow and shore currents.

At no great distance from the cliff and over most of the surrounding region covered by the sea, calcium carbonate in the finely divided state of a mud was being deposited. Much of the calcareous material or mud became mixed with the sand, which was ground from the cliff and deposited in a relatively narrow zone bordering the debris of quartzite blocks and boulders along the shore.

When the wave action on the cliff was greatest, the level of the sea was probably five to ten feet nearer the top of the ridge than the present level of Lake Huron; the ridge at this time appeared as a small island.

During an encroachment of the sea, the islet became sub-

merged and hence converted into a reef. As submergence progressed, wave action became less and less effective and deposition of sand and calcareous mud took place. The spaces between the blocks and boulders of quartzite, dislodged from the cliff, were filled with sand, calcareous mud and fragmentary remains of bryozoa, brachiopods and echinoderms, which were cast against the reef by storm waves. The conglomerate, composed of the boulders and matrix of sand and calcareous material, as well as the entire reef, very likely became covered by a fairly thick deposit of calcareous mud.

The basal beds of the calcareous mud conform rather closely to the slopes of the reef and conglomerate and as a result are steeply inclined. This agreement in slope is shown fairly well where thin beds of very fossiliferous limestone — the consolidated calcareous mud — rest upon the inclined surface of the conglomerate a short distance northeast of the lighthouse, situated on the southern shore of the island (See Plate XXV, Fig. 2). It is even more evident where the limestone dips away in several directions from a knoll on the quartzite ridge just east of the lighthouse (See Plate XXVI, Fig. 1).

The limestone at the knoll, except for a few sandy beds at its base, rests directly upon quartzite without the intervention of a coarse conglomerate, such as that exposed along the shore a short distance to the northeast. Such a conglomerate, however, very likely occupies a position between the limestones and quartzite a short distance away from the top of the knoll. That wave action was very effective prior to the deposition of the limestone and could have quarried out large masses of rock for subsequent incorporation into a conglomerate, is indicated by the presence of channels cut along joints of the quartzite, by the rounded, wave-worn surfaces of this rock and by wave-dislodged blocks (See Plate XXVI, Fig. 2). The tools of sand and pebbles, used by the waves in their abrasive work and subsequently cemented together by calcareous material upon the submergence of the knoll, may now be seen in the channels cut along the joints of the quartzite.

As the entire reef became more and more submerged, suc-

cessively higher and higher beds of limestone were laid down on its sides with a decreasing angle of repose. However, as a result of their partial agreement in slope to those of the reef, the limestones encircling the reef must have assumed the structure of a more or less elongated dome. The subsequent removal of most of these limestones by erosion has largely obliterated the dome structure; nevertheless, its former presence is strongly suggested by the radial dip of the limestones, exposed to the east and northeast of the lighthouse, from the southern part of the quartzite ridge — the core of the dome. The nature of the structure was probably quite similar to that of a small, partially exposed dome, existing in the limestones on the northeast side of the island (See Plate XXVII, Fig. 1). The radial dip of the strata of similar domes would usually be accounted for by pressure; in the case of this dome, however, it certainly results from original deposition on the slopes of a buried knoll of quartzite or possibly granitic rock. Incidentally, the buried rock, if it is a granite, may have been the source of the granitic pebbles found by Dr. Rominger in the fissures of the quartzite cliff. With the increasing submergence of the reef, limestones and perhaps other kinds of sedimentary rocks accumulated over the surrounding area and probably reached the level of the top of the reef. Sediments, possibly of considerable thickness, were then probably deposited in a practically horizontal manner over the reef and its associated, inclined strata.

With little doubt, seas of late Ordovician and certain Silurian and Devonian times also transgressed over the Sulphur Island region and deposited sediments, whose aggregate thickness was considerable. The quartzite ridge may very likely have become buried beneath several hundred feet of these sediments.

Some time previous to the coming of the Pleistocene glacier, perhaps during later Paleozoic and all of Mesozoic and Cenozoic times, the Sulphur Island area — in fact most of the Great Lakes region — was maturely dissected by streams. The sediments, covering the top of the quartzite ridge, were removed by this erosion. Soil, which probably lay upon the ridge just previous to the advance of the ice, and loosened masses of rock on its top

and sides were subsequently removed by the glacier. Except for the absence of soil and loosened rocks, the ridge and the inclined beds of conglomerate and limestone on its sides, with little doubt, present much the same appearance today as at the time of the coming of the Pleistocene glacier.

With the passing of the great continental glacier, Lake Huron and the other lakes of the Great Lakes system were formed. The waves of Lake Huron are especially active today on the eastern side of Sulphur Island; there they are quarrying into the firmly cemented conglomerate, formed during Black River time (See Plate XXVII, Fig. 2). Ultimately they will probably tear away the conglomerate and pound against the cliff, exposed long ago to the attack of waves of a marine sea. Even the geologist, accustomed to seeing striking and unusual, geological phenomena, experiences a decided thrill on watching the waves of the present fresh water sea in their nearly accomplished effort to reach the cliff and take up the work of quarrying, abandoned by the waves of a marine sea of several millions of years ago.

University of Michigan

EXPLANATIONS OF PLATES

PLATE XXV

FIG. 1. Massive and well-jointed Pre-Cambrian quartzite exposed at the northeast corner of Sulphur Island. View taken at *a*, Map III.

FIG. 2. Inclined limestone strata, shown at lower center of view, resting on the comglomerate of Black River age. The bouldery nature and conspicuous dip of the conglomerate are well shown at the center of the view. The quartzite ridge is immediately to the left of the conglomerate but hidden by vegetation. View taken at *b*, Map III.

PLATE XXVI

FIG. 1. Highly inclined limestones resting on Pre-Cambrian quartzite. View taken at *c*, Map III.

FIG. 2. Closer view taken at *A*, Plate XXVI, Figure 1, showing effects of wave erosion and nature of deposition. The channel along one of the joints of the quartzite, shown in the foreground of the view, the two dislodged blocks to the left and the rounded surfaces of the quartzite are the result of wave erosion prior to the deposition of the thin-bedded limestone. The lighter colored material, shown in the channel, is limestone and serves as a cement for sand and gravel, used as tools by the waves in their abrasive work. Note the influence of the block of quartzite on the dip of the large mass of limestone.

PLATE XXVII

FIG. 1. Small dome in Black River limestone, resulting from deposition on inclined surfaces of an underlying knoll of Pre-Cambrian quartzite or granite. View taken at *d*, Map III.

FIG. 2. Section of the Black River conglomerate cut by storm waves of Lake Huron. The cliff, formerly exposed to the pounding waves of the Black River sea, is only a short distance behind the conglomerate. Further cutting by the waves of Lake Huron may again expose the cliff to attack. The rounding and reduction in size of the blocks in the foreground, abandoned by waves of the Black River sea, are now being continued by storm waves of the lake. View taken at *e*, Map III.

PLATE XXV

Fig. 1

Fig. 2

PLATE XXVI

FIG. 1

FIG. 2

PLATE XXVII

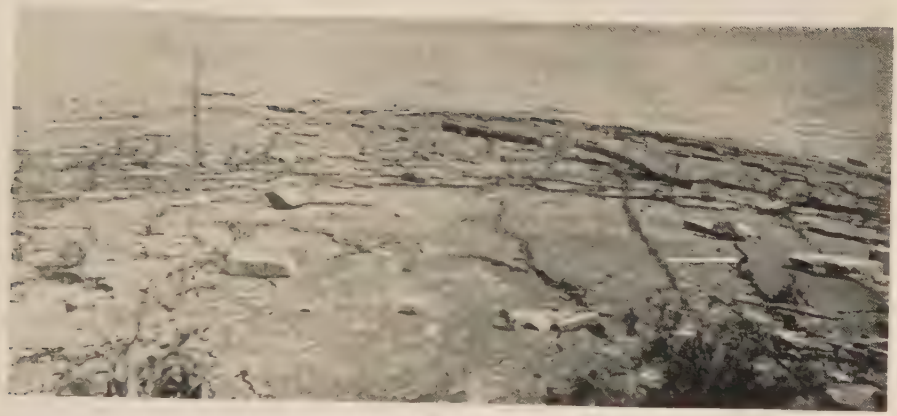


FIG. 1

FIG. 2

DEISM BEFORE LORD HERBERT

LOUIS I. BREDVOLD

My purpose in this somewhat fragmentary paper is twofold: first, to suggest, on the basis of some scattered evidence, that Deism was of Continental origin and that it had a rather extended, though secret, following earlier than the publication of Lord Herbert's famous book in 1624; secondly, to call attention to a neglected sixteenth century treatise on Deism, which was first published from manuscript in 1836 in the *Zeitschrift für die historische Theologie*, and has ever since escaped the notice of writers on Deism.

There is, in the first place, a quite general impression that Lord Herbert of Cherbury was the "parent" or "founder" of Deism.[1] Occasionally someone goes further, as Pünjer, in his *History of the Christian Philosophy of Religion*, who says that the roots of Deism "lay in the sober, practical, common-sense character of the English people, and its beginnings took their rise in the characteristic movement of the English Reformation."[2] Other students, it is true, have noticed similar developments on the continent,[3] but the nearest approach to the contention of the present paper is the statement in the article on *Deism* in the *Encyclopedia Britannica* (11th edition): "the deistic standpoint had already been foreshadowed to some extent by Averroists, by Italian writers like Boccaccio and Petrarch, in More's *Utopia* (1515), and by French writers like Montaigne, Charron and Bodin."

[1] So Erdmann, *Hist. of Phil.* (London, 1891), II, 153, and the article on *Deism* in the *Encyclopaedia of Religion and Ethics* (N. Y., 1914).

[2] Pünjer, trans. Hastie (Edinburgh, 1887), p. 284.

[3] Lechler, *Geschichte des Englischen Deismus* (1841), discusses the "preparation for Deism" in England and France, and Höffding, *Hist. of Mod. Philosophy* (London, 1908), I, 59 ff., groups Lord Herbert and Bodin under "natural religion," and recognizes the free thought of the Renaissance.

The tendency to regard Deism as English in nature and origin can be variously explained. In its flourishing period in the eighteenth century, when it reached its greatest philosophical and literary expression, it was a distinctly English movement, and from England was disseminated throughout Europe; and when we think of Deism, we consequently usually think of eighteenth-century England. But perhaps an equally significant explanation lies in the obscurity of its origins. The sixteenth century, a period of feverish intellectual activity, was also a period of feverish persecution. In England, as well as in France, Geneva and Rome, intolerance in religion was the accepted principle, and our path through the century is lighted by fires and human sacrifices. How effective this repression really was, can probably never be told; but it unquestionably prevented the publication of very important elements of Renaissance thought. For there seems to have been a large and growing class who, in spite of the statutes, held and propagated more or less secretly all sorts of dangerous heresies. In 1623 Père Mersenne estimated that there were fifty thousand atheists in Paris.[4] If this seems rhetorical exaggeration, we have the statement made a generation earlier by the Huguenot leader, La Noue, that the French wars of religion had produced a million "Epicureans and Libertines." [5] But these emancipated and sceptical gentlemen of the Renaissance rarely wrote and hardly ever printed, and it is therefore extremely difficult to ascertain what their ideas really were. To interpret correctly the meagre evidence as to the circulation of distinctly Deistic ideas in the Renaissance, it must be placed in its proper setting.

It is necessary, of course, to distinguish Deism clearly from similiar or related tendencies, such as Arianism, Socinianism, or mere rationalism. In the first place, Deism involved a criticism of the special beliefs of every revealed religion, whether Christi-

[4] F. Strowski, *Pascal et son Temps* (Paris, 1907), I, 138–9.

[5] "Si on demande qui a produit une telle generation, on ne respondra pas mal, que ce sont nos guerres pour la Religion, qui nous ont fait oublier la Religion. . . . Entre ses autres fruits, la guerre civile a aporté cestui-ci, d'auoir engendré un million d'Epicuriens & Libertins." — *Discours Politiques et Militaires du Seigneur de la Noue* (Basle, 1587), pp. 6, 34.

anity or Judaism or Mohammedanism. The Deists were adepts, considering the state of scholarship of that time, in higher criticism. They aimed to destroy what they thought the falsifications of essential religion. But though they showed themselves sceptical towards historical religions, they had at first also a different aim very closely at heart, to purify universal religion from the corruptions of organizations and priesthoods. True religion, they held, is natural religion, universally revealed to all men and sufficient for salvation. Religion was thus based on the Stoic conception of Universal Reason, and Deism was, on its constructive side, a religious rationalism.[6] Herbert reduced religion to his famous five propositions, which he considered undeniable, and which all mankind must needs acknowledge by unaided reason:

1. That there is one supreme God;
2. That he ought to be worshipped;
3. That virtue and piety are the chief parts of divine worship;
4. That we ought to be sorry for our sins and repent of them;
5. That Divine Goodness dispenses rewards and punishments both in this life and after it.[7]

By thus distinguishing between essentials and superstitions, the Deists sought to restore religion to its integrity and purity and universality. They opposed not only priesthoods, but athe-

[6] Dilthey, in his *Weltanschauung und Analyse des Menschen seit Renaissance und Reformation* (Leipzig, 1914), pp. 45 ff., discusses a somewhat wider conception which he calls "der religiös universalistischen Theismus," that is, "die Ueberzeugung, dass die Gottheit in den verschiedenen Religionen und Philosophen gleichesweise wirksam gewesen sei und noch heute wirke." He names Erasmus and Reuchlin among the adherents of this Theism. I think the early Deists can be distinguished from these milder Theists as more sceptical in their rejection of the peculiar tenets of Christianity, Islamism, or any other historical religion, and also more rationalistic, in their insistence on the universal revelation and self-evident truth of natural religion.

[7] Herbert, *De Veritate* (London, 1645), p. 222. "Hae autem sunt omnino *Notitiae Communes*, ex quibus *vera Ecclesia Catholica* sive *universalis* constat." Herbert's criticism of Christianity is rather unmistakably implied than definitely expressed. But his animus against the clerical profession seems evident enough in *The Ancient Religion of the Gentiles*. See, for instance, pp. 271 and 354 of the English translation (London, 1705).

ists, and were by no means antinomian in their ethical tendencies. The Stoic theory of Nature as Universal Reason to which, as has been said, Deism was allied, was the basic principle in European ethical and legal thought from the Middle Ages down into the eighteenth century.[8]

It was, however, the sceptical and critical spirit which developed first, and we must seek its origins in the Middle Ages. "Le XVIe siècle," according to Renan,[9] "n'a eu aucune mauvaise pensée que le XIIIe n'ait eue avant lui." It is not difficult to see how a critical and comparative study of religions should develop so early. The medieval Christian church aimed at an intellectual unity of mankind under the leadership of its own doctors. But this Christian supremacy was challenged by the spirit of secular philosophy, which was abroad even then; there were also, here and there, educated Jews who clung tenaciously to their own religion and philosophy; and in the thirteenth century Europe had forced upon it a new respect for the Mohammedans and their religion, partly because of contact with them during the Crusades, and partly because the Arabs were the possessors of the great treasures of ancient learning, especially the true Aristotle. The new tolerance towards these enemies of Christianity, the open-minded interest in them, necessitated such a rational defense of the superiority of Christianity as the *Summa contra Gentiles*, by Thomas Aquinas. But even before Aquinas, already in the twelfth century, there were treatises written on the subject, cast in the dialogue form, each point of view being championed by an adherent. Gilbert Crispin, Abbot of Westminster, disciple of Anselm, wrote two: one between a Christian and a Jew, and another between a Christian and a philosopher. In the latter the Christian fails to convert the philosopher, who "rose and departed I know not whither, downcast alike in mind and countenance." [10]

[8] This aspect of Deism has been especially emphasized by Höffding, ed. cit., I, 59 ff., and by Windelband, *Hist. of Phil.* (New York, 1893), p. 436.

[9] *Averroès et l'Averroïsme*, p. 231.

[10] Webb, C. C. J., *Studies in the History of Natural Theology* (Oxford, 1915), pp. 194–198. On similar dialogues in early Christian literature, see Rudolf Hirzel, *Der Dialog* (Leipzig, 1895), II, 367 ff.

Abelard combined these two situations in his Dialogue between a Christian, a Jew and a Philosopher. He represents himself as dreaming that these three men, in various ways the worshippers of one God, ask him to judge between them. The philosopher presents a religion based on Natural Law, and declares that custom and education are largely responsible for the hold Judaism and Christianity have on their people. The Jew maintains that the Philosopher is unable to disprove the divine origin of the Jewish faith; and the Christian defends his own beliefs chiefly on the basis of the superiority of Christ's ethical teaching. All three participants proceed on the assumption that all religious doctrine, if not absolutely demonstrable, is at least accessible to reason, and the spirit throughout is amicable and fair.[11]

Both Crispin and Abelard were Christian and Orthodox, at least in intention. But we can trace with quite remarkable accuracy the spread of the heretical idea of the equality of Christianity, Judaism and Mohammedanism in the successive versions of the widely circulated story of the three rings,[12] used again by Lessing in *Nathan der Weise*. In its earliest versions the tale is clearly Christian. The three chief religions were compared to three rings given by a father to his three sons, so that after his death the true heir might be identified by the genuine one. Although they are alike in appearance, the true ring is discoverable by its healing power. In this form the story is told by Stephen of Bourbon (died about 1261),[13] by the unknown author of an old French poem about twenty-five years later,[14] and found its way into the *Gesta Romanorum*, in which the application is made as follows: "My beloved, the Knight is Christ; the three sons are the Jews, Saracens, and Christians; the most valuable ring is faith, which is the property only of the younger: that is, of the Christians." [15]

[11] Webb, pp. 207–232. Pünjer, pp. 38–39.

[12] Best brief discussion, with bibliography, in A. C. Lee, *The Decameron: Its Sources and Analogues* (London, 1909), pp. 6–13.

[13] Gaston Paris, *Poèsie du Moyen Âge. Lectures et Leçons*, 2me série, 2nd ed. (Paris, 1903), p. 141.

[14] *Li dis dou vrai aniel*, ed. Tobler (Leipzig, 1871).

[15] Lee, p. 8.

Early in the fourteenth century the story was included in the Italian compilation, *Le Cento Novelle Antiche*,[16] but with a new framework and a new conclusion. It is there told by a wealthy Jew, who is asked by a grasping sultan the embarrassing question, What is the true religion? Whichever way he answers, he will give the sultan a pretext for confiscating his wealth. The Jew shrewdly replies with this story of a father who gave his sons three rings, two of which were imitations of the original genuine one. This non-Christian framework betrays the Oriental influence which has now taken possession of the story; the conclusion is no longer Christian; the rings are indistinguishable, and only the father could ever tell the original from the imitations.[17]

This version is by some scholars believed to be the source of Boccaccio's tale in the *Decameron*. But others point out that a fuller version exists in Busone da Gubbio's *Avventuroso Ciciliano*, and still others think that the story was so widely current in this sceptical form that Boccaccio was indebted to an oral tradition, which perhaps had in it elements of Rabbinical origin.[18] In the conclusion of Boccaccio's story we have even more clearly and emphatically stated the tolerant notion that there is some truth in all religions, and that the pretensions of each to be alone genuine cannot be substantiated. "E così vi dico, signor mio, delle tre Leggi alli tre popoli date da Dio Padre, delle quali la quistion proponeste: ciascuno la sua eredità, la sua vera Legge, et i suoi commandamenti si crede avere a fare; ma chi se l'abbia, come degli anelli, ancora ne pende la quistione." [19]

This comparative view of religions implied of course that there was falsehood as well as truth in all religions, and for the existence in the Middle Ages of this more emphatically sceptical tendency, we have evidence in the legend of the notorious *De*

[16] No. 73 in the edition in *Bibliotheca Romanica*.

[17] On the influence of Arabian culture on this idea of comparative religion, see Renan, *op. cit.*, pp. 278 ff.

[18] Burckhardt, *Civilization of the Renaissance in Italy* (London, 1909), p. 493 and Lee, pp. 11–12.

[19] *Il Decameron*, Giornata prima, novella terza.

Tribus Impostoribus, said to have had its origin at the court of Frederick II, the most cosmopolitan in Europe; by one tradition the book is ascribed to the monarch himself.[20] The three impostors were of course Jesus, Mohammed and Moses, the founders of the three religions. This peculiar treatise was mysteriously referred to as a scandal from the thirteenth century on through the Renaissance; in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries there was a protracted debate as to whether the book had ever existed. One early printed copy, bearing the doubtful date 1598, has indeed been discovered and reprinted,[21] but the question of its authenticity need not detain us, as the work had its chief influence as a legend. The title was everywhere known and almost proverbial in its force, and the sceptical ideas which it represented had an underground circulation in the Renaissance, to an extent of which we can now form no definite notion.[22]

The general dissemination of such religious liberalism, first in Italy, then in France and England, explains in large part the pagan spirit of Renaissance literature. It is unnecessary here to discuss it in detail. We find it expressed in Italy, with levity in Pulci's burlesque epic, with seriousness in Pomponatius, who soon after 1500 cast the horoscope of Christianity and presaged its early decline and dissolution.[23] In Sir Thomas More's *Utopia* the religion of "the most and wisest part" of the people was ap-

[20] Émile Gebhart, *Mystics and Heretics in Italy* (London, 1922), Chap. IV.

[21] *De Tribus Impostoribus*, ed. G. Brunet (Paris, 1861). Also by Philomneste Junior, *Le Traité des Trois Imposteurs* (Paris, 1867).

[22] See account in *Realencyclopädie für prot. Theologie und Kirche* (3d ed.; Leipzig, 1901), IX, 72 ff. Cf. F. Picavet: "D'abord il fut question d'une affirmation, puis d'un livre successivement attribué à Averroès, à Frédéric II, à Pierre des Vignes, à Arnauld de Villeneuve, à Boccace et à Pogge, à Pierre Aretin, à Machiavel, à Pomponace et à Cardan, à Servet et à Guillaume Postel, à Campanella et à Giordano Bruno, à Spinoza, à Hobbes et à Vanini. Et Mersenne disait l'avoir vu en arabe! Une telle énumération, qui est loin d'être complète, prouve amplement déjà qu'il convient de reconnaître la continuité de la pensée dans le monde de l'Occident du XIIIe au XVIIe siècle." In *Essais sur l'histoire générale et comparée des Théologies et des Philosophies Médiévales* (Paris, 1913), p. 314.

[23] A. H. Douglas, *Pietro Pomponazzi* (Cambridge, 1910), pp. 300 ff. On Italian thought in the sixteenth century, see J. R. Charbonnel, *La Pensée Italienne au XVIe Siècle et le Courant Libertin* (Paris, 1919).

parently a form of deism. More strikingly still, in an imaginary dialogue between Lupset and Cardinal Pole, Thomas Starkey, a contemporary of More, makes the learned and pious Lupset present a Deistic conception of religion as based explicitly on the Stoic notion of the Law of Nature.

"In so much," Lupset is made to say, "that the Jue, Sarasyn, Turke, and More, so long as they obserue theyr cyuyle ordynance and statutys, deuysed by theyr old fatherys in euery secte, dyrectyng them to the law of nature; so long, I say, ther be men wych ernystely affyrme them to lyue wel, and euery one in hys secte to be sauyd, and non to perysch utterly; seying the infynyte gudnes of God hathe no les made them aftur hys owne ymage and forme, then he hath made the Chrystun man; and the most parte of them neuer, perauentur, hard of the law of Chryst. Wherfor, so long as they lyue aftur the law of nature, obseruyng also theyr cyuyle ordynance, as mean to bryng them to the end of the same, they schal not be damnyd. Thys I haue hard the opynyon of grete wyse men, wel ponderyng the gudnes of God and of nature; but whether hyt be so or not, let us, aftur the mynd of Sayn Poule, leue thys to the secrete jugement of God." [24]

More and Starkey wrote in the spirit of the enlightenment of the earlier Renaissance, before the fierce conflicts of the Reformation brought more rigid discipline into intellectual and ecclesiastical ranks, before the spirit of tolerance was lost in persecution and the turmoil of religious wars.

But as the religious dissension of the sixteenth century resulted in the formation of innumerable other sects, whose principles were not always novel, so Deism also developed its own sect and movement. Leland, the first English historian of Deism, gives the following account of its origin:

"The name of Deists," he says, "as applied to those who are no friends to revealed religion, is said to have been first assumed about the middle of the sixteenth century, by some Gentlemen in *France* and *Italy*, who were willing to cover their opposition to the Christian revelation by a more honourable name than that of Atheists. One of the first authors, as far as I can find, that makes express mention of them is *Viret*, a divine of great eminence among the first Reformers; who in the epistle dedicatory prefixed to the second tome of his *Instruction Chrétienne*, which was published in 1563, speaks of some persons in that time who called themselves by a new name, that of Deists. These, he tells us, professed to believe a God, but shewed no regard to Jesus Christ, and considered the doctrine of the apostles and evangelists

[24] *England in the Reign of King Henry the Eighth*, ed. Cowper, Early English Text Society (London, 1878), pp. 19–20.

as fables and dreams. He adds, that they laugh'd at all religion, notwithstanding they conformed themselves, with regard to the outward appearance, to the religion of those with whom they were obliged to live, or whom they were desirous of pleasing, or whom they feared. Some of them, as he observes, professed to believe the immortality of the soul; others were of the Epicurean opinion in this point, as well as about the providence of God with respect to mankind, as if he did not concern himself in the government of human affairs. He adds, that many among them set up for learning and philosophy, and were looked upon to be persons of an acute and subtil genius; and that not content to perish alone in their error, they took pains to spread the poison, and to infect and corrupt others by their impious discourses and bad examples." [25]

This account by Leland, interesting and valuable as it is, is based entirely on the hostile source, Viret's preface, and needs therefore to be documented and corroborated. But in the sixteenth century, the possession as well as the publication of a really heretical book was at the risk of one's life.[26] In the nature of the case, therefore, the necessary documents must be rare; we are perhaps fortunate to have even two extended contemporary treatises, both of which remained in manuscript until the nineteenth century, on which we may rely as primary sources in our account of the temper and doctrines of the sixteenth century Deists.

One of these, Bodin's *Heptaplomeres*, has been discussed by several writers in the last century, and its contents are well known to students of the subject.[27] The seven characters of the dialogue represent seven distinct types of religious thought known to Bodin: Roman Catholicism, Zwinglianism, Lutheranism, Mohammedanism, the Jewish religion, Deism and a scep-

[25] John Leland, *A View of the Deistical Writers* (London, 1754). I, 2–3. Leland gives Bayle's *Dictionary* as his authority for this account. See under *Viret*, note D.

[26] The cases of Kyd and Marlowe in England in 1593 are illustrative. See account by F. S. Boas, in his edition of Kyd (Oxford, 1901). Cf. *Studies in Philology*, XX, 153 ff.

[27] It was edited from manuscript by G. E. Guhrauer, *Das Heptaplomeres des Jean Bodin* (Berlin, 1841). An old French translation has been published in part by Roger Cnauviré, *Colloque de Jean Bodin* (Paris, 1914). See also Baudrillart, *J. Bodin et son Temps* (Paris, 1853); F. V. Bezold, *Jean Bodins Heptaplomeres und der Atheismus des 16. Jahrhunderts*, *Historische Zeitschrift*, vols. 113–114; Höffding, op. cit. I, 59–63; and Chauviré, *Jean Bodin* (Paris, 1914).

tical naturalism. The examination of the doctrines of Christianity from various points of view is free and even at times irreverent, exempting nothing from argument or ridicule. At the conclusion every disputant leaves with his ideas unchanged, and the author of the dialogue expresses no explicit preference for the opinions of any one of his characters. Yet it seems clear, both from the conduct and spirit of the discussion, as well as from a comparison with Bodin's other works, that the Deist comes nearer than any other to the real opinions of the author.[28] However that may be, the Deist, though he is not so called, is here a Renaissance type drawn by a contemporary. He contends for natural religion. "Si la véritable religion est la naturelle," he says, "laquelle se fait assez connaître d'elle-même, qu'est-il besoin de Jupiter, de Christ, de Mahomet, et de se feindre des dieux qui ont été mortels comme nous?"[29] All men, he repeatedly declares, who have believed in one God, who have lived according to the morality revealed in the Law of Nature, all such men, whether sages of antiquity or patriarchs of the Bible, will be saved. His is the theme of universal, natural religion. It is Deism clearly and firmly stated.

More conclusive than Bodin's dialogue is the treatise published in 1836 from a sixteenth century manuscript, and since apparently forgotten.[30] The complexion of this anonymous work is indicated somewhat by the fact that in the same manuscript with it was a copy of the *Liber de Tribus Impostoribus.* It consists of four parts, of which the first, third and fourth are a criticism of Christian doctrines and Biblical history. The second part under the title *Vera, divina, antiquissima et perfectissima doctrina de Deo et voluntate eius,* is a systematic statement of the

[28] Baudrillart, *op. cit.*, p. 200. Chauviré thinks this "déisme philosophique" is somewhat influenced by what Bodin believed was the primitive cult of the Jews. See *Jean Bodin*, p. 160.

[29] Passage translated by Baudrillart, p. 220.

[30] *Origo et fundamenta religionis Christianae*, ed. August Gförer, in *Zeitschrift für die historische Theologie* (Leipzig, 1836), VI, 180–259. The editor was librarian at Stuttgart. The manuscript, a poor grade of old paper, was given him by "a friend." Indorsements dated 1635 and 1587 were accepted by him as genuine.

Deistic creed. The first paragraph, with its definition of God as Creator or First Cause, and its somewhat utilitarian estimate of the value of God for man, gives us at once the atmosphere of the later period of the Enlightenment:

Cum coelum, maximum et splendidissimum hoc opus, contemplamur, praeterea solem, lunam et stellas, quae in coelo sunt, et consideramus, quam pulcherrimo, certissimo et constanti ordine et motu moveantur: oportet nos fateri, esse aliquid et quidem optimum, potentissimum et sapientissimum, quod tanta et tam splendida opera condidit, eaque in tam pulcherrimo, certo et constanti ordine et motu conservat, id quod Deum appellamus.

Deinde cum consideramus, ad cuius utilitatem et usum mundus et quaecunque sunt in mundo condita sint, reperimus, propter hominem omnia condita esse, etc.[31]

Such a God is knowable by unaided reason; all his essential attributes are demonstrable.

"Id docet nos ratio," so the author summarizes his own argument, "Deum esse essentiam infinitam, aeternam, optimam, potentissimam, sapentissimam et iustissimam, quae non tantum omnia creavit, sed eadem etiam nunc sustentat, regit et conservat, atque adeo etiam cogitationes omnium hominum novit, qui bona et iusta amat et praemiis ornat, iniusta vero aversatur et punit." [32]

As the attributes of God are discoverable in nature, so the moral law is identical with the universal and rational Law of Nature, the Stoic conception which, as has been said, exercised such a profound and powerful influence on Renaissance thought. "Nos *natura* et *ratio* docet, quid et qualis sit Deus, et quae sit eius voluntas, item quid sit iustum, quid iniustum, quid Deo, quid hominibus debeamus." [33] This revelation of God by means of nature and reason was obscured in man because of his depraved morals and customs, and therefore it had to be repeated through Moses and the prophets; but these holy men did not add anything to what had already been revealed from the beginning.

Quod vero Moses de Deo et voluntate Dei non alia neque plura docuerit, quam nos natura et ratio docet, id manifestum est ex *Decalogo*, qui est nobis natura notus et insitus, atque ideo omnes homines omnibus temporibus obligavit et obligat, et est praecipuum et summa doctrinae Mosaicae, ita ut tota doctrina Mosis de Deo et voluntate Dei in Decalogo comprehendatur.[34]

---

[31] *Ibid.*, p. 235.
[32] *Ibid.*, p. 236.
[33] *Ibid.*, p. 241.
[34] *Ibid.*, p. 241.

The most primitive religion is also the truest in another respect, in its freedom from ceremonial or sacrament, such as baptism and circumcision. "Atque ita redibimus ad statum primorum hominum, qui etiam hunc naturalem et rationalem cultum Dei habuerunt, nec ullo initiationis signo usi sunt." [35]

Such were the advanced ideas which circulated among the Renaissance "atheists" and "Epicureans." As we read this anonymous treatise, we can overhear those many discussions behind closed doors, both in England and on the Continent during the Renaissance, when, within small groups of trusted friends, new ideas were exchanged at the peril of the stake. With the gradual extension of freedom of thought, these Deistic ideas must have acquired a wider and more open circulation. It seems indeed highly probable that Lord Herbert of Cherbury, during his long residence in Paris, should have taken part in such discussions and thus become indebted to a Deistic tradition which, because of the intolerance of the age, had long been transmitted orally.[36] This Deistic tradition, I wish to emphasize again, was not English in origin, and it went back further than the seventeenth century. Like some other phases of the eighteenth century, it must be regarded as a continuation of tendencies already present in the Renaissance and the Middle Ages. Viewed in this comprehensive way, Deism will appear as a necessary stage in the evolution of the modern mind.

[35] *Ibid.*, p. 244.

[36] Strowski discusses the Deistic leanings in Charron in *Pascal et son Temps* (Paris, 1909), I, 184 ff. M. F. Lachèvre recently discovered a poem which was notorious about 1622, called *L'Antibigot ou les Quatrains du déiste*, and published it in his *Voltaire mourant* (Paris, 1908), pp. 99–135.

University of Michigan

BROWNING'S CONCEPTION OF LOVE AS REPRESENTED IN *PARACELSUS*

WILLIAM O. RAYMOND

The importance of *Paracelsus*, as containing an initial but surprisingly mature statement of Browning's outlook on life, and a significant expression of his artistic interests and intellectual convictions, has been generally recognized. Though the poem was composed in his twenty-third year, Browning may be said to have established definitely in it the basis of his reflective thought on the fundamental problems of humanity. Few writers have oriented themselves so completely at such a youthful age. While further elaborated in his later works and given a different setting, practically all of the leading and controlling ideas of his poetry are present in *Paracelsus*. As Stopford Brooke states it: "When *Paracelsus* was published in 1835 Browning had fully thought out, and in that poem fully expressed, his theory of God's relation to man; and of man's relation to the universe around him, to his fellow men, and to the world beyond." [1]

In particular, *Paracelsus* is noteworthy through its emphasis of what has been called "the richest vein of pure ore in Browning's poetry," namely, the poet's view of the nature and function of love.

The primary truth or essential thought underlying Browning's presentation of the career of the Renaissance scholar and physician is so plainly indicated, that it is impossible to mistake it. Through his exclusive devotion to the pursuit of knowledge, Paracelsus leaves love out of his scheme of life. On ac-

[1] Stopford Brooke, *The Poetry of Robert Browning* (London, 1905), p. 23. In a similar vein Hugh Walker writes of *Paracelsus*, in *The Greater Victorian Poets*: "That wonderful poem is so near the front of its author's writings, that we may almost say he appears in it complete and perfect."

count of this tragic error he is brought to the verge of ruin, despite the splendid endowment and magnificent aspiration of his genius. Two principles, knowledge and love, are constantly contrasted throughout the course of the poem, and the ambitions of two individuals, Paracelsus and the poet Aprile, represent the quest of these great ideals. But while the main thesis of the poem, that love must be added to knowledge in order to secure a harmonious development of life and attain its true goal, is sufficiently plain, the precise significance and full import of Browning's conception of love, as set forth in *Paracelsus*, are by no means so self-evident. For instance, it has been generally assumed that there is a single and unified view of love running through *Paracelsus* from start to finish. Is this the case? Is Aprile, with his ardent longings and impassioned visions, an adequate embodiment of Browning's notion of love as expressed throughout the entire poem? More particularly, is the idea of love, as expounded in the speech of the dying Paracelsus in the fifth canto, identical with that put on the lips of Aprile in the second canto? It is, of course, obvious that Aprile is introduced as a foil to Paracelsus, and that in a general way he typifies the votary of love, as Paracelsus the seeker after knowledge. Moreover, so far as the two characters and their ambitions illustrate the pursuit of love and knowledge, each is the complement of the other, and the fusion of their aims would lead to a true understanding and adequate fruition of life.

Par. 'Love me henceforth, Aprile, while I learn
To love; . . . . . .
I too have sought to Know as thou to Love —
Excluding love as thou refusedst knowledge.
Still thou hast beauty and I power.'
. . . . . .
'Die not, Aprile! We must never part.
Are we not halves of one dissevered world,
Whom this strange chance unites once more? Part? never!
Till thou the lover, know; and I, the knower,
Love — until both are saved.' [2]

[2] *Paracelsus*, Part II.

Yet, while admitting the force of these passages, is it possible to show that the contrast between Paracelsus and Aprile is consistently maintained in the details of the poem? Is the fundamental error of Paracelsus due to a failure to grasp the particular conception of love represented by Aprile and his aspirations? Is Aprile's own downfall to be attributed primarily to a neglect of knowledge, or is it the result of an imperfect comprehension of the full truth concerning the nature of love?

There has been a divergence of critical opinion regarding the emphasis to be placed on the part played by Aprile in the poem, and its contribution to the final "attainment" of Paracelsus.

Edward Dowden, who thinks that the whole scene in the house of the Greek conjurer at Constantinople "leaves a painful impression of unreality," writes as follows of Aprile: "The lover here is typified in the artist; but the artist may be as haughtily isolated from true human love as the man of science, and the fellowship with his kind which Paracelsus needs can be poorly learnt from such a distracted creature as Aprile." [3]

One of the most interesting and able attempts to show that Browning's delineation of Aprile embodies the central teaching of the poem regarding the nature of love, was made by Josiah Royce, in an article entitled *The Problem of Paracelsus*, published in *The Boston Browning Society Papers*.[4] I shall quote from Professor Royce's article the more freely, in that I differ from his main conclusion, that the key to the problem of Paracelsus is to be found in the second canto of the work. It is, I shall try to show, by comparing the second with the fifth canto, and by recognizing that there is a complex rather than a uniform representation of love involved, that the apparent inconsistencies of the poem can be explained.

After stating that the whole tragedy of *Paracelsus* turns explicitly upon the poetic antithesis between 'loving' and 'knowing,' Royce points out, that Browning meant much more by this than "the comparatively shallow and abstract platitude

[3] Edward Dowden, *The Life of Robert Browning* (Everyman's Library Edition), p. 27.

[4] Pp. 221–248 (New York, 1897).

that the intellect without the affections is a vain guide in life." The words love and knowledge, he says, are used, both in *Paracelsus* and in the poet's later works, "in a pregnant sense." In an analysis of the character of Paracelsus, which lays great stress on Browning's fidelity to his sources, Professor Royce classifies the hero of the poem as an "empirical mystic," who, in order to confirm his higher intuitions, strives to find in the outward facts of the physical world a revelation of the ultimate meaning of the universe. Aprile, on the other hand, is a poet, who seeks in the inner shrine of the heart an unfolding of God's purposes and the clue to the mystery of life. It is the divergence in the types represented by the two men and, above all, the difference between the places where they have sought for a manifestation of the divine order, that Royce regards as disclosing the sense in which Browning uses the terms 'knowing' and 'loving.'

"The antithesis between 'knowledge,' as the occultist conceives it, and 'love,' as the poet views it, is the contrast between looking in the world of outer nature for a symbolic revelation of God, and looking in the moral world, the world of ideals, of volition, of freedom, of hope, and of human passion, for the direct incarnation of the loving and the living God."

In support of this view Professor Royce refers to the fact that in *Reverie* and other poems, Browning makes a similar distinction between knowledge and love. "Mind in survey of things," according to Browning, discerns in the external order of the universe the existence of 'power,' but no clear evidence of a moral purpose at work. But in the inner world and in those human relationships where the intuitions of the heart have free scope, the goodness and providence of God are apprehended as a manifestation of love revealed to the seeker after love.

That Browning does frequently link the perception of power in the outward order of the universe with knowledge, and seek for a revelation of the moral qualities of God in love as a divinely inspired virtue animating the soul of man, is indisputable. Nor can it be doubted that this particular antithesis between the spheres of knowledge and love enters as an element into *Paracelsus*. It is, however, I believe, strictly a subordinate ele-

ment. It does not, for one thing, explain the failure of Aprile. Nor does it take into account the striking differences between the conception of love in the second and in the fifth division of the poem. Throughout his article, Professor Royce, as it seems to me, has overstressed Browning's faithfulness to the exact type of character represented by the historical Paracelsus. On the other hand he has not given sufficient weight to more immediate sources of inspiration connected with the poet's relationship to the Romantic Movement, and the artistic and ethical qualities of his genius.[5]

An investigation of any of the leading ideas of *Paracelsus* must begin with the recognition of the essential connection in theme and spirit between *Pauline*, *Paracelsus*, and *Sordello*, published in the years, 1833, 1835, and 1840, respectively. All of these poems are occupied with character, as exhibited in thought, feeling and motive, rather than in outward event. Though there is a certain gradation in the degree of their subjectivity, historical environment and circumstance are everywhere subordinate in these three works to "the incidents in the development of a soul," depicted as they arise within the inner world of man's spiritual being. Moreover, as has been noted by various critics, the characters delineated in this group of poems are of the same general type. They are all endowed with the infinite aspiration and towering ambitions of genius, and their problem lies in the difficulty of reconciling the inexhaustible demands and cravings of the spirit with the finite conditions and

[5] For a careful consideration of the weight to be attached to the historical element in *Paracelsus*, see pp. 65–72, in *The Life of Robert Browning*, by W. H. Griffin (London, 1910). The following citations represent the conclusions reached in this biography regarding the point in question:

"The extreme erudition of Browning's notes (i.e. in *Paracelsus*) is often more apparent than real."

"The so called sources of his poem are practically contained in a few pages of Bitiskius, sundry passages in the works of Paracelsus himself, and in that interesting little octavo of 1620, the *Vitae Germanorum Medicorum* of Melchior Adam. But the most important source of all is Robert Browning."

"The record of aspiration, defeat and attainment — all that really constitutes the spiritual history of the poem — is of Browning's creation, it is his 'commentary.'"

limitations of life. The dramatic tension of this conflict is portrayed in *Pauline*, *Paracelsus*, and *Sordello*, as giving rise to successive experiences of aspiration and failure followed by renewed striving. Through the fluctuation of these spiritual vicissitudes the deeper meaning of life is gradually discerned. "All poetry," Browning once wrote to Ruskin, "is the problem of putting the infinite into the finite." It is this problem, in the sphere of life, that is the crux of the three studies in the development of a soul, which constitute the most significant work of Browning in the early stages of his poetical career. In keeping with the genius of a poet who has taken

> . . . for a worthier stage the soul itself,
> Its shifting fancies and celestial lights,

the approach to the study of *Paracelsus* must be made from within rather than from without. That is to say, the interpretation of the dominant ideas of the poem must be sought through their connection with Browning's own individuality and the artistic and ethical influences formative of the spirit of his poetry, rather than in an ostensible machinery of historical event.

There are two characteristic attitudes of Browning's mind, or, perhaps it might be said, dispositions of his spirit, which are constantly reflected in his poems.

A deep conviction of the infinite potentialities of the soul, its transcendental origin and immortal destiny, is a primary element in his self-consciousness. Linked with this is a belief that the purpose of life is a continuous striving to surpass the limitations imposed upon the soul by the finite conditions of time and sense.

> . . . . . Life is — to wake not sleep,
> Rise and not rest, but press
> From earth's level where blindly creep
> Things perfected, more or less,
> To the heaven's height, far and steep.[6]

The source of Browning's perception of the inexhaustible capacities of the soul lies in part in the prodigality of his own intellectual and spiritual powers. It also has its roots in the

[6] *Reverie.*

romantic traditions and enthusiasms he inherited from that group of English poets, whose works are aglow with the hopes and impulses of the revolutionary epoch. Browning, as has been said, "carried with him something of Byron's energy, of Keat's artistic skill, and of Shelley's ideal passion, and Wordsworth's transcendentalism, into the orderly, scientific age which succeeded the romantic period." [7] In particular, the torch of Browning's poetic inspiration was kindled from the pure and luminous flame of Shelley's etherial genius. In the soaring aspiration and spiritual ardor of Shelley, his thirst for the infinite, his quest of an ideal beauty, his ceaseless endeavor to transcend the finite barriers of life, are winged seeds of thought and emotion which bear fruit in the imagination of Browning.

But while the mood of romantic aspiration and an intense consciousness of the boundlessness of personality enter vitally into Browning's poetry, there is a complementary truth which has an important place in his view of life and is an equally significant element in his thought. The world to Browning, as to Keats, is "the vale of Soul-making," and, in this moulding of souls, the finite as well as the infinite has a positive part to play. The limitations imposed on man by the imperfect conditions of his earthly existence are a school of discipline intended to serve the end of spiritual growth. To refuse to use the instrumentalities of life, faulty though these may be, and to disregard its laws, is to scorn the means through which the spirit is nourished and enabled to elicit the divinity that lies within it. To attempt to overleap the finite or neglect the claims of the material and temporal realities of life, is to evade life's test and to fall into the error of spiritual abstraction. While placing the goal beyond all limited accomplishment, the soul must learn to make a fruitful use of the means and possibilities of man's earthly lot. Thus, while, from one point of view, life must be an unceasing aspiration in pursuit of an infinite ideal, from another it must be a continuous stooping to a world of weakness and finitude.

[7] Cited from an article on Robert Browning in *Littell's Living Age*, June, 1890.

A perception of this latter truth, with its corresponding attitude of a wise acceptance of the working conditions and restricted powers of life, is the counterpoise to that mood of passionate aspiration and unfettered idealism, spurning the clogs of sense, wherein Browning is confessedly the inheritor of the mantle of Shelley and his fellow romanticists. The sources of the second disposition of Browning's thought and feeling, where he parts company with Shelley, lie, in a measure, in certain robust elements, both physical and psychical, in his nature. Bodily vigor, with its accompaniment of a rich sensory organization, made him appreciate "the value and significance of flesh" and gave him a firm grip on the concrete and tangible, as opposed to anything partaking of the character of spiritual asceticism. This physical tendency is reënforced by intellectual and emotional qualities. In Browning's minute observation, his delight in subtle analysis, his keen perception of the manifoldness of life and the distinctness of its various forms, he manifests, even in the service of ideal ends, an individualizing temperament akin in method if not in aim to the critical and scientific realism of his day.

But Browning's recognition of the necessity of stooping to the finite must also be attributed in large part to his religious consciousness, particularly his appreciation of the fundamental truth revealed through the Christian doctrine of the Incarnation. This is especially apparent in the way he stresses the natural and human, as well as the mystic and divine aspect of personality.

The two dispositions of Browning's inner being prevent him from attempting to cut the Gordian knot of life's mystery by ignoring its complexity, or by doing violence to the integrity of personality by overlooking one of its dual elements. The incidents in the development of a soul, with which he is essentially concerned, centre about the paradox that man is a being in whom the claims and purposes of the finite and infinite, body and soul, flesh and spirit, time and eternity, meet and must each receive due recognition.

While the interplay between the two habitual attitudes of Browning's spirit may be traced throughout his poetry, it is especially pivotal in *Pauline*, *Paracelsus*, and *Sordello*. The heroes

of these poems are unmistakably of the romantic type. They are all characterized by a restless and eager self-consciousness, unsatisfied longings, infinite desires, an unmeasured hunger for perfection, that impel them to press on beyond the limits of the finite. In their indomitable aspiration, lofty idealism, and unclouded vision of absolute spiritual values, they represent the incarnation of romantic traditions and impulses, which are an elemental part of Browning's own genius.

But Browning, like Goethe, was able from the standpoint of a dual consciousness to overlook and diagnose the perils of romanticism, even while it struck responsive chords within his being. Throughout *Pauline*, *Paracelsus*, and *Sordello*, he has probed with an unsparing hand the cancer of romantic egoism, with its passionate, unbridled impulses of limitless self-assertion, its scorn of all relative accomplishment, and its tendency to seek refuge in vague abstractions. It is a disdain for the finite, a refusal to stoop to the necessary conditions of life, a negation of the actual rather than the ideal side of man's nature, that constitute the fallacy and account for the imperfect insight of these gifted though tempest-tossed men of genius, — children of the heaven-storming Titans —, whom Browning has so vividly depicted in his earlier poetry.

Such being the general setting of *Paracelsus*, I proceed to a discussion of Browning's conception of love, as set forth in the second and fifth divisions of the poem.

In the second canto of *Paracelsus*, love is revealed as embodied in the person and ideals of the poet Aprile. Here, as Professor Royce has pointed out, the fact that Aprile has the artist's vision of beauty and seeks a manifestation of the divine import of life in the world of human emotions, enters into Browning's thought in regarding him as an embodiment of the principle of love. Yet Aprile is not merely a poet, but a particular type of poet, and represents very definite impulses and sympathies in Browning's nature. In no part of *Paracelsus* is Browning's kinship with that early nineteenth century group of English romanticists, of whom Shelley may be considered an outstanding representative, more strikingly apparent than in the episode of the

meeting between the Renaissance scholar and the Italian artist in the house of the Greek conjurer at Constantinople. The very creation of Aprile is undoubtedly to be traced to the influence of the personality and writings of Shelley upon Browning. Just to what extent the latter was indebted to certain elements in *Prometheus Unbound*, *Alastor*, and *Adonais*, for the suggestion of the character of Aprile, must be a matter of conjecture. But it seems unmistakable that he had Shelley vividly in mind in his portraiture of the spiritually impassioned seeker after absolute beauty, "who would love infinitely and be loved." The limitless aim, the eager craving after emotional experience, the exquisite sensitiveness, the single-hearted impulsiveness of Shelley, are reflected in Aprile. Shelley, like Aprile, eagle-winged in aspiration, had been dazzled by a vision of the infinite, and his lofty conception of love remaining merely nebulous, too often tended to dissipate itself in dreams and abstractions.

The genesis of Aprile is indicative of the type of love embodied in his person and utterances throughout the second canto of *Paracelsus*. It is, as a matter of fact, one form of that ideal of romantic love, for the notion of which Browning is primarily indebted to Shelley and to Shelley's spiritual master, Plato. It was inevitable, in view of his literary traditions, that Browning should be profoundly affected by that great conception of love, which has played so important a rôle in English poetry. In *Pauline*, Browning's first printed work, Shelley and Plato are apostrophized as the teachers and seers who have moulded the thought and captivated the imagination of the youthful hero. The influence of Plato's view of love, as enunciated in the *Symposium* and *Phaedrus*, might be illustrated from a large number of Browning's poems. Such a love lyric as *Cristina* is based on a belief in reminiscence and the transcendental nature of love, ideas steeped in Platonic mysticism. Again, in *Easter Day*, the ascension of the soul above the sphere of finite existence to a divine love, is in harmony with Plato's notion of man's quest of a perfect and eternal archetypal loveliness, but dimly foreshadowed in the perishable forms of earth. This view of love is in keeping with the first of the two characteristic dispositions of Browning's mind

and heart previously referred to, the spirit of romantic ardor and illimitable aspiration, which is so significant an element in his genius.

The fine opening passages of the second canto of *Paracelsus*, where Aprile reveals his "mighty aim" and "full desire," portray love in the loftiest vein of romantic idealism. The love of the poet Aprile might be defined in the very words of Plato as "the desire of generation and production in the beautiful." Aprile would woo the loveliness of life through the medium of the creative genius of the artist. He yearns to reveal and transfigure the beauty of the natural world by reclothing it in the glorious forms of art. Thus his works would remain in the sight of all men, as pledges of the love which existed between himself and the beautiful. But, desiring to grasp the whole sum and absolute essence of beauty, he cannot rest content with any finite manifestation of it. From art to art Aprile's vision of love leads him on in ecstatic contemplation of a bewildering wealth of beautiful forms.[8]

The way in which the love of Aprile rises from the material to the spiritual, and from the finite to the infinite, is illustrated by the order in which the various artistic forms become the object of his desire. He begins with sculpture, the most essentially imitative of the arts the art that clings closest to earth. From sculpture he passes to painting, art in two dimensions, the more imaginative and less material of the spacial arts. But, having reached this stage, Aprile would "throw down the pencil as the chisel" and ascend to the more spiritual region of poetry. Finally, "to perfect and consummate all," he rises above poetry to the sphere of music, the most subtle and least corporeal of the arts.

[8] Cf. Plato's *Symposium* (Shelley's translation): "He who aspires to love rightly ought from his earliest youth to seek an intercourse with beautiful forms, and first to make a single form the object of his love. . . . He ought then to consider that beauty in whatever form it resides is the brother of that beauty which subsists in another form; and if he ought to pursue that which is beautiful in form it would be absurd to imagine that beauty is not one and the same thing in all forms, and would therefore remit much of his ardent preference towards one, through his perception of the multitude of claims upon his love."

Music to Browning is always a symbol of the infinite, the art which, above every other, is typical of the aspiration of the soul towards the spiritual, eternal and divine. Thus the hero in *Pauline* speaks of

> . . . Music which is earnest of a heaven
> Seeing we know emotions strange by it,
> Not else to be revealed.

So, in *Paracelsus*, "even as a luminous haze links star to star," Aprile would

> . . . . supply all chasms with music,
> Breathing mysterious notions of the soul, no way
> To be defined save in strange melodies.[9]

Yet love cannot rest even here. The sum of earthly beauty is unable to satisfy it. In God alone does the divine craving of love, the deepest impulse of the soul, find the adequate object of its desire. So Aprile, having striven, in fancy, to embrace the whole universe of finite beauty through the mediation of all the arts, longs at length to pass beyond this, and to dwell in mystic intercommunion with the perfect love of God.

> . . . . I have gone through
> The loveliness of life, create for me
> If not for men, or take me to thyself,
> Eternal, infinite love.[10]

Few poets have represented love in its romantic and transcendental aspect so superbly as Browning. His perception of the insurgent vehemence and boundless vision of love, as a supreme spiritual principle, blends in repeatedly with his conviction of the ceaseless progress towards an infinite ideal. The poet's treatment of love from this point of view has received general recognition. "Of all the passions," writes Professor Alexander, in his summary of Browning's philosophy, "none so reaches out towards the infinite as love. For Browning, then, as well as Plato, love both symbolizes and arouses that thirst for the infinite which is

[9] *Paracelsus*, Part II.
[10] *Paracelsus*, Part III.

the primary need of humanity. There is something mystical and transcendental in the power of love." [11]

In a similar vein Professor Herford says: "Browning as the poet of Love is thus the last, and assuredly not the least, in the line which handed on the torch of Plato. The author of the *Phaedrus* saw in the ecstasy of Love one of the avenues to the knowledge of the things that indeed are. To Dante the supreme realities were mirrored in the eyes of Beatrice. For Shelley Love was interwoven through all the mazes of Being; it was the source of the strength by which man masters his gods. To all these masters of idealism Browning's vision of love owed something of its intensity and of its range." [12]

But while the portrayal of love as a mystic, transcendental, and romantic passion, is very frequent in Browning, does it embrace his complete view of the nature of love, particularly as set forth in the poem of *Paracelsus*? Through the self-revelation of Aprile, Paracelsus realizes his fatal mistake in leaving love out of his scheme of life:

> I learned my own deep error; love's undoing
> Taught me the worth of love in man's estate.[13]

Is it, however, a failure to grasp the specific conception or aspect of love represented in the aims of Aprile, that is the fundamental error of Paracelsus?

A comparative study of Browning's delineation of Paracelsus and Aprile forces home the conviction that, despite the distinction between the objects of their pursuit, the resemblances between them are more basic than the differences. Though the one seeks knowledge, the other love as revealed through beauty, both are idealists and transcendentalists, with a thirst for the absolute, an unquenchable desire to surpass all finite limitations, a vision of perfection which forbids them to rest content with any finite attainment. As Paracelsus aspires and fails, so Aprile aspires and fails. To preserve the formal identification of the characters with

[11] W. F. Alexander, *An Introduction to the Poetry of Robert Browning*, (Boston, 1899), p. 54.

[12] C. H. Herford, *Robert Browning* (London, 1905), p. 308.

[13] *Paracelsus*, Part V.

the principles of knowledge and love, Browning, in places, attributes the failure of Aprile to a neglect of knowledge. But, in reality, Aprile's example is a warning to Paracelsus because there is an underlying similarity in their aspiration and failure. In common with Paracelsus and Sordello, Aprile is perplexed and baffled through his incapacity to " fit to the finite his infinity." Wishing to possess all, "to thrust in time eternity's concern," he clings to the bare form of the infinite and loses himself in dreams and abstractions. If he strives to break the spell that binds him and to single out one individual shape of loveliness, " and to give that one entire in beauty to the world," immediately other shapes come crowding thick upon him, and his will is paralyzed.

> And did not mist like influences, thick films,
> Faint memories of the rest that charmed so long
> Thine eyes, float fast, confuse thee, bear thee off,
> As whirling snowdrifts blind a man who treads
> A mountain ridge, with guiding spear, through storms? [14]

An unwillingness to subdue his nature to the conditions imposed by life, or to work out his destiny in and through the necessarily imperfect circumstances of his earthly lot, is recognized by Aprile as the source of his downfall.

> Knowing ourselves, our world, our task so great,
> Our time so brief, 'tis clear if we refuse
> The means so limited, the tools so rude
> To execute our purpose, life will fleet,
> And we shall fade, and leave our task undone.[15]

The failure of Aprile is, in itself, an indication that Browning has not set forth his full conception of the nature of love in the second canto of *Paracelsus*. Apart from teaching the general worth of love, it is difficult to see how such a type of love, as is represented in the person and quest of Aprile, could have proved the salvation of the Renaissance hero of Browning's poem. The errors of Paracelsus are those of a transcendentalist and idealist blinded by a vision of the absolute, refusing to stoop to the weakness and finitude of life. Yet it is precisely the romantic

[14] *Paracelsus*, Part II.
[15] *Paracelsus*, Part II.

and transcendental characteristics of love, regarded as the unceasing pursuit of an ideal of perfection and an infinite spiritual aspiration, that are embodied in the poetical imaginings of Aprile. Such a portrayal of love is in keeping with the romantic origins of the figure of Aprile, and an expression of that side of Browning's genius which is in sympathy with the impulses and traditions of romanticism. Since, however, it presents an aspect of love that is akin in spirit to the uncompromising idealism, passion for the absolute, and soaring aspiration of Paracelsus, it cannot, except by a *tour de force*, be regarded as supplying a corrective for the error of that character. While Browning makes a general distinction between knowledge as the aim of the Renaissance scholar, and love as the artist's passion for the beautiful, the contrast between Paracelsus and Aprile is not consistently maintained in the details of the two opening cantos of the poem. It is hard to escape the conviction that Aprile fails, not from a lack of knowledge, but because he, like Paracelsus, has spurned the finite conditions of life.

It seems, therefore, unmistakable that Browning's portrayal of love in the spirit of romantic idealism, in the second part of *Paracelsus*, involves the poem up to this point in a measure of self-contradiction. If the presentation of love throughout *Paracelsus* must be considered as all of one piece, the difficulty extends itself to the entire work.

It is, however, not in the second, but in the fifth canto of the poem, that Paracelsus realizes most fully the causes of his failure, and obtains his deepest insight into the nature of love. A comparison between Browning's treatment of love in these two parts of the narrative is illuminating. In the last words of the dying Paracelsus, love is conceived of in a way that cannot be regarded as a mere reiteration or enforcement of that romantic ideal of love embodied in the impassioned reveries of Aprile. The fact is that Browning's representation of love, both in *Paracelsus* and other poems, is a complex one. As Browning portrays love with all the energies of his being, and the full resources of his genius, it is inevitable that love should be in his poetry a highly organized and manifold concept. In particular, it reflects the two funda-

mental dispositions of his spirit already alluded to, and the artistic and religious influences entering into his life and work. The counterpart of Browning's mood of aspiration, as has been noted, is his recognition of the necessity of stooping, in the spirit of humility and self-sacrifice, to the finite limitations of life. The sources of this disposition lie largely in Browning's profound appreciation of the central truths of the Christian faith.

Consequently, Browning has given in the final canto of *Paracelsus*, not a romantic or Platonic, but a Christian representation of love.

Such a delineation of love is indeed foreshadowed in Aprile's confession of his failure at the close of the second part of the poem. Could he live again, he tells Paracelsus, he would not spurn the finite or reject the imperfect means at his disposal. Rather he would strive to give some partial representation of beauty to the world, even though this were but a fragment or a trifle, "one strain of all the psalm of the angels," as a pledge of the infinitude of beauty beyond. While still inspired by a consciousness of an ultimate goal of perfection, he would be content to achieve on earth a portion of that infinite good, which should be a prophecy of the whole. Aprile's final desire is to unite himself and his art with common life, and to set this forth in beauteous hues. Such a willingness to work within the bounds allotted to humanity, he perceives, is not inconsistent with the highest aspiration. To stoop to the weakness and lowliness of his brother men would not, as he mistakenly had thought, involve a sacrifice of his divine calling. His would be the self-same spirit, but "clothed in humbler guise":

> As one spring wind unbinds the mountain snow
> And comforts violets in their hermitage.[16]

That Browning is here representing Aprile's error as due to a failure to grasp that conception of love which may be regarded as preëminently Christian, is made explicit in lines added by the poet, in one edition of *Paracelsus*, at the end of Aprile's dying speech:

[16] *Paracelsus*, Part II.

> Man's weakness is his glory — for the strength
> Which raises him to heaven and near God's self
> Came spite of it. God's strength his glory is,
> For thence came with our weakness sympathy,
> Which brought God down to earth, a man like us! [17]

The final attainment of Paracelsus, as portrayed in the fifth canto, is an expansion of the idea of love set forth in these lines. It is a description of love which, without direct Christian reference, is permeated by Browning's religious sympathies. Love is here, not a romantic passion for a transcendent ideal of absolute beauty, but a divine condescension to human imperfection, and a tender compassion for mortal frailty. Love stoops to conquer, triumphs in the midst of conflict and suffering, and wins its way from weakness to strength. Such a love breaks down the overweening pride of Paracelsus, his self-sufficient individualism, his scorn of the limitations of life, and unites him in bonds of sympathy with his brother men. In the light of this vision of love he realizes the cause of his failure:

> In my own heart love had not been made wise
> To trace love's faint beginnings in mankind,
> To know even hate is but a mask of love's
> To see a good in evil, and a hope
> In ill-success; to sympathize, be proud
> Of their half-reasons, faint aspirings, dim
> Struggles for truth, their poorest fallacies,
> Their prejudice and fears and cares and doubts
> All with a touch of nobleness, despite
> Their error, upward tending all though weak,
> Like plants in mines which never saw the sun,
> But dream of him, and guess where he may be,
> And do their best to climb and get to him.
> All this I knew not, and I failed.[18]

Love teaches Paracelsus no longer to despise the past, or to close his eyes to God's plan of a gradual evolution and progressive unfolding of the divine purpose from age to age. In his previous disregard of these truths Paracelsus may be said to prefigure that lack of sympathy with human weakness, and that abstract ideal-

[17] *Paracelsus*, Part II (omitted in later editions).
[18] *Paracelsus*, Part V.

ism, so typical of the revolutionary and romantic epoch at the dawn of the nineteenth century .

> I saw no use in the past; only a scene
> Of degradation, ugliness and tears,
> The record of disgraces best forgotten,
> A sullen page in human chronicles
> Fit to erase. I saw no cause why man
> Should not stand all-sufficient even now,
> . . . . . .
> I would have had one day, one moment's space,
> Change man's condition, push each slumbering claim
> Of mastery o'er the elemental world
> At once to full maturity.[19]

Through his deeper insight into the character of love, Paracelsus discerns it as an immanent principle dwelling even in "life's minute beginnings," and incarnating itself at every stage of the evolutionary process. Viewed in the light of love, the struggles and imperfections of the past are fraught with value and significance and consecrated by human endeavor.

> . . . . . Not so dear child
> Of after days, wilt thou reject the past
> . . . . . nor yet on thee
> Shall burst the future, as successive zones
> Of several wonder open on some spirit
> Flying secure and glad from heaven to heaven:
> But thou shalt painfully attain to joy,
> While hope and fear and love shall keep thee man.[20]

Thus the poem of *Paracelsus* closes, not with Aprile's resplendent vision of "eternal, infinite love," but rather with love in its humblest manifestations, "human at the red-ripe of the heart."

> . . . . Love — not serenely pure
> But strong from weakness, like a chance-sown plant,
> Which cast on stubborn soil, puts forth changed buds
> And softer stains unknown in happier climes,
> Love which endures and doubts and is oppressed
> And cherished, suffering much and much sustained,

---

[19] *Paracelsus*, Part V.
[20] *Paracelsus*, Part V.

> And blind, oft-failing, yet believing love,
> A half enlightened, often chequered trust.
> . . . . . .
> Love still too straitened in his present means,
> And earnest for new power to set love free.[21]

To sum up the conclusions derived from a study of Browning's *Paracelsus*, it seems evident that a complex rather than a single and uniform conception of love is involved.

In the second canto, love, typified in the person and ambitions of the artist Aprile, is depicted in its romantic aspect, as a struggle to reach heights unattainable on earth. Love is revealed as a principle of infinite aspiration involving the pursuit of an ideal of perfection. Such a portrayal of love is in harmony with the Shelleyan origins of the character of Aprile, and is a reflection of Browning's own romantic traditions and sympathies. It is also in keeping with Browning's innate transcendentalism, and his perception of the inexhaustible energies and unlimited scope of personality.

While the conception of love in the fifth division of *Paracelsus* is complementary rather than antithetical to that set forth in the second canto, it cannot be regarded as of identical character. In the words of the dying Paracelsus, love is represented from another point of view, as a principle of self-surrender and a strength that stoops to weakness. Love is conceived of here, not as a transcendent aspiration, but as a condescension of the divine to the human, and a wise acceptance of the limited means and opportunities of life. As opposed to the emptiness of an abstract intellectual ideal, love binds together the claims of the spirit and the flesh and "shows a heart within blood-tinctured of a veined humanity." Such a portrayal of love is an expression of the spirit of Christian *Magnificat*, rather than of romantic or Platonic idealism, and it manifestly has its sources in Browning's deep religious convictions, above all his appreciation of the supreme truth revealed through the doctrine of the Incarnation.

Since love is the richest and most highly organized concept in Browning's poetry, the twofold strand in his delineation of it

[21] *Paracelsus*, Part V.

is, as I have stated, a natural consequence of the two fundamental attitudes of his soul: those of aspiration towards the ideal and of stooping to the real. These provinces of Browning's feeling are in large part rooted in the two great moulding influences that enter into his life and poetry, his artistic inheritance of the traditions of English Romanticism, and his religious legacy of the spirit and tenets of evangelical Christianity.

While the romantic elements in Browning's treatment of love have been very generally recognized, a like stress has not been placed on that aspect of his conception of love which is represented in the fifth part of *Paracelsus*. Yet it might readily be shown, by reference to a large number of Browning's poems, that his delineation of love from this point of view is as vital and characteristic as his portrayal of it in the spirit of romantic idealism. To select a single example among many, the beautiful love lyrics placed at the end of each parable in *Ferishtah's Fancies*, all centre about love as manifested in its preëminently human aspect. It is the thought of love stooping to finite imperfection, "not serenely pure, but strong from weakness," love refusing to spurn the body or despise the world in the interests of an ascetic ideal of spirituality, that forms the chorded refrain of these exquisite snatches.

In particular this conception of love is intimately related with Browning's perception of its supreme revelation in the person of Christ. "Such ever was love's way: to rise it stoops," is the characterization of the nature of love Browning places on the lips of St. John in *A Death in the Desert*; — and in *Saul* and *An Epistle of Karshish*, the Incarnation is represented as the Divine Love that for man's sake became poor and of low estate.

> 'Tis the weakness in strength that I cry for!
> my flesh that I seek
> In the Godhead![22]
>
> The very God! think Abib; dost thou think?
> So, the All-Great, were the All-Loving too —
> So, through the thunder comes a human voice
> Saying, "O heart I made, a heart beats here!

[22] *Saul.*

Face, my hands fashioned, see it in myself!
Thou hast no power nor mayst conceive of mine,
But love I gave thee, with myself to love,
And thou must love me who have died for thee!" [23]

[23] *An Epistle of Karshish.*

University of Michigan

ASSYRIAN MEDICINE IN THE SEVENTH CENTURY B.C.

LEROY WATERMAN

The British Museum alone possesses six hundred and sixty-six cuneiform medical texts. In 1902, Friederich Küchler published and interpreted the first of these as a doctor's thesis and in 1904 issued his further studies of these texts in his larger work *Beiträge zur Kenntniss der Assyrisch-Babylonischen Medicin.* For fifteen years R. Campbell Thompson of Oxford has been engaged upon the task of interpreting the entire corpus of the British Museum's great Medical Series. The advance sections of this publication are only recently announced from the press.[1]

The present paper makes no claim to deal with this class of material. On the contrary it will be confined entirely to certain data on the practice of medicine as it is found incidentally in the *Royal Correspondence of the Assyrian Empire.*[2] The material includes fourteen hundred and seventy-one texts and fragments and covers the period from 722 B.C. to the fall of Nineveh 608 B.C.

With magic and incantation ceremonies playing a large rôle in the practice of medicine within comparatively recent times, we shall not be surprised to find these factors at work in the same field 2500 years ago. It will be our task to point out how much opportunity these elements do, nevertheless, allow for the exercise of common sense and the beginning of a scientific tradition in medicine.

The development in Assyria, mainly during the seventh century B.C., of a very extensive official class very naturally included

[1] *Proceedings of the Royal Society of Medicine,* 17 (1924): 1–34.

[2] *University of Michigan Studies, Humanistic Series,* Vols. XVII–XX (in preparation).

court physicians. The trying climate of the Tigris-Euphrates valley, especially in summer, gave every incentive to exercise the healing art. Add to this the fact that from Esarhaddon (680 B.C.) onward, the Royal House of Assyria began to show marked symptons of physical degeneracy and an easy, if not alarming, susceptibility to disease, and it will be readily understood why the practice of medicine plays a somewhat conspicuous rôle in the records of the seventh century B.C.

We know the names of many of these physicians and we possess letters from a considerable number of them written, for the most part, to the king. The greatest number from any one of them totals at least thirty-six, the next highest about a dozen, and so on. These texts are by no means confined to medicinal matters, but have the most varied human interests, and from them we incidentally learn that a physician was apt to be a priest as well, also an astrologer, with which function were associated certain definite observations of the heavenly bodies, which entitled him, furthermore, to be called an astronomer. Besides this it was usually the case that he was known as a magician. It is not possible to say from our sources that every physician exercised all these other functions, but the evidence favors the conclusion that no one of these activities was the sole accomplishment of a single individual, but rather that at least two of them always went together in this period, and certainly in the case of those best known to us, we are obliged to add yet another function, viz., that of diplomat or politician.

The esteem in which physicians were held and the degree of reliance put upon them in the period under observation, not only by the court but by the official classes generally, may be seen from the most casual references. Shamashmituballit, one of the sons of Esarhaddon, writes thus to his father:[3] "To the king my lord thy servant Shamashmituballit, may it be well with the king my lord. May the Gods Nabu and Marduk be surpassingly gracious to the king my lord. Now the handmaid of the king Baugamelat, is exceedingly ill. She cannot take nourishment. Now let the king my lord give a command and let a physician

[3] Harper's *Assyrian and Babylonian Letters*, No. 341.

come and see her." In a broken letter[4] from which the writer's name is missing, we read as follows: "And regarding that which the king my lord has written, saying: 'In lieu of Radmanu's report there is word from the city of Sippar that (so and so) is sick, that he sends to you, saying: "Is there not a Babylonian (physician) whom you can send."'" And again Adadshumusur, the physician from whom we have the most documents, writes thus to the king to clear himself of seeming negligence:[5] "In regard to the two men who are in the new house and in regard to Siupirhiukin, of whom the king my lord has written, saying: 'Go (and) visit them,' now the king my lord knows that the chief officer has brought me to the house of Dani on behalf of his son. I am attending him. His malady is serious, he is exceedingly ill. In view of the fact that I am occupied with him, it is not feasible for me to set out today. I shall go in the morning and examine them and report their condition to the king." He goes on to add as a further precaution: "I shall appoint the Mashmash priests. They will perform their ritual," i.e., for the sick. Here the use of magic and the aid of religion are acknowledged, and while the writer was himself a priest and high conjurer, still, because of increased demands upon him as a physician, there seems to have been a tendency to specialize primarily as a physician and thus to sharpen the cleavage between medicine and other means of healing.

The value of the principle involved in a council of physicians was also recognized in Assyria, although naturally under a despotism it might be expected to take a less democratic form than with us. In fact the king might be the only person who knew that such a principle had been invoked, as another letter from the Adadshumusur mentioned above will illustrate. The circumstances were that the crown prince, probably Ashurbanipal, had become ill, a physician had been consulted, and a prescription had been prepared for the making of a potion. The king had received it and given orders to have it filled, and before this had been accomplished, he bethought himself that it might be worth while to get the counter-advice of another practitioner,

[4] Letter No. 608. [5] Letter No. 1.

whereupon he wrote a letter to Adadshumusur about it, and we have the reply of that individual. This reply brings out clearly the politic and diplomatic character of this man and it also contains advice that might possibly be applied with salutary effects today, although it would doubtless tend to make the profession of medicine less popular than it is at present. After the usual greeting he writes:[6] "In regard to the making of the potion of which the king my lord has written, it is especially fitting, as the king my lord has commanded those servants. We shall make haste to have them drink (of it first), thereafter let the crown prince drink (of it). But what am I saying! I am an old man who has lost his reason! That which the king my lord has spoken is as final as the word of a god."

One of the most persistent and wearing diseases of the valley of the two rivers was malaria, and accordingly we hear much of fever and ague in the Assyrian letters. In a broken text Mardukshakinshum writes to Esarhaddon:[7] "In regard to the fever . . . of which the king my lord (has written) I am one who releases . . . let me come to the king my lord." He then mentions, in a broken context, ceremonies pertaining to the fever which he would be glad to perform, and closes with the assurance that the great gods Bel and Nabu will lay their quickening hands on the king his lord. The same Adadshumusur reports to King Esarhaddon about the case of one of his delicate sons, Ashuretilshameuirsitiballitsu: "It is well with Ashuretilshameuirsitiballitsu. His fever is broken. There is no sin involved."[8]

Another letter from Mardukshakinshum shows that Esarhaddon was subject to malaria; the body of the letter runs thus:[9] "In regard to the ague of which the king my lord has written, there is no sin. The gods of the king will quickly grant release." Farther on he mentions the sickness of Royalty in a way that leaves little doubt that it is the king's own illness that is concerned.

Diseases of the eye and ear evidently claimed their victims,

[6] Letter No. 3.
[7] Letter No. 664.
[8] Letter No. 658.
[9] Letter No. 663.

much as is the case in the east today, and there are indications that Royalty sometimes went out of its way to interest itself in trying to relieve such cases. Such seems to be the purport of a letter [10] to the king written by the physician Arad-Nana. After the usual greetings he reports: "It is well indeed with this unfortunate man whose eyes are diseased. I had put a dressing on them that covered his face. Yesterday toward evening, the bandage which held it on I removed. I took off the dressing that was there. There was pus the size of the tip of the little finger." The writer then modestly veils his manifest elation at the successful treatment, when he adds: 'Whoever of thy gods has put his hand to this case, has himself surely given his orders explicitly. It is extremely favorable. In seven or eight days he should be (entirely) restored."

In the following letter [11] both the writer and the recipient are unknown, but it is clearly by a physician to the king. After a greeting which invokes the blessing of Ninib and Gula, noted deities of healing, he says: "Regarding the healing of the ears which I have undertaken, everything is done. Yesterday the king did not lift up his head. Now today let him do it." In the broken context that follows there are references to prescriptions and other physicians.

The test of sincerity in the healing art as well as the measure of self-confidence that the physician, at least, thinks he knows what he is doing, is often revealed by the process of diagnosis. That is to say, an overemphatic assumption of ability to understand and heal anything may have a psychological as well as a commercial value, but even in our own day may well raise doubts at times, and perhaps this was true in an earlier day when medicine was more dependent on magic. At any rate, the frankness of the Assyrian doctors seems commendable. For example we have a reply by Mardukshakinshum to a first aid call, so to speak, from the palace of Esarhaddon, backed up by royal orders. He says: [12] "In regard to the poultice of licorice of which the king my lord has spoken saying: 'The burning is unendurable, tell us quickly what shall we do.'" The nature of this summons

[10] No. 392. [11] No. 465. [12] No. 19.

has every indication of being dictated over the king's signature by perhaps some anxious mother of the royal harem concerning a tender offspring, and from the physician's reply we should judge that the youngster was suffering from an ailment about as severe as colic, for the letter continues: "The burning (reported) is not a real burning and as a remedy for it let them make a cold application," and he goes on to add: "Now I do not understand why he has had this attack. This report itself does not harmonize the one part with the other." And having made confession, he frankly and decently takes refuge in religion by adding: "The gods have done it."

There were cases, however, where the royal appeal might become an insistence that was serious if not menacing, as the following letter from Arad-Nana [13] will show: "Repeatedly the king my lord keeps saying: 'Wherefore do you not perceive the nature of this sickness of mine. Are you not going to accomplish its healing?' Earlier I spoke in the king's presence: 'I do not understand his affliction.' Now I have just sealed a letter and sent it off. May they read it to the king and may they make it clear to the king my lord. If it is acceptable before the king my lord let a conjurer . . . perform the rites pertaining thereto. This bathing of the king let them perform. Directly this fever will pass away from the king my lord. This lotion of oils should be applied to the king two or three times. The king understands it. If the king commands it, in the morning let them do it. There is infection also in the pus, and the sweet root, which they bring before the king, as they have done twice already, let them rub on vigorously. I shall surely come and give instructions. Directly the strength of the king will revive. Unto its full tide I shall bring it back to the king my lord.' Let the king put on his throat the ointment . . . I shall bring. On the appointed day let the king be anointed."

Sometimes a court physician seems a trifle too anxious about the health of his royal charge and diagnoses accordingly. Such an instance may be found in a case where it has evidently been reported to Adadshumusur that the king is inclined to fast and

[13] No. 391.

he feels that he should be properly advised:[14] "Wherefore is not meat served before the king a second time this day? Whoever laments for Shanash, the king of the Gods, laments a day and a night and two days additional. The king of the lands my lord is the very image of Shanash, is it only one half day thou art sad, even that sadness is not good for the mind. It is like the day of death . . . fasting, neither eating nor drinking, confuses the understanding. It brings on sickness. Thus it is. Let the king hearken to his servant."

The examples of prescriptions for ailments in these documents reveal the fact that nearly all the attitudes taken in modern times in combating disease were represented 2500 years ago, and range all the way from that of taking a cheerful attitude to existence in general, to an attempt at a scientific physical treatment of a particular ailment.

Mardukapaliddin who lived during the reign of Sargon II, was a logical ancestor of M. Coué, as can be seen from one of his letters to the king:[15] "Regarding that which the king my lord has spoken, saying: 'My side and my feet I cannot move and my eyes I cannot open. I am bald and worn out because of the fever. It consumes within the bones,' thus it is there is no sin. Ashur, Bel and Nabu will establish health." The context is broken for three lines, but from what follows one is tempted to supply a well known modern formula. At any rate he goes on: "The disease of the skin will go away. It is favorable exceedingly (i.e., in every way). Let them proclaim the truth. According as it is good, let them feed him."

Mental healing, complete rest and sanatorium practice were not beyond the ken of the Assyrians in principle, as the following excerpt from a report[16] from the physician Arad-Nana to Esarhaddon will show: "It is exceedingly well with the crown prince. The ritual which we performed for restoring him, we gave for five-sixths of a double hour. The day he came, he tarried. He gained strength. He remained until he had completed a month (?)."

Another case reported in the same letter shows a sense of

[14] No. 5. [15] No. 348. [16] No. 108.

real scientific skill in the treatment of hemorrhage, that must have extended much farther. The passage runs thus: "In regard to the patient who has a hemorrhage of the nose, the Rab Mugi reports: 'Yesterday toward evening there was a severe hemorrhage.' Those dressings were not properly applied. They are placed over the nostrils. They obstruct the breathing and come off when there is hemorrhage. They should be placed within the nostril and then the air would be kept away and the hemorrhage restrained. If it is agreeable to the king, I shall go tomorrow and give instructions. Now meantime let me hear of his condition."

The following prescription [17] for the exorcism of evil spirits taken from a letter of Mardukshakinshum to the king will show that the principle of homeopathy, if not quite in our acceptation, is no new invention of our day: "In regard to the incantation ceremonies beginning: 'Art thou the evil (spirit)?' about which the king my lord has written, in order to drive out the evil spirit and 'the one that falls from heaven,' they perform rites according to whatever has attacked him. The conjurer shall approach, a wild swine, a kaku bird and a thorn bush on the doorposts he shall hang up. The conjurer shall put on a red garment, a red bird shall be placed, a raven on his right, a falcon on his left . . . he shall smite with a lash. The incantation 'Art thou the evil spirit?' they shall recite. He shall complete it. Together with a second conjurer having a censer and a torch at their sides he shall march around the bed of the patient. The incantation: 'Go forth,' as far as the gate they shall recite. The gate they shall conjure. Morning and evening he shall perform the rites until the demons have been driven out." Of course in true professional style nothing is said too definitely about the recovery of the patient.

Among remedies may be mentioned oil of a poisonous plant and oil of ironwood (?),[18] a concoction made by boiling a purallu stone with the sihhi plant,[19] anointing the body against the action of the wind,[20] bathing the hands and feet with the

[17] No. 24.
[18] No. 570.
[19] No. 570.
[20] No. 110.

distillation of the Lid-Ru-Sha plant and kulkulanu herbs,[21] the prescribed drinking of blood,[22] ointment for application to the affected parts of the body, lotions of oils[23] and the poultice of licorice.

As a last item may be mentioned the attention given to the teeth and the estimate held of the effect of the state of the teeth on the general health of the individual.

The first instance[24] deals with a tooth of one of the sons of Esarhaddon, probably Ashurmukinpalua, and is reported by Arad-Nana as follows: "Concerning the recovery of the tooth of which the king my lord has inquired, I am improving very much the condition of the tooth."

My last citation is from a letter,[25] from which the writer's name has been broken away, but it is quite probably Adadshumusur, and if so it is addressed either to Esarhaddon or Ashurbanipal. It contains the following of interest in this connection: "Regarding that which the king my lord has written saying: 'According to thy usual integrity send,' I have spoken the truth with the king my lord. The burning of his head, his hands and his feet wherewith he burns is because of his teeth. His teeth should be drawn. His residence should be sprinkled. He has been brought low. Now he will be well exceedingly . . ." We can well understand why the king wished to make sure of the diagnosis. The Assyrians never even advertized painless dentistry; they had a brutal way of gaining their objectives regardless of human feelings.

The foregoing citations by no means cover all references to medicinal practice in the royal Assyrian letters. I have endeavored, however, to bring together in this manner such references as would show rather the range of usage and the outstanding and characteristic aspects of medicine as understood in the Assyrian Empire of that day.

[21] No. 450.
[22] No. 740.
[23] No. 391.
[24] No. 109.
[25] No. 586.

University of Michigan

METEOROLOGICAL DATA, DOUGLAS LAKE, MICHIGAN *

FRANK C. GATES

In response to repeated requests to make available the meteorological data obtained at the Biological Station of the University of Michigan at Douglas Lake, Cheboygan County, Michigan, since 1918, the following paper is written, bringing the records to date. The data from 1912 to 1918 were printed in the *21st Report of the Michigan Academy of Science*, pages 373 to 378. Yearly summaries have been published for the following years in the *Reports* and *Papers* of the Michigan Academy of Science: 1919, in the *22d Report*, page 213; 1920 and 1921, in *Papers*, II. 162–163; and the 1922 summary in *Papers*, III. 301–302.

Throughout this article, temperature is expressed in degrees Fahrenheit, precipitation in inches and evaporation and solar intensity in c. c. per day. All averages are calculated from the grand totals. Averages for temperature and precipitation are based on four to eight years of record in June, twelve years in July and most of August. For evaporation during July and the first three-fifths of August, the records are based on eight years, while those for solar intensity are based on four years' records for the same period.

Meteorological Summary for 1923 (Table No. I)

June, 1923. — After the heavy snows of the winter, the lake was unusually high and somewhat colder than average through June. The month, however, was very pleasant, with about the

* Contribution No. 209 from the Botanical Laboratory of the Kansas State Agricultural College, Manhattan, Kansas, and a contribution from the Biological Station of the University of Michigan.

normal temperature and precipitation, although virtually all of the latter occurred in the early part of the month.

July, 1923. — In the July following, while the average maxima were a little above average, the minima were distinctly below. This made the month a little below average. The precipitation consisted of very light showers. The vegetation was seriously affected by the dry weather — still fires were not frequent.

August, 1923. — The month of August was very pleasant, being both cool and dry. There was no really very warm weather. Precipitation consisted of showers of rather small amount until the heavy rain of the 27th–28th. This rain effectively broke the drought which had lasted with scarcely a break from the seventh of June. The month was noteworthy for twice breaking the lowest minimum experienced at the Biological Station during the month. First, a new record of 39° was established on August 23 and three days later on August 26 this was pushed down to 37°.

Meteorological Summaries, 1912–1923 (Table No. II)

This table includes Table No. 3, previously published, but brings it through 1923. The summaries of evaporation from standard Livingston atmometers and of solar intensity are also included. Solar intensity is expressed as the cubic centimeters of water evaporated from a black spherical atmometer in excess of that evaporated from the white bulb.

Meteorological Averages (Table No. III)

In this table various meteorological features are shown for each fifth of a month. In June, the temperature and precipitation figures are for from four to eight years of record, as shown in the table, those for July and August, except the last period, for twelve years. The averages for evaporation are based on eight years of record, while those of solar intensity are based on four years of record. In each case the number of days missing from the period as just defined is given by an exponential figure.

Meteorological Data, 1919–1923 (Tables No. IV and V)

The daily maximum and minimum temperatures and precipitation for the days indicated bring the printed record to date. All of these records have been made with standard weather bureau instruments. As previously stated in the *21st Report of the Michigan Academy*, the records from 1912 through 1918 were taken from a Sixe thermometer and funnel rain-gauge.

Evaporation and Solar Intensity (Tables No. VI and VII)

Studies in evaporation from different plant habitats have been made since 1915. During the early studies an atmometer was maintained on the Station grounds and read at the same time that those in the field were read. During these studies cylindrical non-rain-correcting Livingston atmometers were used. Spherical types were introduced in 1917. Blackened cups were also introduced in the same year. With these early records consideration must necessarily have to be taken of the fact that varying amounts of rain and dew entered the instruments and records from an atmometer as a standard are therefore too low. This is especially so of 1915 in which there were a large number of rainy days during the summer. While this would not necessarily interfere with the comparing of records from different localities, it would be inimical to a satisfactory understanding of the absolute value of the evaporating powers of the air of a region. With the development of a rain-correcting device, the Livingston-Shive rain-correcting atmometer was set up in 1919 and daily records maintained through the summers thereafter. While the readings were made two or three times daily, the results in the table following are for the 24 hours ending at 7 P.M. of the dates given. A comparison of the rain-correcting and ordinary mounting showed that it was no uncommon occurrence for some two to four c. c. to be taken in by the non-rain-correcting atmometer in an ordinary rain and even up to 12 c. c. in a severe driving rain. With the development of Musch valves the Gates modification of which was employed in 1922, it was found that although the Musch valve mitigated very decidedly

the amount of water entering in rain, it did not eliminate it. Approximately half a cubic centimeter went in the instrument before the valve began to operate. However, although this valve is quite efficient against rain, it is very much less so against dews. Extreme cases noted were the addition of as much as 7 c. c. in a night under the most favorable conditions. This would seem to indicate that even the Musch valve is not sufficiently accurate for use as a standard for evaporating power of the air, although of course it may be satisfactory for general comparative results.

Table No. 6 shows the evaporation for the periods given between 1915 and 1922. During the first three of those years, the periods are of varying lengths as shown by the brackets in each case. The first figure in each case is the average evaporation per day during the period. The second, in parentheses, is the total evaporation during the period. During the remaining years the daily evaporation from a standard atmometer is shown and in most cases also the evaporation from a black atmometer during the same period. The excess of evaporation from the black bulb over that from the white one gives a measure of the solar intensity. This is shown in Table No. 7. It has amounted to as much as 30.6 c. c. in a day. The period covered by these records includes that of greatest intensity during the year.

Kansas State Agricultural College
Manhattan, Kansas

TABLE I

Meteorological Summary for Summer of 1923

Month.....	June	Departure	July	Departure	Aug.	Departure
Days of record.....	24	.....	31	.....	31	.....
Absolute Maximum..	95	−1	94	−10	89	−10
Average Maximum..	79.2	+1.9	81.6	+1.4	74.7	−1.8
Absolute Minimum..	37	+9	45	+6.5	37 *	0
Average Minimum...	52.5	−0.9	53.0	−3.8	49.4	−6.0
Mean Temperature..	65.9	+0.5	67.3	−1.2	61.6	−4.4
Precipitation.....	1.85	−0.17	1.62	−0.51	3.21	+0.16
Days of Precipitation	5	−1.2	10	+0.9	8	−0.4

* New record.

TABLE II

WEATHER SUMMARIES, DOUGLAS LAKE, MICHIGAN

	TEMPERATURE					PRECIPITATION		EVAPORATION	SOLAR INTENSITY
	Abs. Max.	Aver. Max.	Abs. Min.	Aver. Min.	Mean	Ppt.	Days Ppt.		
July, 1912	95	77.6	45	57.5	67.7	1.06	9		
Aug. 1912	84	68.7	41	53.8	61.2	6.79	11		
July, 1913	93	78.5	42	56.7	67.8	3.07	10		
Aug., 1913	97	82.0	46	60.1	71.0	0.51	3		
July, 1914	94	81.8	46	58.2	70.0	1.84	7		
Aug., 1914	98	80.0	46	56.5	68.0	1.71	8		
July 1915	92	77.6	44	54.6	66.1	1.69	13	14.2	
Aug., 1915	84	73.1	48	55.6	64.1	3.76	7	11.4	
July, 1916	102	87.3	44	61.2	74.2	1.07	5	45.0	
Aug., 1916	99	82.3	42	59.4	70.7	1.66	7	27.0	
July, 1917	104	81.3	50	60.3	70.9	1.33	10	36.3	11.0
Aug., 1917	86	76.2	43	56.6	66.2	2.14	9	24.3	6.1
July, 1918	98	79.2	39	55.2	67.2	1.39	7	29.9	
Aug , 1918	90	79.9	42	55.9	67.6	2.52	8	25.4	
July, 1919	96	81.8	38.5	55.2	66.9	1.23	6	31.1	16.1
Aug. 1919	90	76.4	46	56.3	66.4	2.03	5	22.5	11.9
June, 1920	96	78.3	43	56.2	67.3	2.34	10		
July, 1920	87	73.1	39.5	52.4	62.7	2.77	11	32.6	8.6
Aug., 1920	88	76.4	40	53.0	64.7	3.54	6	28.8	6.2
June, 1921	91	82.6	28	54.6	68.6	1.11	5		
July, 1921	100	87.6	52	62.8	75.2	2.41	9	34.1	17.9
Aug., 1921	87	72.4	43	54.2	63.3	4.13	11	23.4	11.7
June, 1922	87	71.8	30	50.5	60.9	2.92+	6		
July, 1922	87	74.4	42	54.1	64.3	6.05	12	21.9	9.3
Aug., 1922	91	76.6	45	55.9	66.1	2.27+	4	19.0	12.4
June, 1923	95	79.2	37	52.5	65.9	1.85	5		
July, 1923	94	81.6	45	53.0	67.3	1.62	10		
Aug., 1923	89	74.7	37	49.4	61.6	3.21	8		

TABLE III

Meteorological Averages 1912–1923, Douglas Lake, Michigan

	Yrs. of Record	Absolute Maximum	Absolute Minimum	Average Maximum	Average Minimum	Mean	Precipitation	Days Precipitation	Maximum Precipitation in one day	Evaporation	Solar Intensity
June 1–6		84	28								
7–12	4	96	38	77.6[3]	54.1[3]	65.9	0.58	2.5	1.20*		
13–18	4	92	34	76.3	51.2	63.7	1.00	2.3	2.24		
19–24	7	95	43	78.3[3]	54.6[4]	66.5	0.15[12]	0.6	0.54		
25–30	8	92	30	77.0[1]	53.2[4]	65.1	0.29[8]	0.9	1.10		
Average or extremes		96	28	77.3	53.4	65.4	2.02	6.2	2.24		
July 1–6	12	100	39	79.6[3]	54.8[5]	67.2	0.44[3]	1.6	1.00	31.1[25]	12.9[3]
7–12	12	99	38.5	78.8	55.3	67.1	0.56	2.0	1.73	29.3[15]	12.5
13–18	12	98	44	79.7	57.0	68.3	0.32	2.1	1.27	30.1[3]	13.7
19–24	12	100	46	81.2	57.5	69.3	0.36	1.3	0.82	33.0[3]	14.9
25–31	12	104	41	81.3	58.8	70.1	0.45	2.1	0.85	26.8	11.6
Average or extremes		104	38.5	80.2	56.8	68.5	2.13	9.1	1.73	29.9	13.1
Aug. 1–6	12	99	42	77.1	55.5	66.3	0.47	1.7	1.97	27.3	11.9
7–12	12	98	42	77.1	56.2	66.6	1.11	2.5	2.20	21.5	11.1
13–18	12	97	40	77.3	55.7	66.5	0.57	1.6	1.28	24.7[5]	8.3[8]
19–24	12	97	39	75.1[15]	55.0[12]	65.0	0.49[10]	1.3	0.98		
25–31	7	88	37	73.1[31]	52.9[28]	63.0	0.42[23]	1.3	1.92*		
Average or extremes		99	37	76.5	55.4	66.0	3.05	8.4	2.20	24.5	10.7

* 2 days

TABLE IV

MAXIMUM AND MINIMUM TEMPERATURES, DOUGLAS LAKE, MICHIGAN
(DEGREES FAHRENHEIT)

	1919		1920		1921		1922		1923	
	Max.	Min.	Max.	Min.	Max	Min.	Max	M-n.	Max.	Min.
JUNE 4	..	..	..	.	..	28				
5	.	..	..	..	..	30				
6	.	..	..	..	..	..	84			
7	..	..	..	..	70	38	87	62		
8	..	..	..	..	79	42	76	65	75	54
9	..	..	90	69	83	57	75	57	70	38
10	..	..	95	56	86	59	64	55	79	44
11	..	..	78	64	78	56	64	59	79	49
12	..	..	88	64	85	48	58	50	70	50
13	..	..	85	60	71	60	65	34	73	41
14	..	..	92	60	79	46	76	54	57	47
15	..	..	76	66	85	46	72	46	72	37
16	..	..	66	56	87	56	68	51	79	41
17	..	..	67	52	91	60	63	52	90	45
18	..	..	73	54	72	60	80	49	91	56
19	92	..	76	50	84	50	75	57	87	71
20	85	67	78	46	85	46	69	51	87	64
21	85	63	63	53	90	53	69	54	90	63
22	91	55	66	52	85	63	73	45	95	63
23	94	59	73	50	77	59	87	49	95	63
24	90	62	74	44	73	55	77	50	92	65
25	82	68	81	43	81	52	62	42	84	64
26	80	63	87	52	91	57	71	30	70	60
27	69	54	84	60	85	64	68	45	70	53
28	67	41	83	68	85	63	68	52	65	48
29	82	35	73	65	90	61	67	49	72	47
30	86	50	73	53	89	59	78	54	80	45
JULY 1	92	49	66	53	92	58	74	58	82	48
2	96	57	76	55	96	62	72	53	82	51
3	92	60	70	58	100	65	60	53	79	48
4	87	66	67	50	99	67	72	49	84	45
5	75.5	61	77	39.5	99	65	82	42	74	48
6	79	56	63	53	99	69	77	60	80	54

TABLE IV — *Continued*

	1919		1920		1921		1922		1923	
	Max.	Min.	Max.	Min.	Max.	Min	Max.	Min.	Max.	Min.
July 7	73.5	49	66	53	99	66	65	52	83	59
8	78	38.5	72	47	80	67	68	47	85	49
9	90	54	76	52	88	66	73	51	85	54
10	67	54	81	48	89	61	73	60	73	63
11	74	38.5	86	49	95	61	72	58	82	49
12	77	54	83	53	95	67	64	52	85	50
13	83	45	87	60	95	67	78	49	85	45
14	84	54	70	54	79	69	81	50	74	52
15	72	56	62	54	82	65	83	54	78	57
16	80.5	45	66	49	83	54	87	60	84	58
17	89	58	76	47	90	55	72	62	89	58
18	90	58	65	55	81	67	70	55	89	48
19	89	58	72	53	76	66	73	55	91	54
20	92	57	81	46	77	61	78	48	94	65
21	81	60	76	56	86	58	82	52	85	54
22	77	56	81	47	87	52	72	60	83	51
23	90	51	72	53	90	61	69	59	66	50
24	75	56	64	58	90	63	75	59	74	56
25	80	50	64	58	85	68	78	49	76	56
26	91.5	64	70	44	89	57	81	52	82	49
27	85	67	81	43	85	69	75	58	76	59
28	73.5	63	78	59	75	64	74	60	65	54
29	75	60	79	66	82	63	78	45	84	45
30	73	54.5	73	57	88	58	75	55	88	59
31	74	61	65	56	66	55	74	60	92	55
Aug. 1	70	55	63	49	68	52	77	60	81	63
2	74	57	70	50	72	45	78	58	81	61
3	75	55	77	44	74	51	77	58	87	49
4	84	62	83	46	85	53	75	59	71	58
5	77	62	78	57	87	60	69	57	80	54
6	90	56.5	81	53	78	64	66	50	78	45
7	71	57	85	57	68	54	69	61	72	52
8	65.5	47	84	61	66	55	76	49	75	48
9	69	46	76	64	84	47	72	46	85	42
10	78	47	82	57	78	64	73	52	83	50
11	83	48.5	82	62	68	59	79	48	89	48
12	82	55	73	62	74	55	83	55	79	62
13	82	52	64	60	68	54	85	57	78	54

TABLE IV — *Concluded*

	1919		1920		1921		1922		1923	
	Max.	Min.	Max.	Min.	Max.	Min.	Max.	Min.	Max.	Min.
Aug. 14	74	52	70	59	67	54	91	59	81	56
15	83	55	81	55	73	49	89	63	70	40
16	79	60	80	54	76	52	88	64	78	41
17	72	61	80	52	64	56	86	65	70	40
18	67	59	81	48	67	57	70	60	73	46
19	75	61	84	48	71	46	67	54	71	54
20	86	58	88	54	65	55	71	47	76	47
21	73	62	62	58	67	43	67	45	60	53
22	78	62	66	44	72	43	..	63	59	46
23	86	61	70	40	78	53	..	..	70	39
24	71	62	72	42	66	54	..	..	58	46
25	64	56	78	48	75	55	..	..	65	45
26	..	..	..	..	74	53	..	..	..	37
27	..	..	..	..	72	65	..	..	..	46
28	..	..	..	..	71	63	..	..	61	55
29	..	..	..	..	..	60	..	..	74	52
30	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	80	47
31	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	82	55

TABLE

PRECIPITATION IN INCHES, DOUGLAS LAKE, MICHIGAN

	1919	1920	1921	1922	1923
JUNE 4			....		
5			....	....	
6			....	....	
7		....	....	....	1.20
8		....	....	....	
9		Tr	....	0.50	....
10		0.29	0.01	0.01	....
11		0.14	....	0.06	....
12		0.09	0.02	....	....
13		0.03	....	....	....
14		....	....	0.05	0.63
15		0.29	....	....	0.01
16		....	0.03	2.24	....
17		0.20	....	....	....
18	....	....	0.51	....	....
19	....	....	....	....	....
20	....	....	....	....	Tr
21	....	0.21	....	....	....
22	....	....	....	....	....
23	....	....	Tr	....	....
24	0.02	Tr	0.54	....	....
25	Tr	....	....	....	0.01
26	....	....	....	....	....
27	....	0.09	....	0.06	....
28	....	0.67	....	Tr	....
29	....	0.33	....	....	....
30	....	....	....	Tr	Tr

TABLE V — *Continued*

	1919	1920	1921	1922	1923
JULY 1	....	0.06	....	Tr	Tr
2	....	0.31	....	....	....
3	....	....	....	....	Tr
4	0.11	....	....	....	....
5	....	....	....	Tr	0.41
6	....	1.00	....	0.85	....
7	....	0.17	0.95	0.87	0.01
8	....	....	0.07	Tr	....
9	Tr	....	....	0.37	0.03
10	....	....	....	0.05	0.15
11	....	....	....	0.03	....
12	0 02	....	....	1.73	....
13	....	0.25	Tr	0.01	....
14	0 01	....	0.21	....	0.03
15	....	....	....	....	0.35
16	....	....	....	....	....
17	....	0.18	0.01	1.27	....
18	....	0.28	0.44	....	....
19	....	....	....	....	....
20	....	....	....	....	Tr
21	0 12	....	....	....	....
22	....	....	....	0.68	....
23	....	0.37	0.01	0.03	0.55
24	....	0.01	....	....	....
25	....	....	....	....	....
26	0.25	....	0.07	....	....
27	0.72	....	0.61	0.06	0.02
28	....	0.13	....	....	0.04
29	....	0.01	....	....	....
30	Tr	....	Tr	0.10	0.03
31	....	....	0.04	....	....

TABLE V — *Concluded*

	1919	1920	1921	1922	1923
Aug. 1	....	....	....	....	....
2	....	....	....	....	0.04
3	....	....	Tr	....	Tr
4	....	....	Tr	....	....
5	....	Tr	....	Tr	....
6	....	Tr	0.01	1.13	Tr
7	Tr	0.11	0.30	0.71	Tr
8	....	1.61	0.01	....	....
9	....	0.20	....	Tr	....
10	....	....	0.05	....	....
11	....	....	0.40	....	....
12	....	0.39	....	....	Tr
13	0.49	Tr	1.14	....	....
14	....	....	....	....	0.06
15	Tr	....	....	....	....
16	0.12	....	....	....	....
17	0.32	....	1.28	0.42	Tr
18	0.63	....	....	....	0.18
19	....	....	0.58	....	....
20	....	0.25	0.11	....	....
21	0.47	0.98	....	0.01	0.55
22	....	....	....	.. .	....
23	....	....	....		Tr
24	....	....	....		0.38
25	....	....	....		....
26	....		0.18		....
27			0.07		1.92
28			Tr		
29			....		0.08
30					....
31					....

TABLE VI

Evaporation, Douglas Lake, Michigan

(c. c. per day, ending 7 P.M.)

	1915	1916	1917		1918	1919		1920		1921		1922	
	White	White	White	Black	White	White	Black	White	Black	White	Black	White	Black
June													
18	...	...	..	..	.	..			..	....	....	23.5	43.2
19	...	...	..	..	.		. .	.	..	....	....	27.3	46.9
20	...	...	.	..	.			.	..	....	....	20.2	32.7
21	...	...	.	..				.	..	....	....	30.3	43.9
22	...	...	.	..	.			.	..	....	....	30.9	44.8
23	...	...	.	..				.	..	....	....	46.0	53.5
24	...	...	..	..	.				..	....	....	59.6	66.1
25	...	...	.	..				....	....	....	....	24.8	35.4
26	..	..	.	..	.			49.0	59.5	....	. .	32.9	39.0
27	.	.	.	..	..		.	40.2	44.5	...	...	16.1	19.1
28	...	...	..	.	..	.		34.7	40.1	....	....	13.9	21.6
29	...	...	.	..	.		...	14.2	19.2	....	....	25.0	34.2
30	...	..	.	..	..	. .	....	31.4	41.8	....	....	22.6	33.1
July													
1	..	.	..	..	..	25.5	38.2	16.9	16.9	....	....	17.1	22.7
2	...	..	..	..	..	43.1	63.7	22.0	34.1	37.4		22.2	29.6
3	...	.		.	..	50.2	69.2	27.4	31.4	41.1	69.2	21.0	27.0
4	...	...		.	....	31.7	48.2	36.1	45.3	41.8	62.5	28.0	33.0
5	...	.	.		....	31.7	48.2	33.0	41.5	40.9	65.3	40.1	....
6	...	.	.	.	....	30.8	61.4	6.0	6.0	37.7	59.7	34.2	35.9
7	.	.	.	.	39.1	35.2	59.2	13.0	17.9	38.1	52.7	6.8	9.8
8	...	.	.	.	41.9	37.0	49.6	22.8	29.5	10.7	22.5	16.7	24.1
9	...	...	..	..	35.0	49.3	67.8	35.6	41.5	41.1	61.7	13.1	17.6
10		...	..	..	44.2	22.4	26.4	33.9	45.1	32.7	51.9	11.0	14.6
11		..	.	.	9.2	36.1	50.1	45.2	60.4	47.0	68.9	8.7	18.0
12		.	.	.	35.9	29.9	46.0	51.2	77.6	30.9	55.6	5.2	5.2
13	14.8 (74)	...	...	..	34.0	35.6	49.5	53.4	60.0	45.8	67.6	17.0	36.5
14		...	..	..	31.3	22.0	30.5	33.9	46.1	20.9	37.1	36.3	53.7
15		...	..	.	18.9	14.1	26.4	46.5	54.4	46.8	65.3	27.1	40.7
16			..	.	10.6	37.4	56.9	24.5	33.2	35.6	56.0	31.7	43.9
17			..	..	9.7	44.9	65.5	43.0	50.3	47.5	73.0	19.5	28.4
18		50 2 (300)	..	..	29.4	40.0	60.5	13.8	14.1	11.3	14.7	20.7	34.0
19	14.0 (98)		...	...	40.5	28.2	54.6	30.3	42.2	23.3	36.6	24.1	42.3
20			...	..	38.6	27.7	47.3	40.7	50.6	42.0	59.9	26.3	44.3
21			...	...	63.9	10.6	19.1	32.8	41.6	37.6	58.7	37.8	51.7
22					57.5	25.5	50.1	34.6	49.2	39.7	57.4	5.6	5.6
23		42.7 (194)	20.4 (61)	28.8 (86)	25.8	59.0	76.4	19.0	26.0	46.7	67.5	3.3	4.6
24					24.4	29.0	51.4	33.6	41.3	51.5	73.0	30.8	46.6
25	16.0 (112)				3.2	25.7	37.3	35.2	43.8	30.0	45.3	30.4	45.0
26		15.6 (44)	28.4 (97)	37.5 (128)	17.9	26.4	34.6	33.3	44.3	27.8	41.5	28.1	43.7
27					27.6	31.4	31.4	35.0	43.6	25.6	30.1	21.3	37.5
28					29.4	25.1	45.5	33.8	39.5	13.9	25.5	35.1	50.1
29		43.0 (137)	56.4 (205)	71.3 (259)	17.9	25.5	45.5	50.1	59.1	19.8	32.7	31.5	43.3
30					32.2	12.3	19.6	33.8	41.8	22.6	47.9	14.4	23.7
31					29.0	20.7	33.7	40.9	49.2	35.9	48.9	14.4	22.0

TABLE VI — *Concluded*

	1915	1916	1917		1918	1919		1920		1921		1922	
	White	White	White	Black	White	White	Black	White	Black	White	Black	White	Black
Aug.													
1	9.3 (65)				44.2	33.4	48.2	35.8	43.1	19.7	36.9	14.8	29.2
2		26.8 (97)	40.1 (128)	48.9 (156)	34.0	31.7	47.3	37.1	46.6	26.5	43.8	26.8	42.9
3					15.6	22.9	35.5	39.2	49.3	28.8	42.6	21.7	35.9
4					31.3	26.4	35.5	47.4	61.6	28.8	45.6	22.6	34.3
5					18.4	12.3	22.3	25.6	30.1	39.0	52.3	17.7	24.7
6		27.5 (146)	24.6 (99)	32.5 (131)	28.1	25.5	39.1	26.2	38.4	35.4	45.8	2.3	2.3
7					17.9	15.8	29.1	32.4	54.3	19.1	19.7	8.6	16.2
8	10.4 (73)				0	25.5	41.9	19.1	19.1	20.9	34.4	26.7	39.6
9			18.0 (50)	21.6 (60)	0	26.4	42.8	11.8	16.6	35.2	52.4	22.7	34.4
10		16.0 (30)			30.8	25.5	41.0	21.3	30.9	30.9	43.4	18.1	33.1
11					30.8	28.2	41.9	26.9	34.9	7.6	7.6	27.0	39.5
12			12.8 (51)	18.4 (73)	23.0	29.9	42.8	15.9	18.5	14.3	28.5	32.6	45.1
13		40.0 (164)			34.5	24.6	28.2	6.5	9.7	6.4	7.6	23.8	
14					33.6	10.6	21.8	14.4	19.3	29.2	44.3		
15	14.6				37.7	17.6	28.2	29.4	39.9	37.6	52.5		
16	(102)		28.3 (85)	32.3 (97)	29.0	31.7	41.9	39.0	48.3	30.9	44.1		
17		23.9 (139)			28.5	11.4	14.6	33.6	....	9.2	9.2		
18			...	...	35.4	4.4	11.8	39.0	....	18.8	33.5		
19			...	...	38.6	22.9	40.0	45.7	....	5.0	5.0		
20	...		...	...	0	....	....	....	....	19.3	32.7		
21	...		...	...	21.7	....	....	....	....	21.4	36.6		
22	...	26.5 (71)	...	...		....	....	....	....	23.0	36.3		
23	...		...	...	....	....	....	....	....	25.4	41.9		
24	...		...	...	....	....	....	....	....	26.0	37.3		
25	...	...	...	...	....	....	....	....	....	24.2	39.4		
26	...	...	...	...	....	....	....	....	....	26.4	38.3		
Seas'n total	524	1322	766	990	1280.2	1390.7	2117.7	1727.1	2042.9	1793.6	2420.4	1318.0	1825.8
Total days	40	40	27	27	46	50	50	55	52	56	55	57	55
Rate per day	13.1	33.1	28.4	36.7	27.8	27.8	42.4	31.4	39.3	32.0	44.0	23.1	33.2

TABLE VII

EFFECT OF SOLAR INTENSITY ON EVAPORATION, DOUGLAS LAKE, MICHIGAN

(c. c. per day)

	1919	1920	1921	1922		1919	1920	1921	1922
JUNE 18	...	.	....	19.7	JULY 23	17.4	7.0	20.8	1.3
19		.	....	19.6	24	22.4	7.7	21.5	15.8
20	...	..	....	12.5	25	11.6	8.6	15.3	14.6
21	.	.	....	13.6	26	8.2	11.0	13.7	15.6
22	.	..	....	13.9	27	0	8.6	4.5	16.2
23		...	...	7.5	28	20.4	5.7	11.6	15.0
24		...	....	6.5	29	20.0	9.0	12.9	11.8
25	.	....	....	10.6	30	7.3	8.0	25.3	9.3
26	....	10.5	....	6.1	31	13.0	8.3	13.0	7.6
27	...	4.3	....	3.0	AUG. 1	14.8	7.3	17.2	14.4
28	....	5.4	....	7.7	2	15.6	9.5	17.3	16.1
29	....	5.0	....	9.2	3	12.6	10.1	13.8	14.2
30	....	10.4	....	10.5	4	9.1	14.2	16.8	11.7
JULY 1	12.7	0	....	5.6	5	10.0	4.5	13.3	7.0
2	20.6	12.1	....	7.4	6	13.6	12.2	10.4	0
3	19.0	4.0	28.1	6.0	7	13.3	21.9	0.6	7.6
4	16.5	9.2	20.7	5.0	8	16.4	0	13.5	12.9
5	16.5	8.5	24.4	....	9	16.4	4.8	17.2	11.7
6	30.6	0	22.0	1.7	10	15.5	9.6	12.5	15.0
7	24.0	4.9	14.6	3.0	11	13.7	8.0	0	12.5
8	12.6	6.7	11.8	7.4	12	12.9	2.6	14.2	12.5
9	18.5	5.9	20.6	4.5	13	3.6	3.2	1.2	
10	4.0	11.2	19.2	3.6	14	11.2	4.9	15.1	
11	14.0	15.2	21.9	9.3	15	10.6	10.5	14.9	
12	16.1	26.4	24.7	0	16	10.2	9.3	13.2	
13	13.9	6.6	21.8	19.5	17	3.2	....	0	
14	8.5	12.2	16.2	17.4	18	7.4	....	14.7	
15	12.3	7.9	18.5	13.6	19	17.1	....	0	
16	19.5	8.7	20.4	12.2	20	....	....	13.4	
17	20.6	7.3	25.5	8.9	21	....	....	15.2	
18	20.5	0.3	3.4	13.3	22	....	....	13.3	
19	26.4	11.9	13.3	18.2	23	....	....	16.5	
20	19.6	9.9	17.9	18.0	24	....	....	11.3	
21	8.5	8.8	21.1	13.9	25	....	....	15.2	
22	24.6	14.6	17.7	0	26	....	....	11.9	

THE HISTORICAL BACKGROUND OF EASTERN EUROPE

PRESTON SLOSSON

In passing across Europe from the Rhine to the Volga we take the road to Yesterday. Germany east of the Elbe is markedly less like our own familiar world of industry, prosperity and material comfort than western Germany. The Polish lands are again somewhat less disciplined by factory and school than the Prussian lands. Farm-houses are spaced more widely, roads are muddier, rail-routes are fewer, peasant customs and costumes less affected by the influence of the great cities. But Poland, once more, is "western" in contrast to Russia. With the frontier of Russia ends the Roman Catholic Church, the parliamentary State, the traditional culture of Latin, chivalry, nationalism and territorial aristocracy which bind Poland to central rather than to eastern Europe. In Russia we meet a new level of civilization and in some respects, it must be confessed, a lower one. Below a small Europeanized upper class, now largely dispersed by the whirlwind of revolution, we find a peasant folk, more numerous than all the inhabitants of the United States of America, whose standard of living is rather that of Asia than of Europe.

A majority of them can neither read nor write. Their death rate, apart from either war or revolution, is nearly twice that of the cities of western Europe or America. In famine times they die by millions as men die only in the river valleys of China and of India. The factors which have made history for ourselves: the faith of Rome, the feudal system, the Renascence, the Reformation, the enlightenment of the eighteenth century, the liberalism and industrialism of the early nineteenth century have touched them hardly at all. Their trade is agriculture, but they

are equally remote from the thrifty French peasant turning every inch of ground into fruitfulness with his spade culture and the shrewd Yankee farmer with his Ford tractors and keen sense of land values. The Russian peasant labors, perhaps, as hard as either of them but his rewards are less. He must make his own tools, and he does not know how to make the best ones. His methods are those of his ancestors; no one has taught him to seek out improvements. Markets are very far away, and means of transportation, always inadequate, have not been bettered by years of confusion and civil war. To him the revolution meant almost wholly the chance to increase his little farm or strip of common land and thus obviate the old necessity of eking out his meager living by days of extra labor as a farmhand on a great estate or casual labor in the towns.

Political power is not his as yet, nor even political liberty. By a strange paradox, Russia, the most purely agricultural of all great nations, is the one in which townsmen most completely dominate the national destinies. The Soviet constitution discriminates against the peasant. Not only is the proportionate voting power of the town proletariat greater than that of the peasants, but the delegates from the great cities are chosen to the all-Russian Congress of Soviets almost directly, while the vote of the peasant is filtered through a long series of district, county and provincial bodies. Any attempt at real insurgence is repressed at once by Bolshevik armies. By mere possession of the fields and their crops the peasants have been able to wring some vital concessions from the Government. In spite of the law nationalizing all lands, the peasants have in practice been permitted to hold the lands they actually occupy and cultivate as if they were peasant freeholds under a system of private property. Even the old village commune which once collectively administered the land is said by Russian observers to be giving way to individual farms. Also the peasant has won the right again, at first in despite of law, to sell his goods at market price instead of surrendering his entire surplus to the Government for distribution. But in all other things the affairs of Russia at home and abroad are wielded by a bureaucracy es-

sentially as alien to the country-side as the old bureaucracy of the Tsar.

In one respect the Russian peasant is better off than the medieval serf. He can wander; there is a shifting frontier. The endless forests, farmlands and grassy steppes of Russia and Siberia have nothing to hold the native to one spot. If his smoky wooden hut should catch fire — as it is almost sure to do at least once or twice a lifetime — he moves. If the used-up, overhandled land fails to maintain its former yield of crops — he moves; it is cheaper than buying fertilizer and easier than studying the rotation of crops. If oppression from Tsar or Soviet official becomes unendurable — he moves. Different in so much else, the Russian is like the American in this, that he will probably die in another place than that where he was born. "The mountain," it is said, "holds its own and beckons its wanderers to return. The plain bids you ride at a venture and go where your eyes glance." In this way half Europe and half Asia have been penetrated by the Russian frontiersman, tough, stolid and cheerful, ax over his shoulder, fraternizing readily with the natives among whom his lot is cast — an ideal pioneer. Hardships mean little to a man who may better his lot in a new place and can hardly make it worse. Thus to balance our old frontier, the "Wild West," Europe has created a "Wild East," that shifting borderland of the Caspian and the Urals where the last reaches of European civilization merge into the utter barbarism of Central Asia.

Southeastern Europe in many ways shares the backwardness of Russia. Here in the Balkans also we find illiteracy, poverty, primitive methods of industry and agriculture, the ideas and ideals of dead centuries. But we find also a fighting nationalism, a local territorial tradition, and a participation of the peasantry in the game of politics, which distinguish Bulgaria and Serbia, for example, from the Russian scene. Class antagonisms are perhaps less marked than in Russia, for the retreat of the Turk, like the retreat of some great glacier, left society ground down to a fairly uniform level. But national hatreds and feuds make every frontier an entrenchment and degrade diplo-

macy to the level of conspiracy. And now the succession states of what was once the Austro-Hungarian Empire form a new Balkans, better educated and more industrialized indeed but equally the victim of military and political rivalry.

From Poland, Russia, the Danube lands and the Balkan highland come many of our latest recruits to American citizenship. They all desire to become good American citizens, but inevitably they bring with them the handicap of their old environment. Because of this, there is great danger that Americans of west European ancestry misunderstand their new compatriots. Misunderstanding usually takes the form of underestimation. We do not extend to the rivalry of Serb and Bulgar or Pole and Lithuanian the same tolerance which we have learned to grant to the rivalry of Irishman and Englishman. We call a people stupid because they are illiterate, although this fact may prove nothing but the stupidity of their former rulers who failed to supply the needed schools. We call a people naturally warlike and troublesome although they may be peace-loving farmers whose little states were pushed about like pawns upon the diplomatic chessboard to suit the plans of the Great Powers. In every Russian we suspect a Bolshevik although the majority of Russians have but endured Bolshevism as Belgium endured a German army of occupation during the war. That eastern Europe is backward cannot be denied by the currently accepted standards of our civilization such as the standard of living, education, industrial productivity, good government and public health. Are the causes of this backwardness inherent or do they lie in certain traceable historical events which we must study in order to understand the people whom they have affected?

Much is said today about the all-determining factors of race or climate, but we cannot find in them the key to the unfortunate condition of eastern Europe. Dillon traces the misfortunes of Russia to the native weakness of the Russian character, an anarchic inability for organized coöperation; he calls the Russian the "boneless man of Europe." He explains this character by the intermingling in the Russian of the temperamental Slav with the primitive Finnish tribes of northern Russia. But the Slavs

of Bohemia and the Finns of Finland have created republics orderly and progressive, which will bear comparison with the most advanced nations of Europe. Other writers say that the Slavic peoples are mostly of the "Alpine" race, which is alleged to be so inferior to the "great race" of Nordics who have peopled America from northwestern Europe. But if the Poles and Ukrainians are Alpine, so are the Swiss who have established the best governed commonwealth in Europe, the brilliant Italians of the northern provinces and the capable and thrifty peasants of central France. The Russian and Polish literature of the nineteenth century ranks second only to the English and French, and Slavic names are numerous in every branch of art and science. Racial inferiority is evidently not here in case.

Nor can it be contended that the slight climatic difference between the oceanic west of Europe and the continental east is sufficient to account for the difference in culture of the two regions. Much greater differences exist between different parts of our own country without creating any marked effect on American life. The natural resources of eastern Europe are sufficient to maintain the highest civilization. When one considers the high level of prosperity in isolated and arid Australia, perhaps higher than the average even of our own country, one can find no reason in nature's economy for the dire poverty of the rich plains of the Danube and the Dnieper. No doubt the isolation and the cold winters of Russia delayed the coming of civilization to that country, but much greater obstacles have not prevented the development of Canada. Nor can this excuse be offered at all on behalf of the Balkans who shared the civilization of Greece and Rome when our ancestors were still skin-clad savages.

Evidently then we can interpret the troubles of eastern Europe today only by reference to the particular events of their history. And here, I think, we find a more than sufficient explanation for the relative backwardness of this region. In the course of modern history we of western Europe, and particularly the English speaking peoples, have had all the "breaks" with

us, to use a baseball term. The greatness of England, for example, is the cumulative result of a vigorous race; a mild but stimulating climate; excellent harbors; extensive deposits of coal and iron; security from invasion by an insular position, and yet close neighborhood to other highly developed nations; the cultural contacts of the Roman faith, the Renascence and the Reformation; an early establishment of national unity under the capable Norman kings; an early emergence from serfdom and feudal tenures; a favorable position for overseas trade and colonial expansion; a successful revolt against royal absolutism at the very time when continental Europe was accepting absolute monarchs; an influx of religious refugees from the continent who were at the same time skilled craftsmen; a liberal tradition in government fostered by the security from foreign invasions and relative freedom from civil wars; a series of political accidents, such as the coming to the throne of a line of German kings who cared little for English politics, which resulted in the establishment of parliamentary government and the cabinet system. No wonder that men of English speech believe that progress is the universal law of history!

But how would a Russian look at history? He would see first Greek missionaries bringing religion and civilization to scattered Slavic tribes, but by the same act separating Russia from cultural contact with the Roman Catholic nations of the rest of Europe. He would see the vigorous life of the city states of Kiev and Novgorod trampled underfoot by savages from Mongolia and Turkestan. Wave after wave of Barbarian nomads sweeping in through the gap between the Urals and the Caspian: Huns, Avars, Bulgars, Magyars, Khazars, Patzinaks, Kumans and Tatars, each destroying not only the culture of the Slav but the beginnings of civilization created by the last invaders. He would see ages of subjection to Tatar overlords, unspeakable humiliations and a growing habit of servitude. He would see independence established under the despotic princes of Moscow who ruthlessly crushed out every aspiration of civic life. He would see the massacres of the old aristocracy by Ivan the Terrible; the devastating civil war of the "troublous times"; the estab-

lishment of serfdom at the very time when it was disappearing in the west; the ever widening social gulf between the classes. He would see Peter the Great bringing European life to a Russia which had become an Asia-in-Europe, but at the same time stiffening militarism and bureaucracy and leading his country into bloody foreign wars. He would see Peter's incompetent successors playing his game of repression at home and adventure abroad without his genius for reform and victory. He would see the liberal movement bringing to Russia only revolution, and modern industrial invention bringing only factory slavery and the doctrines of socialism. The costly blunders of the Crimean and Manchurian wars were followed by the disastrous losses of the Great War, the fall of Tsardom, the civil war which wrecked the republic and the establishment of a class dictatorship on its ruins. Had almost any factor in Russian history been different the result would have been better: had Christianity come from the west instead of the east; had the Tatar invasion turned aside; had certain Muscovite princes or Russian Tsars never lived; had Peter and Catherine brought relief for the peasants as well as culture for the aristocracy; had the emancipation of the serf begun before it was too late to create a contented class of peasant freemen, Russian life today might be on a level with that of France or Germany.

The case of Russia is perhaps extreme, but any patriot of a country of eastern Europe must feel the deep note of tragedy in the history of his fatherland. Modern Greece looks back to her golden age more than two thousand years ago, but her immediate past is one of slavery to the alien and barbarous Turkish power. What would any country of western Europe be like after some four centuries of Turkish rule? The whole Balkan area and for a time even Hungary underwent the same degrading subjection, unlearning all the habits of civil freedom. Slavs and Magyars alike must begin anew their national life from that point in the middle ages where progress was halted by foreign invasion and conquest. Poland, Czechoslovakia, the Baltic republics of Lithuania, Latvia, Esthonia and Finland are in somewhat better case, having escaped the decivilizing rule of Turk

and Tatar, but they have been thwarted in their normal national development by the imposition of foreign institutions. The mere struggle for national existence exhausted the energies which might have gone into political and economic reform and intellectual achievement. The rapid industrial progress of Germany and Italy after their wars of unification as compared with the stagnation which preceded national unity shows how greatly dependent is the progress of a nation on the solution of its main political problem. Poland has now the first chance in more than a century; Czechoslovakia in three centuries, of showing what it can do.

The effect of foreign rule and conquest on the recently subject nationalities of eastern Europe is evident and familiar. Equally important is the fact that serfdom lingered late, as it arrived late, in Poland and Hungary as well as in Russia. Even yet a wide social gulf separates the old landholding class from the freedmen who were so recently serfs. A disorderly aristocracy, an impoverished peasantry, and a weak and largely alien middle class, such a social structure could not protect the independence of Poland, Hungary and Bohemia from the aggressive energy of the Hapsburg and Hohenzollern despots, and left Russia at the mercy of an unworthy ruling house and a corrupt bureaucracy. Deep in the soil of history lie the roots of all that troubles or perplexes us today in eastern Europe and the east European immigrant.

University of Michigan

EXTRA-CURRICULAR FACTORS AND AFTER-SUCCESS

ADELBERT FORD

WHAT is the relation of a student's life in college to the degree of his success after he graduates? The answer contains, of course, many variables. It depends on the nature of the occupation he will follow; it depends on how we measure success. It might be interesting to note, however, the extent to which the majority of occupations require certain particular traits.

Some time ago Wesleyan University measured success in terms of the ability to get into *Who's Who*,[1] and found that high college grades increased the probability of attaining a place in this collection of famous biographies. Dr. D. E. Rice [2] measured success in terms of salary-earning ability, and found that high college grades were correlated with the capacity to earn a good income. Pressey and Ralston [3] found that the professional and commercial executives transmitted a superior grade of intelligence to their offspring, indicating that the successful classes, both from the standpoint of money and prestige, were intellectually gifted. This latter investigation harmonizes with the conclusions of Terman.[4]

In some of the work cited above as many as fifty per cent of the superior students failed to acquire after-success by either the money or the prestige standard as compared with about ninety per cent of the mediocre students who failed to acquire distinction. It is the aim of this paper to indicate some reasons why students with superior ability fail after they graduate. The suggestion has been made that although high intelligence is

[1] Hollingsworth, H. L., *Vocational Psychology*, p. 192 ff.

[2] *Ibid.*, p. 195 ff.

[3] Pressey, S. L., and Ralston, Ruth, *The Relation of the General Intelligence of School Children to the Occupation of the Father, Journ. of App. Psych.*, 3: 366 ff.

[4] Terman, L. M., *The Intelligence of School Children*, p. 188 ff.

a prime requisite for almost any calling which a graduate pursues, there are many times when peculiar character traits in an individual prevent him from being given a chance to use his intelligence. A man with a high intelligence but a disagreeable personality may never get the chance to use his wonderful gift because neither a professional nor a commercial executive wants such a man around. Nearly all positions necessitate some degree of social capacity, the quantity depending on the nature of the work and the character of the superior officers.

We desired to indicate the relation of the social element to a graduate's success as measured by the money standard. The following bit of evidence is admittedly brief and is subject to certain possibilities of error — the questionnaire method always brings in the likelihood of a biased selection in the cases. There is the criticism concerning our right to group together a large number of seemingly unrelated occupations and to draw common conclusions. We decided to allow membership in campus organizations to constitute a standard for social ability.

Questionnaires were sent to two hundred and fifty-eight graduates of 1912 in the College of Literature, Science and the Arts, University of Michigan. Ten questionnaires were returned for lack of proper address. About forty per cent of the remainder answered, or ninety-eight. Fourteen of these were eliminated for insufficient data. On these replies were stated the graduate's occupation, salary, and a history of his campus activities while in residence at Michigan.

The returned questionnaires were now arranged into two groups, Part I and Part II, strictly at random. Part I contained forty cases; Part II, forty-four cases. All campus activities of a similar nature were thrown together and an average taken of all the salaries of members in each activity-group. 'Non-membership' was considered as a trait, as was 'age.' The following table gives a list of the activities derived from Part I with the rank and average salary of members in each group. It is perhaps needless to say that the rank of any one factor in the following table may be thoroughly unreliable for lack of cases. We have no right, for example, to assume that the

scholastic honorary societies actually belong in Rank 19; we are concerned with campus activities *as a whole, not in particular.*

TABLE OF EXTRA-CURRICULAR FACTORS

Rank	Name of Group	Cases	Average Salary
1	Popular honorary	22	$10,649.00
2	Campus committees	11	9,986.00
3	Fraternity presidents	2	9,750.00
4	Michigan Union members	6	8,366.00
5	Debating societies	5	8,350.00
6	Law clubs	6	7,942.00
7	Religious societies	5	7,937.00
8	Michigan Daily staff	7	7,569.00
9	Musical organizations	5	6,680.00
10	Non-membership	6	6,360.00
11	Michigan Union Opera	6	6,316.00
12	Fraternity members	9	6,275.00
13	Lodges	6	6,073.00
14	Major athletics	3	5,866.00
15	Young men	20	5,827.00
16	Old men	20	5,572.00
17	Monthly periodical staff	8	5,493.00
18	Minor clubs	20	5,270.00
19	Scholastic honorary societies	3	3,850.00
20	Language clubs	3	3,233.00

Now there were a great many students who belonged in several activity-groups with widely differing salary-weights. We had allowed the average salary drawn by all members in a given activity to stand for the weight of that activity. When a student belonged to several activity-groups, the weights for these groups were averaged and allowed to stand for the value of this student's campus activities. The following is an example of the method of weighting a single individual's extra-curricular factors. Case A belonging in Part I was a member of the following groups:

Name of Group	Average Salary
Popular honorary	$10,649
Campus committees	9,986
Michigan Union members	8,366
Young men	5,827
Language clubs	3,233
Average for Case A	$7,610

We thus have \$7,610 becoming the "activity weight" for this particular student. His salary ten years after graduation was \$3,500. His activity weight was therefore above average, while his actual salary was below average. It will be seen that a great many cases like this would militate against a high positive coefficient.

We now compute the coefficient of correlation for both Part I and Part II by the Pearson formula for the unscattered arrangement of data:

$$r = \frac{\Sigma XY}{\sqrt{\Sigma X_2 \cdot \Sigma Y_2}}$$

The average salary for the cases in Part I was \$5,713; the coefficient of correlation for Part I was .62, P. E. .06565. But it must be remembered that the weights for Part I were so arranged as to secure as high a coefficient as possible, so this correlation figure must be further tested on new and random samples. Part II had been reserved for this purpose, having been drawn by lot before any computation was started.

The average salary for members in Part II was \$4,639. The correlation coefficient was .44, P. E. .08269, — high enough to be statistically reliable for forty-four cases. The weights used for Part II were identical with those used for Part I, so there could be no suspicion of a secondary manipulation of weights producing an exaggerated figure.

The significance of the foregoing result does not lead us into assuming that it is more important for a student to be socially minded than intelligent, or that he should spend more time on fraternity activities and dances than on his school work. Such a conclusion cannot hold in the face of the evidence we have cited in our introduction. Rather we must conclude that intellectual activity is exceedingly necessary on the college campus, that the average post-graduation occupation needs a good scholastic training, but after-success is exceedingly difficult, even for the intellectually gifted, when coupled with an unsocial disposition.

University of Michigan

SOME FACTORS GOVERNING THE SEROLOGY OF SYPHILIS BY PRECIPITATION

R. L. KAHN

Studies on the phenomenon of precipitation in syphilis carried out over a period of several years in connection with the development of the author's precipitation test indicate that the following requirements are essential to a practical test: concentration; instability of antigen-dilution; correct serum-antigen proportions; uniformity of procedure. In the author's test an attempt has been made to meet these requirements

Concentration. — The alcoholic extract antigen is prepared with a view to obtaining high concentration. Powdered, instead of wet, heart muscle is employed. For further dehydration and for removal of fat and non-specific lipoids, the powdered muscle is given preliminary extraction with ether. The powder is then extracted with ninety-five per cent alcohol. To the alcoholic extract is added a given amount of cholesterin — thereby increasing the lipoid concentration of the antigen. In diluting the antigen for use in the tests, a minimum amount of salt solution — determined by titration — is employed. When serum is tested with the diluted antigen, it is employed in undiluted form.

Instability of Antigen-Dilution. — There is a high degree of instability in the antigen-dilution used in the author's test. The diluted antigen contains a precipitate which is so unstable as to dissolve readily in serum.

Correct Serum-Antigen Proportions. — Complete precipitation in serum-antigen mixtures is apparently obtained only when the number of reacting substances in the serum corresponds to the number of reacting substances in the antigen. In conformity with this requirement three different serum-antigen proportions are used in the author's test, since serums from different stages of syphilis contain varying numbers of reacting substances.

Uniformity of Procedure. — The method of antigen preparation has been so standardized as to assure highly constant results in the hands of different workers. The various other steps of the procedure have also been sufficiently standardized to reduce the variation in results to a minimum.

As a result of the application of these fundamental principles, the author's test possesses the following features: (1) The element of incubation is eliminated, precipitates appearing within a few minutes after mixing serum with antigen dilution; (2) The method permits direct quantitative measurement of the serum reacting substances and is especially adapted to serological research; (3) Simplicity of procedure is combined with a high degree of specificity and sensitiveness, as indicated by over 78,000 examinations.

Bureau of Laboratories
Michigan Department of Health
Lansing, Michigan

VARIATIONS IN THE INTESTINAL FLORA OF RATS

HELEN S. MITCHELL

Intestinal flora observation on rats is not a new or a unique procedure, for this has been done many times by Rettger and Cheplin and other workers, but there are some rather significant variations with changes in diets which we have noted and which we offer as suggestions for further work rather than as proved facts.

Our attention was first called to these variations in making some tests on commercial sugars as to their relative value in changing the intestinal flora. The rats for such tests were fed on an almost exclusive meat diet and the proteolytic type of flora thus established would remain consistently such, unless certain forms of carbohydrate or other preparations fed in addition had the power to increase the aciduric type of bacteria. By noting the extent of the change and the time necessary for it to take place, consistent results could be obtained in testing the relative value of products in question. Our observations in general confirm those previously reported, namely, that the most extensive changes to the aciduric type were obtained with dextrine, lactose, or a combination of the two, and that less marked changes were noted with other carbohydrates such as sucrose, maltose, or corn-starch.

Where a *B. acidophilus* culture in whey or other medium lacking carbohydrate is fed to "meat" rats, the intestinal flora change is very slight. From these experiments we conclude that the presence of a favorable medium for growth is more important than the inoculation with the organism itself.

We then became curious regarding the intestinal flora of the rats on our various experimental diets and took a series of pre-

liminary tests. At first there appeared to be no correlation between the type of diet and the intestinal flora, except where milk or certain sugars were included in the diet. More extensive and careful observation, however, has shown several interesting variations.

Observations on a large number of our rats on synthetic paste foods (casein, corn-starch, salt mixture, crisco, and butter fat) showed few acidophilus colonies and a percentage of gram positive organisms ranging from fifteen to sixty per cent. The variation was so great that no relationship could be noted except that here, as on the stock diet, the older rats tended to show the greater percentage of proteolytic organisms.

The possibility of dietary deficiencies and intestinal flora changes being correlated was then investigated. When the diets were deficient in vitamin B, there were almost no acidophilus colonies and the percentage of gram positive organisms was extremely low. When yeast or wheat germ was added as a source of vitamin there was improvement, but no significant difference in the source of vitamin used. A low calcium diet had no effect upon the intestinal flora.

In all cases where casein or egg white furnished the sole source of protein and corn-starch the carbohydrate, there was a small percentage of acidophilus, but where a cereal protein made approximately one-third or more of the protein, there was a definite increase in the number of aciduric organisms varying with the type of cereal. In this series of experiments the cereal made sixty-two per cent of the diet and furnished one-third of the protein.

	Percentage of acidophilus	Gram pos.	Gram neg.	Coli-like
Corn-meal	6	35	65	xx
	10	40	60	x
Oatmeal	20	50	50	x
	25	55	45	x
Whole wheat	15	45	55	x
	17	50	50	x
White flour	5	35	65	xx
	7	40	60	x

One reason for this variation may be in the speed of absorption of the carbohydrate, but I doubt if that could entirely account for the striking differences noted.

Another explanation is suggested by the rather surprising results obtained from the feeding of two grams of eighty per cent gluten biscuit to rats on an exclusive meat diet.

Rat	Date	Gram		Coli-like	Diet
		pos.	neg.		50%
No. 68	7–20	10	90	xxx	meat
Gluten added	7–20	..	..	...	protein
	7–26	25	75	x	
	7–30	45	55	x	
	8–7	65	35	x	
No. 672	9–23	20	80	xxx	100%
Gluten added	9–25	..	..	...	meat
	9–30	35	65	xx	
	10–9	55	45	x	

The change from the typical putrefactive flora to a moderately aciduric type was striking, considering that almost no carbohydrate was included in the diet. There would seem to be a definite influence exerted by the type or source of protein. Such a result suggests an interesting application in the treatment of intestinal disorders in diabetics where carbohydrates cannot be given for changing the flora.

Most of the experiments recorded by other writers and those reported here have been dealing with the possibility of changing the intestinal flora, but few observations have been made concerning the effect that such a change might have on the general condition and growth of the rat. Opportunity for such an observation presented itself in connection with a series of experiments conducted with the assistance of Miss E. Latimer, where several different sugars as well as starch were used as the sole source of carbohydrate in the diets. During the two months' period observed there were marked differences in the growth, general condition and intestinal flora changes.

Source of carbohydrate	Gain in weight	Condition	Percentage of acidophilus
Starch	183	good	1 – 10
	217	good	2 – 20
Lactose	149	fair	15 – 97
	158	fair	20 – 93
Maltose	260	excellent	7 – 15
	213	excellent	5 – 10
Dextrine	192	fair	30 – 80
	182	fair	25 – 65
Sucrose	191	good	4 – 17
	199	good	7 – 10

Because of the extreme laxative quality of the lactose, growth was retarded for a period and an astringent had to be administered in order to continue the experiment at all. But with all these digressions there was a steady increase in the aciduric type of bacteria in this group. Likewise in the dextrine group there was almost complete change to the acidophilus, but in neither of these groups was the condition of the animal as good as on the other diets, especially the maltose.

This preliminary experiment would suggest the conclusion that a supposedly beneficial intestinal flora will not alone produce a good condition in a rat, and that where a marked change of flora takes place it indicates a poor utilization of the sugar on the part of the animal itself and consequent retarded growth. On the other hand where a carbohydrate is easily utilized by the body, so little of it reaches the colon that the intestinal flora changes are slight. When lactose or dextrine are used as only a portion of the carbohydrate, the bacterial change is almost as complete and the untoward effects upon growth and general condition are not observed.

Another group of intestinal flora experiments are being conducted in our laboratory under the direction of F. T. Breidigan in confirmation of the work of Braafladt reported in the *Journal of Infectious Diseases*, November, 1923, to observe the possible influence of kaolin on the intestinal bacteria. Rats on an exclusive meat diet with a consequent proteolytic flora were fed one gram of kaolin daily and the result was a definite, although

not complete, change toward the aciduric type. The beneficial effect of the kaolin is probably due to adsorption of toxins produced by proteolytic organisms and the consequent establishment of a more favorable environment for the growth of the aciduric types. When a new source of kaolin was used for a period, the change was much less pronounced, indicating that various sources of kaolin may have different adsorptive qualities.

Histological studies of the tissues of rats showing different types of intestinal flora have shown no consistent abnormalities, the only marked pathological changes being noted in rats on meat diets where a variety of other factors would come into question.

It is our conclusion that the chief value of intestinal flora research on rats so far is concerned with the testing of various types of foodstuffs, rather than in attempting to correlate these bacterial changes with the growth and development of the rat, which is susceptible to so many other conditions.

In conclusion I wish to thank Dr. H. Tsuchiya, who made the bacteriological examinations.

Helen S. Mitchell
Nutrition Research Laboratory
Battle Creek Sanitarium
Battle Creek, Michigan

THE INHIBITION OF THE STOMACH IN NECTURUS

T. L. PATTERSON

About twenty years ago, Boldyreff (1) working in Pavlov's laboratory discovered that the stomach of the dog when in the empty condition exhibited peristaltic movements. These movements contrary to the ordinary gastric peristalsis during digestion were more vigorous and showed a definite periodicity separated by intervening periods of rest. This investigator, however, did not connect the gastric contractions with the genesis of the hunger sensation. This work was confirmed and extended by Cannon and Washburn (2) in this country and to these authors we owe the actual demonstration of the synchrony of the hunger sensation with the strong contractions of the empty stomach. A year later (1912) Carlson (3) and his coworkers demonstrated on man and experimental animals that a certain type of contractions in the empty or nearly empty stomach gave rise to the sensation of hunger by stimulation of the sensory nerves, not in the gastric mucosa, but in the submucosa or muscularis.

About eight years ago, after having done considerable work on the movements of the empty stomach of dogs, the author of this paper inaugurated a series of comparative studies on the lower vertebrates with the intention of carrying the investigations to certain of the invertebrate forms. At the present time such studies have been made on the frog (4, 5, 6), turtle (4), Necturus (7), and several species of marine mollusks (8). This communication deals with the nervous control of the empty stomach in Necturus.

Previous work (7) has indicated that the controlling influence of the vago-sympathetics is largely inhibitory. This phenomenon

FIG. 13. This figure illustrates arrangement of apparatus for determining the influence of the vago-sympathetics on gastric activity in Necturus. TWF, rubber tube from water faucet; TT, glass T-tubes; WT, water-troughs for lower portion of gills; AH, animal-holder; OT, outlet tubes; TM, tube to manometer with balloon attached at opposite end, the latter being introduced into the stomach through a stomostomy opening in the floor of the mouth (not shown); CTTG, curved T-tube to keep upper portion of gills moist; IV, incisions for vagi; ITC, incision for transecting cord; Th, thermometer; L, ligatures attached to vago-sympathetics; S, support for apparatus; C, clamp to regulate flow of water through tubes.

is contrary to that which exists in the stomachs of higher animals, although it has been shown by Hopf (9) for the frog and Bercovitz and Rogers (10) for the turtle that the tenth nerve contains both motor and inhibitory fibers to the stomach with the motor type predominating at least in the frog.

The method used for the study of this problem consisted in transecting the spinal cord between the first and second cervical vertebra under either anaesthesia followed immediately by a stomostomy operation (11) near the angle of the mandible, for the introduction of the rubber balloon into the stomach via mouth and esophagus, for the recording of the gastric contractions. (See Fig. 13.) The vagi were isolated dorsally and near

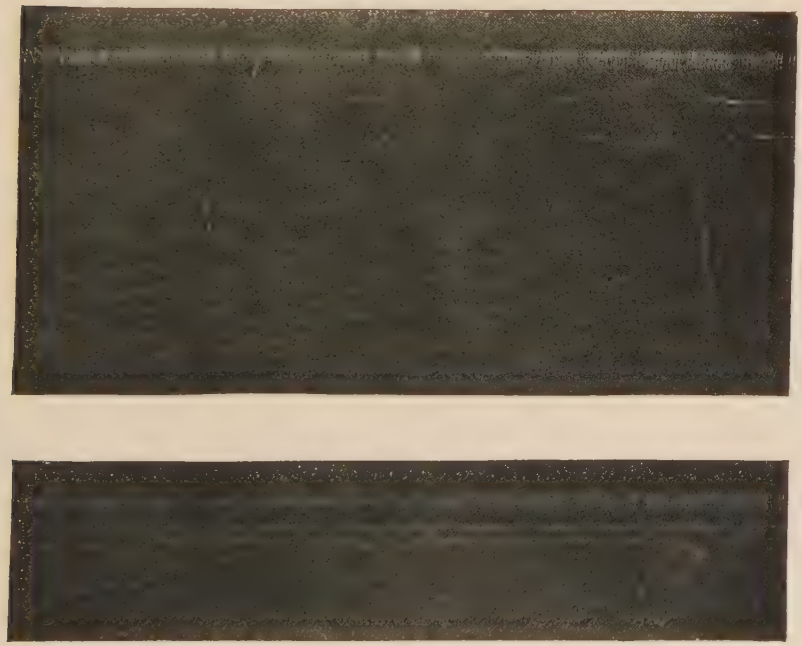


FIG. 14. Movements of the empty stomach of Necturus before and after double vagotomy. A, normal contractions with the vago-sympathetic nerves intact; B, contractions from the same animal's stomach after section of both vago-sympathetic nerves. Note the augmentation of the contractions due to the removal of the inhibitory influence. Straight line below curves = 0 mm. pressure of water manometer. Time in five second intervals.

their exit from the cranium for a distance of 3 to 5 mm. and lifting ligatures were placed under each nerve. These nerves can be isolated without hemorrhage. The incisions were plugged with cotton moistened with normal saline and the animals, dorsal side up, were placed on a specially constructed animal-holder with water-troughs, whereby the gills were constantly covered with running water, both from above and below. Respiration and circulation are fairly normally maintained for periods ranging from three to five days, during which time the effect of the vago-sympathetics on the stomach can be determined. (See Fig. 14.)

Stimulation of the vago-sympathetic, even slight traction, produced inhibition or stoppage of the movements of the empty stomach. (See Fig. 15.) Ligaturing and sectioning of both vago-

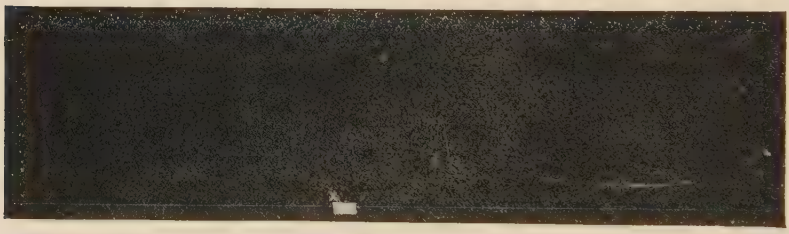


Fig. 15. Inhibition of the gastric movements in Necturus. (Same animal as in Fig. 14.) At X, slight traction on the peripheral end of the left vago-sympathetic nerve, producing practically a temporary standstill of the gastric contractions.

sympathetics first produced inhibition of the gastric movements due to mechanical stimulation followed in a short time by the return of the gastric contractions in augmented form, the augmentation even greatly exceeding the normal contractions with the nerves intact. These findings tend to show, that the fibers contained in the vago-sympathetics and destined for the stomach in the Necturus are largely inhibitory. Evidence so far obtained also seems to indicate that the vago-sympathetics contain both motor and inhibitory fibers to the stomach, with the inhibitory type predominating. The predominance of the inhibitory fibers is apparently in inverse order to the arrangement of these fibers as found in other animals.

Detroit College of Medicine and Surgery
Detroit, Michigan

REFERENCES

1. Boldyreff: Arch. des Sci. Biol., XI (1905), 1.
2. Cannon and Washburn: Am. Journ. Physiol., XXIX (1912), 441.
3. Carlson: The Control of Hunger in Health and Disease, Chicago, 1916.
4. Patterson: Am. Journ. Physiol., XLII (1916), 56.
5. Patterson: Am. Journ. Physiol., LIII (1920), 293.
6. Patterson: Am. Journ. Physiol., LIV (1920), 153.
7. Patterson: Am. Journ. Physiol., LV (1921), 283.
8. Patterson: Am. Journ. Physiol., LXIII (1923), 420.
9. Hopf: Zeitschr. f. Biol., 55 (1910–1911), 409.
10. Bercovitz and Rogers: Am. Journ. Physiol., LV (1921), 323.
11. Patterson: Journ. Lab. and Clin. Med., V (1920), 674.

OBSERVATIONS ON THE KAHN PRECIPITATION TEST

ELSA T. SCHUEREN

THE opportunity presented itself in the laboratories of the Detroit Department of Health, in conjunction with the Health Department clinics, to study the clinical value of the Kahn Precipitation test as well as its serological comparison with the Wasserman test.

As is well known, Kahn has recently modified his precipitation test procedure to a degree where it possesses several important advantages over the earlier method. In the first place, the test as now performed is quantitative in a relative degree, consisting of three different serum-antigen proportions. What is perhaps more important, is the elimination of the necessity for incubation, enabling the results to be read within several minutes after mixing serum with antigen. Finally, the test is now sufficiently standardized to assure uniformity of results in the hands of different workers.

In view of these advantages inherent in the test, it seemed desirable to undertake a study of the method, both in connection with the clinical material available as well as in comparison with the Wasserman test.

The clinical material at hand for this study may be divided into two sets of cases, those diagnostic in character and those undergoing treatment. Although the largest percentage of diagnostic cases are apparently normal individuals, a considerable number suffer from diseases other than syphilis. Our findings thus may give evidence on the behavior of this test in various non-syphilitic diseases, particularly infectious diseases. We also had occasion to examine a considerable number of sera from pregnant women.

Of particular interest, especially in comparison with the Wasserman test, is our study of cases undergoing treatment. In the Health Department Venereal Disease Clinic there are, on the average, four hundred and fifty patients under treatment for syphilis, constantly. The determination of the relative sensitiveness of the Wasserman test and of the Kahn Precipitation test should prove of special value.

Our general procedure may be briefly outlined as follows. Blood specimens reaching our laboratory on any given day are centrifuged, serum separated in the usual manner and inactivated for twenty minutes. Each serum is then examined with a Wasserman test in which two antigens are employed, a plain alcoholic extract and one which is reinforced with .2% cholesterin. The fixation period is four hours in the refrigerator. The Kahn Precipitation test is carried out according to the standard technique followed in the Michigan Health Department laboratories. After the proper serum quantities are mixed with the three varying amounts of carefully prepared antigen mixture, the racks are shaken two minutes, salt solution is added and the results are read and recorded. The final result in each test is the average finding in the three tubes.

It should be stated in this connection that, through the courtesy of Drs. Young and Kahn, antigen was supplied to us by the State Health Department laboratories. Sera from selected cases were also sent to the State laboratories as a special check on our findings.

Kahn tests		Wass. pos.	Wass. doubtful	Wass. negative
Positive	644	559	26	59
Doubtful	167	31	53	83
Negative	1213	15	12	1186

Complete check	1789	or	88.8%
Relative check	152	or	7.5%
No check	74	or	3.6%

A total of 2,024 examinations was made with both Wasserman and Kahn methods. Of this number there were 559 positive with both tests, 53 doubtful with both, and 1186 in which both tests were negative; 88.8% thus checked completely. For

the sake of simplicity we include four, three and two plus reactions as positive. One hundred and fifty-two specimens or 7.5% of the total gave what we might term a relative check, that is, one test gave a positive or negative reaction and the other a one plus or doubtful reaction; 3.6% of the total number or the remaining 74 specimens did not check, that is, one gave a positive and the other a negative reaction. The clinical histories of the cases giving us these discrepancies in results should prove the most interesting.

Seven such cases which gave a negative Wasserman and positive Kahn were from the Department of Health Pre-natal Clinic. Five of them were definitely diagnosed syphilis with positive histories. The other two cases have not been diagnosed as syphilis, but one of them has been checked for a repeat specimen to be taken the next time the patient comes to the clinic. In two instances of negative Wasserman reports and positive with Kahn, provocative KI was administered and then another sample taken. One which had given a negative Wasserman and Kahn 2 3 3, gave a chol. ant. +++, alc. ant. —, and Kahn 3 4 4 after KI administration. The other has an interesting history. She had three apparently healthy children, the next died at the age of one week, since which she has had 6 miscarriages. During this, her eleventh pregnancy, her Wasserman report was negative and Kahn 3 3 3. After KI her Wasserman was still negative and Kahn test was 2 2 2.

For lack of time not many histories from the Venereal Clinic could be looked up, but of twenty cases which did not check in which the precipitation procedure gave a positive result with negative Wasserman, eighteen were treated cases, in which a positive diagnosis had been made and which had previously given four plus Wasserman reactions, showing that the Kahn method in these instances gives a more sensitive serological finding than does complement fixation. The other two cases were diagnosed as negative syphilis and have not to date returned to our clinic.

The case of a Miss X., a police case, was upon entrance on the tenth of December, diagnosed as clinical syphilis; symptoms charted were inguinal adenitis and ulcer on posterior vaginal

wall. A blood specimen was drawn on day of admittance and one Salvarsan and two mercuries administered during the first week. The Wasserman report was negative, which gave the Health Department no authority to quarantine such a police case. On the second of February the Wasserman was again negative, as it was also on the fifth of March. On specimen submitted on the last named date, however, a Kahn test was made which gave a 3 4 4 Kahn result. Also further data on patient's chart says "Ulcer not healed."

Of the two hundred specimens submitted to the Lansing laboratory there was but one real discrepancy, six relative checks and 193 complete agreements, which gives the two laboratories a check of 98.5% on each other for both methods. This one discrepancy, Mr. Y., has the following history. Case referred to Health Department by city physician's office stating patient had + + + + Wasserman. Patient says he had syphilis twenty years ago. Lansing reported a complete negative and Detroit Health Department an AC. Wasserman and 4 4 4 Kahn. Patient has been started on a course of treatment.

Besides the data submitted, it might also be mentioned that during the three months in which this work was being done twenty-five samples gave an anti-complementary reaction with the routine Wasserman. On these, the Kahn method gave twenty-two positive and three negative results. Where enough serum was left a titrated Wasserman was done with increasing amounts of complement, such as is necessary to obtain true results with anti-complementary sera, and in all such cases the result agreed with the Kahn method.

SUMMARY

The Kahn Precipitation test possesses several outstanding features which should prove helpful in the correct serum diagnosis of syphilis:

1. The employment of these different proportions of serum and antigen renders the test not only quantitative in character to quite an extent, but the finding in each tube serves as a check

on the other two and thus increases the reliability of the final results.

2. The rapidity with which a complete test may be executed renders it particularly valuable in such cases in which the obtainment of an immediate diagnosis is of paramount importance, as, for example, in cases of blood transfusion or in the collection of serum from convalescent scarlet fever cases.

3. It eliminates the use of such variable factors as guinea pig complement and sheep cells, and is in this respect less subject to error than the Wasserman test.

4. The test according to our findings gives evidence of being specific for syphilis and appears to be slightly more sensitive than the Wasserman test.

Department of Health
Detroit, Michigan

X-RAYS AND THE FREQUENCY OF NON-DISJUNCTION IN DROSOPHILA*

E. G. ANDERSON

THE work of Mavor (1922, 1923) on the effects of X-rays on *Drosophila melanogaster* has shown a method of producing primary non-disjunctional exceptions more or less at will. This method has been utilized by the writer in an effort to throw some light on the interrelations of crossing-over and non-disjunction. These experiments are still in progress. In part of the tests frequency tabulations have been made for regular and exceptional offspring. The data obtained are incidental to the main purpose of the experiment, but serve to confirm the results of Dr. Mavor.

A preliminary test was made at the College of the City of New York during the spring of 1923, the X-ray treatments being administered by Dr. Edwin G. Taylor of the Physics Department of that institution. A seven-inch Coolidge tube was operated at a potential of 30,000 volts and a current of 3 milliamperes. The average exposure was about twenty-five minutes at a distance of seven inches from the target. The flies treated were virgin F_1 females from a cross of scute apricot cross-veinless tan forked females by broad echinus cut garnet males. The treated females were mated to Bar males. Forty-two fertile cultures were counted, giving a total of 6940 offspring. These consisted of

3577 regular (heterozygous Bar)	females,
3289 regular (not Bar)	males,
10 exceptional (not Bar)	females,
64 exceptional (Bar)	males.

*Paper from the Department of Botany of the University of Michigan, No. 207, reporting research conducted by the author while holding appointment as National Research Fellow in Biology.

The paper was presented before the Section of Botany as one of a group dealing with genetical problems.

Recent tests made at the University of Michigan have involved a larger number of individuals. Echinus cut garnet females were crossed with scute cross-veinless vermilion forked males. Virgin F_1 females were rayed within twenty-eight hours after emergence. The X-ray treatments were administered by Dr. S. MacFarland at the University Hospital. A Wappler Roentgen Apparatus was used with a potential of about 70,000 volts and a current of 5 milliamperes. The flies were exposed for ten minutes at a distance of seven inches from the target. After treatment they were mated with yellow forked Bar or yellow scute cross-veinless Bar males. The progeny of several sets of cultures were counted. The results were

18414 regular (Bar)	females,
16828 regular (not Bar)	males,
73 exceptional (not Bar)	females,
397 exceptional (Bar)	males.

The percentages of exceptions obtained are given in the following table. The percentages obtained by Mavor (1923) are included for comparison.

	Total number of females	Percentage of exceptions	Total number of males	Percentage of exceptions
Preliminary test...	3587	0.3	3353	1.9
Later tests.....	18487	0.4	17225	2.3
Mavor (1923).....	3960	0.4	3575	2.3

The percentages of exceptions obtained from flies which have not been X-rayed are very much lower. The following table gives the percentages obtained in untreated cultures from data published by Safir (1920) and by Mavor (1923).

	Total number of females	Percentage of exceptions	Total number of males	Percentage of exceptions
Safir w^e m.....	25021	0.07	22524	0.31
Safir other tests...	68353	0.02	64124	0.10
Mavor (1923).....	12698	0.02	12648	0.06

The eosin miniature used by Safir gave unusually high percentages of exceptions. The values obtained in all his other stocks and by Mavor are the usual ones.

Primary non-disjunction has been shown to occur in *Drosophila melanogaster* with a fair degree of regularity although the frequency of its incidence is very low (Bridges, 1916; Safir, 1920; Mavor, 1922, 1923). The normal expectation is about one exception per 4000 females and one exception per 1000 males. Since one half of the exceptional eggs fail to give viable offspring, the actual frequency of primary non-disjunction is double the frequency of the observed exceptions. The effect of X-ray treatment is to increase the frequency about twenty-fold. The exceptions produced are probably not different from those produced normally without X-ray treatment.

University of Michigan

LITERATURE CITED

Bridges, C. B. 1916. Non-disjunction as Proof of the Chromosome Theory of Heredity. Genetics, 1: 1–52, 107–163.

Mavor, James W. 1922. The Production of Non-disjunction by X-rays. Science, 55: 295–297.

—— 1923. X-rays and the Sex Chromosomes. Science, 57: 503–504.

Safir, Shelley R. 1920. Genetic and Cytological Examination of the Phenomena of Primary Non-disjunction in *Drosophila melanogaster*. Genetics, 5: 459–487.

THE FORMS OF CARPHOPHIS *

FRANK N. BLANCHARD

KENNICOTT [1] in 1859 proposed names for two new forms of snakes of the genus Celuta (now Carphophis), a genus hitherto known only from the eastern states and Mississippi. A specimen from Missouri he named *C. vermis*, and one from Monticello, Mississippi, with three from Southern Illinois, *C. helenae*. The former has since been adjudged by most authors to be a good form, but largely because of Cope,[2] *C. helenae* has been generally regarded as an individual variation of the well known *C. amoena*. *C. helenae* was based upon the presence of only two large plates on top of the head anterior to the frontal plate, instead of two prefrontals and two internasals, as in *C. amoena* and in *C. vermis*. The fusion of these plates has since been noted at various times in additional specimens, but this feature has not been observed to be correlated with any other distinctive characters nor with any geographic region.

Hurter,[3] however, in 1911, sorted his specimens roughly according to locality and noted that the fusion of internasals with prefrontals characterized his specimens from Mississippi, Tennessee, Kentucky and Illinois, but his series was too small to attract notice and he himself attached no special significance to the fact.

It is the purpose of the present discussion to show that this fusion of internasals with prefrontals is highly characteristic of snakes of this genus in the whole region between the Mississippi River and the Appalachian Mountains, and that their subspecific separation from their relatives in the eastern states is justified.

* Contribution from the Zoölogical Laboratory of the University of Michigan.

[1] *Proc. Acad. Nat. Sci., Philadelphia*, 1859, pp. 99, 100.

[2] *Rept. U. S. Nat. Mus. for 1898*, p. 735. 1900.

[3] *Trans. Acad. Sci. St. Louis*, Vol. 20, No. 5, p. 194.

Of seventy-seven specimens [4] examined from the Atlantic states from Connecticut through Georgia, seventy-five had the internasals separate from the prefrontals; one from Clarke County, Virginia (U. S. N. M., No. 1873), had them fused; one, from Augusta, Georgia, had them fused (U. S. N. M., No. 8792; and one, from Blue Ridge, North Carolina, had the internasal and prefrontal fused on the right side and separate on the left. In these states, therefore, the percentage of instances in which these plates are separated is 97.

From Illinois, Indiana, Ohio, Kentucky, Tennessee, Alabama and Mississippi, data on the internasals are at hand for ninety-three specimens. These data are derived from personal examination of eighty-four specimens and definite published accounts of nine others. Twenty-three of these come from the eastern limits of this group of states: twenty-one from northeastern Alabama and eastern Tennessee, one from an undetermined locality in Kentucky (Creek Gap, M. C. Z., No. 3828), and one from "Ohio." Of these twenty-three, twelve have the internasals separate, and eleven have them united with the prefrontals. From this fact and from their locality they may be regarded as "intergrades" and omitted from the next discussion. Of the seventy specimens remaining, four have the internasals well-developed, three have them separate but unusually small, one has the left internasal separate but very small, while the right internasal is mostly fused with the right prefrontal, and sixty-two have the internasals completely united with the prefrontals. This gives a constancy of 89 per cent in the fusion of these plates for all specimens east of the Mississippi River and west of the Appalachians.

A constancy of 89 per cent in a character differentiating two closely allied forms is quite satisfactory. Compare with this the following percentages of constancy in characters differentiating the two eastern races of Carphophis from the western race. These figures are based upon thirty-one specimens of *C. vermis*, ninety-four of *C. amoena*, and fifty-three of *C. helenae*.

[4] Two specimens listed by Cope as "form helenae" are *C. amoena*, — U. S. N. M., Nos., 12128 and 19486. (*Rept. U. S. Nat. Mus. for 1898*, p. 737. 1900. Cope's number 19486 is a misprint for 19484.)

TABLE SHOWING DIFFERENTIATION OF TWO EASTERN SPECIES OF CARPHOPHIS

Name of form	Character	Percentage of constancy
amoena.....	2 post temporal scutes	88
helenae.....	2 post temporal scutes	80
vermis.....	1 post temporal scute	94
amoena.....	Light color extending onto first or second row of dorsal scales	100
helenae.....	Light color extending onto first or second row of dorsal scales	98
vermis.....	Light color extending onto the third row of dorsal scales	70

The separation of *C. vermis* from *C. helenae* and *C. amoena* based on the numbers of ventral scutes is also incomplete, for while the averages are distinctly different, the ranges of variation in the females broadly overlap. This is shown in the following table.

TABLE SHOWING NUMBERS OF VENTRAL PLATES IN FORMS OF CARPHOPHIS

Name of Form	Males			Females		
	No. of specimens	Extremes	Averages	No. of specimens	Extremes	Averages
amoena.....	33	113–128	121	39	122–140	131
helenae.....	24	113–127	118	25	122–137	128
vermis.....	12	127–135	131	18	129–142	137

It thus appears that the distinction between *C. helenae* and *C. amoena* is as constant as that between either of these and *C. vermis*. The only difference is that only one character is at present known to mark off *C. amoena* from *C. helenae*. The writer does not regard this as sufficient reason for not recognizing the

latter as a form separate from *C. amoena*. Furthermore, the writer believes it probable that other differentiating characters will yet be found, and would call special attention to the fact that the table above is based upon a fair number of specimens of each sex of *C. amoena* and of *C. helenae*, and that each sex of *C. helenae* has an average of three ventrals fewer than the corresponding sex of *C. amoena*.

In summary, evidence has been brought forward to show that the *Carphophis amoena* of present conception comprises two recognizably distinct geographic races or subspecies, *C. amoena amoena* of the Atlantic Coast and eastern Appalachian Mountains, and *C. amoena helenae* of the region from the western Appalachians to the Mississippi River.

Appended is a diagnosis of the subspecies of Carphophis:

a_1 Color above generally brown; light color of belly extending onto first or second row of dorsal scales; commonly two temporal scutes behind the first.

b_1 Internasals and prefrontals usually separate . . . *C. amoena amoena* (Say). (Connecticut and Albany County, New York, south to central Florida and west into the Appalachian Mountains.)

b_2 Internasals and prefrontals usually united into two large shields *C. amoena helenae* (Kennicott). (From central Illinois south through Mississippi and east to northwestern Alabama, the Tennessee valley in eastern Tennessee and eastern Ohio.)

a_2 Color above generally gray or black; light color of belly extending usually onto the third row of dorsal scales; commonly a single temporal scute behind the first. . . . . *C. amoena vermis* (Kennicott). (Southeastern Nebraska and central Missouri south through eastern Oklahoma, Arkansas, and Louisiana.)

The writer is under continued obligation to numerous museums and curators for cordial welcome to their collections. During the course of the present study specimens have been examined from the United States National Museum, the Museum of Comparative Zoölogy, the American Museum of Natural History, the Museum of Zoölogy of the University of Michigan, the Zoölogy Department Museum of Cornell University, and the Museum of Kansas University.

University of Michigan

A NAME FOR THE BLACK PITUOPHIS FROM ALABAMA *

FRANK N. BLANCHARD

Four years ago I reported [1] the finding in Mobile County, Alabama, of a black bull-snake (Pituophis) by Mr. H. P. Löding of Mobile. This was found dead early in June, 1919, on the "Hall's Mill Road, in the vicinity of high, sandy hills, near Hall's Mill Creek, Abott's Station, about 14 miles southwest of Mobile." I also reported a second specimen taken alive by Dr. E. D. King, Jr., at Grand Bay, 26 miles southwest of Mobile. This also was taken in 1919, on July 24 or 25. This specimen I have since seen and it is in all essential respects like the first, except that the throat is immaculate white instead of black.

On July 28, 1920, Mr. Löding took a third adult black bull-snake at Irvington, a location half-way between the former two. This has been deposited in the Alabama Natural History Museum at University, Alabama.

On April 30, 1924, Mr. Löding secured a fourth adult black bull-snake in the same general region as the other three.

The territory over which these four specimens have been taken, Mr. Löding writes, consists now mostly of Satsuma orange and pecan orchards, but was formerly fairly high and dry pine lands.

The finding of these four isolated specimens of black bull-snakes and the absence of other records of Pituophis from the states of Georgia, Alabama, Mississippi and Louisiana are sufficient evidence of a need for a name to designate this Alabama

* Contribution from the Zoölogical Laboratory of the University of Michigan.

[1] *Copeia*, No. 81, p. 30.

form. In honor of its discoverer I propose for it, therefore, the name

Pituophis lödingi, new species.

Diagnosis. — Similar to *Pituophis melanoleucus* (Daudin), but almost entirely black above and below.

Type specimen. — Museum of Zoölogy, University of Michigan, number 58800; collected by H. P. Löding between Irvington and Grand Bay, Mobile County, Alabama, April 30, 1924.

Description of type specimen. — Ventrals, 215; anal, single and entire; 65 divided caudals; upper labials, 8 on each side; lower labials, 15 on each side; one preocular on each side; 4 postoculars on each side; 4 temporals in the first row; rostral dividing the internasals for three-fourths of their length; maximum number of scale rows, 29 (27 rows for a short distance anteriorly, and 21 rows at the posterior end); keels on dorsal scales prominent above, progressively fainter on the sides, descending as low as the sixth row anteriorly and the third row posteriorly. Total length, 1563 millimeters; tail length, 261 millimeters. Sex, male.

The coloration (by reference to Ridgway's *Color Standards and Nomenclature*) is as follows: Above, a glossy black; below slate color; most of the gular and lower labial scales somewhat flecked with a dark shade of cinnamon.

Further specimens of Pituophis from this region will be awaited with interest.

University of Michigan

A COLLECTION OF AMPHIBIANS AND REPTILES FROM SOUTHEASTERN MISSOURI AND SOUTHERN ILLINOIS *

FRANK N. BLANCHARD

The following collection was made in the course of an automobile trip in June, 1923, to the so-called "Sunken Lands" of Missouri, and to the hilly country of southern Illinois.

The low lands of extreme southeastern Missouri have already been largely reclaimed from the Mississippi River by levees and drainage ditches. Deforestation, ditching and farming are altering totally the nature of the country and its animal inhabitants. In the part of southern Illinois most particularly covered, Johnson County, there are still some forests and much uncultivated country. The rugged and picturesque aspect of this region changes completely and abruptly between Ozark and New Bernside. From hilly farming country with small rural communities and unimproved roads, one enters northward a nearly level mining region of far less natural attractiveness.

The region covered by this collection is the meeting ground of many northern and southern species and ought to be thoroughly studied before the natural conditions have been further changed.

All the specimens in this collection have been deposited in the Museum of Zoölogy of the University of Michigan.

List of Species

Plethodon glutinosus (Green). — Four adults and three young ones (58747) were collected four miles south of Ozark,

* Contribution from the Zoölogical Laboratory of the University of Michigan.

Illinois, in Johnson County, June 21. They were in a well-wooded ravine formed by a permanent stream. One adult was under a large, rotten log; one juvenile was near or on the roots of a plant; the others were taken under damp, flat stones under overhanging ledges of rock. Another, a juvenile (58748), was taken in the same county about 20 miles north of Metropolis, on June 20. This one was under a small log near the base of a dry wooded slope.

Eurycea longicauda (Green). — Two adults (58749–50) were taken along with several *Plethodon glutinosus* under flat, wet stones, under overhanging ledges, in a wooded ravine, 4 miles south of Ozark, Johnson County, Illinois, June 21.

Bufo fowleri Garman. — The peculiar song of this toad was heard at dusk and shortly after dark at Evansville and Cairo, Illinois, and at Jackson and Portageville, Missouri. One specimen was collected at each of the following places (58767–70): 4 miles south of East Cape Girardeau, Missouri, June 18; 20 miles north of Metropolis, Johnson County, Illinois, June 20; 2 miles southeast of Portageville, Pemiscot County, Missouri, June 16. In the small town of Portageville, Missouri, on June 16, many of these toads were calling shortly after dark. By means of a flash-light nineteen males and two females were collected here in a shallow pond in a vacant lot between houses. This toad, on every occasion lived up to its reputation for being more active and harder to catch than *B. americanus*.

Acris gryllus (Le Conte). — Two (58751) were taken at a small roadside cattail pond in Johnson County, Illinois, 20 miles north of Metropolis, June 20. In Pemiscot County, Missouri, it was exceedingly common. Eleven specimens (58752) were collected along the grassy margin of a brushy lake, 10 miles southeast of Portageville, June 16.

Hyla versicolor versicolor (Le Conte). — Near Evansville, Randolph County, Illinois, the Hylas began to call, at dusk and after dark, on June 13, near a small muddy pond in a depression surrounded by trees. I sought them with flash-light, and, by diligent search, following the calls, collected four males. They were all within a few inches of the water on the ground.

Apparently none were back in the trees, although a few may have been in the pond. It was astonishingly hard to find them even when very close. Later in the evening they did not sing at all.

RANA CATESBEIANA Shaw. — One adult (58753) was taken at the shady margin of a small cattail pond by the roadside, 20 miles north of Metropolis, in Johnson County, Illinois, June 20.

RANA CLAMITANS Latreille. — Three individuals, a small one (58759) and two adults (58760-1), were taken in a brushy lake near the Mississippi levee 10 miles southeast of Portageville, Pemiscot County, Missouri, June 16 and 17.

RANA SPHENOCEPHALA Cope.— This frog was seen frequently, but not in numbers. Two (58755) were collected 10 miles southeast of Portageville, Pemiscot County, Missouri, June 17; another (58756) was taken 2 miles southeast of Portageville June 16; an adult (58762) was collected 4 miles south of Ozark in Johnson County, Illinois, June 21; a small one (58757) was taken 10 miles northwest of Chester, in Randolph County, Illinois, June 13; an adult (58758) was taken 3 miles north of Redbud, Monroe County, Illinois, June 12. The last was in thick vegetation at the edge of a thick woods, 50 feet from a stream. It was plain dull green above, except for the cream-colored lateral folds and the spots.

RANA SYLVATICA Le Conte. — A single adult (58754) was found in thick woods near a stream, 3 miles north of Redbud, Monroe County, Illinois, June 12.

SCELOPORUS UNDULATUS (Latreille). — Four specimens were taken, as follows: one female (58743) 3 miles north of Redbud, Monroe County, Illinois, June 12, and a small male (58744) at the same place the next day; an adult male (58745) in Massac County, 4 miles northwest of Metropolis, Illinois, June 19, on a log in a piece of woods; an adult female (58746) in Johnson County, Illinois, about 20 miles north of Metropolis, June 20.

EUMECES FASCIATUS (Linné). — Six individuals were secured, as follows: one small one (58737) on a fence in a farm-yard, 3 miles north of Redbud, Illinois, June 13; one large male (58738) with red head found sunning himself on a rock on a river bluff about 10 miles northwest of Chester, Randolph County, Illinois;

one small one (58739) 3 miles southeast of Portageville, Missouri, June 17; two small ones (58740–1) 10 miles southeast of Portageville, Pemiscot County, Missouri; and one small one (58742) in Johnson County, Illinois, about 20 miles north of Metropolis, June 20.

HETERODON CONTORTRIX (Linné). — One small adult male (57718) was taken while crossing a road at midday about 4 miles north of Perryville, Perry County, Missouri, June 14. The ventral plates number 131; caudals, 44; upper labials, 8; lower labials, 10; total length is 522 mm., tail length, 97 mm.

COLUBER CONSTRICTOR CONSTRICTOR (Linné). — Two adults were found in a wooded ravine in Johnson County, Illinois, about 4 miles south of Ozark, on June 21. Their scutellation is as follows:

No.	Sex	Scale rows	Ventrals	Caudals	Labials	Total length	Tail length
58716	female	17–19–15	179	83	7.7 / 8.9	1319 mm.	304 mm.
58717	male	17–15	173	92	7.7 / ?.9	1210 mm.	323 mm.

In No. 58716 the scale rows become 19 for some distance along the middle of the body, by the addition of scales adjacent to the median dorsal row.

ELAPHE OBSOLETA OBSOLETA (Say). — Five specimens were taken, as follows: A half-grown individual (58732) was found lying at full length on the ground in heavy oak woods, 3 miles north of Redbud, Monroe County, Illinois, June 13. It made no attempt to escape and was gentle to handle. This shows a pattern of dorsal blotches for a little more than half the body length. On the remaining specimens no pattern is visible, except faintly on the anterior portion of the body of 58736. Near the same place in which 58732 was taken, a large adult (58733) was found on a fence by a farm-house, coiled along the middle rail. A large male (58734) was found recently dead in the road 7 miles north of Perryville, in Perry County, Missouri, June 14. A moderate-sized female (58735) was found in the road in Cape Girardeau County, 2 miles north of Jackson, Missouri, on the same day as

the last. On June 18 a small adult male was found in the road early in the morning in Scott County, about 12 miles south of Cape Girardeau, Missouri.

Measurements and scutellations of these specimens are as follows:

No.	Sex	Scale rows	Ventrals	Caudals	Labials	Total length	Tail length
58732	female	25–17	232	73	8.8 / 13.13	715 mm.	116 mm.
58733	female	25–27–19	231	63	8.8 / 13.12	1456+ mm.	215+ mm.
58734	male	23–25–17	241	81	8.8 / 11.11	1835 mm.	305 mm.
58735	female	25–27–19	235	76	8.8 / 12.12	1330 mm.	217 mm.
58736	male	25–26–17	233	84	8.8 / 11.11	1152 mm.	205 mm.

ELAPHE OBSOLETA CONFINIS (Baird and Girard). — Two examples of *Elaphe obsoleta*, the only ones taken in the "Sunken Lands" of Missouri, show a distinct pattern of dorsal blotches unlike the series of six taken elsewhere (except for one juvenile of the latter group). Both were taken in Pemiscot County, — one (58730), in some bushes at the edge of an overflow from a drainage ditch about 2 miles southeast of Portageville, the other (58731), at the edge of a ditch in the shade of bald cypress beside the levee. The first has 28 dorsal blotches on the body and the second has 32.

Following is their scutellation:

No.	Sex	Scale rows	Ventrals	Caudals	Labials	Total length	Tail length
58730	female	25–19	233	74	8.8 / 11.11	1024 mm.	177 mm.
58731	male	25–27–19	229	78	8.8 / 11.11	1700 mm.	286 mm.

NATRIX ERYTHROGASTER (Forster). — Two adults were discovered mating among the grass and weeds at the edge of a

swampy area adjoining a drainage ditch, a little before noon of a sunny day, June 16. Both were secured and kept alive in a cloth until the return to Ann Arbor, Michigan, June 25. They were transferred to a cement enclosure out of doors, and several large frogs (*Rana pipiens*) were thrown in with them. The snakes were very active, and each immediately swallowed two frogs. During the remainder of the summer the snakes were rarely seen unless hunted for. Then they would be found coiled, generally separately, under the sods and leaves. The object in keeping them alive was to obtain young ones, but none appeared. The snakes were transferred to a cool room indoors in late autumn, but were found dead in January.

In both snakes the uniform dark dorsal color extended without interruption down the sides and well onto the ends of the ventral plates. Below, the female was greenish-yellow anteriorly, with a good deal of pink in the middle and posteriorly, and the male was pale greenish-yellow over the whole lower surface. The ventrals of both were flecked with dark at their bases, except towards the head.

The body length, measured alive, was about 785 mm. in the male and 770 mm. in the female. Each individual lacked the tip of the tail. They were found in Pemiscot County, Missouri, about 1 mile south of Portageville.

Their scalation is as follows:

No.	Sex	Scale rows	Ventrals	Labials
58723	male	23–21–23–17	150	8.8 / 10.10
58724	female	23–21–23–17	149	8.8 / 10.10

Natrix fasciata confluens Blanchard. — One small female was taken at the edge of an area of brushy overflowed land at the edge of the Mississippi levee in Pemiscot County, 10 miles southeast of Portageville, Missouri, June 17. It is in every respect typical of this subspecies as recently described, and is quite within the known range. There are about 14 dorsal saddles on the body.

No.	Sex	Scale rows	Ventrals	Caudals	Labials	Total length	Tail length
58725	female	23–17	137	64	8.8 / 10.11	322 mm.	74 mm.

NATRIX RHOMBIFERA (Hallowell). — Two examples were taken in Pemiscot County, Missouri, on June 17, a large one about 10 miles southeast of Portageville and a small one about 7 miles southeast of Portageville. The first was taken from under a large board in a very small stream of flowing water near the Mississippi levee; the other was found resting on water weeds in a ditch among bald cypress.

Scutellation and measurements follow:

No.	Sex	Scale rows	Ventrals	Caudals	Labials	Total length	Tail length
58719	male	25–27–21	143	78	8.8 / 12.12	979 mm.	255 mm.
58720	male	25–28–21	144	71	8.8 / 11.11	374 mm.	91 mm.

NATRIX SIPEDON SIPEDON (Linné). — A small one was taken in a muddy stream near overhanging vegetation in Monroe County, 3 miles north of Redbud, Illinois, on June 12. The half-circular marks on the ventral scales are typical. Along the middle of the belly was a stripe of bright brick-red. The dorsal pattern is a little atypical in that the dark saddles, 23 in number, are complete on the sides throughout the body length, with no lateral alternating spots.

In Johnson County, Illinois, about 20 miles north of Metropolis a moderate-sized individual (58722) was taken, June 20, in the grassy margin of a small, cattail pool by the roadside, far from any other water. Its pattern is a little peculiar. There are only 22 dorsal saddles on the body and they are nearly all continuous down the sides. Furthermore, they are mostly a brick-red in life, darker above and brighter on the sides, and the half-circular markings on the ventral plates were also bright reddish, becoming mixed with black posteriorly.

Measurements and scutellation follow:

No.	Sex	Scale rows	Ventrals	Caudals	Labials	Total length	Tail length
58921	male	23–17	142	75	8.8 / 10.10	293 mm.	78 mm.
58922	female	23–17	141		8.8 / 11.10	825+ mm.	148+ mm.

Thamnophis sauritus proximus (Say). — Four individuals were secured. One (58726) had been recently killed in the road 6 miles north of New Madrid, in New Madrid County, Missouri, June 17. The others were found June 16 and 17 in open grassy places adjoining the overflowed lands by the Mississippi levee in Pemiscot County, Missouri, 10 miles southeast of Portageville.

Scutellation and measurements follow:

No.	Sex	Scale rows	Ventrals	Caudals	Labials	Total length	Tail length	Tail length divided by total length
58726	male	19–17	170	93	8.8 / 10.10	741 mm.	207 mm.	0.279
58727	male	19–17	174	100	8.8 / 10.10	598 mm.	177 mm.	0.296
58728	female	19–17	169	97	8.8 / 10.10	405 mm.	123 mm.	0.304
58729	female	19–17	173	105	8.8 / 10.10	813 mm.	240 mm.	0.294

Thamnophis sirtalis parietalis (Say). — One adult observed killed at roadside in Monroe County, Illinois, 3 miles north of Redbud, June 13.

Sternotherus odoratus (Latreille). — A small adult (58708) was picked up in the road 3 miles southwest of Carriers Mills, Saline County, Illinois, early in the morning on June 22.

Chelydra serpentina (Linné). — One (58714) with carapace 38 mm. long was taken about 10 miles southeast of Portageville, Pemiscot County, Missouri, on June 16.

Terrapene carolina carolina (Linné). — Two adults (58701–2) were taken in an open woods on a hillside in Johnson

County, Illinois, June 20; two half-grown individuals (58704–5) were found in a wooded ravine 4 miles south of Ozark in Johnson County, Illinois, June 21; one adult (58703) was taken on a shaded path through woods 4 miles south of East Saint Louis, Illinois, June 11, and one adult (58706) was taken 3 miles north of Redbud, Monroe Co., Illinois, June 12.

TERRAPENE ORNATA (Agassiz). — One individual (58707) with carapace 70 mm. long was taken 4 miles north of Redbud, in Monroe County, Illinois, June 12.

CHRYSEMYS ELEGANS (Wied). — One individual (58711) with carapace 215 mm. long was taken in Pemiscot County, Missouri, June 17; one (58712) with carapace 50 mm. long was taken in the same county about 7 miles southeast of Portageville on June 16; and one (58713) with carapace 39 mm. long was taken about 10 miles southeast of Portageville on June 17.

CHRYSEMYS BELLII DORSALIS (Agassiz). — Two specimens were taken near the Mississipi levee about 10 miles southeast of Portageville, in Pemiscot County, Missouri. One (58710) has a carapace 144 mm. long and was taken on June 16; the other (58709), which was taken on June 17, has a carapace only 36 mm. long.

UNIVERSITY of MICHIGAN

A LIST OF COLEOPTERA FROM CHARLEVOIX COUNTY, MICHIGAN *

MELVILLE H. HATCH

In connection with a land and economic survey that was being conducted by the Department of Conservation of the State of Michigan in Charlevoix County in the summer of 1922, the author was engaged to investigate and report on the coleopterous fauna of the region. With the publication of the report of the investigation, it seemed advisable to incorporate the results of a study of two other collections of Coleoptera that were available from the same county. So that the material on which the present list of Coleoptera from Charlevoix County is based is derived from three sources: (1) a collection of about three hundred and forty species made in the years 1919 to 1923 in the Beaver Islands by Mr. Sherman Moore of Detroit; (2) the collection of about three hundred and five species made by the author on Beaver Island and on Garden Island and at Charlevoix, while in the employ of the Department of Conservation of the State of Michigan from August 22 to September 11, 1922; (3) a collection of about one hundred and thirty species made for the Department of Conservation of the State of Michigan and the University of Michigan Museum of Zoölogy by Mr. T. H. Hubbell on Hog Island in July 1921 and at Thumb Lake, Boyne City, Boyne Falls, and Norwood Township between July 8 and August 6, 1923. This last collection was made incidental to a survey of the Orthoptera of the region. A single species is included that was taken by Dr. Frank N. Blanchard of the University of Michigan at Nowland Lake in 1917. From this material the

* Published with the permission of the Director of the Department of Conservation of the State of Michigan; a contribution from the Zoölogical Department in the Liberal Arts College, Syracuse University.

present list numbering five hundred and eighty species and five varieties has been compiled. A few undetermined specimens still remain in the author's hands.

The specimens on which the report is based are deposited in the University of Michigan Museum of Zoölogy and in the private collection of Mr. Sherman Moore; duplicate specimens of many of the species have been placed in the private collection of the author.

Acknowledgment is due to Mr. Moore for the courtesy he has shown in rendering accessible the Charlevoix County specimens contained in his private collection, and for the help he has given in compiling the data on them, as well as for the information he has supplied concerning the conditions in the region. The author is further indebted to the University of Michigan Museum of Zoölogy for permission to examine Mr. Hubbell's specimens and notes, as well as other Charlevoix County Coleoptera in its possession.

Further acknowledgment is due the following coleopterists for help in determining certain of the species: Mr. Howard Notman, Carabidae and Staphylinidae; Mr. J. B. Wallis, Amarini, Dytiscidae and Gyrinus; Mr. Henry Dietrich, Silphidae, Byrrhidae and Nitidulidae; Prof. F. E. Blaisdell, Stenus and Hister; Dr. A. Fenyes, Aleocharinae; Mr. Emil Liljeblad, Mordellidae; Dr. Edward D. Quirsfeld, Elateridae; Mr. Frank C. Fletcher, Tenebrionidae; Mr. C. A. Frost, Pachybrachys; Mr. L. L. Buchanan, Curculionidae; and Prof. M. W. Blackman, Scolytidae. In addition several of the determinations have been made by Mr. A. W. Andrews, with whom Mr. Moore has been associated in studying his material. In every case the authority for the determination is indicated in parentheses immediately following the name of the species.

Charlevoix County constitutes a portion of the mainland on the west shore of the Southern Peninsula of Michigan as well as the Beaver Islands, which have been attached to it for political and economic rather than for geographical reasons. The Beaver Islands consist of nine islands lying in the northern end of Lake Michigan, from twelve to twenty miles from the neighboring

countries of Emmet and Mackinac. They have been uncovered by the progressive lowering of the lakes that formed in the region following the retreat of the Wisconsin ice sheet, and so have never been connected with the mainland. This has been no impediment to their occupation by a coleopterous fauna, which is, however, not surprising in view of the alate condition of that order. The degree of isolation has, moreover, been insufficient to produce any local races, so far as the present investigations indicate.

Beaver Island, the largest of the Beaver Island group, is twelve or fifteen miles long and from two to five miles wide. Most of the author's specimens were taken in the vicinity of St. James at the northern end of the island. Portions of the island are sandy, supporting a growth of pine and juniper. In other portions the soil is rich enough for farming operations as well as for an abundant growth of Solidago and other herbage. There are cedar bogs, beach ponds, and other lakes and ponds. Faunt Lake is a mile or so long. Round Lake is a pond of extremely variable size. In spring it is large, inundating the surrounding fields. In summer it shrinks, exposing wide muck margins which support an abundant fauna of littoral Coleoptera.

Garden Island is about one and one-half miles north of Beaver Island, being some five miles in length by two in width. The interior is high and covered with hardwoods scattered through which are abandoned clearings. There are also a few small lakes.

Hog Island, three and one-half miles long by one mile wide, is three and one-half miles east of Garden Island. The island is low and covered with a dense forest. Collecting is possible only along the shore and is not good there.

Hat Island, about fourteen hundred feet in diameter, is two and one-half miles east of Hog Island. It is the breeding ground of a large colony of herring gulls and a smaller colony of Caspian terns.

Squaw Island and Whiskey Island, which are about one and one-half miles apart, lie about three miles west of the north end of Garden Island. They are about one-half mile in diameter. The beaches are wide and stony, the interiors are covered with

a dense growth of small mixed timber, and from the northeast corner of each a long gravel spit extends into the lake.

High Island, called Little Beaver Island on some of the earlier charts, is about four miles west of the north end of Beaver Island. It is about four miles long and two miles wide. The interior is high and covered with hardwoods, which contain numerous clearings of the Indians as well as a farm of two hundred acres.

Trout Island is similar to Squaw Island and Whiskey Island and is about a mile and a half north of the northwest corner of High Island.

Gull Island lies about seven miles west of the south end of High Island. It is a mile long by half a mile wide. The interior is a dense forest. This island is the breeding-place for great numbers of herring gulls, and is overrun with rabbits which were introduced a number of years ago by fishermen.

Through the channels between the island run currents which are sometimes of considerable strength. As a result of these currents there is little beach drift. Insects blown off the islands and falling into the lake are carried away, instead of being thrown up on the beach with a shift in the wind. A small amount of drift occurs on the north end of Beaver Island, on the north end of High Island, on the northeast corner of Hog Island, and on the southeast corner of Gull Island. In addition considerable beach drift was observed on the mainland on the Lake Michigan beach at Charlevoix and at Pine Lake near Boyne City.

In the annotated list the following information is given for each of the species: (1) the number used in the Leng Catalogue,[1] the nomenclature and sequence of which are followed, with a few exceptions; (2) the name of the species, followed by the authority for the determination in parentheses if he is other than the author, and by a question mark (?) if the determination is doubtful; (3) the number of specimens examined from the region; (4) the first and last dates on which specimens were taken;

[1] Leng, C. W. 1920. *Catalogue of the Coleoptera of America, North of Mexico.* Sherman, Mount Vernon, N. Y.

(5) the localities at which specimens were taken; (6) a brief citation of the habitat of the species. 'Sweeping' refers to the collecting of specimens from non-woody plants: herbage, weeds, etc. 'Beating' refers to the collection of specimens from shrubs, bushes, and the lower branches of trees.

CICINDELIDAE

49. Cicindela duodecimguttata Dej., 4; June 14 — Sept. 5; Beaver Is., High Is., Garden Is., Thumb Lake; beach.
50. Cicindela repanda Dej., 23; June 21 — Aug. 26; Beaver Is., Garden Is., High Is., Hog Is., Thumb Lake; beach.
51. Cicindela hirticollis Say, 3; June 14 — July 27; High Is., Hog Is.; beach. The specimens referred here are intermediate between typical *hirticollis* and *rhodensis*. All show some evidence of the humeral lunule, or of the lateral portion of the middle band, or both, on the disc of the elytron.

51b. Cicindela hirticollis rhodensis Calder, 6; June 14 — Aug. 18; Beaver Is., High Is.; beach. The specimens assigned somewhat doubtfully to this Atlantic Coast variety vary from individuals having only the apical margins (remnant of apical lunule) and humerus of elytra marked, to individuals with the lateral margin marked, or with an indistinct sutural spot just behind the middle (a remnant of the median apex of the middle band), or both.

53. Cicindela tranquebarica Herbst, 8; May 26 — Sept. 5; Beaver Is., Garden Is., High Is.; beach and other exposed sandy areas.
59. Cicindela longilabris Say, 2; May 26 — Aug. 26; Beaver Is., Garden Is.; beach and other exposed sandy areas.
74. Cicindela punctulata Oliv., 2; July 28 — Aug. 22; Hog Is., Charlevoix; beach.

CARABIDAE

162. Sphaeroderus lecontei Dej., 1; Aug. 23; Beaver Is., under cover on damp ground.

171. Carabus serratus Say, 4; July 7 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., High Is., Hog Is.; under cover on damp ground about beach pool, in molasses trap.
180. Calosoma scrutator Fab., 1; Aug. 22; Charlevoix; fragment found in beach drift.
183. Calosoma frigidum Kby., 1; July 10; Beaver Is.
204. Calosoma calidum Fab., 1; July 19; Boyne City; under stone on dry sandy ground.
228. Elaphrus fulginosus Say, 3; July 28 — Sept. 1 (dead on latter date); Beaver Is., Garden Is.; beach.
233. Elaphrus ruscarius Say, 3; June 23 — July 14; High Is., Gull Is.
247. Notiophilus semistriatus Say, 1; July 16; Thumb Lake; in grass.
324. Dyschirius nigripes Lec. (det. by Notman), 9; June 6 — Aug. 31; Beaver Is., High Is., Gull Is.; under cover on beach; on mud bank.
330. Dyschirius longulus Lec. (det. by Notman) 3; June 2 — Aug. 27; Beaver Is., High Is., Hog Is.; under cover on beach.
359. Clivina impressifrons Lec., 4; July 8 — Aug. 27; High Is., Gull Is., Charlevoix; beach. One of the specimens departs from the typical for the species in that it is dark except the legs.
416. Bembidion (Odontium) carinula Chd., 14; June 2 — Aug. 18; Garden Is., High Is., Hog Is.; beach.
438. Bembidion (Eudromus) nitidum (Kby.), 4; June 2 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., High Is.; under cover on sandy ground; under gravel on beach.
540. Bembidion (Peryphus) transversale Dej., 12; June 2 — Aug. 25; Beaver Is., Garden Is., High Is., Hog Is., Gull Is.; under gravel and boards on damp beach.
573. Bembidion (Peryphus) scopulinum (Kby.), 15; June 2 — Aug. 29; Beaver Is., High Is.; under gravel on beach.
591. Bembidion (Peryphus) honestum Say, 2; Aug. 24; Hog Is.; under gravel on damp beach.
648. Bembidion (Notaphus) posticum (Hald.) (det. by Not-

man), 4; Sept. 6–8; Beaver Is.; under cover and on sand of damp beach.

655. Bembidion (Notaphus) intermedium (Kby.), 20; Aug. 22–27; Beaver Is., Charlevoix; under cover on damp beach; on mud bank.

660. Bembidion (Notaphus) variegatum Say, 5; Aug. 22 — Sept. 1; Beaver Is., Charlevoix; on mud bank; under gravel and boards on beach.

708. Bembidion (Notaphus) aestivum Csy. (det. by Notman), 1; Aug. 31; Beaver Is.; on mud bank.

713. Bembidion (Notaphus) decipiens Dej. (det. by Notman), 1; Aug. 31; Beaver Is.; on mud bank.

723. Bembidion (Notaphus) versicolor (Lec.) (det. by Notman), 3; Aug. 27 — Sept. 1; Beaver Is.; on mud bank; under gravel and boards on beach.

805. Tachyura incurva (Say) (det. by Notman), 5; Aug. 30 — Sept. 1; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry ground; under cover on beach.

890. Tachyta nana (Gyll.), 1; June 2; High Is.; beach.

901. Patrobus longicornis (Say), 10; June 14 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is., Garden Is., High Is., Hog Is.; under cover on damp ground; under cover on beach.

929. Myas coracinus (Say), 1; Aug. 29; Beaver Is.; under board on dry ground in open woods.

1006. Pterostichus adoxus (Say), 2; July 21 — Aug. 22; High Is., Thumb Lake; molasses trap in hardwoods.

1093. Euferonia coracina (Newm.), 41; May 27 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., Garden Is., High Is., Hog Is.; under cover, especially on damp ground, but likewise in drier situations, on beach, etc.; under bark.

1162. Poecilus lucublandus Say, 18; May 27 — Aug. 30; Beaver Is., Garden Is., High Is., Charlevoix; under cover in dry situations; on beach.

1174. Omaseus caudicalis (Say), 1; Sept. 7; Beaver Is.; under cover on beach.

1175. Omaseus luctuosus (Dej.), 1; Aug. 24; Garden Is.; under cover on damp ground.

1176. Omaseus corvinus (Dej.), 4; Aug. 23–24; Beaver Is., Garden Is.; under cover on beach and on damp ground.

1178. Dysidius mutus (Say), 1; Aug. 30; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry ground.

1181. Pseudargutor erythropus (Dej.), 8; July 28 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is., Garden Is., Hog Is.; under cover on damp ground, on dry sand, on dry ground, on beach.

1188. Bothriopterus pennsylvanicus (Lec.), 1; June 6; High Is.; under cover on beach.

1194. Bothriopterus luczoti (Dej.) (det. by Notman), 3; June 2 — Sept. 25; Beaver Is., High Is.; under cover on beach.

1262. Leiocnemis avida (Say), 3; July 14 — Aug. 31; Beaver Is., Gull Is.; under cover on dry ground.

1272. Bradytus latior Kby., 1; Aug. 31; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry ground.

1281. Percosia obesa (Say), 7; July 10 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., Garden Is., Hog Is.; under cover on sandy ground; beach drift; floating on surface of Lake Michigan one to two miles off shore.

1309. Celia remotestriata Dej. (det. checked by Wallis), 19; Aug. 23 — Sept. 5; Beaver Is.; under cover on beach, on sandy ground, and on dry ground.

1350. Celia subaenea Lec. (det. by Wallis), 2; Aug. 26–30; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry ground and on sandy ground.

1372. Celia musculus (Say) (det. checked by Wallis), 34; Aug. 24 — Sept. 9; Beaver Is., Hog Is.; under cover and gravel on damp beach and on dry sandy ground.

1385. Amara impuncticollis Say, 1; June 1; Beaver Is.; beach.

1389. Amara fallax Lec. (det. by Wallis), 3; July 8 — Sept. 2; Beaver Is., Boyne Falls, Boyne City; under cover on dry ground; swept from grass.

1414. Amara convexa Lec. (det. by Wallis), 4; Aug. 22 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is., Charlevoix; under cover on beach and on dry sandy ground.

1415. Amara polita Lec. (?), 1; May 31; Gull Is.; on sand in gull rookery.

1444. Rembus obtusa Lec., 1; Sept. 8; Beaver Is.; under cover on damp beach.

1471. Badister pulchellus Lec., 1; June 14; High Is.; beach.

1482. Calathus gregarius Dej., 2; June 2 — Aug. 30; Beaver Is., High Is.; under cover on dry ground.

1489. Pristodactyla impunctata (Say) (det. by Notman), 1; Sept. 9; Beaver Is.; under decaying fungus.

1489a. Pristodactyla convexa Csy. (det. by Notman), 1; Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; under decaying fungus.

1513. Anchomenus decens Say, 5; Oct. 5; High Is.; under bark.

1514. Anchomenus sinuatus Dej., 1; May 27; Garden Is.; under log.

1519. Anchomenus reflexus Lec., 5; July 7 — Aug. 13; High Is., Hog Is.; beach.

1523. Anchomenus decorus Say, 2; July 8; Gull Is.

1537a. Agonum errans subcordatum Lec., 60; May 27 — Sept. 6; Beaver Is., Garden Is., Hog Is., Whiskey Is., Boyne City, Thumb Lake; under cover on and near beach; swept from vegetation on beach.

1541. Agonum mutatum G. & H., 1; July 8; Boyne City; in pasture.

1546. Agonum affine Kby., 1; June 2; High Is., beach.

1553. Agonum cupripennis (Say), 18; June 7 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., High Is., Hog Is.; under cover on sandy ground, on dry ground, on beach, and on damp sand about a beach pool.

1567. Agonum placidum (Say), 4; July 16 — Aug. 31; Beaver Is., High Is., Coyne Falls; under cover on dry ground and on dry sandy ground; at light.

1570. Agonum cupreum Dej., 4; June 2 — Aug. 27; Beaver Is., High Is., Charlevoix; under cover on beach.

1573. Agonum bogemanni (Gyll.), 1; June 7; High Is.; beach.

1574. Agonum quadripunctatum (Dej.), 4; June 1–14; Beaver Is., High Is.; beach.

1579. Circinalia crenistriata Lec., 17; July 10 — Aug. 31; Beaver Is., Charlevoix; under cover on beach; under cover on dry ground (15 specimens); beach drift.

—— Europhilus lenis Dej., 6; July 8 — Aug. 23; Beaver Is., Boyne Falls, Thumb Lake; under cover on beach; sweeping in marshy areas; in grass on ground; on ground and in molasses trap in hardwoods.

1586. Agonum gemellum Lec., 1; Aug 24; Hog Is.; under cover on damp ground.

1612. Casnonia pennsylvanica L., 1; July 8; Gull Is.

1620. Galerita bicolor Drury, 2; June 13 — Oct. 5; High Is.; beach; under bark.

1642. Lebia atriventris Say, 2; June 6; High Is.; under cover on beach.

1655. Lebia viridis Say, 5; June 1 — Aug. 29; Beaver Is., High Is., Gull Is.; sweeping raspberry and rose bushes in clearing in woods; beach drift.

1655 b. Lebia viridis moesta Lec., 2; June 2 — Aug. 24; High Is., Hog Is.; sweeping, probably from Solidago flowers.

1667. Lebia ornata Say, 1; July 31; Boyne Falls; sweeping in swamp.

1672. Lebia fuscata Dej., 1; July 8; Gull Is.

1675. Lebia scapularis Dej., 8; June 16; High Is.; sweeping.

1681. Lebia vittata Fab., 1; June 1; Beaver Is

1696. Blechrus glabratus (Duft.), 11; June 2 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., High Is., Thumb Lake, Boyne City; under cover on beach, on dry sandy ground, on dry ground, on ground in hardwoods; under bark.

1738. Cymindis cribricollis Dej., 1; Aug. 29; under cover on dry ground in open woods.

1746. Cymindis pilosa Say, 34; Aug. 25 — Sept. 9; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry ground and on dry sandy ground. The species of this genus are stated by Horn (*Trans. Am. Ent. Soc.*, 10: 149) to be apterous, and this usually appears to be the case, but one specimen of this species in the author's collection from Cheyboygan County has fully developed and apparently functional wings. This is, perhaps, significant, as suggesting the way in which this usually apterous group might make its way to the islands.

1775. Brachinus janthinipennis (Dej.) (det. by Notman), 2;

Sept. 8; Beaver Is.; under cover on damp margin of beach pool.

—— Brachinus rejectus Lec. (det. by Notman), 1; Sept. 8; Beaver Is.; under cover on damp margin of beach pool.

1806. Chlaenius tomentosus Say, 2; Aug. 18-26; Beaver Is., High Is.; under cover on sandy ground; beach drift.

1812. Chlaenius harpalinus Esch., 1; Aug. 23; Beaver Is.; under cover on beach.

1814. Chlaenius impunctifrons Say, 1; July 23; Hog Is.

1817. Chlaenius pennsylvanicus Say, 14; June 6 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., High Is.; under cover on damp beach, on sandy ground, and on dry ground.

1819. Chlaenius brevilabris Lec., 47; May 27 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is., Garden Is., Hog Is., High Is., Boyne City; under cover on dry ground; under cover on beach.

1821. Chlaenius tricolor Dej., 6; June 23 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., Hog Is.; under cover on beach.

1822. Chlaenius nemoralis Say, 2; June 23 — Aug. 27; Beaver Is., Hog Is.; under cover on beach.

1830. Chlaenius solitarius Say, 18; June 6 — Sept. 20; Beaver Is., High Is.; under gravel on damp beach.

1846. Chlaenius sericeus Forst., 8; June 14 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., Garden Is., High Is.; under cover on dry ground and on damp beach.

1860. Brachylobus lithophilus (Say), 1; Aug. 23; Beaver Is.; under cover on beach.

1882. Nothopus valens Csy., 1; Aug. 22; Charlevoix; beach.

1896. Harpalus caliginosus (Fab.), extremely abundant; Aug. 18 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., High Is.; occurred mostly under cover in vicinity of recently harvested grain fields (Aug. 31), where, before the grain had been cut, they had been seen in great numbers on the stalks apparently feeding on the kernels; beach drift; under cover on beach and on sandy ground.

1897. Harpalus erraticus Say, extremely abundant; July 21 — Sept. 9; Beaver Is., Garden Is., Thumb Lake; extremely abundant under cover on dry sandy ground; also under cover on beach; molasses trap in hardwoods; a single speci-

men found dead at the bottom of a pitcher-plant leaf (*Sarracenia purpurea* L.) in sphagnum bog within fifty feet of a field where the beetles were abundant.

1903. HARPALUS VIRIDIAENEUS Beauv., 7; June 2 — Aug. 31; Beaver Is., High Is.; under cover on beach and on dry ground.

1910. HARPALUS ERYTHROPUS Dej., 5; Aug. 22 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., Charlevoix; under cover on beach and on dry ground.

1915. HARPALUS COMPAR Lec., 35; Aug. 22 — 29; Beaver Is., Hog Is., Charlevoix; under cover on beach, on damp ground, on sandy ground, and on dry ground in open woods.

1922. HARPALUS FAUNUS Say (?), 1; Aug. 30; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry ground.

1925. HARPALUS PENNSYLVANICUS DeG., 14; July 8 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is., Gull Is., High Is., Charlevoix, Boyne City; under cover on dry sandy ground, on beach, and on dry ground in open woods.

1933. HARPALUS VIDUUS Lec. (?), 3; June 1 — Aug. 22; Beaver Is., Hog Is., Charlevoix; under cover on beach.

1934. HARPALUS LATICEPS Lec. (?), 1; June 1; Beaver Is.; beach.

1941. HARPALUS CAUTUS Dej. (det. by Notman), 1; Aug. 31; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry ground.

1944. HARPALUS PLEURITICUS Kby., 1; Sept. 5; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry sandy ground.

1956. HARPALUS HERBIVAGUS Say, 2; Aug. 22 — Sept. 1; under cover on beach.

2070. TRIPLECTRUS CARBONARIUS (Say), 1; Aug. 30; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry ground.

2088. ANISODACTYLUS NIGERRIMUS Dej., 1; under gravel on beach.

2090. ANISODACTYLUS NIGRITA Dej., 5; Aug. 24 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., Garden Is.; under cover on damp beach, on damp ground, on dry ground.

2091. ANISODACTYLUS INTERPUNCTATUS Kby., 1; June 14; High Is.; beach.

2112. PSEUDAMPHASIA SERICEA (Harris), 2; June 14 — July 7; High Is.; beach.

2126. Anadaptus discoideus (Dej.), 2; July 7; High Is.

2127. Anadaptus baltimorensis (Say), 3; July 7 — Aug. 31; Beaver Is., High Is.; under cover on dry ground.

2132. Anisotarsus sayi Blatch., 1; Sept. 5; Beaver Is.; under cover on sandy ground.

2138. Anisotarsus testaceus (Hald.), 15; Aug. 26 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is.; under cover on sandy ground and on dry ground; one specimen on stalk of Erigeron apparently eating seeds.

2139. Anisotarsus terminatus (Say), 1; Aug. 30; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry ground.

2158. Tachycellus nigrinus (Dej.), 1; July 14; Gull Is.

2159. Triliarthrus badipennis (Hald.), 1; June 2; High Is.; beach.

2218. Stenolophus ochropezus (Say), 1; June 2; High Is.; beach.

2234. Stenolophus plebejus Dej., 2; Sept. 1; Beaver Is.; under gravel on beach.

2235. Stenolophus fuscatus Dej. (det. by Notman), 4; Sept. 1–7; under gravel on beach.

2238. Stenolophus conjunctus Say (det. by Notman), 10; May 16 — Sept. 1; Beaver Is., Gull Is.; under cover on sandy ground, on dry ground, and on gravel beach.

2247. Tachistodes pauperculus Dej. (det. by Notman), 4; July 8 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is., Gull Is., Boyne City; herbage along beach.

2251. Agonoderus lineola (Fab.), 2; June 14 — Aug. 24; High Is.; beach.

2261. Agonoderus comma (Fab.), 10; June 2 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., High Is.; under cover on beach, on dry ground, on mud bank, and about beach pool.

OMOPHRONIDAE

2284. Omophron americanum Dej., 1; July 7; High Is.

HALIPLIDAE

2301. Haliplus triopsis Say, 1; Aug. 26; Beaver Is.; aquatic: Chara, Faunt Lake.

2305. Haliplus cribrarius Lec., 1; Sept. 1; Beaver Is.; aquatic: shallow beach pond.

2318. Haliplus immaculicollis Harr., 16; July 17 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is., Thumb Lake; aquatic: beach ponds, submerged vegetation in lake in bog, ditch in bog.

2324. Peltodytes tortulosus Rbts., 3; July 17; Thumb Lake; aquatic: vegetation choked pond.

DYTISCIDAE

2351. Laccophilus maculosus (Germ.), 91; July 17 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is., High Is., Thumb Lake; aquatic: 76 specimens from beach ponds; streamlets running down beach from adjacent cedar bog; muck margin of Round Lake; submerged vegetation of lake in bog.

2374. Desmopachria convexa (Aube), 1; Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; aquatic: marshy area in Faunt Lake.

2390. Bidessus affinis (Say), 23; July 8 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., Boyne City, Thumb Lake; aquatic: streamlets running down beach from adjacent cedar bog; beach ponds; ponds by road through cedar bog; aquatic vegetation by margin of lakes and ponds; bog lake.

2395. Bidessus fuscatus (Cr.), 1; Aug. 13; Hog Is.; pool on beach.

2403. Coelambus punctatus (Say), 47; June 23 — Sept. 25; Beaver Is., High Is., Thumb Lake; aquatic: beach ponds, ditch in bog.

2408. Coelambus turbidus (Lec.), 43; Sept. 1–7; Beaver Is.; aquatic: beach ponds.

2414. Coelambus sellatus (Lec.), 7; Sept. 1–7; Beaver Is.; aquatic: beach ponds.

2424. Coelambus impresso-punctatus (Sch.), 5; June 1 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is.; aquatic: muck margin of Round Lake, marshy area along Faunt Lake, beach ponds.

2425. Coelambus laccophilinus (Lec.), 1; Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; aquatic: marshy area in Faunt Lake.

2426. Coelambus sylvanus Fall, 9; Aug. 25 — Sept. 8; Beaver

Is.; aquatic: beach ponds, pools by road through cedar bog, muck shore of Round Lake.

2428. Deronectes depressus (Fab.) (det. by Wallis), 6; Aug. 23–25: Beaver Is.; aquatic: small streamlets running down beach from adjacent cedar bog, beach ponds.

2447. Hydroporus undulatus Say (det. by Wallis), 5; June 23 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is., High Is.; aquatic: submerged vegetation in Faunt Lake, beach ponds.

2454. Hydroporus consimilis Lec. (det. by Wallis), 130: Aug. 26 — Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; aquatic: submerged vegetation in Faunt Lake.

2493. Hydroporus tenebrosus Lec. (det. by Wallis), 1; Aug. 30; Beaver Is.; aquatic: pools by road through cedar bog.

2501. Hydroporus tristis (Payk.) (? det. by Wallis), 1; Aug. 31; Beaver Is.; aquatic: muck shore of Round Lake.

2508. Hydroporus signatus Mann. (det. by Wallis), 5; Aug. 31; Beaver Is.; aquatic: muck margin of Round Lake.

2514. Hydroporus niger Say (det. by Wallis), 2; Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; aquatic: marshy area in Faunt Lake.

—— Hydroporus dentellus Fall (det. by Wallis), 2; Aug. 30; Beaver Is.; aquatic: pools by road through cedar bog.

—— Hydroporus striola Gyll. (det. by Wallis), 1; Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; aquatic: marshy area in Faunt Lake.

—— Agabus subfuscatus Shp. (? det. by Wallis), 2; Aug. 30; Beaver Is., aquatic: pools by road through cedar bog.

2575. Agabus anthracinus Mann. (det. by Wallis), 1; Aug. 30; Beaver Is.; aquatic: pools by road through cedar bog.

2594. Ilybius ignarus Lec. (det. by Wallis), 1; Aug. 30; Beaver Is.; aquatic: pools by road through cedar bog.

2598. Ilybius biguttulus (Germ.) (? det. by Wallis), 3; Aug. 22–30; Beaver Is., Charlevoix; aquatic: pools by road through cedar bog; under board in mud by beach pool.

2610. Coptotomus interrogatus (Fab.), 1; Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; aquatic: marshy area in Faunt Lake.

2616. Rhantus binotatus (Harr.), 9; Aug. 18 — Sept. 1; Beaver Is., High Is.; aquatic: beach pool, marshy area by Faunt Lake, pools by road through cedar bog; beach drift.

2623. Rhantus bistriatus (Bergst.), 1; July 10; Beaver Is.; beach drift.

2636. Dytiscus fasciventris Say, 4; July 7 — Oct. 3; Beaver Is., High Is., Hog Is.

2647. Hydaticus stagnalis (Fab.), 2; July 10 — Aug. 13; Beaver Is., Hog Is.; beach drift. One of the specimens is without the light stripes on the elytra.

2651. Acilius semisulcatus Aube, 23; July 17 — Sept. 9; Beaver Is., High Is., Charlevoix, Thumb Lake; floating on surface of Lake Michigan one to two miles off Hog Is.; aquatic: beach ponds, pools by road through cedar bog, aquatic vegetation of lakes and ponds; beach drift.

GYRINIDAE

2679. Dineutes nigrior Rbts., 9; June 21 — Sept. 25; Beaver Is., High Is.; surface of beach pools and small lakes.

2680. Dineutes americanus Say, 4; Aug. 22–31; Beaver Is., Charlevoix; surface of beach pools.

2681. Dineutes hornii Rbts., 2; June 1 — Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; surface of Faunt Lake in marshy area.

2684. Gyrinus minutus Fab., 3; June 28; High Is.; surface of small lakes.

—— Gyrinus lecontei Fall (det. by Wallis), 106; Aug. 22 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., Charlevoix; surface of beach ponds, pools by road through cedar bog, ditch.

HYDROPHILIDAE

2739. Helophorus tuberculatus Gyll., 1; Aug. 13; Hog Is.; aquatic.

2750. Helophorus lineatus Say, 2; June 15 — July 8; Gull Is.; aquatic.

2764. Hydrochus squamifer Lec., 5; Aug. 25 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is.; aquatic: beach ponds, pools by road through cedar bog.

2777. Berosus peregrinus (Hbst.), 8; Aug. 24 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is., Garden Is.; aquatic: submerged vegetation near

shore of Faunt Lake, beach ponds; under cover on damp beach.

2784. Berosus striatus (Say), 30; Aug. 25 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is.; aquatic: at margins of beach ponds, muck margin of Round Lake, submerged vegetation in Faunt Lake.

2795. Hydrophilus obtusatus Say, 2; Aug. 18 — Sept. 2; Beaver Is., High Is.; aquatic: beach ponds; beach drift.

2805. Tropisternus glaber (Hbst.), 2; June 14 — July 30; High Is., Thumb Lake; ditch in bog.

2806. Tropisternus mixtus (Lec.), 4; Aug. 10–30; Beaver Is., Hog Is., aquatic: pools by road through cedar bog; beach drift.

2807. Tropisternus lateralis (Fab.), 33; June 16 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is., High Is., Charlevoix; aquatic: beach ponds, muck margins and in vegetation of small lakes; beach drift; at sugar on tree in evening.

2808. Hydrobius fuscipes L., 8, July 7 — Sept. 8, Beaver Is., High Is., Hog Is.; aquatic: beach ponds, pools by road through cedar bog; beach drift.

2810. Hydrobius globosus (Say), 1; Sept. 1; Beaver Is.; aquatic: beach pond.

2818. Paracymus despectus (Lec.) (?), 1; Aug. 24; Garden Is.; under stone on wet beach.

2819. Paracymus subcupreus (Say), 13; Aug. 30 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is.; aquatic: pools by road through cedar bog, beach ponds.

2834. Enochrus nebulosus (Say), 5; July 8 — Sept. 6; Beaver Is., Gull Is., Boyne City; aquatic: beach ponds, marshy area in Faunt Lake.

2835. Enochrus ochraceus (Melsh.), 1; Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; aquatic: marshy area in Faunt Lake.

2851. Cymbiodyta blanchardi Horn, 11; June 16 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is., High Is.; aquatic: beach ponds; pools by road through cedar bog; muck margin of Round Lake.

2853. Helocombus bifidus (Lec.), 1; Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; aquatic: marshy area in Faunt Lake.

2854. Laccobius agilis Rand., 53; July 28 — Sept. 7; Beaver

Is., Garden Is.; found buried in sand at water-level of beach ponds and small streamlets running down beach from adjacent cedar bog.

2867. Sphaeridium scarabaeoides (L.), 4; July 8 — Sept. 2; Beaver Is., High Is., Boyne City; cattle dung.

2885. Cercyon pygmaeus (Illig.) (?), 9; Sept. 2–9; Beaver Is.; cattle dung.

2899. Cryptopleurum minutum (Fab.), 1; Sept. 2; Beaver Is.; cattle dung.

SILPHIDAE

2912. Necrophorus sayi Lap., 2, July 19; Thumb Lake; carrion.

2913. Necrophorus orbicollis Say, 21; July 19 — Sept. 9; Beaver Is., Thumb Lake; carrion.

2918. Necrophorus pustulatus Hersch., 2; July 19 — Sept. 4; Beaver Is., Thumb Lake; carrion.

2919. Necrophorus vespilloides Hbst.. 11; July 19; Thumb Lake; carrion.

2920. Necrophrous tomentosus Web., 25; July 19 — Sept. 4; Beaver Is., Thumb Lake; carrion.

2922. Silpha (Necrodes) surinamensis Fab., 25; July 21 — Sept. 4; Beaver Is., Thumb Lake; carrion.

2923. Silpha (Thanatophilus) lapponica Hbst., 5; July 27 — Sept. 2; Beaver Is., High Is.; carrion.

2927. Silpha noveboracensis Forst., 8; July 21 — Sept. 2; Beaver Is., Garden Is.; Thumb Lake; carrion.

2928. Silpha americana L., 1; July 21; Thumb Lake; carrion.

2951. Choleva basillaris Say (det. by Dietrich), 8; July 19 — Sept. 10; Beaver Is., Thumb Lake; carrion.

2952. Choleva clavicornis (Lec.), 10; July 21 — Aug. 31; Beaver Is., Thumb Lake; carrion.

2957. Prionochaeta opaca (Say), 1; July 19; Thumb Lake; carrion.

3003. Anisotoma collaris Lec. (det. by Dietrich), 1; Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; damp sand on beach.

SCYDMAENIDAE

3216. EUMICRUS MOTSCHULSKII (Lec.), 1; Sept. 1; Beaver Is.; under cover on gravel beach.

STAPHYLINIDAE

3424. ACIDOTA CRENATA (Fab.) (?), 3; June 2–14; High Is., beach.

3461. GEODROMICUS BRUNNEUS (Say), 7, June 1 — Aug. 27; Beaver Is., High Is.; under cover on beach.

3508. TROGOPHLOEUS PHLOEOPORINUS Lec. (det. by Notman), 1; Sept. 5; Beaver Is.; fungus.

3596. PLATYSTETHUS AMERICANUS Erichs. (det. by Notman), 1; Aug. 22; Charlevoix; cattle dung.

—— STENUS ANASTOMOZANS Csy. (det. by Blaisdell), 1; Aug. 31; Beaver Is.; muck bank.

3787. STENUS STYGICUS Say (det. by Blaisdell), 19; Aug. 23 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is., Garden Is.; under cover on damp or wet beach; on muck bank.

—— STENUS MILLEPORUS Csy. (det. by Blaisdell), 1; Aug. 23; Beaver Is.; under cover on damp beach.

3908. GASTROLOBIUM BICOLOR (Grav.), 13; June 3 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is., Garden Is., Hog Is.; under cover on damp beach.

3926. HESPEROBIUM PALLIPES (Grav.), 2; July 16–28; Garden Is., Hog Is.; under cover on beach.

3932. HESPEROBIUM SELLATUM (Lec.), 2; Sept. 8; Beaver Is.; under cover on damp beach.

3952. PAEDERUS (PAEDERILLUS) LITTORARIUS Grav., 4; May 16 — Sept. 25; under cover on dry ground.

4016. TETARTOPEUS PUNCTULATUS (Lec.), 2; Aug. 29–31; Beaver Is.; under cover on gravel beach, under cover on dry ground.

4105. TRACHYSECTUS CONFLUENTUS (Say), 4; May 16 — Sept. 10; Beaver Is., Garden Is., High Is.; in rotten wood.

4272. ASTENUS DISCOPUNCTATUS (Say), 1; Aug. 30; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry ground.

4285. Nudobius cephalus (Say), 4; June 2 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., High Is.; under bark of decaying balsam trunk; beach.

4308. Gyrohypnus hamatus (Say), 8; June 2–15; High Is., Gull Is.; under cover on beach.

4319. Gyrohypnus gularis (Lec.), 1; Aug. 31; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry ground.

4384. Philonthus politus (L.), 6; July 21 — Sept. 4; Beaver Is., Thumb Lake; carrion.

—— Philonthus tetragonocephalus Notman, 1; Aug. 13; Hog Is.

4418. Philonthus quadricollis Horn (?), 16; May 29 — Sept. 9; Beaver Is., High Is., Garden Is., Gull Is., Whiskey Is., Boyne City, Thumb Lake; carrion, cattle dung, vegetation on beach.

—— Philonthus cruentatus Gmel., 10; July 8 — Sept. 2; Beaver Is., High Is., Garden Is., Charlevoix, Boyne City; carrion, cattle dung, under cover on beach, vegetation on beach.

4431. Philonthus fulvipes (Fab.), 2; Aug. 30-31; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry ground.

4473. Philonthus microphthalmus Horn (?), 1; Aug. 31; Beaver Is.; cattle dung.

4474. Philonthus cephalicus Csy. (det. by Notman), 1; Aug. 31; Beaver Is.; carrion.

4489. Philonthus confertus Lec., 2; June 1–16; Beaver Is., High Is.; beach.

4546. Staphylinus violaceus Grav., 4; June 5 — Sept. 10; Beaver Is., High Is., Thumb Lake; under bark of rotten log; carrion.

4552. Ontholestes cingulatus (Grav.), 7; July 21 — Sept. 25; Beaver Is., High Is., Thumb Lake; carrion, dung.

4555b. Creophilus maxillosus villosus (Grav.), 17; July 7 — Sept. 4; Beaver Is., High Is., Garden Is., Thumb Lake; carrion.

4575. Quedius laevigatus (Gyll.), 5; June 2 — Aug. 24; High Is.; under bark.

4634. Oxyporus vittatus Grav., 1; Sept. 20; Beaver Is.

4635. Oxyporus fasciatus Horn, 1; Sept. 5; Beaver Is., fungus.

4652. Tachinus memnonius Grav., 10; Sept. 5–10; Beaver Is.; fungi.

4682a. Tachyporus chrysomelinus acaudus Say, 2; Aug. 30 — Sept. 9; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry ground; sifting damp ground debris in pine woods.

4690. Erchomus ventriculus (Say), 7; Sept. 9-10; Beaver Is.; in rotten wood.

4698. Conosoma imbricatus Csy., 1; Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; in rotten wood.

4725. Bolitobius pygmaeus (Fab.) (?), 5; Sept. 5–9; Beaver Is.; fungi.

4727. Bolitobius trinotatus Er., 1; Sept. 1; Beaver Is.; fungus.

4738. Mycetoporus humidus Say, 1; Aug. 26; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry sandy ground.

4770. Myllaena vulpina Bnhr. (det. by Fenyes), 1; Aug. 29; Beaver Is.; sweeping herbage.

4928. Silusida marginella Csy. (det. by Fenyes), 2; Sept. 5; Beaver Is., fungus.

4961. Gyrophaena flavicornis Melsh. (det. by Fenyes), 6; Sept. 5; Beaver Is.; fungi.

4984–4985. Gyrophaena nana Payk. (det. by Fenyes), 9; Sept. 5–9; Beaver Is.; fungi. Casey's *perpolita* and *tenebrosa* are synonyms (Fenyes).

5099. Atheta divisa Mark. (det. by Fenyes), 2; Aug. 31; Beaver Is.; carrion.

5112. Atheta virginica Bnhr. (det. by Fenyes), 3; Aug. 30 — Sept. 5; Beaver Is.; carrion, fungi.

5271. Atheta (Homalotusa) lacustrina Csy. (? det. by Fenyes), 1; Sept. 10; Beaver Is.; under bark of rotten log.

5540. Dimetrota maeklini Fenyes (det. by Fenyes), 1; Sept. 5; Beaver Is.; fungus. A new name for *D. moesta* Makl. (Fenyes).

5598–5603. Arisota recondita Er. (det. by Fenyes), 14; Aug. 27 — Sept. 9; Beaver Is.; cattle dung. Dr. Fenyes writes:

"Casey's *Aristota* is a valid genus, but his *tetricula, insueta, pomonemsis, speculifer, apacheella,* and *umbrina* are all synonyms of the old Erichsonian *recondita.*"

5627. Atheta (Acrotona) fungi (Grav.) (det. by Fenyes), 2; Sept. 7–9; Beaver Is.; sifting debris on ground in pine woods.

5678. Atheta (Coprothassa) sordida (Marsh.) (det. by Fenyes), 25; Aug. 31 — Sept. 2; Beaver Is.; cattle dung.

5702. Gnypeta nigrella (Lec.) (det. by Fenyes), 1; Sept. 7; Beaver Is.; margin of beach pool.

5755. Falagria dissecta Er. (det. by Fenyes), 9; Aug. 31 — Sept. 2; Beaver Is.; cattle dung.

5766. Aleochara lata Grav., 16; July 21 — Sept. 4; Beaver Is., Thumb Lake; carrion.

5785. Exaleochara morion Grav. (det. by Fenyes), 1; Aug. 31; Beaver Is.; cattle dung.

5799. Aleochara (Isochara) sculptiventris Csy. (det. by Fenyes), 1; Sept. 2; Beaver Is.; carrion.

5806. Aleochara (Coprochara) bimaculata Grav. (det. by Fenyes), 16; Aug. 24 — Sept. 2; Beaver Is., Garden Is.; cattle dung; in vicinity of carrion.

5820. Aleochara (Coprochara) bipustulata L. (det. by Fenyes), 4; Sept. 2–9; Beaver Is.; cattle dung; beaten from white pine.

5898. Oxypoda (Bessopora) nigriceps Csy. (det. by Fenyes), 2; Sept. 9; Beaver Is.; sifting debris on ground in pine woods.

6018. Phloeopora testacea (Mann.) (det. by Fenyes), 2; Sept. 8; Beaver Is.; under bark of decaying balsam trunk.

Pselaphidae

6201. Batrisodes spretus (Lec.) (?), 1; July 18; Thumb Lake; among dead leaves on ground in hardwoods.

Scaphidiidae

6489. Scaphiosoma convexum Say, 1; July 19; Thumb Lake; carrion.

6506. Scaphiosoma terminatum Melsh, 1; Sept. 9; Beaver Is.; carrion.

6516. Baeocera congener Csy., 1; Aug. 24: Beaver Is.; sweeping herbage.

HISTERIDAE

6571. Hister interruptus Beauv., 2; June 1 — Aug. 9; Beaver Is., High Is.; beach.

6591. Hister marginicollis Lec., 4; June 21 — Sept. 4; Beaver Is., High Is.; cattle dung, carrion.

6596. Hister abbreviatus Fab., 4; Aug. 24 — Sept. 2; Beaver Is., Garden Is.; cattle dung, carrion.

6601. Hister furtivus Lec. (det. checked by Blaisdell), 10; Sept. 2–4; Beaver Is.; cattle dung, carrion.

6606. Hister depurator Say, 14; July 21 — Sept. 9; Beaver Is., Thumb Lake; carrion, cattle dung.

6627. Hister (Athous) americanus Payk., 1; July 8; Gull Is.

6627a. Hister (Athous) americanus perplexus Lec., 2; June 14 — July 8; Gull Is., High Is.; beach.

6653. Platysoma depressum Lec., 13; May 15 — Aug. 9; Garden Is., High Is.; under bark.

6756. Plegaderus sayi Mars., 1; June 2; High Is.; beach.

6827. Saprinus lugens Er., 1; Aug. 31; Beaver Is.; carrion.

6831a. Saprinus oregonensis distinguendus Mars., 2; July 21 — Sept. 4; Beaver Is., Thumb Lake; carrion.

6836. Saprinus assimilis Payk., 1; Sept. 4; Beaver Is.; carrion.

6875. Saprinus (Hypocaccus) sphaeroides Lec., 1; May 16; Beaver Is.

6885. Saprinus (Hypocaccus) fraternus Say, 18; May 16 — Aug. 27; Beaver Is., Garden Is., Gull Is., Hog Is., High Is.; beach.

6896. Saprinus (Hypocaccus) patruelis Lec., 1; July 28; Hog Is.

LYCIDAE

6926. Calopteron reticulatum (Fab.), 1; July 8; Boyne Falls; swept from grass in swampy area.

6931. Celetes basalis Lec., 5; July 16 — Aug. 2; High Is.; at light.

6946. Plateros canaliculatus (Say) (?), 4; June 27 — July 14; High Is., Thumb Lake; at light.

LAMPYRIDAE

6971. Lucidota (Rileya) atra (Fab.), 1; July 18; Thumb Lake; herbage.

6975. Lucidota (Ellychina) corrusca (L.), 6; May 27 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., Hog Is.; sweeping herbage in fields and hardwoods.

6977. Lucidota (Pyropyga) fenestralis (Melsh.), 14; July 8 — Aug. 3; Garden Is., Gull Is., Boyne City, Thumb Lake; herbage, often in marshy areas.

6978. Lucidota (Pyropyga) nigricans (Say) (?), 1; July 17; Thumb Lake; beaten from tamarack in bog.

6984. Pyractomena angulata (Say), 1; June 14; High Is.

6990. Photinus ardens Lec., 2; July 8; Gull Is.

7013. Photuris pennsylvanica (DeG.), 2; July 8–16; Garden Is., High Is.; beating; at light.

CANTHARIDAE

7061. Podabrus diadema (Fab.) (?), 2; June 14 — July 12; High Is.

7062. Podabrus modestus (Say), 1; June 27; High Is.

7092. Cantharis excavatus Lec., 1; June 8; Hog Is.; beating.

7100. Cantharis nigritulus Lec. (?), 5; June 27 — July 19; High Is., Gull Is., Boyne City, Thumb Lake; vegetation on beach; molasses trap in hardwoods.

7106. Cantharis scitulus Say (?), 1; July 8; Boyne City; vegetation on beach.

7107. Cantharis pusillus Lec. (?), 2; July 18–19; Thumb Lake; molasses trap and on ground in hardwoods.

7113. Cantharis rotundicollis Say, 2; June 23; High Is.; hardwoods.

7152. Silis percomis (Say), 6; June 5 14; Beaver Is., High Is., Hog Is.; beating.

MELYRIDAE

7215. Collops vittatus (Say), 1; July 19; Thumb Lake; under cover on beach.

7227. Collops quadrimaculatus (Fab.), 2; July 8–18; Boyne City, Thumb Lake; herbage.

CLERIDAE

7629. Trichodes nutalli Kby., 5; July 8–12; Thumb Lake, Boyne City; vegetation on beach; milkweed.

7677. Hydnocera pallipennis Say, 2; Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; herbage.

7694. zenodosus sanguineus (Say), 1; June 21; High Is.

CORYNETIDAE

7729. Necrobia violacea (L.), 4; June 1; Beaver Is.; carrion.

CEPHALOIDAE

7747. Cephaloon lepturides Newm., 2; June 23; High Is.

MORDELLIDAE

7817. Mordella marginata Melsh. (det. by Liljeblad), 1; Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; flowers of Gnaphalium.

7845. Mordellistena biplagiata Hellm., 4; June 23 — July 14; High Is., Gull Is.; flowers in hardwoods.

7860. Mordellistena aspersa (Melsh.) (det. by Liljeblad), 2; Aug. 29; Beaver Is.; sweeping Solidago flowers.

7888. Mordellistena pustulata (Melsh.) (det. by Liljeblad), 1; Aug. 29; Beaver Is.; sweeping Solidago flowers.

7915. Mordellistena pityptera Lec. (det. by Liljeblad), 1; Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; sweeping herbage.

7942. Anaspis flavipennis Hald., 8; June 2–22; High Is.
7943. Anaspis rufa Say, 12; June 14–22; High Is., Gull Is.

MELOIDAE

8042. Macrobasis unicolor (Kby.), 8; June 15 — July 20; High Is., Gull Is., on small shrubs on beach.
8147. Meloe angusticollis Say, 7; June 22 — July 26; High Is.; on path through low grassy marsh.

PYROCHROIDAE

8220. Neopyrochroa flabellata Fab., 1; July 21; Thumb Lake; under gravel on beach.
8225. Dendroides bicolor Newm., 9; June 7 — July 30; High Is.; at light; on rotten log; bred from pupae taken under bark of rotten log (July 12).
8226. Dendroides concolor Newm., 4; June 23 — July 16; High Is.; at light; on rotten log.

PEDILIDAE

8264. Stereopalpus mellyi Laf., 2; July 7–8; High Is., Boyne City; on *Populus candicans* and tamarack along shore.
8265. Stereopalpus vestitus (Say), 2; July 7–11; Beaver Is., on *Populus candicans.*

ANTHICIDAE

8302. Notoxus anchora Horn, 6; July 7–19; High Is., Boyne City, Thumb Lake; vegetation in swampy area; on beach.
8342. Amblyderus pallens (Lec.), 2; Aug. 22–27; Beaver Is., Charlevoix; beach.
8397. Anthicus ephippium Laf., 1; Sept. 1; Beaver Is.; under cover on gravel beach.
8417. Anthicus cervinus Laf., 9; July 7 — Aug. 30; Beaver Is., High Is., Gull Is., Thumb Lake; under cover and on beach; under cover on dry ground.

8448. ANTHICUS MELANCHOLICUS Laf., 1; Sept. 7; Beaver Is.; beaten from Iris.

ELATERIDAE

8557. ADELOCERA BREVICORNIS Lec., 3; June 14 — Nov. 5; High Is.; under bark of stump of *Pinus resinosa*; beach.

8627. LIMONIUS CONFUSUS Lec., 1; June 23; High Is.; hardwoods.

8658. LEPTOSCHEMA DISCALCEATUM (Say), 1; Aug. 24; High Is.

8663. ATHOUS ACANTHUS (Say) (det. by Quirsfeld), 11; July 8–19; Boyne City, Thumb Lake; herbage; undergrowth and molasses trap in hardwoods.

8667. ATHOUS CUCULLATUS (Say), 2; July 12–16; High Is., Thumb Lake; undergrowth in hardwoods.

8698. LEPTUROIDES PRODUCTUS (Rand.), 1; June 20; High Is.

8699. LEPTUROIDES DENTICORNIS (Kby.), 1; June 23; High Is.; flowers of *Acer spicatum*.

8705. LUDIUS VIRENS (Schrank) (det. by Quirsfeld), 1; June 1; Beaver Is.

8707. LUDIUS RESPLENDENS (Esch.) (det. by Quirsfeld), 1; June 23; High Is.; hardwoods.

8739. LUDIUS SPINOSUS (Lec.), 1; June 8; Hog Is.; beating.

8748. LUDIUS SULCICOLLIS (Say), 4; July 20 — Sept. 27; High Is.; at sugar in evening.

8763. LUDIUS PROPOLA (Lec.) (det. by Quirsfeld), 1; May 15; Garden Is.

8766. LUDIUS TRIUNDULATUS (Rand.), 1; June 16; High Is.; sweeping.

8769. LUDIUS MEDIANUS (Germ.), 4; May 27 — June 3; Garden Is., Hog Is.; beating; on beach.

8796. LUDIUS HIEROGLYPHICUS (Say), 2; July 7 15; High Is., Hog Is.

8821. CRYPTOHYPNUS EXIGUUS Rand., 6; June 2 — July 16; High Is., Garden Is., Boyne City; beach.

8828. CRYPTOHYPNUS NOCTURNUS (Esch.) (det. by Quirsfeld), 1; June 2; High Is., beach.

8848. Hypnoidus obliquatulus (Melsh.), 1; May 29; Trout Is.; beach.

8878. Dolopius lateralis Esch. (det. by Quirsfeld), 7; May 29 — July 8; Hog Is., Trout Is., Boyne City; vegetation on beach.

8886. Agriotes stabilis (Lec.) (det. by Quirsfeld), 6; May 16 — July 14; Beaver Is., Garden Is., High Is., Gull Is.; beach.

8888. Agriotes fucosus (Lec.), 3; June 8 — July 26; High Is., Hog Is., beating.

8932. Elater pullus Germ., 3; June 8; Hog Is.

8941. Elater semicinctus Rand., 1; June 23; High Is.; hardwoods.

—— Elater longipennis Notman (? det. by Quirsfeld), 1; June 5; High Is.

8953. Elater apicatus Say, 1; June 20; High Is.

8966. Elater socer Lec., 4; May 31 — July 7; High Is., Gull Is.; beach.

9015. Melanotus castanipes (Payk.), 8; June 8–16; High Is.; under cover on beach; sweeping; under bark of *Pinus resinosa*.

9036. Melanotus fissilis Say (det. by Quirsfeld), 4; June 8—Aug. 22; Beaver Is., High Is., Hog Is., Charlevoix; beach; beating; under cover on dry sandy ground.

9071. Cardiophorus cardisce (Say), 2; May 31 — June 15; Gull Is.; gravel beach.

9087. Cardiophorus gagates Er., 3; June 8; Hog Is.; beating.

MELASIDAE

9133. Deltometopus amoenicornis (Say), 1; July 20; High Is.

9147. Fornax calceatus (Say), 1; July 16; Thumb Lake; on undergrowth in hardwoods.

THROSCIDAE

9182a. Drapetes geminatus nitidus Melsh., 1; July 19; Thumb Lake; under cover on beach.

BUPRESTIDAE

9333. DICERCA DIVARICATA (Say), 3; July 18—Sept. 9; High Is., Gull Is., Thumb Lake; beach drift.

9335. DICERCA PROLONGATA Say (det. by Andrews), 3; June 3—July 19; High Is., Hog Is.; on cut pulp wood on beach.

9351. POECILONATA CYANIPES (Say), 4; July 5—Sept. 14; Garden Is., High Is.; on cut pulp wood on beach.

9370. BUPRESTIS MACULATIVENTRIS Say, 5; July 12—Aug. 1; High Is., Boyne Falls, Norwood Township; flying; vegetation on beach.

9387. MELANOPHILA FULVOGUTTATA (Harris), 3; July 19; High Is.; on cult pulp wood on beach.

9391. MELANOPHILA ACUMINATA (DeG.), 6; June 16—Aug. 22; High Is., Hog Is.; beach drift; hardwoods.

9466. CHRYSOBOTHRIS FEMORATA (Oliv.), 4; June 23—July 19; High Is.; on cut pulp wood on beach; hardwoods.

9515. AGRILUS MASCULINUS Horn, 4; July 7; High Is.

9542. AGRILUS POLITUS (Say), 3; July 8—Aug. 24; High Is., Garden Is.; herbage.

9572. BRACHYS AEROSUS Melsh., 3; June 5—July 26; High Is.; Thumb Lake; sweeping in swampy area.

HETEROCERIDAE

9650. HETEROCERUS COLLARIS Kies., 1; Aug. 24; Garden Is.; under cover on damp beach.

9651. HETEROCERUS TRISTIS Mann., 1; June 22; High Is.

HELODIDAE

9698. CYPHON VARIABILIS (Thunb.), 5; July 8—Aug. 24; High Is., Gull Is., Charlevoix, Thumb Lake; herbage; beaten from tamarack in bog.

9709. SCIRTES ORBICULATUS (Fab.), 3; July 18–19; Thumb Lake; herbage.

9716. PTILODACTYLA SERRICOLLIS (Say), 7; July 8; Boyne City; vegetation on beach.

DERMESTIDAE

9725. Dermestes caninus Germ., 19; Sept. 3–4; Beaver Is.; carrion, especially more or less dried.

9732. Dermestes vulpinus Fab., 1; May 31; Gull Is.; on sand in gull rookery.

BYRRHIDAE

9864. Cytilus alternatus (Say), 7; May 16 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., Hog Is., High Is.; beach drift; under cover on dry sandy ground; under cover on beach.

9889. Byrrhus kirbyi Lec. (?), 31; May 27 — Sept. 5; Beaver Is., Hog Is., High Is.; beating; beach drift; 26 specimens under single railroad tie on dry sandy ground, Aug. 26 and Sept. 5.

9893. Porcinolus undatus (Melsh.), 1; Sept. 8; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry sandy ground.

9905. Limnichites punctatus (Lec.) (det. by Dietrich), 1; Sept. 9; Beaver Is.; sifting ground debris in pine forest.

OSTOMIDAE

9977. Tenebroides mauritanicus (L.), 1; Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; in hotel.

9994. Tenebroides corticalis (Melsh.), 6; June 2 — Sept. 6; Beaver Is., High Is.; under bark of dead limb of *Populus grandidentata.*

NITIDULIDAE

10052. Carpophilus niger (Say), 1; June 27; High Is.

10057. Carpophilus corticinus Er. (det. by Dietrich), 7; June 2–5; High Is.; beach.

10065. Nitidula bipunctata (L.), 1; June 1; Beaver Is.; carrion.

10067. Nitidula rufipes (L.), 2; June 1; Beaver Is.; carrion.

10069. Omosita colon (L.), 1; June 1; Beaver Is.; carrion.

10083. Epuraea avara (Rand.) (?), 2; June 2–5; High Is.

10099. Stelidota octomaculata Say (det. by Dietrich), 10; Aug. 28—Sept. 9; fungi.

CUCUJIDAE

10199. Silvanus planatus Germ., 4; June 21; High Is.
10200. Silvanus imbellis Lec., 1; Aug. 9; High Is.
10221. Cucujus clavipes Fab., 2; June 2; High Is.; under bark.

EROTYLIDAE

10292a. Aeropteroxys gracilis inornata Rand., 3; July 8–19; Boyne Falls, Thumb Lake; herbage.
10334. Triplax thoracica Say, 8; June 1; Beaver Is.; fungi.

BYTURIDAE

9718. Byturus unicolor Say, 2; July 8; Boyne City; herbage, probably Rubus.

MYCETOPHAGIDAE

10490. Mycetophagus punctatus Say, 9; June 1—Aug. 22; Beaver Is., High Is.; fungi.
10491. Mycetophagus flexuosus Say, 3; June 1—Aug. 9; Beaver Is., High Is.
10509. Typhaea fumata L., 1; Aug. 27; Beaver Is.; on dead pine branch on ground.
10511. Litargus tetraspilotus Lec., 7; Sept. 7–9; Beaver Is.; sifting debris on ground in pine woods.

COLYDIIDAE

10598. Cerylon castaneum Say, 4; June 21—Sept. 10; Beaver Is., High Is.; under bark of rotten log.

LATHRIDIIDAE

10699. Melanophthalma villosa Zimm., 16; July 8—Aug. 29; Beaver Is., Boyne City, Thumb Lake; herbage.
10701. Melanophthalma distinguenda Com., 10; Aug. 29—

Sept. 9; Beaver Is.; herbage, including Solidago, *Verbascum thapsus* and Erigeron; sifting debris on ground in pine woods.

10705. Melanophthalma (Corticarina) gibbosa Hbst., 5; Aug. 22 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., Charlevoix; herbage including much Solidago.

10712. Melanophthalma (Corticarina) americana Mann., 1; Sept. 8; Beaver Is.; herbage.

ENDOMYCHIDAE

10720. Lycoperdina ferruginea Lec., 2; Sept. 14; High Is.

10753. Endomychus biguttatus Say, 12; Aug. 21–24; High Is.

PHALACRIDAE

10780. Olibrus semistriatus Lec., 82; July 19 — Sept. 6; Beaver Is., Garden Is., Hog Is., Thumb Lake; herbage, mostly Solidago; two specimens under cover on beach.

10812. Acylomus piceus Csy., 1; Aug. 29; Beaver Is.; sweeping grass.

10829. Stilbus apicalis (Melsh.), 2; Aug. 23 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is.; herbage.

COCCINELLIDAE

10877. Hyperaspis bigeminata (Rand.), 1; June 16; High Is.; sweeping.

10879. Hyperaspis signata (Oliv.), 2; June 8; Hog Is.; beating.

10930. Hyperaspis undulata (Say), 2; Aug. 22; Charlevoix; herbage.

11035. Scymnus punctcollis Lec., 6; June 5 — Aug. 29; Beaver Is., High Is., Thumb Lake; herbage.

11055. Scymnus tenebrosus Muls., 15; July 18 — Sept. 10; Beaver Is., Thumb Lake; herbage; 13 specimens beaten from white pine.

11147. Coccidula lepida Lec., 1; July 17; Thumb Lake.

11150. Psyllobora viginti-maculata (Say), 6; June 1 — Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; beating cedar.

11162. Hippodamia tredecimpunctata (L.), 11; July 8—Sept. 8; Beaver Is., High Is., Garden Is., Charlevoix, Thumb Lake; herbage; beach drift.

11163. Hippodamia parenthesis (Say), 17; June 7—Sept. 17; Beaver Is., High Is., Hog Is., Garden Is., Charlevoix; beach drift; herbage.

11173. Hippodamia convergens Guer., 8; July 8—Sept. 17; Beaver Is., High Is., Hog Is., Charlevoix, Boyne City; herbage; beach drift; a pair *in copula* on Sept. 2.

11175. Hippodamia quinquesignata Kby., 6; June 1—Sept. 9; Beaver Is.; beach drift; herbage; on milkweed.

11181. Coccinella perplexa Muls., 6; June 7—Sept. 9; Beaver Is., High Is.; beach drift; herbage; flowers of *Pastinaca sativa*.

11183. Coccinella tricuspis Kby., 2; May 27—June 8; Hog Is.; beating.

11184. Coccinella novemnotata Hbst., 5; June 1—Sept. 9; Beaver Is., High Is.; beach drift; flowers of *Pastinaca sativa*; on Erigeron and milkweed.

11187. Coccinella monticola Muls. (det. by Andrews), 2; July 8—Aug. 5; Garden Is.; Boyne City; vegetation on beach.

11189. Cycloneda sanguinea (L.), 11; June 1—Sept. 8; Beaver Is., High Is., Charlevoix; beach drift; herbage.

11196. Cleis picta (Rand.), 3; Sept. 9–10; Beaver Is.; beaten from white pine.

11200. Anisocalvia duodecim-maculata (Gebl.), 1; June 1; Beaver Is.; beating.

11201a. Anisocalvia quatuordecimguttata similis (Rand.) (det. by Andrews), 1; July 7; Garden Is.; beating.

11202. Anatis quindecimpunctata (Oliv.), 5; July 7—Sept. 14; Beaver Is., High Is., Gull Is., Hog Is.; beach drift.

11202a. Anatis quindecimpunctata mali (Say), 4; June 1—Sept. 7; Beaver Is.; Garden Is.; under cover on beach.

11217. Chilocorus bivulnerus Muls., 2; June 2—Sept. 10; Beaver Is., High Is.; beaten from white pine; at light.

ALLECULIDAE

11307. Isomira sericea (Say), 2; Aug. 4–22; High Is.

11311. Isomira quadristriata Couper, 13; June 14 — Aug. 13; High Is., Garden Is., Hog Is., Gull Is., Thumb Lake; beating; on ground in hardwoods.

11324. Mycetochara megalops Csy., 3; July 7 — Aug. 22; High Is.; at light.

TENEBRIONIDAE

12207. Blapstinus metallicus (Fab.) (det. by Fletcher), 15; May 31 — Sept. 1; Beaver Is., High Is., Gull Is., Trout Is., Thumb Lake; under cover on beach and on dry ground; on sand in gull rookery.

12295. Bolitotherus cornutus (Panz.), 24; July 21 — Sept. 6; Beaver Is., Thumb Lake; fungi; one specimen in molasses trap in hardwoods.

12305. Diaperis maculata Oliv., 8; May 15 — Sept. 6; Beaver Is., High Is., Garden Is.; fungi.

12309. Hoplocephala bicornis (Fab.), 11; Aug. 9 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is., High Is.; nine specimens under single board on beach.

12323. Platydema americanum Cast. & Brll., 2; June 14 — Aug. 22; High Is.; under bark of *Pinus resinosa*.

12390. Xylopinus saperdioides (Oliv.), 2; Aug. 24 — Sept. 14; High Is.

12405. Iphthimus opacus Lec., 38; June 6 — Sept. 9; Beaver Is., Garden Is., High Is., Charlevoix; under rotten wood on beach and on dry sandy ground; abundant under rotten railroad ties in which it may breed.

12407. Alobates pennsylvanica (DeG.), 2; Aug. 9; High Is.

12411. Upis ceramboides (L.), 3; May 16 — Aug. 22; Beaver Is., High Is.

12414. Tenebrio molitor L., 1; Aug. 24; Beaver Is.; at light in hotel.

12415. Tenebrio picipes Hbst., 14; June 5 — Oct. 5; Beaver Is., High Is.; under bark; under cover on dry sandy ground.

LAGRIIDAE

12497. Arthromacra aenea (Say), 1; July 19; Boyne City; under stone on dry sandy ground.

MELANDRYIDAE

12527. Penthe obliquata (Fab.), 3; Aug. 21; High Is.
12529. Synchroa punctata Newm., 7; June 5—Aug. 11; High Is.; at light; bred (June 13) from pupae taken under bark.
12531. Eustrophinus bicolor (Fab.), 6; Aug. 9–24; High Is.
12536. Synstrophus repandus (Horn), 5; Aug. 2; High Is.
12540. Hallomenus scapularis Melsh., 1; Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; under cover on dry sandy ground.
12568. Serropalpus barbatus (Sch.), 1; July 5; High Is.
12570. Dircaea quadrimaculata (Say), 3; June 8—Aug. 2; High Is., Gull Is.; under bark.
12588. Canifa pallipes (Melsh.), 1; July 16; Thumb Lake; sweeping undergrowth in hardwoods.

ANOBIIDAE

12717. Trypopitys sericeus (Say), 4; Aug. 2 17; High Is.; at light.
12855. Caenocara oculata (Say), 3; July 19; Thumb Lake; herbage.

BOSTRICHIDAE

12902. Bostrichus bicornis (Web.), 1; July 8; Gull Is.

CISIDAE

12972. Cis fuscipes Mellié, 2; Aug. 9; High Is.
12997. Xestocis levetti Csy., 71; July 21—Sept. 9; Beaver Is., Thumb Lake; bracket fungi.

SCARABAEIDAE

13080. Onthophagus hecate Panz., 4; July 12—Sept. 2; Bea-

ver Is., High Is., Thumb Lake; cattle dung; carrion; molasses trap.

13098. Aegialia cylindrica (Esch.), 1; June 1; Beaver Is.; beach. Listed from Washington and Alaska.

13107. Aphodius (Teuchestes) fossor (L.), 1; Sept. 2; Beaver Is.; cattle dung.

13119. Aphodius fimetarius (L.), 45; June 22 — Sept. 7; Beaver Is., High Is., Boyne City; cattle dung.

13123. Aphodius putridus (Hbst.), 3; June 22; High Is.

13184. Aphodius distinctus (Mull.), 1; June 6; High Is.; beach.

13186. Aphodius leopardus Horn, 2; Aug. 23 — Sept. 9; Beaver Is., High Is.; horse dung; at sugar in evening.

13239. Dialytes striatulus (Say), 5; Sept. 9–10; Beaver Is.; fungi; horse dung; carrion.

13290. Geotrupes balyi Jek., 16; July 26 — Sept. 9; Beaver Is., High Is.; in road; carrion; horse dung; cattle dung.

—— Serica cucullata Dawson, 4; July 12–18; High Is.; at light.

13364. Serica sericea (Ill.), 10; June 14 — Aug. 29; Beaver Is., High Is., Hog Is., Thumb Lake; herbage; on *Cornus stolonifera*; at sugar in evening; beach drift.

13516. Lachnosterna anxia Lec., 1; July 21; High Is.; at light.

13517. Lachnosterna drakei Kby., 5; June 21 — July 18; High Is., Thumb Lake; at light; beach drift.

13530. Lachnosterna rugosa (Melsh.), 5; July 13–27; High Is.; at light.

13651. Dichelonyx subvittata Lec., 11; June 14 — Sept. 5; Beaver Is., Garden Is., High Is., Hog Is.; at light; sweeping and beating vegetation.

13676. Dichelonyx albicollis Burm., 1; June 27; High Is.

13769. Cotalpa lanigera (L.), 1; Sept. 6; Beaver Is.; found dead on sand-dune.

13834. Ligyrodes relictus (Say), 2; July 18; Thumb Lake; sweeping in marshy area.

13902. Xyloryctes satyrus (Fab.), 2; Sept. 1; Beaver Is.; beach drift.

13940. Euphoria inda (L.), 1; Sept. 7; herbage.
14010. Osmoderma scabra Beauv., 2; Aug. 1-24; High Is.
14012. Osmoderma eremicola Knoch., 1; Sept. 3; Beaver Is.; on tree trunk.
14022. Trichiotinus affinis (G. & P.), 6; June 27 — Aug. 2; Beaver Is., High Is.

TROGIDAE

13338. Trox unistriatus Beauv., 1; July 21; Thumb Lake; carrion.

LUCANIDAE

14058. Ceruchus piceus (Web.), 1; June 5; High Is.

CERAMBYCIDAE

14067. Parandra brunnea (Fab.), 1; Sept. 3; Beaver Is.; on tree trunk.
14081. Derobrachus (Orthosoma) brunneus (Forst.), 4; July 27—Aug. 26; Beaver Is., High Is., Charlevoix; beach; at light; under cover on dry sandy ground.
14097a. Tragosoma depsarium harrisi Lec., 1; July 19; Gull Is.; at light.
14107. Asemum moestum Hald., 3; June 1–14; Beaver Is., High Is.; beach drift; sweeping; under bark of *Pinus resinosa*.
14139. Criocephalus obsoletus (Rand.), 6; June 21 — Aug. 23; Beaver Is., High Is.; beach drift; at light.
14311. Centrodera decolorata (Harris), 1; July 12; High Is.; at light.
14403. Acmaeops proteus (Kby.) (?), 1; June 14; High Is.; beach drift.
14447. Brachyleptura canadensis (Fab.), 3; July 23 — Aug. 18; High Is., Hog Is., Squaw Is.; beach drift.
14466. Strangalepta pubera Say, 1; June 23; High Is.
14469. Strangalepta vittata (Oliv.), 11; June 23 — Aug. 9; Garden Is., High Is., Hog Is.; beating.

14487. Strangalia plebeja (Rand.), 5; July 26 — Aug. 4; flowers of *Pastinaca sativa.*

14508. Strophiona nitens (Forst.), 1; July 26; High Is.

14516. Leptura (Cosmosalia) nigrella (Say), 4; June 28 — July 20; High Is.; on cut pulp wood on beach. Two of the specimens have light elytra.

14520. Leptura (Cosmosalia) chrysocoma Kby., 3; June 27 — July 8; High Is., Boyne City; vegetation on beach.

14525. Leptura (Cercolia) proxima Say, 4; July 8 — Aug. 9; Garden Is., High Is.; beating; flowers of *Pastinaca sativa.*

14526. Leptura (Cercolia) minnesotana Csy., 5; Aug. 3–4; Garden Is., High Is.; flowers of *Pastinaca sativa.*

14532. Leptura (Trachysida) mutabilis Newm., 2; June 20–23; High Is.

14532a. Leptura (Trachysida) mutabilis luridipennis Newm., 4; June 22 — July 7; High Is.

14534. Leptura (Trachysida) pedalis Lec., 1; July 5; High Is.

14540. Typocerus zebra (Oliv.), 4; July 12–18; Thumb Lake; milkweed.

14543. Typocerus velutina (Oliv.), 9; June 27 — Aug. 4; High Is.; flowers of *Pastinaca sativa.*

14574. Desmocerus palliatus (Forst.), 1; Aug. 17; Nowland Lake.

—— Callidium janthinum Lec. (?), 3; June 1; Beaver Is.; on freshly cut cedar ties.

14679. Xylotrechus colonus (Fab.), 4; July 19 — Sept. 1; High Is.; on cut pulp wood on beach.

14691. Xylotrechus undulatus (Say), 8; June 14 — Aug. 9; High Is.; on cut pulp wood on beach.

14728. Anthoboscus ruricola (Oliv.), 5; July 7 — Aug. 9; Garden Is., High Is.

14741. Cyrtophorus verrucosus (Oliv.), 11; June 8 — July 14; High Is., Hog Is., Garden Is., Gull Is.; beating.

14901. Monochamus notatus (Drury), 1; Aug. 11; High Is.; at light.

14904. Monochamus scutellatus (Say), 2; July 19 — Aug. 3; Garden Is., High Is.; on cut pulp wood on beach.

14905. Monochamus marmorator Kby., 2; July 19 — Aug. 2; Beaver Is., High Is., on cut pulp wood on beach.

15005. Hyperplatys maculata Hald., 2; July 7–14; Gull Is., High Is.

15021. Urographis fasciata (DeG.), 1; Aug. 24; High Is.

15056. Pogonocherus mixtus Hald., 4; July 26 — Sept. 5; Beaver Is., High Is.; flying under pine tree.

15113a. Saperda calcarata adspersa Lec., 1; July 8; Garden Is.; on Populus.

15122a. Saperda populnea moesta Lec., 3; July 7–23; Garden Is., Hog Is., High Is.; beating.

15162. Tetraopes canteriator (Drap.), 225; July 8–19; Boyne City, Thumb Lake: mostly in beach drift; milkweed.

CHRYSOMELIDAE

15223. Syneta ferruginea (Germ.), 3; June 5 — July 7; High Is.

15253. Lema trilineata (Oliv.), 5; Aug. 21; High Is.; on ground-cherry.

15297. Chlamys gibbosa (Fab.), 6; July 8; Boyne City; vegetation on beach.

15305. Exema gibber (Oliv.), 19; Aug. 22–24; Garden Is., Charlevoix; on Solidago.

15433. Pachybrachys obsoletus Suffr. (det. by Frost), 2; Sept. 9; Beaver Is.; beaten from white pine.

15472. Monachulus saponatus (Fab.), 6; July 8–19; Boyne City, Thumb Lake; herbage.

15479a. Cryptocephalus notatus quadrimaculatus Say, 8; June 14 — Aug. 29; Beaver Is., High Is., Norwood Township; herbage.

15480a. Cryptocephalus quadruplex quadriguttulus Suffr., 2; June 14–25; High Is., Hat Is.

15495. Cryptocephalus venustus Fab., 1; July 8; Boyne City; herbage.

15521. Diachus auratus (Fab.), 33; June 27 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., Garden Is., High Is., Boyne City, Norwood Township; herbage.

15528. Diachus pallidicornis (Suffr.) (?), 1; Aug. 24; Beaver Is.; herbage.

15569. Graphops marcassitus Cr., 1; June 2; High Is.

15573. Xanthonia decemnotata (Say), 1; July 18; Thumb Lake; beach.

15604b. Adoxus obscurus .villosulus Schrank., 2; June 1; Beaver Is.; beach drift.

15627. Chrysochus auratus (Fab.), 9; July 6–8; Thumb Lake, Boyne City; beach drift; milkweed.

15635. Prasocuris phellandrii (L.), 8; July 26; High Is.

15639. Labidomera clivicollis (Kby.), 2; July 19; Thumb Lake; marsh grass.

15648. Leptinotarsus decemlineata (Say), 8; July 8 — Aug. 24; Beaver Is., Charlevoix, Boyne City, Thumb Lake; beach drift; flying; herbage; molasses trap in hardwoods.

15669. Calligrapha elegans (Oliv.), 2; June 8; Hog Is.; beating.

15673. Calligrapha rowena Knab, 1; May 27; Garden Is.; in grass.

15674. Calligrapha philadelphica (L.), 2; July 8; Boyne City; on Salix.

15677. Calligrapha bigsbyana (Kby.), 7; June 27 — Aug. 1; Garden Is., High Is., Boyne City, Norwood Township; on Salix; beach drift.

15708. Lina lapponica (L.), 8; July 10–11; Beaver Is.; on alder.

15710. Lina scripta (Fab.), 1; July 10; Beaver Is.; on alder.

15718. Phyllodecta vitellinae (L.), 10; June 1 — July 30; Beaver Is., Garden Is., Hog Is.; beach drift; on Salix.

15726. Trirhabda virgata Lec., 7; July 19; Thumb Lake; vegetation on beach.

15727. Trirhabda canadensis (Kby.), 25; July 14 — Aug. 29; Beaver Is., Garden Is., Gull Is., Thumb Lake; on Solidago.

15744. Galerucella americana (Fab.), variety without markings, 3; July 19 — Aug. 1; Boyne Falls, Norwood Township; vegetation on beach.

15745. Galerucella sexvittata (Lec.), 1; Aug. 1; Norwood Township; vegetation on beach.

15746. Galerucella cavicollis (Lec.), 5; May 29 — June 23; High Is., Trout Is., Hog Is.; beating.

15752. Galerucella tuberculata (Say) (?), 1; Aug. 29; Beaver Is.; herbage.

15769. Diabrotica duodecimpunctata (Fab.), 32; May 27 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., Garden Is., Hog Is., High Is, Charlevoix; beach drift; herbage, mostly Solidago.

15782. Diabrotica vittata (Fab.), 7; May 27 — July 26; Beaver Is., High Is., Hog Is.; beach drift; herbage; on squash plant.

15886. Oedionychis limbalis Melsh., 4; June 2 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., High Is.; herbage.

15896. Disonycha quinquevittata (Say), 2; June 2–3; Hog Is., High Is.

15901. Disonycha glabrata (Fab.), 1; July 18; Thumb Lake; herbage near pond.

15921. Haltica rosae Woods (?), 3; June 9 — Sept. 1; Beaver Is., Whiskey Is.; beach drift; herbage.

15933. Haltica carinata Germ., 3; July 5 — Aug. 29; Beaver Is., High Is.; herbage.

15968. Chalcoides helxines (L.), 1; Aug. 1; Norwood Township; vegetation on beach.

15982. Epitrix cucumeris Har., 1; Aug. 29; Beaver Is.; herbage.

16068. Phyllotreta robusta Lec., 2; June 9; Whiskey Is.; beach.

PLATYSTOMIDAE

16299. Euparius marmoreus (Oliv.), 5; Aug. 9; High Is.

CURCULIONIDAE

16359. Rhynchites cyanellus Lec., 2; July 8; Boyne City; vegetation on beach.

16678. Brachyrhinus ovatus (L.), 14; July 19 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., Garden Is., Hog Is., Thumb Lake; herbage; under cover on dry ground and on beach; in molasses trap in hardwoods.

16728. Sitona hispidulus (Fab.), 24; Aug. 22; Charlevoix; herbage, mostly Solidago.

16767. Lepyrus palustris Scop. (det. by Andrews), 1; June 2; High Is.

16778. Listronotus inaequalipennis (Boh.), 1; July 18; Thumb Lake; vegetation near pond.

17300. Pseudanthonomus validus Dietz, 1; July 18; Thumb Lake; herbage.

17339. Orchestes niger Horn. (det. by Buchanan), 1; Aug. 25; Charlevoix; herbage.

17345. Orchestes pallicornis Say (det. by Andrews), 1; June 5; High Is.

17351. Acalyptus carpini (Hbst.) (det. by Buchanan and Andrews), 3; May 29 — Aug. 24; Garden Is., Whiskey Is.; herbage.

17359. Gymnetron tetrum (Fab.), 6; July 21 — Sept. 6; Thumb Lake; on *Verbascum thapsus*; flying.

17405. Lixus rubellus Rand. (det. by Andrews), 2; Aug. 24; High Is.

17646. Limnobaris rectirostris (Lec.) 3; July 8; Boyne City; herbage.

17877. Conotrachelus posticus Boh. (det. by Buchanan), 2; Sept. 9–10; Beaver Is.; under debris on ground in pine woods.

17974. Cryptorhynchus lapathi (L.), 2; Sept. 14; Garden Is.

18114. Sphenophorus costipennis Horn, (det. by Andrews) 1; June 2; High Is.

SCOLYTIDAE

18231. Dendroctonus valens Lec., 1; June 1; Beaver Is.

18237. Phloeosinus canadensis Sw. (det. by Blackman), 2; Aug. 22 — Sept. 8; Beaver Is., Charlevoix; under bark of dying cedar.

18377. Cryphalus balsameus Hopk. (det. by Blackman), 21; Sept. 1; Beaver Is.; in dying balsam branch.

18428. Pityophthorus puberulus Lec. (det. by Blackman), 127; Aug. 26 — Sept. 9; under bark of dying pine branches.

18438. PITYOPHTHORUS CANADENSIS Sw. (det. by Blackman), 2; Sept. 9; Beaver Is.; under bark of dying pine branch.

18445. PITYOPHTHORUS GRANULATUS Sw. (det. by Blackman), 4; Aug. 26—Sept. 1; under bark of dying pine and balsam branches.

18446. PITYOPHTHORUS NUDUS Sw. (det. by Blackman), 1; Aug. 27; Beaver Is.; under bark of dying pine branch.

18455. PITYOGENES HOPKINSI Sw. (det. by Blackman), 46; Aug. 27—Sept. 9; Beaver Is.; under bark of dying pine branches.

18488. PITYOKTEINES SPARSUS (Lec.) (det. by Blackman), 17; Sept. 8; under bark of dying balsam branches.

18492. ORTHOTOMICUS COELATUS (Eich.) (det. by Blackman), 3; Sept. 8; under bark of dying pine branch.

SUMMARY

	Species	Variety		Species	Variety
Cicindelidae	6	1	Helodidae	3	
Carabidae	121	1	Dermestidae	2	
Omophronidae	1		Byrrhidae	4	
Haliplidae	4		Ostomidae	2	
Dytiscidae	29		Nitidulidae	7	
Gyrinidae	5		Cucujidae	3	
Hydrophilidae	21		Erotylidae	2	
Silphidae	13		Byturidae	1	
Scydmaenidae	1		Mycetophagidae	4	
Staphylinidae	58		Colydiidae	1	
Pselaphidae	1		Lathridiidae	4	
Scaphidiidae	3		Endomychidae	2	
Histeridae	14	1	Phalacridae	3	
Lycidae	3		Coccinellidae	21	1
Lampyridae	7		Alleculidae	3	
Cantharidae	8		Tenebrionidae	11	
Melyridae	2		Lagriidae	1	
Cleridae	3		Melandryidae	8	
Corynetidae	1		Anobiidae	2	
Cephaloidae	1		Bostrichidae	1	
Mordellidae	7		Cisidae	2	
Meloidae	2		Scarabaeidae	23	
Pyrochroidae	3		Trogidae	1	
Pedilidae	2		Lucanidae	1	
Anthicidae	5		Cerambycidae	35	1
Elateridae	30		Chrysomelidae	41	
Melasidae	2		Platystomidae	1	
Throscidae	1		Curculionidae	15	
Buprestidae	10		Scolytidae	10	
Heteroceridae	2		TOTAL	580	5

THE JAMES MILLIKEN UNIVERSITY
DECATUR, ILLINOIS

THE LIFE-CYCLE AND GROWTH OF LAMPREYS

CARL L. HUBBS

I. INTRODUCTORY

So far as known, all species of lampreys (Petromyzonidae) spawn in small streams in the spring of the year; then die. In their development all pass through a prolonged and highly specialized larval period. The larvae, known as ammocoetes, are blind and toothless, and live like worms in the mixed sand and muck in the stream bottom. After having lived in such a manner for a certain number of years, the lampreys metamorphose into the adult stage.

After metamorphosis the life of the lampreys follows one of two courses. In one type of life-cycle, obviously the more primitive, the transformed lampreys retain a functional alimentary system and develop strong, sharp teeth. They feed in a semi-parasitic fashion on other fishes, and continue to live and grow, usually in the sea, or in lakes and larger streams. Having existed thus for an unknown period of time they re-ascend the smaller streams in spring migrations, spawn, die, and thus complete their life-cycle.

The lampreys of the contrasting life-history type entirely cease their feeding and growth after metamorphosis, which takes place in late summer or early fall (August to October). An entire period or element in the life-cycle is thus eliminated. The alimentary system rapidly degenerates into a non-functional condition. The teeth are reduced in size and particularly in sharpness, and in extreme cases variously decreased in number, or even fragmented. In this degenerate adult condition they continue to live, however, for a period of more than four but less than eleven months, unless prematurely destroyed. Having thus passed through the winter, they spawn in the following spring (March to June); then die, as do the parasitic species.

II. THE ORIGIN OF THE DEGENERATE LAMPREYS

These degenerate dwarfs comprise several forms, each independently and perhaps even polyphyletically derived from a parasitic species. On the basis of the most recent systematic revision of the Holarctic lampreys (Creaser and Hubbs, 1922), the origin and relationships of these forms may be illustrated diagrammatically (See Figure 16).

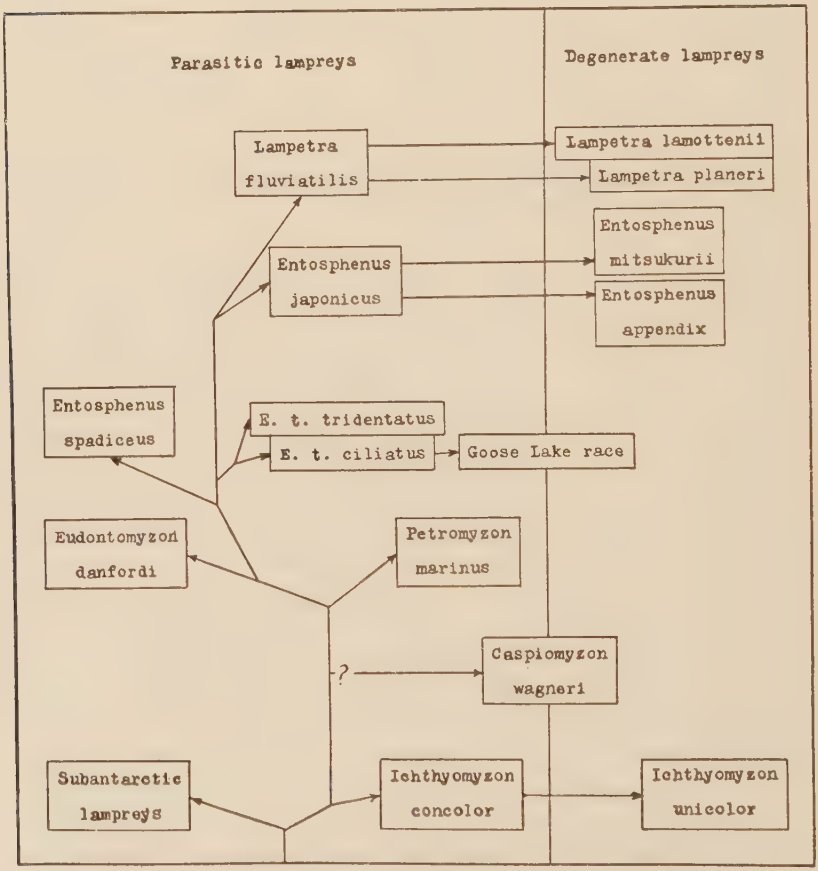


FIG. 16. A Diagram of the Genetic Relationships of the Holarctic Lampreys

Ichthyomyzon unicolor (*I. fossor* Reighard and Cummins), occurring in the Great Lakes-St. Lawrence basin, is obviously the derivative of the common river lamprey, *Ichthyomyzon concolor*, or of a closely allied species.

Caspiomyzon wagneri of the Caspian basin has rather degenerate dentition, but probably retains its parasitic habits, for it attains a considerable size. Its position in the life-history classification here adopted is uncertain; on the diagram it is indicated as intermediate between the parasitic and the degenerate series.

The southern subspecies (*E. t. ciliatus*) of the large sea-run lamprey of our Pacific Coast (*Entosphenus tridentatus*) is represented in Goose Lake, Oregon, by a race which seems to be in the process of degeneration. Of a series of small adults, all taken on trout in this lake,[1] the *males* showed a decided approach toward the brook type of lamprey in the close approximation of the dorsal fins, relatively blunt teeth, atrophy of intestine and precocious sexual development. The *females*, oddly, were not so altered, but resembled the normal parasitic young of the species. Some specimens from Klamath Lake, not far distant from Goose Lake, but in a distinct stream system, also show evidence of degeneration.

Entosphenus appendix (usually but wrongly called *Lampetra wilderi*) of eastern North America and *Entosphenus mitsukurii* of Japan were assuredly derived, probably independently, from the sea-run *Entosphenus japonicus*.[2]

[1] Material collected by Barton W. Evermann; examined by the writer in the United States National Museum.

[2] Creaser and Hubbs (1922), lacking good material, were unable to distinguish between *E. appendix* and *E. mitsukurii*. New material, collected for Doctor Jordan in Japan in 1922, and studied by Jordan and Hubbs, has shown that *mitsukurii* is usually the more degenerate in dentition and other respects, and differs from *appendix* further in having fewer myomeres and narrower (less palmate) oral fimbriae. It is probable that brook types of *Entosphenus* occur throughout northern Siberia, but their systematic (and nomenclatural) relations with the American and Japanese forms cannot be satisfactorily determined at this time. The Japanese specimens we identified as *Lampetra planeri* prove on reëxamination not to be that species, but rather *Entosphenus mitsukurii*.

Similarly, *Lampetra planeri*, which ranges from Europe through Siberia to Alaska, and thence southward to central California, and *Lampetra lamottenii*, known only from the Ohio and Potomac basins of eastern North America, both seem to be degenerate relatives of *Lampetra fluviatilis*. Of these two forms, *lamottenii* is much the more degenerate, and represents a distinct subgenus, *Okkelbergia*. *Lampetra planeri* may even intergrade with *L. fluviatilis*. All of the brook lampreys are extremely variable in degree of degeneration.

Most of the degenerate or brook lampreys, as indicated in the phyletic diagram, were apparently derived from the two parasitic species forming the terminus of what appears to be the main line of evolution of the holarctic lampreys. This evolutionary line in fact seems to be leading toward the degenerate condition, being characterized by a decrease in body size, and by a reduction in the size of the mouth and in the number of teeth.

III. THE SIZE AT METAMORPHOSIS OF CERTAIN PARASITIC LAMPREYS

Concerning the life-cycle of the huge sea-run lamprey of the Atlantic, *Petromyzon marinus*, we have nothing to record, except some data on the small size at metamorphosis. The largest ammocoete found in the extensive collection of the National Museum is 170 mm. long; many others are between 130 and 157 mm. long. Recently transformed specimens taken in streams vary in length from 105 to 202 mm. Of young taken in the sea, three, from Virginia Beach, are 137 mm. in total length, and one taken from 25 fathoms, near Easter Point, is 138 mm. long.

Entosphenus japonicus also attains a large size, but metamorphoses when yet small. The smallest adult examined is only 108 mm. long. The largest of a number of ammocoetes probably belonging to this species is 119 mm. long. Nothing more can now be recorded of the life-history of this lamprey.

Adults of *Ichthyomyzon concolor* as small as 102 mm. have been examined. The species attains a length of at least 330 mm. Data on the length of the adult life of this lamprey could probably be obtained.

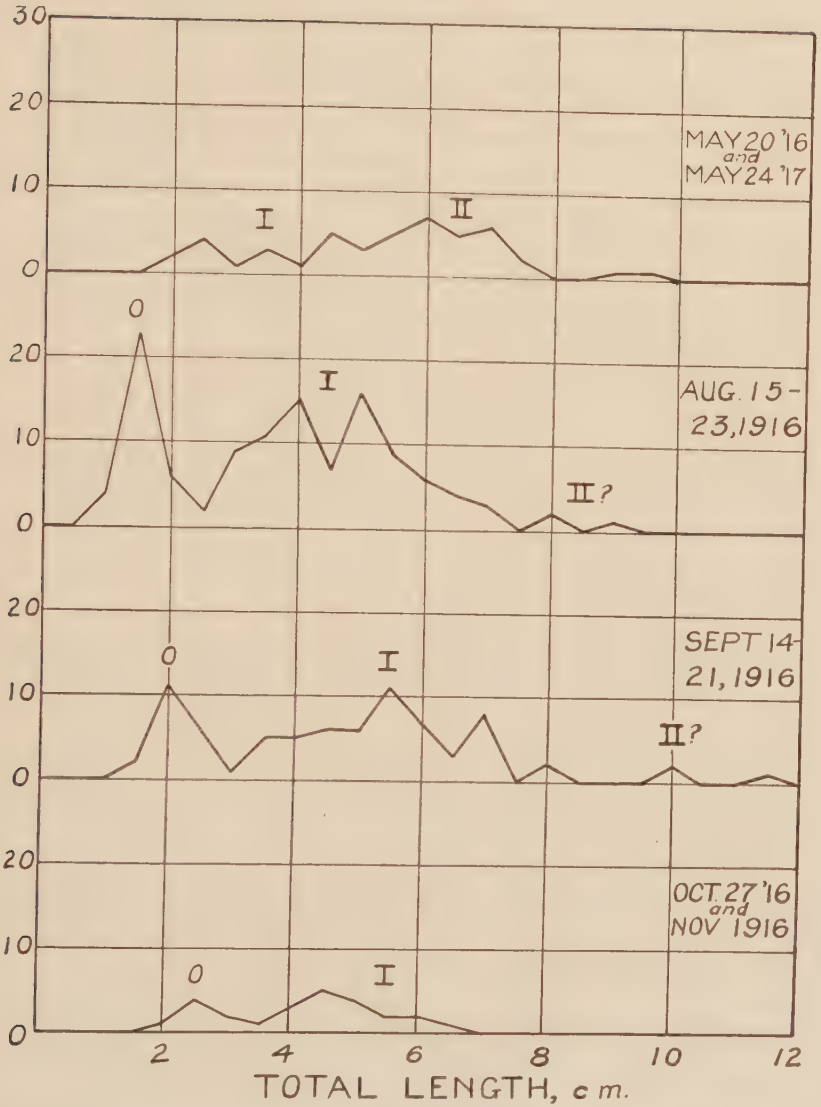


FIG. 17. Size Frequency Curves for Ammocoetes of *Lampetra fluviatilis* (?)
Data from Meek (1917). Measurements to nearest half centimeter

IV. THE LIFE-HISTORY OF *LAMPETRA FLUVIATILIS*

Meek (1917) has published measurements of series of English ammocoetes, which he has regarded as probably referable to *Lampetra fluviatilis*, the parasitic river lamprey. According to the author, at least three or four generations are included in this material. On regrouping and plotting the data, however, we find only two groups well marked, with a suggestion of a third. The year groups are indicated on the graph (Figure 17). These figures, when considered in the light of similar but more extensive data on other species, indicate that the ammocoete period of this lamprey comprises at least three years.

V. THE LIFE-HISTORY OF *ENTOSPHENUS TRIDENTATUS*

Since so little is known of the duration of either the ammocoete or the adult stage in the life of any of the parasitic lampreys the following fragmentary evidence on the life-history of *Entosphenus tridentatus*, the sea-run lamprey of the Pacific Coast, is presented. The material was collected in Coyote Creek, at San Jose, California.

On May 23, 1923, one hundred and fifty-eight very small ammocoetes were dug out of this stream. Their measurements form a compact frequency group (See Figure 18), with the mode at 14 mm. and extremes at 9 and 21 mm. As two species of lampreys occur in Coyote Creek, difficulty was encountered in identifying these young ammocoetes.[3] Most of the specimens actually identified, including some of the largest and smallest, proved referable to *Entosphenus tridentatus*, a few only were found to be *Lampetra planeri*. The frequency group is so compact, however, that 14 mm. must be a close approximation of the average size of this year group for each species. These speci-

[3] The identifications were based on the number of segments between the last gill opening and the end of the anal slit exhibited by each species in this stream. In the *Entosphenus* this number varied from 67 to 76, usually from 70 to 74. This is an unusually high number for a southern population of this species, being quite as high as in the northern subspecies, *E. t. tridentatus*. In the Coyote Creek race of *Lampetra planeri*, the number of myomeres varies from 58 to 64, being most frequently 61.

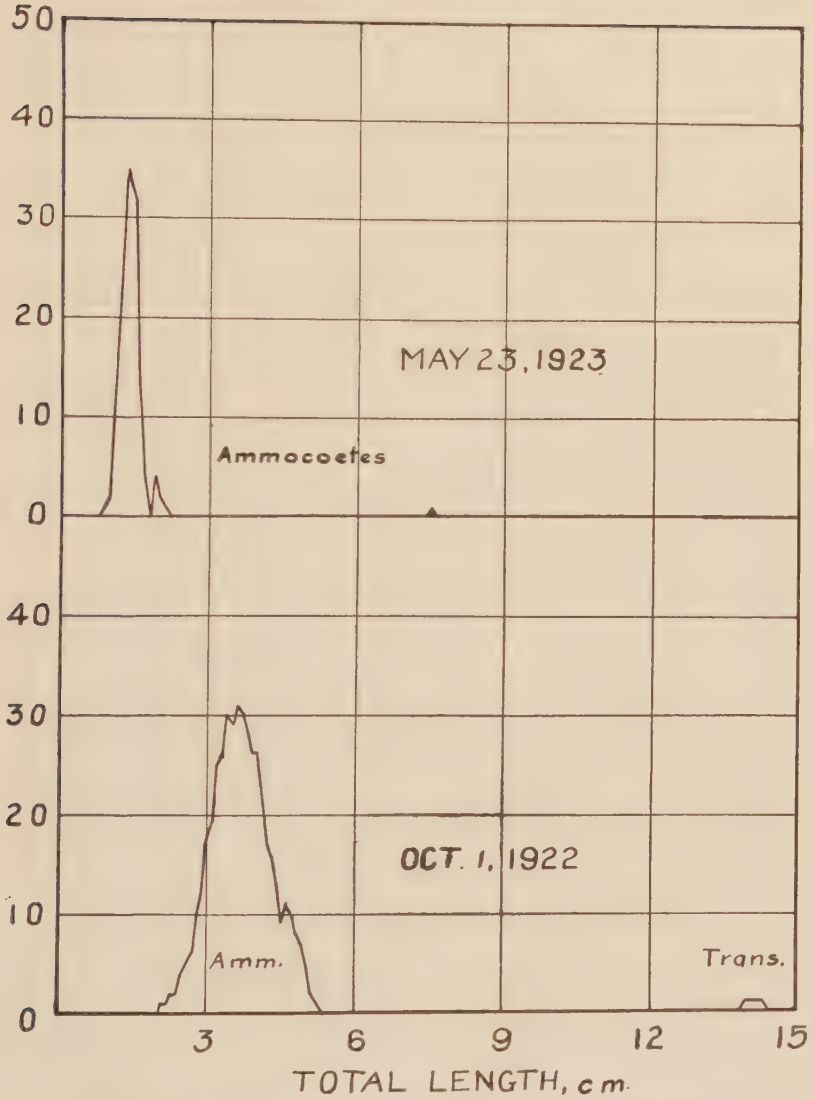


FIG. 18. Size Frequency Curves for *Entosphenus tridentatus*.

Samples from Coyote Creek, California. Actual data plotted for series of May 23. Measurements to nearest millimeter "smoothed by fives" for series of October 1. The smaller ammocoetes taken May 23 include some specimens of *Lampetra planeri*. One transforming specimen taken October 1 is indicated on the graph.

mens are without question the young of the year, not more than a few months old.

On October 1, 1922, ninety ammocoetes of *E. tridentatus* averaging distinctly larger (being 21 to 50 mm. long, with the average at 37 mm.) were taken at the same place. These specimens, the lengths of which are also plotted on Figure 18, obviously comprise a single year group. They appear also to represent the young of the year, but about four months older than those taken May 23. On that date a larva 75 mm. long was secured. It presumably was in its second year of life.

On October 1, an incompletely transformed specimen, 141 mm. long, was caught hiding under cover on the bottom from which the ammocoetes were dug. Considering the slow growth of this species during the first season, and the comparative growth of other lampreys, including that of *Lampetra planeri* from the same stream (See Figure 19), we can regard this individual as probably in at least its third year of life. The two other recently transformed specimens of this species examined are somewhat smaller: one, taken on September 4 in the North Fork of Pitt River, California, is 138 mm. long; the other, from Bear Creek, San Benito County, California, is only 100 mm. long.

From the scanty evidence available, it seems improbable that *Entosphenus tridentatus* metamorphoses before the fall of its third year. Of the time of migration to the ocean, or of the duration of its adult life, nothing definite can be said. Local differences in breeding size suggest that this period is variable.

VI. THE LIFE-HISTORY OF *LAMPETRA PLANERI*

Several efforts have been made to determine the number of years in the life-cycle of the degenerate brook lampreys, which spawn and die in the spring following their metamorphosis. Müller early (1856) estimated the duration of life of the European brook lamprey as three years. This estimate, however, is of only historical interest, having been based on only five ammocoetes and two transformed specimens.

Lubosch (1903) also presented an estimate of the life-cycle

of *Lampetra planeri*. According to him, this lamprey spawns in May. By August the young have attained a length of 1.0 to 2.0 cm.; specimens ranging to 5 cm. in length are accredited to the first year of larval life, those 5 to 10 cm. long, to the second year; no certain estimates, he thought, could be made for the third-year larvae. The size of the ammocoetes before metamorphosis was given as 15 to 18 cm. Although he offered no definite statement to that effect, Lubosch apparently considered the age at the completion of the life-cycle to be four years.

Loman (1912) similarly claimed that the larvae in size are grouped about four distinct lengths. He published no definite data, so far as we know, but we have received from Dr. Loman eight specimens [4] representing the year groups which he recognized. The lengths of these specimens for each estimated age are as follows:

First-year larva	27 mm.
Second-year larva	54 mm.
Third-year larva	80 mm.
Fourth-year larva	113 mm.
Adults	87, 88, 89, 106 mm.

It thus appears that Loman estimated the life span of *Lampetra planeri* as four years.

The writer has obtained some data on the year groups and growth of a Californian lamprey which cannot be distinguished from *Lampetra planeri* (See Creaser and Hubbs, 1922). The material was collected in Coyote Creek, San Jose, California, with that of *Entosphenus tridentatus* (discussed above). The data are plotted as Figure 19.

Spawning here apparently takes place earlier than in Germany or Holland, for the larvae of the year were found to be about 10 to 20 mm. long on May 23 (1923).[5]

By October 1 (sample secured at the same spot in 1922), the young of the year had grown to a length of 34 to 74 mm.,

[4] Material from Renkum Brook, Holland; collected August 5, 1911.

[5] As already mentioned, the extreme young of *Lampetra planeri* and *Entosphenus tridentatus* could not be readily distinguished. It was definitely ascertained, however, that both species were represented in the series of very small ammocoetes taken May 23.

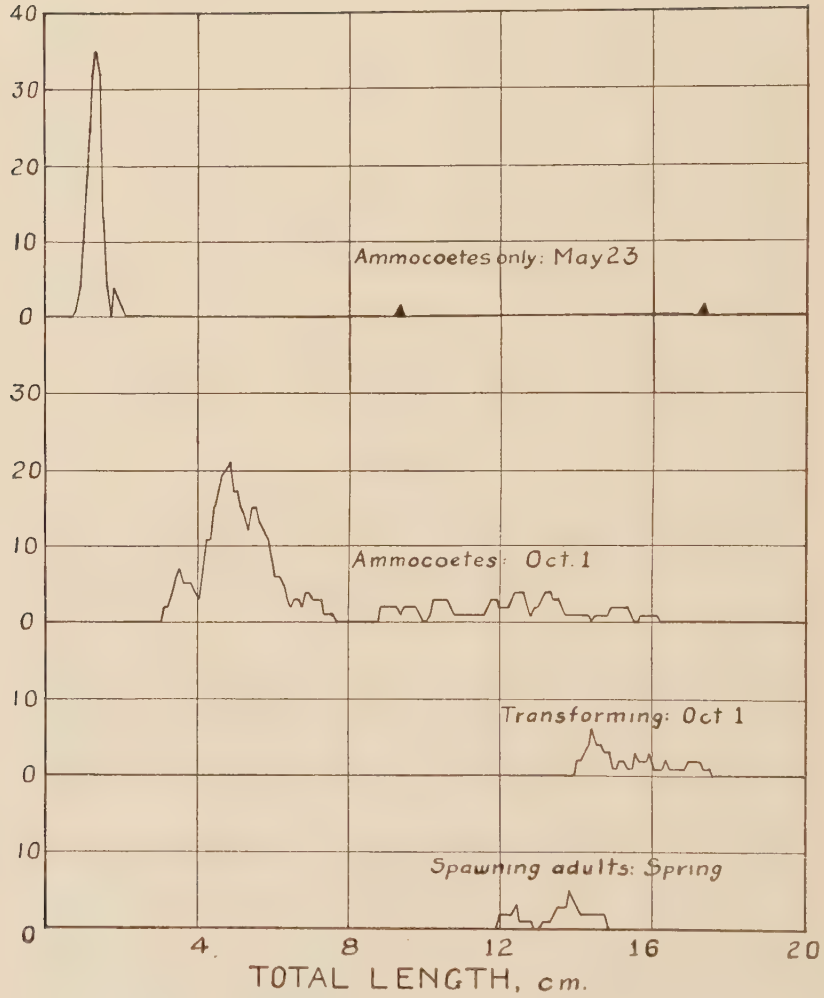


FIG. 19. Size Frequency Curves for *Lampetra planeri*

Samples from Coyote Creek, California. Measurements "smoothed by fives" for all lots except that of May 23. Most of the smaller ammocoetes of this set are *Entosphenus tridentatus*.

being mostly between 40 and 60 mm. long. The larva 94 mm. long taken on May 23 must, therefore, have been more than one year old. A still larger ammocoete taken on the same date, obviously about full-grown, being 172 mm. long, was in all probability still older, or more than two years of age. If these interpretations are correct, it would follow that the age at breeding and death would be not less than three years.

By reference to Figure 19, it will be seen that this estimate is the minimum derivable from the data. The larvae older than one year, and not yet metamorphosed, taken October 1, must represent at least one year class. Being at least in their second year, they would not have metamorphosed before their third year, nor have spawned before the end of that year of their lives. Whether this minimum estimate represents the correct value for the life span cannot be determined from the data, too few of the older ammocoetes having been obtained to permit of their analysis into year groups. It is probable, however, that more than one, perhaps two, year classes are represented among these older ammocoetes, for the combined group shows a much greater dispersion than does the groups of ammocoetes almost at the end of their first year's growth, or the group of newly transformed individuals, or of spawning adults. It is not improbable, therefore, that the life span of *Lampetra planeri* in both Europe and California is four years.

A comparison of the size of the ammocoetes taken in both May and October with that of the recently transformed adults secured on the later date, and with that of spawning adults taken in the same place in the spring several years previous, suggests that a slight decrease in actual length accompanies metamorphosis and the attainment of maturity (See Figure 19). This situation is perhaps true of all lampreys, for adults are often found notably smaller than the largest ammocoetes. Meek (1916) already has expressed his opinion that lampreys, like eels, may actually decrease in size during metamorphosis.

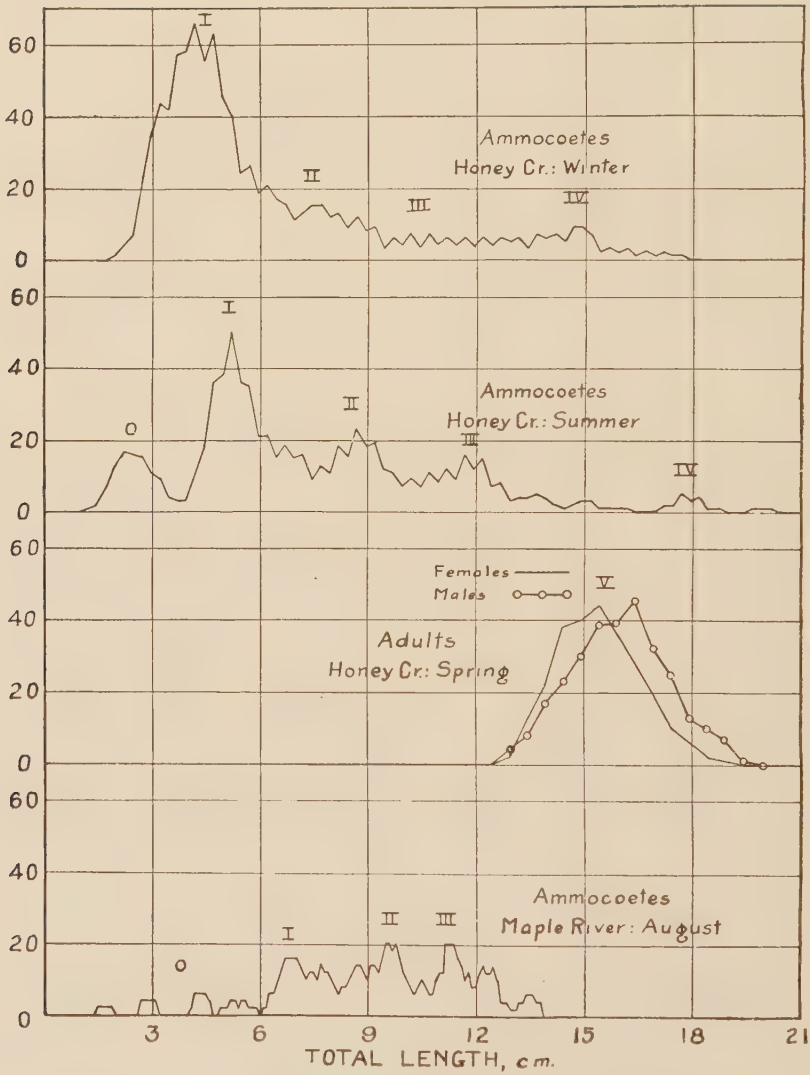


FIG. 20. Size Frequency Curves for *Entosphenus appendix*

Measurements for first two graphs to nearest fourth of a centimeter, "smoothed by threes"; for third graph, measured to nearest half centimeter, then "smoothed by threes"; for fourth graph, measured to nearest millimeter, then "smoothed by fives."

VII. THE LIFE-HISTORY OF *ENTOSPHENUS APPENDIX*

Okkelberg (1921) has estimated that another brook lamprey, *Entosphenus wilderi* (= *appendix*), lives five years before spawning and dying, five year groups of larva being represented in summer collections from Honey Creek, near Ann Arbor, Michigan. Making use of Okkelberg's original data (for which privilege acknowledgement is here made), together with measurements of additional specimens from the same locality, the writer has found it possible to confirm this estimate (See Figure 20). A smaller series taken in Maple River, Michigan, on August 10, also furnishes confirmatory evidence: three year groups appear to be represented, exclusive of the few young of year and of transforming individuals, none of which were secured (lowest graph, Figure 20). The life span of *Entosphenus appendix*, therefore, is apparently five years.

The data on the growth of *Entosphenus appendix* in Honey Creek (Figure 20) seems sufficiently definite to admit of the presentation of a growth-curve for the species (See upper curve, Figure 22). As in most fishes, there is an early period of relatively rapid growth. After the first year, that is, after the time of sex differentiation (Okkelberg, 1921), the growth is reduced in rate, but apparently accelerated again before metamorphosis. In this way, a sigmoid growth-curve is produced, not unlike that of the sunfish (Creaser, MS) and of man. In the lamprey, the curve is further complicated by the apparent shrinkage in actual size accompanying metamorphosis and the actual attainment of maturity.

VIII. THE LIFE-HISTORY OF *ICHTHYOMYZON UNICOLOR*

A still longer life later was indicated by Okkelberg (1922) for another degenerate brook lamprey of the Great Lakes region, *Ichthyomyzon unicolor*. Okkelberg's data are replotted on a different statistical basis as the upper two curves of Figure 21. The frequency curve for the Thunder Bay series agrees well with Okkelberg's in apparently showing seven year groups of ammocoetes. The curve for the Gilchrist Creek set shows similar but

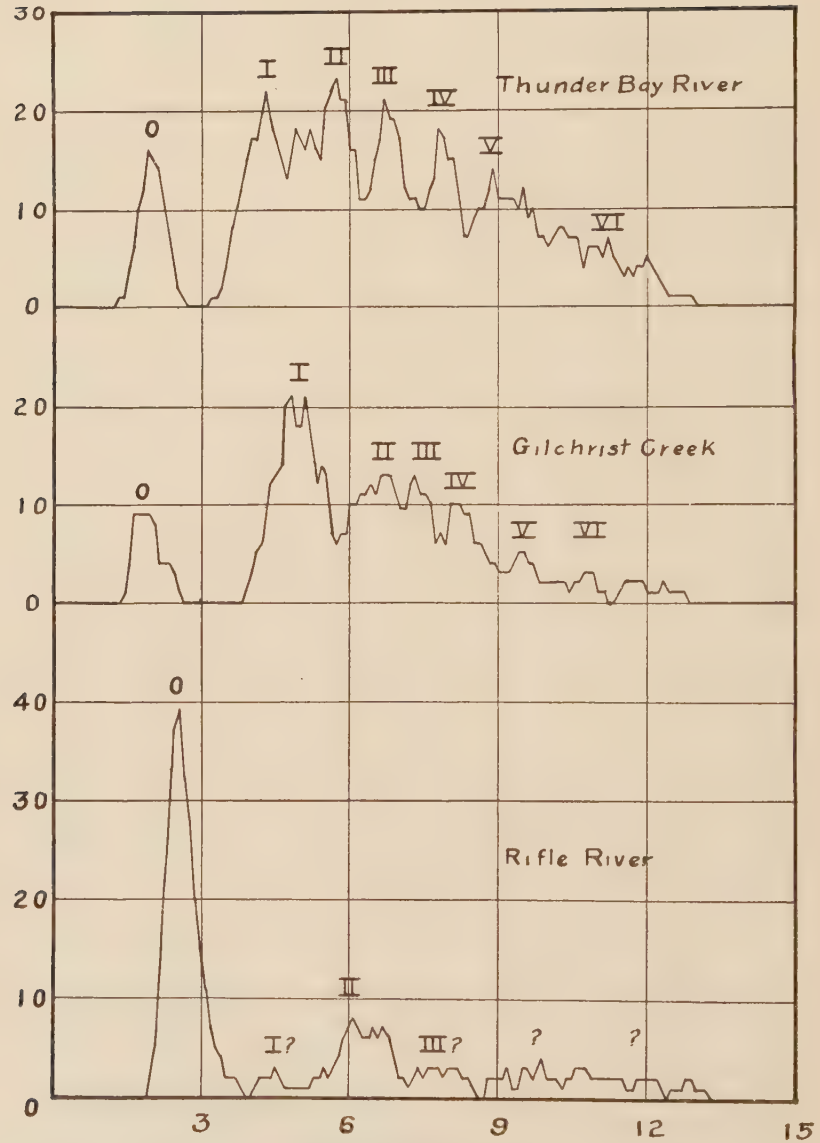


FIG. 21. Size Frequency Curves for *Ichthyomyzon unicolor*
Measurements made to nearest millimeter, then "smoothed by fives."

less distinct modes, probably because of the smaller number of specimens secured. The curve for one hundred and two ammocoetes taken in Rifle River, another Michigan stream, on August 27 (lowest graph, Figure 21), is still less definite. Okkelberg was apparently right in estimating the life span of this brook lamprey as seven years.

The growth curves drawn up from the data for the Thunder Bay River and Gilchrist Creek lots of *Ichthyomyzon unicolor* (Figure 22) are similar in form to the curve for *Entosphenus appendix*, although growth after the first year is more retarded, and the life more prolonged. There is indicated, as in that species, a rather rapid early growth; then a prolonged period of retarded growth apparently somewhat accelerated before metamorphosis, and perhaps an actual decrease in size accompanying transformation.

IX. SUMMARY

All lampreys, so far as known, pass through a prolonged ammocoete period, during which they live, blind and toothless, in the stream bottoms. After metamorphosis the life follows one of two types. In the one type of life-cycle, the adult lampreys feed semi-parasitically on other fishes, and continue to grow for an unknown period before spawning and dying. In the other type, feeding and growth cease at the time of transformation; breeding then ensues the following spring; then death. The degenerate or brook lampreys appear to have been independently derived from different parasitic species (Figure 16).

The large parasitic lampreys transform at a small size, but probably not, in the cases in which evidence is presented, until an age of at least three years is attained (Figures 17 and 18). The length of life of the degenerate lampreys is variable, but probably comprises at least three years in all species. The probable life span for the three species studied is: for *Lampetra planeri*, four years (Figure 19); *Entosphenus appendix*, five years (Figure 20); for *Ichythyomyzon unicolor*, seven years (Figure 21).

The growth of *Entosphenus appendix* and of *Ichthyomyzon unicolor* is fairly rapid during the first year; then retarded for

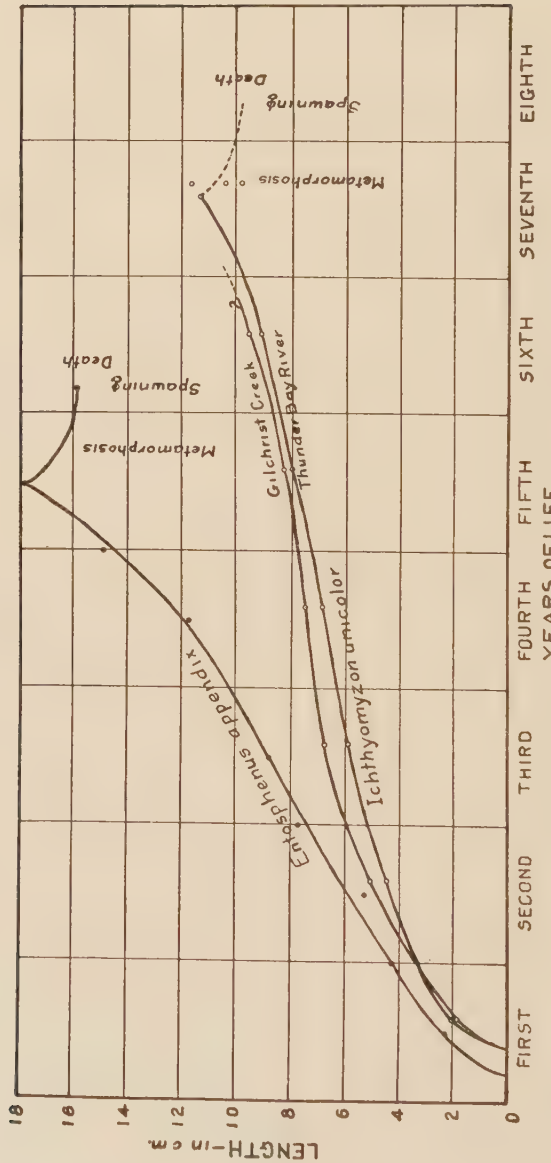


Fig. 22. Growth Curves for Two Species of Lampreys
Data obtained from figures 20 and 21

several years, but apparently somewhat accelerated before metamorphosis (Figure 22). An actual decrease in the size of lampreys probably accompanies metamorphosis and the attainment of maturity.

University of Michigan

LITERATURE CITED

Creaser, Charles W. and Carl L. Hubbs. 1922. A Revision of the Holarctic Lampreys. Occ. Pap. Mus. Zool., Univ. Mich., No. 120, pp. 1–14.

Loman, J. C. C. 1912. Über die Naturgeschichte des Bachneunauges Lampetra planeri (Bloch). Zool. Jahrb., Suppl. 15, 1: 243–269.

Lubosch, W. 1903. Über die Geschlechtsdifferenzierung bei Ammocoetes. Verh. Anat. Ges., Vers., 17: 66–74.

Meek, Alexander. 1916. The Migrations of Fishes. Edward Arnold, London. 427 pp.

—— 1917. The Lampreys of the Tyne. Rep. Dove Mar. Lab., N. S., 6: 49–51.

Müller, A. 1856. Über die Entwicklung der Neunaugen. Arch. Anat. Phys. Wiss. Med., 1856, p. 323.

Okkelberg, Peter. 1921. The Early History of the Germ Cells in the Brook Lamprey, *Entosphenus wilderi* (Gage), up to and including the period of sex differentiation. Journ. Morph., 35: 1–151.

—— 1922. Notes on the Life-history of the Brook Lamprey, *Ichthyomyzon unicolor*. Occ. Pap. Mus. Zool., Univ. Mich., No. 125, pp. 1–14.

NOTES ON SOME MICHIGAN SNAKES *

T. H. LANGLOIS

Since the life-histories and habits of most snakes have been but imperfectly recorded, my observations of the past summer may constitute an acceptable contribution. It was originally intended to continue these studies, but this has become impossible, and these notes are offered now in their admittedly fragmentary form. This work was done between July 2, and August 23, 1923, at the University of Michigan Biological Station. The writer wishes to express his appreciation to Professor George R. La Rue for the facilities offered by the Biological Station, and to Dr. Frank N. Blanchard for assistance during the progress of the study.

The snakes collected and observed during this period were as follows:

17 ring-neck snakes, *Diadophis punctatus edwardsii* (Merrem)
8 green snakes, *Liopeltis vernalis* (Harlan)
17 water snakes, *Natrix sipedon sipedon* (Linné)
3 red-bellied snakes, *Storeria occipito-maculata* (Storer)
13 ribbon snakes, *Thamnophis sauritus sauritus* (Linné)

Diadophis punctatus edwardsii. — Until recently ring-neck snakes have been considered rather rare in this region. Ellis (1917, p. 49) states that he has seen four specimens collected beneath fallen timber in the vicinity of North Fishtail Bay, Douglas Lake, in the summers of 1914 and 1915. Dr. F. C. Gates and Dr. J. H. Ehlers found a dead specimen in the sandy road between Cecil Bay and Big Stone Bay, Emmet County, near the shore of Lake Michigan on August 19, 1916. There are a few additional records of single specimens found in Cheboygan County, near Douglas Lake.

The idea of rarity was somewhat shaken when the writer

* Contribution from the Biological Station of the University of Michigan.

found nine ring-neck snakes under one board at Big Stone Bay, Emmet County, August 3, 1921. Certain features connected with this find, and with others to be mentioned, offer a possible explanation for the apparent rarity of these snakes. The nine snakes were found in an open field near a second-growth coniferous woods. On August 4 two more were found under the same board, and two small specimens beneath separate boards near by. The last one was taken under the large board on August 8. A peculiar feature was that the snakes found under the large board were bunched beneath two pieces of tar paper, eight inches square, with bodies closely intertwined. When the snakes were brought into the laboratory, tar paper was placed in their terrarium, and, although they had a choice of sphagnum, bark, board and tar paper, they were most frequently found beneath the tar paper. Light and contact conditions were controlled as much as possible, so as to make it truly a choice of material.

A little later in the summer, August 12, Dr. Blanchard found three adult ring-neck snakes in a small pile of old white cedar bark near Reese's Bog, on Burt Lake, Cheboygan County. The same collector reports two ring-neck snakes found under the loose bark of a fallen hemlock tree in a small stand of beech and maple woods near Bryant's Hotel on Douglas Lake, September 3, 1918. Ditmars (1908, p. 335) records finding this species mainly beneath the resinous bark of hemlock trees.

It would seem that the apparent rarity of ring-neck snakes in this region, and possibly in others, could be accounted for by their gregarious tendency (Hurter [1910, p. 189] records finding seventeen ring-neck snakes, *D. punctatus arnyi*, beneath a flat rock two feet by eighteen inches), and by their preference for concealment under resinous substances. Possibly tar paper could be used as a trap in the field.

But little information was obtained on their habits and food. In the terrarium they remained in concealment and nearly motionless throughout the daytime, but became active after dark. They declined red-backed salamanders (*Plethodon cinereus*) which were offered as food. However, a specimen examined fresh from the field contained the remains of one. Surface (1906, p. 136) also records the ring-neck snake as feeding upon this salamander.

LIOPELTIS VERNALIS. — Three gravid female green snakes were taken and kept for their breeding records, two from Douglas Lake, Cheboygan County, and one from Cecil Bay, Emmet County. Two of them laid their eggs on August 14, one laying three eggs, the other four. The third and largest was collected on August 15, and, although her abdomen was quite as distended as the others had been, she retained her eggs and must have resorbed them, as her abdomen was of normal girth about October 1. The eggs were cylindrical, with rounded ends and were encased in a white leathery covering. They ranged in length from 27 to 38 mm. and averaged about 12 mm. in diameter at the middle, 10 mm. at one end, and 11 mm. at the other. The covering was stretched smooth and tight except in one which bore a wrinkle between its middle and its larger end, and another which was spoiled. When the latter was opened the dead embryo, measuring 86 mm., was found to be occupying a cavity in the middle of the egg, with yolk at both ends.

The six good eggs were kept on moist sand, and covered with sphagnum. All six hatched on August 28. Before hatching the egg-covering was fully distended until the crack appeared. The latter extended crosswise in the middle of the egg for a distance of 4 or 5 millimeters. As the egg broke a colorless fluid issued, and in about half an hour the young snake partially emerged. In no case did it crawl entirely out at its first appearance. When it had as much as two inches of its length out of the egg the young snake would quickly withdraw into its covering if alarmed. In each instance, after several emergences and withdrawals, occupying from one to four hours, the final escape was accomplished with a slight jerk, perhaps due to the breaking of the yolk-stalk attachment. No egg-tooth could be seen with the unaided eye on any of the young snakes, and they did not shed their skins soon after hatching.

NATRIX SIPEDON SIPEDON. — Eleven female water snakes were collected near Douglas and Burt Lakes from July 4 to August 21. Two of these were immature, and the other nine had embryos in their oviducts. The collection of these at various dates gave a series of embryos of sizes increasing with the advance of the season, as follows:

July 4. — No embryos visible
July 10. — Embryos about 75 mm. long
July 11. — Embryos about 52 mm. long
July 18. — Embryos about 75 mm. long
July 18. — Embryos about 75 mm. long
July 27. — Embryos about 146 mm. long
Aug. 21. — Embryos about 180 mm. long

The 52 mm. and the 75 mm. embryos had well defined scales and scale rows, but were colorless. The 146 mm. and the 180 mm. embryos were definitely colored with four distinct rows of dorsal blotches.

Only a very general relationship was noted between the length of the adult and the number of young. The figures are as follows:

Length of adults in centimeters	Number of embryos
72	21
85	16
90	15
90	30
93	23
93	23
96	28
105	18
1135	45

In every case there were more embryos in the right than in the left oviduct, and, although there was some dovetailing, the embryos in the left oviduct, with but one exception, were closer to the vent than those in the right oviduct.

Two of the water snakes had fish in their stomachs and one had a leopard frog. Four of the stomachs were infested with Ascarid worms.

STORERIA OCCIPITO-MACULATA. — On July 25 a gravid female red-bellied snake was found lying in a sandy road near Mud Lake, Cheboygan County, by Dr. Minna Jewell. A second female of this species in the same condition was picked up on August 3 in a sandy path at Big Stone Bay, Emmet County, by Dr. George E. Nichols. Still a third gravid female was found on August 9 beneath a board in a clearing at Cecil Bay, in Emmet County, by Dr. F. N. Blanchard. All three were given to the

writer by the collectors, and were kept until their young were born.

The first female bore nine young on August 20. The first of her young ones was discovered at 11:20 A.M. and had been born not more than a few minutes, as it was still in the egg-membrane. Five more were born between 12:00 and 12:40, the seventh at 12:48, the eighth at 1:16, and the last at 2:16. The young were forcibly ejected by a continuous series of muscular body constrictions passing from the head to the vent of the mother. The birth of one of the young ones required four minutes from its first appearance in the vent to its complete separation from the parent. Others, for various reasons, took longer. When the head-fold was pointed posteriorly the time for emergence was shortened, since the young one was thus enabled to help himself out. The last one to be born had its head folded a short way back, but it broke the egg-membrane, straightened out its neck, and explored actively with its tongue while still in the vent. The mother's belly was not concave when the young were all out, but the skin was wrinkled along the sides of the body, whereas before it had been stretched tight. For about thirty-six hours after the last of her brood was born the mother remained practically motionless. She paid no attention to a slug that crawled about her, although slugs are well known to be a favorite food of the species.

The second female gave birth to her six young on August 21, and the third female to her eight young on September 4. The young averaged 84 millimeters in length. The individual measurements in millimeters were: 83, 84, 89, 82, 83, 81, 86, 84, and 86, 82, 83, 87, 81, 81. Their backs were fuscous-black, their occipital spots light salmon-orange, and their bellies orient-pink. These colors were uniform in all three broods, though the backs of the mothers were notably different. The first adult's back was hair-brown, that of the second chestnut, and of the third auburn, making a striking color series. The bellies of all three were English red.[1]

THAMNOPHIS SAURITUS SAURITUS. — A female ribbon snake dis-

[1] All colors correspond with Ridgway's *Color Standards and Nomenclature.*

sected August 1 contained seven embryos, four in the right oviduct and three in the left. Each embryo was 195 millimeters long, and was accompanied by a considerable amount of yolk. A female opened August 6 contained nine embryos, without visible yolk, each 225 millimeters long. These embryos were apparently ready to be born, and, since the mother had been opened immediately after etherization, the young were still alive. When the oviduct was opened the young ones became active almost immediately, and one even crawled out of the oviduct. They paid no apparent attention to their mother, and exhibited an absolute independence from the first. Within ten minutes of his birth one of them struck vigorously at a teasing finger, and excreted his musk when picked up. The musk was colorless and nearly odorless. All of them shed their skins within an hour after birth. Two days after their abnormal birth a spring-peeper (*Hyla crucifer*) was dropped into their terrarium, and in about an hour one of the young snakes had it stuck in his throat. However, the frog was too large, and he loosed his hold when disturbed.

The young ranged in length from 66 millimeters to 77 millimeters, with an average of 70 millimeters. They were, in color and proportion, similar to the adult.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Blanchard, F. N. 1922. The Amphibians and Reptiles of Western Tennessee. Occ. Pap. Mus. Zoöl., University of Michigan, No. 117, pp. 1–18.

Ditmars, Raymond E. 1908. The Reptile Book. Doubleday Page & Co. New York. 472 pp.

Ellis, Max M. 1917. Amphibians and Reptiles of the Douglas Lake (Michigan) Region. Rep. Michigan Acad. Sci., 19: 45–63.

Hay, O. P. 1892. On the Breeding Habits, Eggs and Young of Certain Snakes. Proc. U. S. Nat. Mus., 15: 385–397.

Hurter, Julius, Sr. 1910. Herpetology of Missouri. Trans. Acad. Sci. St. Louis, 1911, pp. 59–274.

Ridgway, Robert. 1912. Color Standards and Color Nomenclature.

Ruthven, A. G. 1912. The Reptiles of Michigan. Michigan Geol. and Biol. Surv., Publ. 10., Biol. Ser. 3, pp. 63–160.

Surface, H. A. 1906. The Serpents of Pennsylvania. Pennsylvania State Dept. Agri., Div. Zoöl., Mo. Bull., Aug. and Sept., pp. 114–208.

NOTES ON THE BIRDS OF CHARLEVOIX COUNTY AND VICINITY

JOSSELYN VAN TYNE

During the summer of 1923, the writer served as assistant on an expedition to Charlevoix County to study the mammals of that region. This work was supported by the Michigan Department of Conservation. The study of the distribution of the mammals carried the party frequently to all parts of the county, and the writer made the best of the opportunity to study the birds of this little known region. As nothing seems to have been published on the birds of the mainland of Charlevoix County, the following notes are submitted with the hope that they may serve as a basis for further work on the birds of this interesting country.

We arrived on June 20 at the farm near Boyne Falls which was to be our base for the summer. This was two miles southeast of Boyne Falls. From this point and from temporary camps in Norwood Township and in Young State Park, the county was covered pretty thoroughly by automobile. The week from July 9 to 13 was spent at "King's Camp" in the eastern part of Montmorency County (Sec. 30, T. 32 N., R. I. E.) and from July 23 to 28 we worked on Marion Island in Grand Traverse Bay. The rest of the summer until August 26 was spent in Charlevoix County. From that date until September 2, we camped about four miles south of Elmira in order to collect in the virgin hardwood forest there.

In addition to my own notes, much use has been made of those of my fellow assistant, Aldred S. Warthin, Jr. To T. H. Hubbell I am indebted for the identification of insects found in some of the birds' stomachs. In 1922, N. A. Wood, curator of the Museum of Zoölogy, University of Michigan, was in the re-

gion from August 7 to 30, and has kindly permitted me to use his notes. Other valuable notes have been sent me by W. E. Hastings, custodian of birds' eggs in the Museum of Zoölogy. Finally, I wish particularly to thank L. R. Dice of the Museum of Zoölogy, without whose generous encouragement and assistance the work would have been impossible.

As far as possible with the material at hand, an attempt has been made to record the numbers and habitat distribution of the various species. The first of these is, of course, an extremely difficult matter. The apparent numbers are largely dependent upon whether the bird is conspicuous or not, and the personal factor is so great that such brief notes on abundance as can be given here must necessarily be rather indefinite. To make it as exact as possible, a definite scale of relative abundance has been used in these notes (i.e., abundant, common, numerous, few, rare).

The only excuse for presenting such meagre notes on habitat preferences as are here included under many species, lies in the fact that the birds of the region have never before been studied from this point of view and it may be long before further work is done. In the meantime, conditions are changing rapidly and even now but little of the country is left in its original condition. When Brewster and Dwight made a collecting trip to this region only thirty-five years ago, the county was still largely covered with the original forest. Now the last few sections are being cut.

The following is a list of the bird habitats mentioned here:

Open-water
Bulrush
Tamarack and black spruce bog
Swamp brush
Sand beach
Dune heath
Aspen
Hardwood forest
Pine barren
Pasture
Orchard
Edificarian
Mud-flat
Stream-border
Arbor vitæ swamp
Second-growth fir and spruce forest
Gravel beach
Dry brush
Second-growth hardwood forest
Jack pine forest
Aerial
Cultivated field
Ruderal

In general the names are self-explanatory, but more complete descriptions of these habitats are being published by L. R. Dice in his paper on the mammals of the region, which is to appear in the *Occasional Papers of the Museum of Zoölogy, University of Michigan*. For the sake of uniformity and to avoid duplication of the habitat descriptions, the same nomenclature of the habitats is used here as by Dice. The mud-flat habitat is added because of its importance to the shore birds.

All of the one hundred and eighteen species in the following list are here recorded from Charlevoix County, except the upland plover and the wood thrush. The annotated list is primarily an account of the Charlevoix County birds and all notes apply to that county except when other localities are particularly named. All of the observations recorded here were made by the writer in the summer of 1923 unless otherwise specifically stated, in which case the year and authority are always given. The nomenclature used is that of the *A. O. U. Check List* (1910) with its supplements. The specimens collected are in the Museum of Zoölogy, University of Michigan.

ANNOTATED LIST

Podilymbus podiceps (Linn.). Pied-billed grebe. — One was seen on Deer Lake, August 8, 1922, by N. A. Wood.

Gavia immer (Brünn.). Loon. — Two were seen at Thumb Lake, July 17 and 20, and a flock of six was observed off Fisherman's Island, August 10, 1923. W. E. Hastings noted two at Norwood, November 21, 1910.

Larus argentatus argentatus Pont. Herring gull. — Common on Lake Michigan and Pine Lake and numerous on the smaller lakes.

Larus delawarensis Ord. Ring-billed gull. — On August 8, 1923, A. S. Warthin, Jr. noted one at Fisherman's Island in company with herring gulls.

Sterna caspia imperator (Coues). Caspian tern. — Two to seven were seen daily at Fisherman's Island, August 7 to

10, 1923, and one on Pine Lake at Young State Park, August 18. This species is doubtless of regular occurrence along the Lake Michigan shore, as it breeds in some numbers on the Beaver Islands.

STERNA HIRUNDO Linn. Common tern. — Numerous along the Lake Michigan shore.

CHLIDONIAS NIGRA SURINAMENSIS (Gmelin). Black tern. — W. E. Hastings records this bird at Charlevoix, June 14, 1923.

MERGUS AMERICANUS (Cassin). American merganser. — Seen at Norwood, November 21, 1910, by W. E. Hastings.

MERGUS SERRATOR Linn. Red-breasted merganser. — A female merganser, probably of this species, with eight half-grown young, was seen on the Boyne Falls mill-pond July 31, 1923. W. E. Hastings reports the species at Norwood, November 21, 1910. A nest with eleven eggs was found on Marion Island, Grand Traverse Bay, July 24, 1923. The nest was placed on the ground close under the floor rafters of a deserted dance pavilion about a hundred feet from the water. Nearly a dozen females were constantly seen about the island and doubtless had nests there. Only an occasional male appeared with them.

ANAS PLATYRHYNCHOS Linn. Mallard. — A female was seen off Fisherman's Island, August 10, 1923.

ANAS RUBRIPES Brewster. Black duck. — One was noted at Fisherman's Island, August 10, 1923.

MARILA AFFINIS (Eyton). Lesser scaup duck. — Walter E. Hastings found flocks of thousands along the Lake Michigan shore at Norwood, November 21, 1910.

GLAUCIONETTA CLANGULA AMERICANA (Bonap.). American golden-eye. — W. E. Hastings reports this species also as very abundant near Norwood, November 21, 1910.

CHARITONETTA ALBEOLA (Linn.). Bufflehead. — Six birds noted near Norwood on November 21, 1910, by W. E. Hastings.

BOTAURUS LENTIGINOSUS (Montagu). Bittern. — Only three were seen during the summer in Charlevoix County.

ARDEA HERODIAS HERODIAS Linn. Great blue heron. — At

Thumb Lake and along the Lake Michigan shore, single birds were seen regularly in 1923, but rarely elsewhere.

RUBICOLA MINOR (Gmelin). Woodcock. — In late July and early August, at least, the woodcock seemed to be rather numerous in the very wet willow alder thickets at the Boyne Falls mill-pond.

PISOBIA MINUTILLA (Vieill.). Least sandpiper. — This species was seen by N. A. Wood, August 22, 1922, at Deer Lake.

EREUNETES PUSILLUS (Linn.). Semipalmated sandpiper. — Noted at Deer Lake, August 22, 1922, by N. A. Wood.

TOTANUS FLAVIPES (Gmelin). Lesser yellowlegs. — First seen August 12, 1923. From August 15 to 17 there were flocks of a dozen or less on the mud flats of the Boyne Falls mill-pond.

TRINGA SOLITARIA SOLITARIA Wilson. Solitary sandpiper. — A female collected near Thumb Lake, July 18, 1923, was found to be extremely fat, weighing 72.7 grams. An interesting contrast to this was afforded by another female (Boyne Falls, August 15) without noticeable fat, found to weigh forty-six grams. A flock of fifteen appeared at the Boyne Falls mill-pond on August 16, but the pond was later filled with water and no shore birds were seen after this date.

BARTRAMIA LONGICAUDA (Bechst.). Upland plover. — Not seen in Charlevoix County. In Otsego County an adult with a young one about a week old was found in a very dry and desolate part of the pine-barren country a half-mile west of Round Lake (Sec. 29, T. 32 N., R. I. W.) on July 9, 1923.

ACTITIS MACULARIA (Linn.). Spotted sandpiper. — Numerous in 1923 on the sand shore near Fisherman's Island and on the inland lakes of Charlevoix County. Common on Marion Island, where young well able to fly were seen July 24.

OXYECHUS VOCIFERUS (Linn.) Killdeer. — Common in the pasture and sand beach habitats; few in the cultivated fields and gravel beach.

This species bred commonly in the pasture lands, but in the latter part of the season was found more commonly along shore. Young nearly able to fly were noted at Thumb Lake July 19 and 21.

COLINUS VIRGINIANUS VIRGINIANUS (Linn.). Quail. — N. A. Wood noted several near Charlevoix during the latter half of August, 1922. On June 14, 1923, W. E. Hastings also found quail near Charlevoix. During the summer of 1923 but one was seen and this near Boyne Falls on June 22 (A. S. Warthin, Jr.).

BONASA UMBELLUS TOGATA (Linn.). Canada ruffed grouse. — Abundant in dry brush, swamp brush; common in arbor vitae swamp, second-growth fir and spruce forest; numerous in hardwood forest; few in aspen, jack pine forest, and second-growth hardwood forest. The species was studied in Charlevoix County in all of the foregoing habitats except the jack pine forest. This habitat was studied only in the eastern part of Otsego County.

A male was collected July 3, in Boyne Valley Township, and three more birds were kindly collected for me in Melrose Township by J. H. Stephenson on October 28. These birds have been examined by J. L. Peters of the Museum of Comparative Zoölogy of Harvard University, who considers that, while they are not absolutely typical *togata*, yet they are distinctly referable to this subspecies rather than to *umbellus*.

The grouse were rather common throughout the region. Three separate broods of young about three weeks old were seen between June 22 and 25, which probably indicates the usual nesting dates. Adult birds with young continued to be seen during the summer. Ten young seen July 2 constituted the largest brood noted.

ZENAIDURA MACROURA CAROLINENSIS (Linn.). Mourning dove. — Numerous in a large arbor vitae swamp in Boyne Valley Township, but few were seen elsewhere.

CIRCUS HUDSONIUS (Linn.). Marsh hawk. — Numerous, especially in the arbor vitae swamps and in open cultivated country.

ACCIPITER VELOX (Wilson). Sharp-shinned hawk. — Rare. Reported in the county by N. A. Wood, August 17, 1922. On July 13, 1923, one was seen repeatedly carrying food into an

arbor vitae swamp in western Montmorency County (Sec. 30, T 32 N., R. I. E.) The nest could not be found, though when the locality was approached the bird scolded violently and even dived at the intruder. The bird was collected and proved to be a breeding female.

ACCIPITER COOPERI (Bonap.). Cooper's hawk. — One was seen south of Charlevoix by N. A. Wood on August 30, 1922.

ASTUR ATRICAPILLUS ATRICAPILLUS (Wilson). Goshawk. — W. E. Hastings collected an adult male near Norwood, November 23, 1910.

BUTEO BOREALIS BOREALIS (Gmelin). Red-tailed hawk. — One was seen in Chandler Township, August 11, 1923, and W. E. Hastings noted one near Norwood, June 21, 1922.

HALIÆETUS LEUCOCEPHALUS LEUCOCEPHALUS (Linn.). Bald eagle. — One was observed at Norwood November 21, 1920, by W. E. Hastings. It was also seen near Thumb Lake on August 15, 1923, by L. R. Dice. On July 26 a nest was found on Marion Island. It was situated about sixty feet from the ground in a great maple on the highest part of the wooded bluff which extends along the west side of the island. The pair consisted of an adult and an immature bird.

CHERCHNEIS SPARVERIA SPARVERIA (Linn.). Sparrow hawk. — Only three were seen in the county during the whole summer. One seen on July 23 was being attacked by a kingbird and was carrying in its claws, with no apparent difficulty, a bird of the size and appearance of a kingbird, but which could not be surely identified.

PANDION HALIAËTUS CAROLINENSIS (Gmelin). Osprey.— Observed near Norwood on June 21, 1922, by W. E. Hastings. A nest of this species was found July 9, 1923, in the pine-barren country in the western part of Montmorency County (Sec. 18, T. 32 N., R. I. E.) by A. S. Warthin, Jr. There were three well feathered young.

STRIX VARIA VARIA Barton, Barred owl. — One was seen by A. S. Warthin, Jr., June 23, 1923, in a small patch of second-growth fir and spruce forest south of Boyne Falls. On July 30 a young one well able to fly but still in the down

was collected by L. R. Dice in the hardwood forest just north of Thumb Lake.

Bubo virginianus virginianus (Gmelin). Great horned owl. — Reported by W. E. Hastings near Norwood, November 21, 1910.

Nyctea nyctea (Linn.). Snowy owl. — W. E. Hastings collected one near Norwood on November 21, 1910.

Coccyzus erythropthalmus (Wilson). Black-billed cuckoo. — But few were seen during the summer of 1923.

Ceryle alcyon alcyon (Linn.). Kingfisher. — The kingfisher was common along the many small streams, but rather less so on the inland lakes. A bird of strong flight, it is much given to wandering over the surrounding country, often far from any water. It was common around the shores of Marion Island, nesting there in the high banks on the east shore.

Dryobates villosus villosus (Linn.). Hairy woodpecker. — Occasional individuals were seen in a great variety of habitats, but only in the arbor vitae swamps was the species seen with any frequency.

Dryobates pubescens medianus (Swains.). Downy woodpecker. — Fairly common and of very wide distribution. Found practically wherever there were trees.

Picoides arcticus (Swains). Arctic three-toed woodpecker. — Seen near Norwood on November 21, 1910, by W. E. Hastings.

Sphyrapicus varius varius (Linn.). Sapsucker. — One seen by A. S. Warthin, Jr., south of Boyne Falls on August 8, 1923, was the only specimen seen during the summer. N. A. Wood saw one near Charlevoix, August 27, 1922.

Phlœotomus pileatus abieticola (Bangs). Pileated woodpecker. — A number were seen and heard in the hardwood forest north of Thumb Lake. They were very shy and hard to approach.

Melanerpes erythrocephalus (Linn.). Red-headed woodpecker. — W. E. Hastings noted this species near Charlevoix on June 14, 1923, but strangely enough not a single

bird was seen by any of our party in Charlevoix County during the summer, though they were found in some numbers along the roadsides a few miles south in Antrim and Otsego counties near Elmira. They were also numerous in beech and jack pine growths ten miles east of Vanderbilt, Otsego County.

COLAPTES AURATUS LUTEUS (Bangs). Flicker. — Abundant in dry brush; common in pasture, arbor vitae swamp, and aspen; numerous in orchard, swamp brush, pine barren, second-growth hardwood forest, edificarian, dune heath, and ruderal; few in the cultivated field habitat.

The flicker is by far the most wide-ranging and adaptable woodpecker of the region and is therefore the most abundant. It was commonly seen in the pastures indulging in its well-known taste for ants, and in the latter part of the summer it showed a great fondness for the wild cherries and the berries of the dogwood.

ANTROSTOMUS VOCIFERUS VOCIFERUS. (Wilson). Whippoorwill. — Heard calling in numbers every evening through the second week of July, 1923. After that, single birds only were heard on July 29 and August 5 and 25. It was seen and numbers were heard calling in the young jack pine growth near Black River, eastern Montmorency County July 9–14, 1923. Occasionally here, as in Charlevoix County, it was heard in the very early morning.

CHORDEILES VIRGINIANUS VIRGINIANUS (Gmelin). Nighthawk. — A common summer resident throughout Charlevoix County. In Antrim County the first of the migrating flocks in the fall of 1923 were seen a few miles northwest of Elmira on August 26. During the late afternoon of August 31, 1923, considerable numbers were observed in Otsego County about four miles south of Elmira, flying rapidly to the southward. They all seemed to take exactly the same direction (about SSE) as though following a definite route.

CHÆTURA PELAGICA (Linn.). Chimney swift. — Seen in small numbers and rather infrequently, but showing a rather de-

cided preference for the region just above the tree tops of the hardwood forest.

Archilochus colubris (Linn.). Ruby-throated humming-bird. — A number of hummingbirds were seen in Charlevoix County especially around dwellings and gardens and in the second-growth hardwood forest.

Tyrannus tyrannus (Linn.). Kingbird. — Abundant in ruderal, orchard, and dry brush; common in edificarian, cultivated field; numerous in aspen. The kingbird wanders occasionally into other habitats, but its typical environment in Charlevoix County is fairly well shown by the foregoing list. It was decidedly more abundant than in the southern part of the state. A number of nests were found. These were usually placed in the bushes by the roadside, but one was found on a small stump in the center of Boyne Falls mill-pond. In the vicinity of Boyne Falls, nests were found in which the eggs hatched July 13 and 18. Another with half-grown young was located on July 29 and the young in a fourth left on July 4. The eggs in one of these hatched after fifteen days incubation. In the area of desolate cut-over land east of Vanderbilt, Otsego County, this was a very abundant bird. On July 10 two nests here had fully grown young.

Myiarchus crinitus (Linn.). Crested flycatcher. — Probably a rare summer resident. Noted near Charlevoix June 14, 1923, by W. E. Hastings, and at Deer Lake, June 30. A male was collected in Otsego County in an orchard four miles south of Elmira on August 28.

Sayornis phœbe (Lath.). Phœbe. — A common nesting bird around the farm buildings and under bridges. Nests with newly hatched young were seen July 2 and 4, 1923.

Nuttallornis borealis (Swains.). Olive-sided flycatcher. — N. A. Wood saw one near Charlevoix on August 16, 1922.

Myiochanes virens (Linn.). Wood pewee. — This species occurs rather sparingly in the hardwood forest.

Empidonax minimus (W. M. & S. F. Baird). Least flycatcher. — Seen twice in Boyne Valley Township. On August 4,

1923, one was collected in an arbor vitae swamp (L. R. Dice) and August 16 one was seen in the second growth hardwood (A. S. Warthin, Jr.)

Otocoris alpestris praticola (Henshaw). Prairie horned lark. — A common breeding bird all over Charlevoix County in pastures and cultivated fields.

Cyanocitta cristata cristata (Linn.). Blue jay. — Rather numerous in all kinds of wooded country and especially so in the arbor vitae swamps. The stomach of one collected August 2 contained one large sawfly, a leaf-hopper, and some fragments of beetles.

Corvus brachyrhynchos brachyrhynchos Brehm. Crow. — A numerous and wide-ranging bird.

Dolichonyx oryzivorus (Linn.). Bobolink. — A numerous breeding bird in the alfalfa and clover fields of Charlevoix County.

Molothrus ater ater (Bodd.). Cowbird. — Especially numerous in pastures, but found practically everywhere. The first large flock in 1923 was seen on June 30, when a group of over two hundred appeared near Boyne Falls.

Agelaius phoeniceus phoeniceus (Linn.). Red-winged blackbird. — Because of the almost complete lack of suitable marsh land in Charlevoix County but few of these birds are to be found. The first wandering flock in 1923 was seen near Thumb Lake on July 21. A single nest with two eggs was located at the Boyne Falls mill-pond on June 23.

Sturnella magna magna (Linn.). Meadow-lark. — Common in cultivated land. A young one just out of the nest was found July 18, 1923, near Boyne Falls by A. S. Warthin, Jr.

Icterus galbula (Linn.). Baltimore oriole. — A male was seen near Boyne Falls on June 30, 1920. Noted also near Charlevoix on June 14, 1923, by W. E. Hastings.

Quiscalus quiscula æneus Ridgway. Bronzed grackle. — This bird is in Charlevoix County almost confined to the neighborhood of water. It was frequently seen feeding on the exposed mud along the shores of streams or lakes and was

rarely seen elsewhere. The first large flock of grackles appeared July 29, 1923.

Carpodacus purpureus purpureus (Gmelin). Purple finch. — W. E. Hastings reports this species abundant near Norwood on November 23, 1910. We saw none in Charlevoix County during the summer, but N. A. Wood noted one in a cedar thicket near Charlevoix on August 24, 1922.

Acanthis linaria linaria (Linn.). Redpoll. — W. E. Hastings found "large flocks" of redpolls near Norwood on November 21, 1910.

Astragalinus tristis tristis (Linn.). Goldfinch. — A common resident in the open country. On November 23, 1910, W. E. Hastings found "large flocks" near Norwood "feeding on the seeds of the hemlock."

Passer domesticus (Linn.). English sparrow. — Common in Charlevoix County, but confined to the towns and to the farmyards.

Plectrophenax nivalis nivalis (Linn.). Snow bunting. — W. E. Hastings reports large flocks at Norwood, November 21, 1910.

Poœcetes gramineus gramineus (Gmelin). Vesper sparrow. — This was the commonest sparrow in Charlevoix County and was always to be found in the pastures and cultivated fields. A full grown young bird was found dead near Boyne Falls on June 29, 1923.

Passerculus sandwichensis savanna (Wilson). Savanna sparrow. — Seen first in an alfalfa field two miles south of Boyne Falls on June 26, 1923. A female collected there on June 27 contained a partly developed egg. A male was seen singing at the same place and on July 2 two singing males were located there. As these birds were always seen at exactly the same spot, it seems certain that they were breeding, though no nest was found.

Zonotrichia albicollis (Gmelin). White-throated sparrow. — Numerous in the arbor vitae swamps of Charlevoix County, where it evidently bred, but it was not noted elsewhere.

Spizella passerina passerina (Bech.). Chipping sparrow. —

Common in cultivated field, pasture, edificarian; numerous in orchard, ruderal, dry brush.

A common breeding bird. Young out of the nest were seen on June 22, 1923, and a nest with newly hatched young was found on July 2.

SPIZELLA PUSILLA PUSILLA (Wilson). Field sparrow. — None were seen in 1923. N. A. Wood, however, reports seeing two near Charlevoix in the latter part of August, 1922.

JUNCO HYEMALIS HYEMALIS (Linn.). Junco. — A pair collected two miles south of Boyne Falls on August 3, 1923, were the only ones seen.

MELOSPIZA MELODIA MELODIA (Wilson). Song sparrow. — A common breeding bird of very general distribution, though rarely found far from water. A nest found in a tamarack bog on July 29, 1923, contained young about three days old.

PIPILO ERYTHROPTHALMUS ERYTHROPTHALMUS (Linn.). Chewink. — Widely distributed and found rather commonly wherever there is much brush or undergrowth. It was particularly abundant in the arbor vitae swamps. The stomach of a female collected south of Boyne Falls on August 3, 1923, contained a small rhynchophorid beetle and a locust (*Camnula pellucida*). The few found on Marion Island were all deep in the hardwood forest in the central part of the island.

CARDINALIS CARDINALIS CARDINALIS (Linn.). Cardinal. — N. A. Wood records one near Charlevoix on August 18, 1922.

HEDYMELES LUDOVICIANUS (Linn.). Rose-breasted grosbeak. — But three were seen during the summer.

PASSERINA CYANEA (Linn.). Indigo bunting. — Rather numerous, along the roadsides where the males were frequently seen, singing from the fences and telephone wires. The stomach of a breeding male collected south of Boyne Falls on August 3 contained a locust (*Camnula pellucida*).

PIRANGA ERYTHROMELAS Vieill. Scarlet tanager. — A common and characteristic breeding bird of the hardwood forest.

PROGNE SUBIS SUBIS (Linn.). Purple martin. — A pair about a

farm near Boyne Falls and a few pairs nesting in Boyne City were the only ones seen in 1923.

HIRUNDO ERYTHROGASTRA Bodd. Barn swallow. — Numerous about the buildings and fields of most farms.

IRIDOPROCNE BICOLOR (Vieill.). Tree swallow. — Less numerous than the preceding. Two nests were found in fence posts on a farm south of Boyne Falls. The eggs in one hatched June 30 and the young left nineteen days later. The eggs in the other hatched July 4, but only one of the five young survived. The male birds were never seen near either nest.

RIPARIA RIPARIA (Linn.). Bank swallow. — A colony of four or five pairs nested in a roadside bank near Boyne Falls. On June 27, 1923, the young in these nests were found to be pretty well feathered, probably about two weeks old. The only others seen were along the sandy shore of Lake Michigan at Fisherman's Island, where during the week of August 6–10 flocks of a hundred or so were seen feeding.

BOMBYCILLA CEDRORUM Vieill. Cedar waxwing. — Rather scarce everywhere, but least so in the arbor vitae swamps. The stomach of a female collected in an arbor vitae swamp August 2 contained seven cherries, eight beetles (Pythidae?), three locusts (*Melanophus mexicanus atlanis*), one sawfly larva and other insect fragments.

LANIUS LUDOVICIANUS MIGRANS W. Palmer. Migrant shrike. — Three were seen in Norwood Township in the first week in August. The stomach of a male collected August 1 contained a Carolina locust (*Dissosteira carolina*).

VIREOSYLVA OLIVACEA (Linn.). Red-eyed vireo. — A common summer resident confined usually to the hardwood growth, though occasionally found in other places, such as clumps of poplar, etc.

MNIOTILTA VARIA (Linn.). Black and white warbler. — Numerous in the arbor vitae swamps, and evidently breeding there. For, while no nests were found, a number of males were seen in June singing continually from certain perches, and these birds showed much anxiety over the presence of intruders.

VERMIVORA RUFICAPILLA RUFICAPILLA (Wilson). Nashville warbler. — N. A. Wood writes: "Not rare in cedar and poplar thickets at the 'Loeb Farms' about two miles southeast of Charlevoix. Several seen on August 24, 1922." The bird doubtless breeds here.

DENDROICA AESTIVA AESTIVA (Gmelin). Yellow warbler. — A single male seen in Boyne Falls on June 21 was the only bird noted during the summer. This rarity of what is usually such a common bird is very difficult to explain.

DENDROICA CÆRULESCENS CÆRULESCENS (Gmelin). Black-throated blue warbler. — An adult male was collected in the hardwood forest north of Thumb Lake on August 11, 1923. N. A. Wood noted one near Charlevoix August 30, 1922.

DENDROICA CORONATA CORONATA (Linn.). Myrtle warbler. — A male was collected in an arbor vitae swamp at Susan Lake on August 23, 1923.

DENDROICA MAGNOLIA (Wilson). Magnolia warbler. — One seen south of Boyne Falls on June 27, 1923 (A. S. Warthin, Jr.).

DENDROICA STRIATA (J. B. Forester). Black-poll warbler. — One seen in Boyne Valley Township on August 16, 1923 (A. S. Warthin, Jr.).

DENDROICA FUSCA (Müller). Blackburnian warbler. — On July 16, 1923, a male was seen at the edge of a small tamarack bog just north of Thumb Lake. Two days later a female was noted at the same spot.

DENDROICA VIRENS (Gmelin). Black-throated green warbler. — Not very numerous. Doubtless a summer resident.

DENDROICA VIGORSI (Aud.). Pine warbler. — N. A. Wood saw one near Charlevoix on August 15, 1922.

SEIURUS AUROCAPILLUS (Linn.). Oven-bird. — Except for the redstart, this is the most abundant warbler in the county. It was very abundant in every piece of hardwood visited and only less so in the other types of growth where the cover was thick enough. A nest found by T. H. Hubbell in the hardwood forest north of Thumb Lake contained a half-grown young cowbird on July 19.

OPORORNIS PHILADELPHIA (Wilson). Mourning warbler. — An

adult male was taken on August 3, 1923, in a mouse trap set in a dry brushy clearing south of Boyne Falls.

Geothlypis trichas trichas (Linn.). Maryland yellow-throat. — A locally numerous summer resident in damp thickets.

Wilsonia canadensis (Linn.). Canada warbler. — A few were seen in June and early July in arbor vitae swamps, where it evidently bred.

Setophaga ruticilla (Linn.). Redstart. — The redstart was an abundant summer resident. It was the most abundant warbler and was very wide-spread, though found most frequently in second-growth hardwood forest.

Dumetella carolinensis (Linn.). Catbird. — Rather few and local in Charlevoix County.

Toxostoma rufum (Linn.). Brown thrasher. — Less common than the preceding species.

Troglodytes aëdon aëdon Vieill. House wren. — Not very abundant, but extremely wide-spread. A nest with eggs was found near Boyne Falls on June 30, 1923, and a nest in Chandler Township contained on August 11 four young ready to leave the nest.

Nannus hiemalis hiemalis (Vieill.). Winter wren. — During June and July, 1923, winter wrens were frequently heard singing in the arbor vitae swamps, but the birds were extremely hard to locate in the dense tangle, because of the ventriloquistic quality of their song.

Sitta carolinensis carolinensis Lath. White-breasted nuthatch. — One was seen in the hardwood forests north of Thumb Lake on July 1, 1923.

Sitta canadensis Linn. Red-breasted nuthatch. — One noted July 5, 1923, in an arbor vitae swamp south of Boyne Falls.

Penthestes atricapillus atricapillus (Linn.). Chickadee. — Numerous.

Regulus satrapa satrapa Lich. Golden-crowned kinglet. — A pair were found in an arbor vitae swamp south of Boyne Falls on July 4, 1923. Both birds scolded continually and seemed to have a nest near by, but it could not be found. The male was collected.

HYLOCICHLA MUSTELINA (Gmelin). Wood thrush. — None seen in Charlevoix County. A male was collected August 31, 1923, in the hardwood forest four miles south of Elmira in Otsego County.

HYLOCICHLA FUSCESCENS FUSCENSCENS (Steph.). Veery. — A common summer resident especially in the hardwood forest.

HYLOCICHLA GUTTATA PALLASI (Cabanis). Hermit thrush. — W. E. Hastings found this species near Norwood June 21, 1922.

PLANESTICUS MIGRATORIUS MIGRATORIUS (Linn.). Robin. — Common everywhere in the open cultivated country, especially around the farms. The young in one nest left July 3.

SIALIA SIALIS SIALIS (Linn.). Bluebird. — A common nesting bird in the cultivated country.

ANN ARBOR, MICHIGAN

INDEX OF AUTHORS AND SUBJECTS

PAGE

Abel, C. F., Paul Tilford and R. P. Hibbard. An Injurious Factor Affecting the Seeds of *Phaseolus vulgaris* Soaked in Water 345

Absence of Chromosome Pairing during Meiosis in *Oenothera biennis*. Sterling H. Emerson 111

Anderson, E. G. Genetic Factors for Yellow Endosperm Color in Maize 51

Anderson, E. G. X-Rays and the Frequency of Non-Disjunction in Drosophila 523

Annotated List of the Higher Plants of the Region of Douglas Lake, Michigan. F. C. Gates and J. H. Ehlers 183

Assyrian Medicine in the Seventh Century B.C. Leroy Waterman 465

Baxter, Dow V. *Fomes fraxineus* Fr. in Culture 55

Bessey, Ernst A. The Relationships of the Ascomyceteae, Basidiomyceteae and Teliosporeae 67

Billington, Cecil. The Flowering Plants and Ferns of Warren Woods, Berrien County, Michigan 81

Blanchard, Frank N. The Forms of Carphophis 527

Blanchard, Frank N. A Name for the Black Pituophis from Alabama 531

Blanchard, Frank N. A Collection of Amphibians and Reptiles from Southeastern Missouri and Southern Illinois 533

Bredvold, Louis I. Deism before Lord Herbert 431

Browning's Conception of Love as Represented in *Paracelsus*. William O. Raymond 443

Case, E. C. Some New Specimens of Triassic Vertebrates in the Museum of Geology of the University of Michigan 419

Collection of Amphibians and Reptiles from Southeastern Missouri and Southern Illinois. Frank N. Blanchard 533

Deism before Lord Herbert. Louis I. Bredvold 431

Early Musical Scales in the Light of the Twentieth Century. Charles K. Wead 43

Ecological Study of Mud Lake Bog, Cheboygan County, Michigan. Louise Goe, Elsie Erickson and Edith Woollett 297

Ehlers, G. M. An Ordovician Reef on Sulphur Island, Lake Huron 452

Ehlers, J. H., and F. C. Gates. An Annotated List of the Higher Plants of the Region of Douglas Lake, Michigan 183

Emerson, Sterling H. The Absence of Chromosome Pairing during Meiosis in *Oenothera biennis* 111

Erickson, Elsie, Louise Goe and Edith Woollett. An Ecological Study of Mud Lake Bog, Cheboygan County, Michigan 297

PAGE

Erlanson, Eileen Whitehead. The Flora of the Peninsula of Virginia 115
Extra-curricular Factors and After-Success. Adelbert Ford 499
Flora of the Peninsula of Virginia. Eileen Whitehead Erlanson ... 115
Flowering Plants and Ferns of Warren Woods, Berrien County, Michigan. Cecil Billington 81
Fomes fraxineus Fr. in Culture. Dow V. Baxter 55
Ford, Adelbert. Extra-curricular Factors and After-Success 499
Forms of Carphophis. Frank N. Blanchard 527
Gates, Frank C. Meteorological Data, Douglas Lake, Michigan .. 475
Gates, F. C., and J. H. Ehlers. An Annotated List of the Higher Plants of the Region of Douglas Lake, Michigan 183
Genetic Factors for Yellow Endosperm Color in Maize. E. G. Anderson 51
Genetic Studies in Lycopersicum. Paul Alanson Warren 357
Genus Lepiota in the United States. C. H. Kauffman 311
Gleason, Henry Allan. The Structure of the Maple-Beech Association in Northern Michigan 285
Goe, Louise, Elsie Erickson and Edith Woollett. An Ecological Study of Mud Lake Bog, Cheboygan County, Michigan 297
Greek and Roman Lore of Animal-Nursed Infants. Eugene S. McCartney 15
Hatch, Melville H. A List of Coleoptera from Charlevoix County, Michigan 543
Hibbard, R. P., Paul Tilford and C. F. Abel. An Injurious Factor Affecting the Seeds of *Phaseolus vulgaris* Soaked in Water 345
Hinsdale, W. B. An Unusual Trephined Skull from Michigan 13
Hinsdale, W. B. The Missaukee Preserve and Rifle River Forts 1
Historical Background of Europe. Preston Slosson 491
Hubbs, Carl L. The Life-Cycle and Growth of Lampreys 587
Inhibition of the Stomach in Necturus. T. L. Patterson 511
Injurious Factor Affecting the Seeds of *Phaseolus vulgaris* Soaked in Water. Paul Tilford, C. F. Abel and R. P. Hibbard 345
Kahn, R. L. Some Factors Governing the Serology of Syphilis by Precipitation 503
Kauffman, C. H. The Genus Lepiota in the United States 311
Langlois, T. H. Notes on Some Michigan Snakes 605
Life-Cycle and Growth of Lampreys. Carl L. Hubbs 587
List of Coleoptera from Charlevoix County, Michigan. Melville H. Hatch 543
McCartney, Eugene S. Greek and Roman Lore of Animal-Nursed Infants 15
Meteorological Data, Douglas Lake, Michigan. Frank C. Gates 475

PAGE

Missaukee Preserve and Rifle River Forts. W. B. Hinsdale..... 1
Mitchell, Helen S. Variations in the Intestinal Flora of Rats..... 405
Name for the Black Pituophis from Alabama. Frank N. Blanchard. 531
Notes on Some Michigan Snakes. T. H. Langlois..... 605
Notes on the Birds of Charlevoix County and Vicinity. Josselyn Van Tyne..... 611
Observations on the Kahn Precipitation Test. Elsa T. Schueren 517
Observations on the Morphology of the Seed in Phytolacca. E. F. Woodcock..... 413
Ordovician Reef on Sulphur Island, Lake Huron, G. M. Ehlers..... 425
Patterson, T. L. The Inhibition of the Stomach in Necturus..... 511
Perfect Stage of the Valsaceae in Culture and the Hypothesis of Sexual Strains in this Group. Lewis E. Wehmeyer..... 395
Raymond, William O. Browning's Conception of Love as Represented in *Paracelsus*..... 443
Relationships of the Ascomyceteae, Basidiomyceteae and Teliosporeae. Ernst A. Bessey..... 67
Schueren, Elsa T. Observations on the Kahn Precipitation Test.... 517
Slosson, Preston. The Historical Background of Europe..... 491
Some Factors Governing the Serology of Syphilis by Precipitation. R. L. Kahn..... 503
Some New Specimens of Triassic Vertebrates in the Museum of Geology of the University of Michigan. E. C. Case..... 419
Structure of the Maple-Beech Association in Northern Michigan. Henry Allan Gleason..... 285
Tilford, Paul, C. F. Abel and R. P. Hibbard. An Injurious Factor Affecting the Seeds of *Phaseolus vulgaris* Soaked in Water..... 345
Unusual Trephined Skull from Michigan. W. B. Hinsdale..... 13
Van Tyne, Josselyn. Notes on the Birds of Charlevoix County and Vicinity..... 611
Variations in the Intestinal Flora of Rats. Helen S. Mitchell..... 405
Warren, Paul Alanson. Genetic Studies in Lycopersicum..... 357
Waterman, Leroy. Assyrian Medicine in the Seventh Century B.C... 465
Wead, Charles K. Early Musical Scales in the Light of the Twentieth Century..... 43
Wehmeyer, Lewis E. The Perfect Stage of the Valsaceae in Culture and the Hypothesis of Sexual Strains in This Group..... 395
Woodcock, E. F. Observations on the Morphology of the Seed in Phytolacca..... 413
Woollett, Edith, Louise Goe and Elsie Erickson. An Ecological Study of Mud Lake Bog, Cheboygan County, Michigan..... 297
X-Rays and the Frequency of Non-Disjunction in Drosophila. E. G. Anderson..... 523

M506. Acl pv4 pt1

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN STUDIES

HUMANISTIC SERIES

General Editors: FRANCIS W. KELSEY AND HENRY A. SANDERS

Size, 22.7 × 15.2 cm. 8°. Bound in Cloth.

Vol. I. Roman Historical Sources and Institutions. Edited by Henry A. Sanders, University of Michigan. Pp. vii + 402. $2.50 net.

CONTENTS

1. The Myth about Tarpeia: Henry A. Sanders.
2. The Movements of the Chorus Chanting the Carmen Saeculare: Walter Dennison.
3. Studies in the Lives of Roman Empresses, Julia Mamaea: Mary Gilmore Williams, Mt. Holyoke College.
4. The Attitude of Dio Cassius toward Epigraphic Sources: Duane Reed Stuart, Princeton University.
5. The Lost Epitome of Livy: Henry A Sanders.
6. The Principales of the Early Empire: Joseph H. Drake, University of Michigan.
7. Centurions as Substitute Commanders of Auxiliary Corps: George H. Allen.

Vol. II. Word Formation in Provençal. By Edward L. Adams, University of Michigan. Pp. xvii + 607. $4.00 net.

Vol. III. Latin Philology. Edited by Clarence Linton Meader, University of Michigan. Pp. vii + 290. $2.00 net.

Parts Sold Separately in Paper Covers:

Part I. The Use of idem, ipse, and Words of Related Meaning. By Clarence L. Meader. Pp. 1–112. $0.75.

Part II. A Study in Latin Abstract Substantives. By Manson A. Stewart, Yankton College. Pp. 113–78. $0.40.

Part III. The Use of the Adjective as a Substantive in the De Rerum Natura of Lucretius. By Frederick T. Swan. Pp. 179–214. $0.40.

Part IV. Autobiographic Elements in Latin Inscriptions. By Henry H. Armstrong, Beloit College. Pp. 215–86. $0.40.

Vol. IV. Roman History and Mythology. Edited by Henry A. Sanders. Pp. viii + 427. $2.50 net.

Parts Sold Separately in Paper Covers:

Part I. Studies in the Life of Heliogabalus. By Orma Fitch Butler, University of Michigan. Pp. 1–169. $1.25 net.

Part II. The Myth of Hercules at Rome. By John G. Winter, University of Michigan. Pp. 171–273. $0.50 net.

Part III. Roman Law Studies in Livy. By Alvin E. Evans. Pp. 275–354. $0.40 net.

Part IV. Reminiscences of Ennius in Silius Italicus. By Loura B. Woodruff. Pp. 355–424. $0.40 net.

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY

Publishers 64–66 Fifth Avenue New York

Vol. V. Sources of the Synoptic Gospels. By Rev. Dr. Carl S. Patton, First Congregational Church, Los Angeles, California. Pp. xiii + 263. $1.30 net.

Size, 28 × 18.5 cm. 4to.

Vol. VI. Athenian Lekythoi with Outline Drawing in Glaze Varnish on a White Ground. By Arthur Fairbanks, Director of the Museum of Fine Arts, Boston. With 15 plates, and 57 illustrations in the text. Pp. viii + 371. Bound in cloth. $4.00 net.

Vol. VII. Athenian Lekythoi with Outline Drawing in Matt Color on a White Ground, and an Appendix: Additional Lekythoi with Outline Drawing in Glaze Varnish on a White Ground. By Arthur Fairbanks. With 41 plates. Pp. x + 275. Bound in cloth. $3.50 net.

Vol. VIII. The Old Testament Manuscripts in the Freer Collection. By Henry A. Sanders, University of Michigan. With 9 plates showing pages of the Manuscripts in facsimile. Pp. viii + 357. Bound in cloth. $3.50 net.

Parts Sold Separately in Paper Covers:

Part I. The Washington Manuscript of Deuteronomy and Joshua. With 3 folding plates. Pp. vi + 104. $1.25 net.

Part II. The Washington Manuscript of the Psalms. With 1 single plate and 5 folding plates. Pp. viii + 105–349. $2.00 net.

Vol. IX. The New Testament Manuscripts in the Freer Collection. By Henry A. Sanders, University of Michigan. With 8 plates showing pages of the Manuscripts in facsimile. Pp. x + 323. Bound in cloth. $3.50.

Parts Sold Separately in Paper Covers:

Part I. The Washington Manuscript of the Four Gospels. With 5 plates. Pp. vii + 247. $2.00 net.

Part II. The Washington Manuscript of the Epistles of Paul. With 3 plates. Pp. ix + 251–315. $1.25 net.

Vol. X. The Coptic Manuscripts in the Freer Collection. By William H. Worrell, Hartford Seminary Foundation. With 12 plates. Pp. xxvi + 396. Bound in cloth. $4.75 net.

Parts Sold Separately in Paper Covers:

Part I. The Coptic Psalter. The Coptic text in the Sahidic Dialect, with an Introduction, and with 6 plates showing pages of the Manuscript and Fragments in facsimile. Pp. xxvi + 112. $2.00 net.

Part II. A Homily on the Archangel Gabriel by Celestinus, Bishop of Rome, and a Homily on the Virgin by Theophilus, Archbishop of Alexandria, from Manuscript Fragments in the Freer Collection and the British Museum. The Coptic Text with an Introduction and Translation, and with 6 plates showing pages of the Manuscripts in facsimile. Pp. 113–396. $2.50 net.

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY

Publishers 64–66 Fifth Avenue New York

Vol. XI. Contributions to the History of Science.

Part I. Robert of Chester's Latin Translation of the Algebra of Al-Khowarizmi. With an Introduction, Critical Notes, and an English Version. By Louis C. Karpinski, University of Michigan. With 4 plates showing pages of manuscripts in facsimile, and 25 diagrams in the text. Pp. vii + 164. Paper covers. $2.00 net.

Part II. The Prodromus of Nicolaus Steno's Latin Dissertation Concerning a Solid Body Enclosed by Process of Nature within a Solid. Translated into English by John G. Winter, University of Michigan, with a Foreword by Professor William H. Hobbs. With 7 plates. Pp. vii + 169–283. Paper covers. $1.30 net.

Part III. Vesuvius in Antiquity. Passages of Ancient Authors, with a Translation and Elucidations. By Francis W. Kelsey. Illustrated. (*In preparation.*)

Vol. XII. Studies in East Christian and Roman Art. By Charles R. Morey, Princeton University, and Walter Dennison. With 67 plates (10 colored) and 91 illustrations in the text. Pp. xiii + 175. $4.75 net.

Parts Sold Separately:

Part I. East Christian Paintings in the Freer Collection. By Charles R. Morey. With 13 plates (10 colored) and 34 illustrations in the text. Pp. xiii + 86. Bound in cloth. $2.50 net.

Part II. A Gold Treasure of the Late Roman Period. By Walter Dennison. With 54 plates and 57 illustrations in the text. Pp. 89–175. Bound in cloth. $2.50 net.

Vol. XIII. Documents from the Cairo Genizah in the Freer Collection. Text, with Translation and an Introduction by Richard Gottheil, Columbia University. (*In press.*)

Vol. XIV. Two Studies in Later Roman and Byzantine Administration. By Arthur E. R. Boak and James E. Dunlap, University of Michigan. Pp. x + 324. Bound in cloth. $2.25 net.

Parts Sold Separately in Paper Covers:

Part I. The Master of the Offices in the Later Roman and Byzantine Empires. By Arthur E. R. Boak. Pp. x + 160. Paper covers. $1.00 net.

Part II. The Office of the Grand Chamberlain in the Later Roman and Byzantine Empires. By James E. Dunlap. Pp. 165–324. $1.00 net.

Vol. XV. Greek Themes in Modern Musical Settings. By Albert A. Stanley, University of Michigan. With 10 plates. Pp. xxii + 385. Bound in cloth. $4.00 net.

Parts Sold Separately in Paper Covers:

Part I. Incidental Music to Percy Mackaye's Drama of Sappho and Phaon. Pp. 1–68. $0.90 net.

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY

Publishers 64–66 Fifth Avenue New York

Part II. Music to the Alcestis of Euripides with English Text. Pp. 71–120. $0.80 net.

Part III. Music to the Iphigenia among the Taurians by Euripides, with Greek Text. Pp. 123–190. $0.75 net.

Part IV. Two Fragments of Ancient Greek Music. Pp. 217–225. $0.30 net.

Part V. Music to Cantica of the Menaechmi of Plautus. Pp. 229–263. $0.60 net.

Part VI. Attis: A Symphonic Poem. Pp. 265–383. $1.00 net.

Vol. XVI. Nicomachus of Gerasa: Introduction to Arithmetic. Translated into English by Martin Luther D'Ooge, with Studies in Greek Arithmetic by Frank Egleston Robbins and Louis C. Karpinski. (*In press.*)

Vols. XVII, XVIII, XIX, XX. Royal Correspondence of the Assyrian Empire. Translated into English, with a transliteration of the text and a Commentary. By Leroy Waterman, University of Michigan. (*In press.*)

Vol. XXI. The Papyrus Minor Prophets in the Freer Collection and the Berlin Fragment of Genesis. By Henry A. Sanders, University of Michigan, and Carl Schmidt, University of Berlin. (*In press.*)

FACSIMILES OF MANUSCRIPTS

Size, 40.5 × 35 cm.

Facsimile of the Washington Manuscript of Deuteronomy and Joshua in the Freer Collection. With an Introduction by Henry A. Sanders. Pp. x; 201 heliotype plates. The University of Michigan. Ann Arbor, Michigan, 1910.

Limited edition, distributed only to Libraries, under certain conditions. A list of Libraries containing this Facsimile is printed in *University of Michigan Studies, Humanistic Series*, Volume VIII, pp. 351–353.

Size, 34 × 26 cm.

Facsimile of the Washington Manuscript of the Four Gospels in the Freer Collection. With an Introduction by Henry A. Sanders. Pp. x; 372 heliotype plates and 2 colored plates. The University of Michigan. Ann Arbor, Michigan, 1912.

Limited edition, distributed only to Libraries, under certain conditions. A list of Libraries containing this Facsimile is printed in *University of Michigan Studies, Humanistic Series*, Volume IX, pp. 317–320.

SCIENTIFIC SERIES

Size, 28 × 18.5 cm. 4°. Bound in Cloth.

Vol. I. The Circulation and Sleep. By John F. Shepard, University of Michigan. Pp. ix + 83, with an Atlas of 63 plates, bound separately. Text and Atlas, $2.50 net.

Vol. II. Studies on Divergent Series and Summability. By Walter B. Ford, University of Michigan. Pp. xi + 194. $2.50.

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY

Publishers 64–66 Fifth Avenue New York

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN PUBLICATIONS

HUMANISTIC PAPERS

General Editor: EUGENE S. McCARTNEY

Size, 22.7 × 15.2 cm. 8°. Bound in Cloth.

THE LIFE AND WORKS OF GEORGE SYLVESTER MORRIS. A CHAPTER IN THE HISTORY OF AMERICAN THOUGHT IN THE NINETEENTH CENTURY. By ROBERT M. WENLEY, University of Michigan. Pp. xv + 332. Cloth. $1.50 net.

LATIN AND GREEK IN AMERICAN EDUCATION, WITH SYMPOSIA ON THE VALUE OF HUMANISTIC STUDIES. Edited by FRANCIS W. KELSEY. Pp. x + 396. $1.50.

THE PRESENT POSITION OF LATIN AND GREEK, The Value of Latin and Greek as Educational Instruments, the Nature of Culture Studies.

SYMPOSIA ON THE VALUE OF HUMANISTIC, Particularly Classical, Studies as a Preparation for the Study of Medicine, Engineering, Law and Theology.

A SYMPOSIUM ON THE VALUE OF HUMANISTIC, Particularly Classical, Studies as a Training for Men of Affairs.

A SYMPOSIUM ON THE CLASSICS AND THE NEW EDUCATION.

A SYMPOSIUM ON THE DOCTRINE OF FORMAL DISCIPLINE IN THE LIGHT OF CONTEMPORARY PSYCHOLOGY.

(Out of print; new edition in preparation.)

THE MENAECHMI OF PLAUTUS. The Latin Text, with a Translation by JOSEPH H. DRAKE, University of Michigan. Pp. xi + 130. Paper covers. $0.60.

THE SENATE AND TREATIES, 1789–1817: THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE TREATY-MAKING FUNCTIONS OF THE UNITED STATES SENATE DURING THEIR FORMATIVE PERIOD. By RALSTON HAYDEN, University of Michigan. Pp. xvi + 237. Cloth. $1.50 net.

Size, 23.5 × 15.5 cm. 8°. Bound in Cloth.

WILLIAM PLUMER'S MEMORANDUM OF PROCEEDINGS IN THE UNITED STATES SENATE, 1803–1807. Edited by EVERETT SOMERVILLE BROWN, University of Michigan. Pp. xi + 673. Cloth. $3.50.

PAPERS OF THE MICHIGAN ACADEMY OF SCIENCE, ARTS AND LETTERS

(containing Papers submitted at Annual Meetings)

Editors: PAUL S. WELCH and EUGENE S. McCARTNEY

Size, 24.2 × 16.5 cm. 8°. Bound in Cloth.

VOL. I (1921). With 38 plates and 5 maps. Pp. xi + 424. $2.00 net.

VOL. II (1922). With 11 plates. Pp. xi + 226. $2.00 net. Bound in paper $1.50 net.

VOL. III (1923). With 26 plates, 15 text figures and three maps. Pp. xii + 473. $3.00 net. Bound in paper, $2.25 net.

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY

Publishers 64–66 Fifth Avenue New York

Vol. IV (1924), Part I. With 27 plates, 22 text figures and 3 maps. Pp. xi + 631. $3.00 net. Bound in paper, $2.25 net.

Vol. IV (1924), Part II. A Key to the Snakes of the United States, Canada and Lower California. By Frank N. Blanchard. With 78 text figures. Pp. xiii + 65. Cloth, $1.75.

CONTRIBUTIONS FROM THE MUSEUM OF GEOLOGY

VOLUME I

The Stratigraphy and Fauna of the Hackberry Stage of the Upper Devonian. By Carroll Lane Fenton and Mildred Adams Fenton. With 45 plates, 9 text figures and one map. Pp. xi + 260. Cloth. $2.75.

VOLUME II

(*All communications relative to the Numbers of Volume II should be addressed to the Librarian, General Library, University of Michigan.*)

No. 1. A Possible Explanation of Fenestration in the Primitive Reptilian Skull, with Notes on the Temporal Region of the Genus Dimetrodon, by E. C. Case. Pp. 1–12, with five illustrations. $0.30.

No. 2. Occurrence of the Collingwood Formation in Michigan, by R. Ruedemann and G. M. Ehlers. Pp. 13–18. $0.15.

No. 3. Silurian Cephalopods of Northern Michigan, by Aug. F. Foerste. Pp. 19–104, with 17 plates. $1.00.

(*All communications relative to the volumes listed below should be addressed to the Librarian, General Library, University of Michigan.*)

HISTORICAL STUDIES

(Published under the direction of the Department of History, 1911–1913.)

Vol. I. A History of the President's Cabinet. By Mary Louise Hinsdale. Pp. ix + 355. Cloth. $2.00.

Vol. II. English Rule in Gascony, 1199–1259, with Special Reference to the Towns. By Frank Burr Marsh. Pp. xi + 178. Cloth. $1.25.

Vol. III. The Color Line in Ohio; A History of Race Prejudice in a Typical Northern State. By Frank Uriah Quillan. Pp. xvi + 178. Cloth. $1.50.

Catalogue of the Stearns Collection of Musical Instruments (Second edition). By Albert A. Stanley. With 40 plates. Pp. 276. $4.00.

HELLENIC HISTORY

By GEORGE WILLIS BOTSFORD

A survey of Greek life from its primitive beginnings to the year 30 B.C., with an account of the political, social, economic, artistic, intellectual, and religious development. The book is abundantly illustrated.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

CHAPTER

I. Country and People
II. The Minoan Age
III. The Middle Age: Transition from Minoan to Hellenic Life
IV. Economic Growth and Colonial Expansion
V. Evolution of the City-State, Amphictyonies, and Leagues
VI. Crete, Lacedaemon, and the Peloponnesian League
VII. Athens: From Monarchy to Democracy
VIII. Intellectual Awakening: (I) Social and Literary Progress
IX. Intellectual Awakening: (II) Religious, Moral, and Scientific Progress
X. Conquest of the Asiatic Greeks by the Lydians and the Persians
XI. The War with Persia and Carthage
XII. The Age of the War Heroes: (I) Political and Economic
XIII. The Age of the War Heroes: (II) Society and Culture
XIV. The Age of Pericles: (I) Imperialism
XV. The Age of Pericles: (II) The Athenian Democracy

CHAPTER

XVI. The Age of Pericles: (III) Society and Public Works
XVII. The Age of Pericles: (IV) Thought, Culture, and Character
XVIII. The Peloponnesian War to the Beginning of the Sicilian Expedition
XIX. The Sicilian Expedition and the Last Years of the War
XX. A Cultural Revolution
XXI. The Lacedaemonian Empire and the Ascendancy of Thebes
XXII. Sicily and Magna Graecia
XXIII. The Rise of Macedon to 337
XXIV. Economy and Society
XXV. Social Aspects of the State
XXVI. Art and Intelligence in the Fourth Century
XXVII Alexander's Empire and the Hellenistic Kingdoms
XXVIII. The Organization and Administration of the Hellenistic States
XXIX. Hellenistic Culture: (I) City Construction and Art
XXX. Hellenistic Culture: (II) Philosophy, Science, and Literature

Price $4.00

A HISTORY OF ROME TO 565 A.D.

By ARTHUR E. R. BOAK

Professor of Ancient History in the University of Michigan

A well-proportioned and accurately written history of Rome from the beginning of civilization in Italy to 565 A.D.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION

THE SOURCES FOR THE STUDY OF EARLY ROMAN HISTORY

PART I

THE FORERUNNERS OF ROME IN ITALY

PART II

THE EARLY MONARCHY AND THE REPUBLIC, FROM PREHISTORIC TIMES TO 27 B.C.

PART III

THE PRINCIPATE OR EARLY EMPIRE: 27 B.C.–285 A.D.

PART IV

THE AUTOCRACY OR LATE EMPIRE: 285–565 A.D.

Epilogue *Chronological Table* *Bibliographical Note* *Index*

Price $3.25

ON SALE WHEREVER BOOKS ARE SOLD

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY

Publishers 64–66 Fifth Avenue New York

A new volume of great historical importance

THE McKINLEY AND ROOSEVELT ADMINISTRATIONS, 1897–1909

BY

JAMES FORD RHODES, LL.D., D.Litt.

FEW historians can lay claim to such a spontaneous and vigorous style as James Ford Rhodes. The book opens with the excitement of the presidential campaign of 1896, takes up and makes live again the Spanish War, the Venezuela dispute of 1902, the Hay-Pauncefote treaties leading to the building of the Panama Canal, the Russo-Japanese Treaty Conference, Roosevelt's prosecution of the trusts, and the other events of the time to which the country thrilled.

CHAPTER I. Introduces Mark Hanna and follows his political career through the meeting of McKinley, the intimacy that formed over the coin question and his aid in McKinley's campaign and election.

CHAPTER II. Deals with the arranging of the Cabinet and the trouble involved.

CHAPTER III. Presents the Cuban question giving public opinion and McKinley's stand.

CHAPTER IV. The Spanish War chapter beginning with the battle of Manila and ending with the destruction of the Spanish Fleet.

CHAPTER V. Gives the main provisions in the Protocol, some personal glimpses of J. P. Morgan and John Hay, and ends with an explanation of the Boxer Uprising in China.

CHAPTER VI. Carries us through the Presidential Campaign of 1900, the stock panic and the assassination of McKinley.

CHAPTER VII. Opens with a discussion of the situation in Puerto Rico, Cuba and the Philippines, followed by character sketches of Root, Taft, Forbes and Coolidge.

CHAPTER VIII. Begins the Roosevelt administration and describes his New England tour.

CHAPTER IX. Includes Roosevelt's dealing and settlement of the Anthracite coal strike and his views of the Venezuela question, the Alaska Boundary Dispute and the size of the British Navy.

CHAPTER X. Covers the discussions about the Panama Canal, including the Hay-Pauncefote treaties, the Hay-Herran treaty, the Panama Revolution, and the Hay-Bunau-Varilla treaty.

CHAPTER XI. Roosevelt's ability is contrasted with that of Hanna.

CHAPTER XII. Records the status of the Republican Party, the result of the election of 1904 and the St. Louis Fair.

CHAPTER XIII. Brings us to the Russo-Japanese War and includes some salient mentions of the Morocco Affair and the Algeciras Conference.

CHAPTER XIV. Discusses the different matters of legislation in 1905 such as the Railroad rate, the Hepburn Bill, the Senate Bill, and the Pure Food laws.

CHAPTER XV. Clearly elucidates the president's efforts during the panic of 1907 and his actions in regard to Irrigation.

CHAPTER XVI. Gives us some sidelights on Roosevelt's opinion of the navy and the Japanese question.

CHAPTER XVII. Has for its background the Republican Convention of 1908 across which come the figures of prominent men: Taft, Lodge, Morton; but most conspicuous among these is Roosevelt.

THE McKINLEY AND ROOSEVELT ADMINISTRATIONS, 1897–1909

BY JAMES FORD RHODES, LL.D., D.Litt.

Illustrated with portraits of prominent men of the time

Price $4.00

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY

Publishers 64–66 Fifth Avenue New York